

London: C. J. CLAY AND SONS,  
CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS WAREHOUSE,  
AVE MARIA LANE.  
Glasgow: 30, WELLINGTON STREET.



Leipzig: F. A. BROCKHAUS.  
New York: THE MACMILLAN COMPANY.  
Bombay and Calcutta: MACMILLAN AND CO., LTD.

*[All Rights reserved]*

POETICAL WORKS  
OF  
JOHN MILTON

Edited with Critical Notes

by

WILLIAM ALDIS WRIGHT, M.A.

HON. LL.D., D.C.L., LITT.D.

VICE-MASTER OF TRINITY COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE

CAMBRIDGE:  
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS.

1903



Cambridge :

PRINTED BY J. AND C. F. CLAY,  
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS.

# CONTENTS.

	PAGE
A PARAPHRASE ON PSALM CXIV . . . . .	1
PSALM CXXXVI . . . . .	2
ON THE DEATH OF A FAIR INFANT DYING OF A COUGH . . . . .	4
AT A VACATION EXERCISE IN THE COLLEGE . . . . .	7
ON THE MORNING OF CHRIST'S NATIVITY . . . . .	10
UPON THE CIRCUMCISION . . . . .	18
THE PASSION . . . . .	19
ON TIME . . . . .	21
AT A SOLEMN MUSIC . . . . .	21
SONG ON MAY MORNING . . . . .	22
ON SHAKESPEARE . . . . .	23
ON THE UNIVERSITY CARRIER . . . . .	23
ANOTHER ON THE SAME . . . . .	24
AN EPIITAPH ON THE MARCHIONESS OF WINCHESTER . . . . .	25
L'ALLEGRO . . . . .	27
IL PENSEROSO . . . . .	31
ARCADES . . . . .	38
COMUS . . . . .	39
LYCIDAS . . . . .	69

SONNETS	PAGE
I. To the Nightingale . . . . .	74
II. On his being arrived to the age of 23 . . . . .	75
III. Donna leggiadra . . . . .	75
IV. Qual in colle aspro . . . . .	76
Canzone . . . . .	76
V. Diodati . . . . .	77
VI. Per certo . . . . .	77
VII. Giovane, piano . . . . .	78
VIII. When the Assault was intended to the City . . . . .	78
IX. To a virtuous young Lady . . . . .	79
X. To the Lady Margaret Ley . . . . .	79
XI. On the Detraction which followed upon my writing certain Treatises . . . . .	80
XII. On the Same . . . . .	80
XIII. To Mr H. Lawes on his Airs . . . . .	81
XIV. On the religious memory of Mrs Catherine Thomson, my Christian Friend . . . . .	81
On the new forcers of Conscience under the Long Parliament . . . . .	82
XV. To the Lord General Fairfax, at the siege of Colchester . . . . .	82
XVI. To the Lord General Cromwell . . . . .	83
XVII. To Sir Henry Vane the younger . . . . .	83
XVIII. On the late Massacre in Piemont . . . . .	84
XIX. On his Blindness . . . . .	84
XX. To Mr Lawrence . . . . .	85
XXI. To Cyriack Skinner . . . . .	85
XXII. To the Same . . . . .	86
XXIII. On his deceased Wife . . . . .	86
TRANSLATIONS	
Scraps from the Prose Writings . . . . .	87
The fifth Ode of Horace, Lib. I . . . . .	89
NINE OF THE PSALMS DONE INTO METRE	
Psalms LXXX . . . . .	90
Psalms LXXXI . . . . .	93
Psalms LXXXII . . . . .	95
Psalms LXXXIII . . . . .	96
Psalms LXXXIV . . . . .	98
Psalms LXXXV . . . . .	99
Psalms LXXXVI . . . . .	101
Psalms LXXXVII . . . . .	103
Psalms LXXXVIII . . . . .	104

PSALMS DONE INTO VERSE, 1653

PAGE

Psalm I . . . . .	106
Psalm II . . . . .	106
Psalm III . . . . .	107
Psalm IV . . . . .	108
Psalm V . . . . .	109
Psalm VI . . . . .	110
Psalm VII . . . . .	111
Psalm VIII . . . . .	113

PARADISE LOST

Commendatory Verses . . . . .	115
Book I . . . . .	119
Book II . . . . .	140
Book III . . . . .	167
Book IV . . . . .	186
Book V . . . . .	213
Book VI . . . . .	236
Book VII . . . . .	260
Book VIII . . . . .	276
Book IX . . . . .	293
Book X . . . . .	323
Book XI . . . . .	352
Book XII . . . . .	375

PARADISE REGAINED

Book I . . . . .	392
Book II . . . . .	405
Book III . . . . .	417
Book IV . . . . .	428

SAMSON AGONISTES

. . . . .	445
-----------	-----

LATIN POEMS

De Auctore Testimonia . . . . .	492
Elegiarum Liber	
Elegia Prima . . . . .	496
Elegia Secunda . . . . .	498
Elegia Tertia . . . . .	499
Elegia Quarta . . . . .	501
Elegia Quinta . . . . .	504
Elegia Sexta . . . . .	508
Elegia Septima . . . . .	511

	PAGE
EPIGRAMMATA . . . . .	514
SYLVARUM LIBER	
In obitum Procancellarii Medici . . . . .	517
In quintum Novembris . . . . .	518
In obitum Praesulis Eliensis . . . . .	524
Naturam non pati senium . . . . .	526
De Idea Platonica quemadmodum Aristoteles intellexit . . . . .	527
Ad Patrem . . . . .	529
Greek Verses	
Psalm CXIV . . . . .	532
Philosophus ad Regem quendam . . . . .	532
In effigiei ejus sculptorem . . . . .	533
Ad Salsillum, Poetam Romanum, aegrotantem . . . . .	533
Mansus . . . . .	534
Epitaphium Damonis . . . . .	537
Ad Joannem Rousium Oxoniensis Academiae Bibliothecarium . . . . .	543
In Salmasii Hundredam . . . . .	546
In Salmasium . . . . .	546
NOTES . . . . .	547

## PREFACE.

WITH the exception of four Sonnets (xv. xvi. xvii. xxii.) the Poems of Milton were all printed in his lifetime, and to some extent under his superintendence. The Epitaph on Shakespeare, written in 1630, first appeared among the verses prefixed to the Second Folio edition of Shakespeare, which was printed in 1632. It is there called 'An Epitaph on the admirable Dramaticke Poet W. SHAKESPEARE,' and it is signed with the initials J. M.

The first edition of *Comus* appeared in 1637, edited by Henry Lawes, the musician, who wrote the music for it, and is said to have acted the part of The Attendant Spirit who assumed the form of *Thyrsis*. The title is as follows:

A MASKE | PRESENTED | At Ludlow Castle, | 1634: | *On*  
*Michaelmasse night, before the* | RIGHT HONORABLE, | IOHN  
*Earle of Bridgewater, Vicount BRACKLY, | Lord President of*  
WALES, And one of | His MAIESTIES most honorable | Privie  
Counsell.

*Eheu quid volui misero mihi ! floribus austrum*  
*Perditus—*

LONDON, | Printed for HUMPHREY ROBINSON, | at the signe  
of the *Three Pidgeons* in | *Pauls Church-yard.* 1637. |

*Lycidas*, which, according to the heading of the Poem in the manuscript now in the Library of Trinity College, Cambridge, was written in November, 1637, was first printed

in a collection of verses, Latin and English, which were published in 1638 under the title *Justa Edovardo King*, in commemoration of the death of Edward King, who was drowned on his passage to Ireland in the previous Long Vacation. The full title is, 'JUSTA | EDOVARDO | KING | naufrago, | ab | Amicis mœrentibus, | amoris | & | *μυελας χαρην*. | *Si recte calculum ponas, ubique naufragium est.* | Pet. Arb. | CANTABRIGIÆ: | Apud Thomam Buck, & Rogerum Daniel, celeberrimæ | Academiæ typographos. 1638.' | The English verses are at the end, with a separate pagination and the title, 'Obsequies to | the memorie | of | Mr EDWARD | KING, | Anno Dom. | 1638. | Printed by Th. Buck, and R. Daniel, | printers to the Vniuersitie of | Cambridge. 1638.'

In 1645 Milton's reputation was so far established that a collection of his Poems was made by a London stationer, Humphrey Moseley, and issued with a Preface by the publisher and the following title:

POEMS | OF | Mr *John Milton*, | BOTH | ENGLISH and  
LATIN, | Compos'd at several times. | Printed by his true  
Copies. | The SONGS were set in Musick by | Mr HENRY  
LAWES Gentleman of | the KINGS Chappel, and one | of His  
MAIESTIES | Private Musick. |

.....*Buccare frontem*

*Cingite, ne vati noceat mala lingua futuro,*

Virgil, *Eclog.* 7.

Printed and publish'd according to | ORDER. | LONDON, |  
Printed by *Ruth Raworth* for *Humphrey Moseley*, | and are to  
be sold at the signe of the Princes | Arms in *Pauls Church-*  
*yard*, 1645. |

The poems contained in this volume were reprinted, with some additions which are indicated in the Notes, in 1673, the year before Milton's death, and when he had been long blind. It is not therefore certain whether the variations in this edition

have his authority or not. I do not feel inclined to attribute to them much importance. The title is as follows: 'POEMS, &c. | UPON | Several Occasions. | BY Mr JOHN MILTON: | Both ENGLISH and LATIN, &c. | Composed at several times. | With a small Tractate of | EDUCATION | To Mr HARTLIB. | LONDON, | Printed for *Tho. Dring* at the *Blew Anchor* | next *Mitre Court* over against *Fetter* | Lane in *Fleet-street*. 1673.'

In the same year there appeared another title-page with a different imprint:

Printed for *Tho. Dring* at the *White Lion* | next *Chancery Lane End*, in | *Fleet-street*. 1673. |

That this is earlier than the preceding is clear from the fact that in 1671 The Amorous Prince of Mrs Aphra Behn was printed for Thomas Dring at the White Lion. His removal to the 'Blew Anchor' therefore took place in 1673.

Paradise Lost was first printed in 1667 in quarto, and copies were issued with varying title-pages in the years 1667, 1668, and 1669. Of these various titles I can speak with certainty of the following. Others have been described, but I have not been able to trace them.

Paradise lost. | A | POEM | Written in | TEN BOOKS | By JOHN MILTON. | Licensed and Entred according | to Order. | LONDON | Printed, and are to be sold by *Peter Parker* | under *Creed Church* neer *Aldgate*; And by | *Robert Boulter* at the *Turks Head* in *Bishopsgate-street*; | And *Matthias Walker*, under *St. Dunstons Church* | in *Fleet-street*, 1667. |

Paradise lost. | A | POEM | Written in | TEN BOOKS | by JOHN MILTON. | Licensed and Entred according | to Order. | LONDON | Printed, and are to be sold by *Peter Parker* | under *Creed Church* neer *Aldgate*; And by *Robert Boulter* at the *Turks Head* in *Bishopsgate-street*; | And *Matthias Walker*, under *St. Dunstons Church* | in *Fleet-street*, 1667. |



Paradise lost. | A | POEM | IN | TEN BOOKS. | The Author  
*J. M.* | Licensed and Entred according | to Order. | *LONDON* |  
 Printed, and are to be sold by *Peter Parker* | under *Creed*  
*Church* near *Aldgate*; And by | *Robert Boulter* at the *Turks*  
*Head* in *Bishopsgate-street*; | And *Matthias Walker*, under *St.*  
*Dunstons Church* in *Fleet-street*, 1668. |

Paradise lost. | A | POEM | IN | TEN BOOKS. | The Author |  
*JOHN MILTON.* | *LONDON,* | Printed by *S. Simmons*,  
 and to be sold by *S. Thomson* at | the *Bishops-Head* in *Duck-*  
*lane,* *H. Mortlack* at the | *White Hart* in *Westminster Hall,* *M.*  
*Walker* under | *St. Dunstons Church* in *Fleet-street*, and  
*R. Boulter* at | the *Turks-Head* in *Bishopsgate street*, 1668.

On this title there are four rows of fleurs-de-lis under the author's name.

This title-page was followed by seven additional leaves, the contents of which are introduced by an address from *The Printer to the Reader*, the first form of which was:

*Courteous Reader*, There was no Argument at first intended to the Book, but for the satisfaction of many that have desired it, is procured. *S. Simmons.*

As this was not very grammatical the following was substituted.

*Courteous Reader*, There was no Argument at first intended to the Book, but for the satisfaction of many that desired it, I have procur'd it, and withall a reason of that which stumbled many others, why the Poem Rimes not. *S. Simmons.*

The first of these addresses was in three lines, the second in five, but as in the case of the corrected and uncorrected sheets of the poem itself both are found with title-pages bearing the dates 1668 and 1669. Indeed copies with the latest title-page described below have no Address from the Printer to the Reader, though they have the rest of the preliminary matter.

The Address was followed by the Arguments to the several Books, the Verse, or an explanation why the Poem Rimes not, and a Table of Errata.

In Bohn's edition of Lowndes' Bibliographer's Manual, a title-page, called the fifth, is described, which is said to be distinguished from the preceding by having three stars or fleurs-de-lis before and after the author's name. Of this I have not been able to trace a single copy at present, though I cannot help believing in its existence. Of what is called the sixth title-page in Bohn's Lowndes I am more than sceptical. It is said only to differ from the fifth in having no stars, but the sole authority for this statement is the Bibliotheca Anglo-Poetica, in which the descriptions of books do not notice such points. The question of these titles has been obscured by the fact that the fourth, fifth, and sixth in Bohn's Lowndes are called the fifth, sixth, and seventh by Professor Masson, who follows Sotheby in his Ramblings in the Elucidation of the Autograph of Milton.

Paradise lost. | A | POEM | IN | TEN BOOKS. | The Author |  
*JOHN MILTON.* | *LONDON,* | Printed by *S. Simmons,*  
 and are to be sold by | *T. Helder* at the *Angel* in *Little*  
*Brittain.* | 1669. |

In one copy which I have seen the full-stop after "Books" is omitted.

Paradise lost. | A | POEM | IN | TEN BOOKS. | The Author |  
*JOHN MILTON.* | *LONDON,* | Printed by *S. Simmons,* and  
 are to be sold by *T. Helder,* at the *Angel* in *Little Brittain,* |  
 1669. |

All the copies I have seen which have this title-page have no Address to the Reader, although they have the rest of the preliminary matter, and in the Argument to the Ninth Book, line 5, they read "Angels" for "Son."

The second edition, which was in 8vo, appeared in 1674, with the following title:

Paradise Lost. | A | POEM | IN | TWELVE BOOKS. | The Author | *JOHN MILTON*. | *The Second Edition* | Revised and Augmented by the | same Author. | *LONDON*, | Printed by *S. Simmons* next door to the | *Golden Lion* in *Aldersgate-street*, 1674. |

The ten books of the first edition became twelve in the second by subdividing Books VII and X, so that the 1290 lines of the original Book VII were distributed between Books VII and VIII; Books VIII and IX then became Books IX and X, and the original Book X, which consisted of 1540 lines, was broken up into the present Books XI and XII. To effect this change three new lines were added at the beginning of Book VIII and the fourth was slightly modified, as will be seen in the Notes. At the beginning of Book XII five new lines were added.

After Milton's death a third edition, also in 8vo, was issued by S. Simmons in 1678. This was merely a reprint of the second edition.

In 1671, *Paradise Regained* and *Samson Agonistes* were published in one volume 8vo. with a continuous set of signatures, though with separate pagination. The book was licensed July 2, 1670, and entered at Stationers' Hall on September 10. The titles are as follows:

PARADISE | REGAIN'D. | A | POEM. | In IV BOOKS. | To which is added | *SAMSON AGONISTES*. | The Author | *JOHN MILTON*. | *LONDON*, | Printed by *J. M.* for *John Starkey* at the | *Mitre* in *Fleet-street*, near *Temple-Bar*. | MDCLXXI. |

SAMSON | AGONISTES, | A | DRAMATIC POEM. | The Author | *JOHN MILTON* | *Aristot. Poet. Cap. 6.* | *Τραγωδία μιμητικὴ πράξεως σπουδαίας &c.* | *Tragedia est imitatio actionis seriæ, &c. Per misericordiam & metum perficiens talium affectuum*

*Illustrationem.* | LONDON, | Printed by J. M. for John Starkey  
at the Mitre in Fleetstreet, near Temple-Bar. | MDCLXXI. |

A second edition was published in 1680 with the same title, the words "by J. M." being omitted in the imprint, and the date altered.

With regard to the printer's initials, J. M., which happen to be the same as those of the author, Mr Sotheby (*Ramblings in the Elucidation of the Autograph of Milton*, p. 83) makes the following extraordinary statement, which has been too trustfully accepted by Professor Masson: "It is interesting here to notice that the initials of Milton occur in the imprint as the printer of the volume. Such was frequently the case when a work was printed at the expense of the author." It would have been more satisfactory if Mr Sotheby had given a single instance in support of his assertion. It would be as reasonable to conclude that Shakespeare was at the expense of printing the undated Hamlet, because it is said to have been "Printed by W. S. for John Smethwick."

The copyright in *Paradise Lost* remained the property of S. Simmons till towards the end of 1680, when he sold it to Brabazon Aylmer, who on 17 August, 1683, sold a half share to Jacob Tonson, the other moiety being apparently transferred to Richard Bently. The fourth edition therefore appeared in 1688 under the joint names of Bently and Tonson, and with the following title:

*Paradise Lost.* | A | POEM | In Twelve Books. | The  
AUTHOUR | JOHN MILTON. | The Fourth Edition, Adorn'd  
with Sculptures. | LONDON, | Printed by Miles Flesher, for  
Richard Bently, at the | Post-Office in Russell-street, and Jacob  
Tonson at the | Judge's-Head in Chancery-lane near Fleet-  
street. | MDCLXXXVIII.

Tonson had a separate title-page for his own copies, and in these Bently's name does not appear in the imprint.

In the same year 1688, an edition of *Paradise Regained* and *Samson Agonistes* was issued in folio, uniform with *Paradise Lost* but by another publisher. There is a separate title to each poem, and each has a separate pagination and a separate set of signatures, though it appears from the first title that they were not to be sold separately. The titles are as follows:

*Paradise Regain'd.* | A | POEM. | In IV BOOKS. | To which is added *Samson Agonistes.* | The Author | JOHN MILTON. | LONDON, | Printed by R. E. and are to be sold by | *Randal Taylor* near *Stationers-Hall.* | MDCLXXXVIII. |

*Samson Agonistes,* | A | DRAMATICK | POEM. | The AUTHOUR | JOHN MILTON. | *Aristot. Poet. Cap. 6.* | *Τραγῳδία μίμησις πράξεως σπουδαίας, &c.* | *Tragædia est imitatio actionis serieæ, &c.* | *Per misericordiam* | & *metum talium perficiens affectuum lustrationem.* | LONDON, | Printed, and are to be sold by *Randal Taylor* | near *Stationers-Hall,* MDCLXXXVIII.

As the three poems are printed uniformly, though issued by different publishers, they are frequently bound up together, and sometimes the *Paradise Regained* and *Samson Agonistes* of 1688 are found in the same volume with the *Paradise Lost* of 1695, which was accompanied by the Notes of Patrick Hume and the Minor Poems.

On the 24th of March, 1690, Tonson acquired the remaining half share in the copyright of *Paradise Lost*, but the fifth edition was issued in 1691 with a title-page which must have been printed before the entire copyright had become the property of Tonson. This title is as follows:

*Paradise Lost.* | A | POEM | In Twelve Books. | THE AUTHOUR | JOHN MILTON. | The fifth Edition, Adorn'd with Sculptures. | LONDON, | Printed for *Richard Bently* in *Covent-garden,* | and *Jacob Tonson* in *Chancery-lane* near | *Fleetstreet.* MDCXCI.

When Tonson became the sole owner of the copyright the imprint of the title was altered to

Printed for *Jacob Tonson* at the *Judge's-Head* in *Chancery-lane* near *Fleet-street*. MDCXCII.

Copies of the fifth edition with these title-pages are in the Library of Queens' College, Cambridge, and in both *Paradise Lost* is followed by the 1688 edition of *Paradise Regained* and *Samson Agonistes*.

In 1695 Randal Taylor's interest in *Paradise Regained* and *Samson Agonistes* had been transferred to John Whitlock, and the two poems were issued in that year with the same titles as in the 1688 edition, except that Whitlock's name was substituted for Taylor's. They are printed page for page, but from a fresh setting of the type. Some copies of the edition of 1695 contain only *Paradise Lost*, *Paradise Regained*, and *Samson Agonistes*, but in others these are combined with Hume's Notes on *Paradise Lost*, and the Minor Poems, of which Tonson had acquired the copyright. The volume thus constituted a complete edition of Milton's Poetical Works.

This appeared with the general title

THE | POETICAL | WORKS | OF | Mr John Milton. |  
CONTAINING, | *Paradise Lost*, *Paradise Regain'd*, | *Samson*  
*Agonistes*, and his Poems | on several Occasions. | TOGETHER  
WITH | Explanatory NOTES on each Book of the | *PARADISE*  
*LOST*; and a *TABLE* | never before Printed. | LONDON: |  
Printed for *Jacob Tonson*, at the *Judge-Head* near the *Inner-*  
*Temple*. | Gate in *Fleet-street*, MDCXCV.

This is the full title of the complete collection of Milton's Poems, of which Tonson had the control, although he may not have had the entire copyright. The taste of purchasers appears to have been consulted, for some copies, as has been said, only contain the *Paradise Lost*, *Paradise Regained*, and

Samson Agonistes, without the Notes or the Minor Poems. Notwithstanding, in these copies the title to *Paradise Lost* is,

*Paradise Lost.* | A | POEM | In Twelve Books. | The  
AUTHOUR | *JOHN MILTON.* | *The Sixth Edition, with*  
*Sculptures.* | To which is added, | Explanatory NOTES upon each  
Book, and a TABLE | to the POEM, never before Printed. |  
*LONDON,* | Printed by *Tho. Hodgkin,* for *Jacob Tonson,* at  
the | Judge's-Head near the *Inner-Temple-Gate,* in *Fleet-*  
*street.* | MDCXCV.

The Minor Poems which were included in the complete Works, comprising everything which had appeared in the edition of 1673, had in the 1695 edition a separate title-page:

POEMS | UPON | Several Occasions. | Compos'd at several  
times. | BY Mr. *JOHN MILTON.* | *The Third Edition.* |  
*LONDON:* | Printed for *Jacob Tonson* at the *Judge's Head,*  
near the *Inner- | Temple-Gate* in *Fleet-street.* 1695. |

Before 1705 Tonson must have acquired the whole of the copyright in Milton's Poems, for from this time there were issued editions by him in 8vo. in 1705 and 1707; in 12mo. of *Paradise Lost* in 1711 and 1719, and of the other poems in 1713. All these were booksellers' reprints, and shew no signs of editorial care.

In 1720 a very handsome quarto edition in two volumes appeared under the superintendence of Thomas Tickell, the friend of Addison, and in consequence Addison's Notes on *Paradise Lost* are printed at the end of the first volume.

In 1725 Tonson published the 12th edition of *Paradise Lost*, to which was prefixed an account of Milton's Life by Elijah Fenton, whose name however does not appear in connexion with it till the 13th edition was issued in 1727. Fenton suggested two or three emendations of the text and revised the punctuation. The 14th edition was printed in 1730, the year of Fenton's death, and the 15th in 1738. The

copyright probably continued in the Tonson family till the death of the third Jacob Tonson in 1767.

In 1732 Richard Bentley, at the suggestion of Queen Caroline, was rash enough to put his hand to an edition of *Paradise Lost*, a task for which he was eminently unqualified. He neither understood Milton's language nor his rhythm, and having no imagination of his own proceeded to deal with the poem in the spirit of a pedagogue correcting a schoolboy's exercise. Whole passages were relegated to the margin as spurious, in obedience to a theory he had framed that they had been interpolated by a fraudulent editor, who had taken advantage of Milton's blindness to corrupt the text with his own worthless compositions. Of Bentley's emendations I have only recorded such as are not absolutely impossible, but there is hardly one that is necessary. After a considerable experience I feel justified in saying that in most cases ignorance and conceit are the fruitful parents of conjectural emendation.

Bentley's work was not allowed to pass unchallenged. It was quickly followed by "A Review of the Text of Milton's *Paradise Lost*: In which the Chief of Dr Bentley's Emendations are Consider'd; And several other Emendations and Observations Offer'd to the Public."

The book appeared in three parts, of which the first and second were printed in 1732 and the third in 1733 with an Appendix to the whole. It was anonymous, but it is known to have been written by Zachary Pearce, at that time Vicar of St Martin's in the Fields, and formerly Fellow of Bentley's own college. Newton truly says of it, "His Review of the Text of the *Paradise Lost* is not only a most complete answer to Dr Bentley, but may serve as a pattern to all future critics, of sound learning and just reasoning, joined with the greatest candor and gentleness of manners."

In 1749 Dr Thomas Newton, afterwards Bishop of Bristol, brought out an edition of *Paradise Lost* in two 4to volumes, "with Notes of various Authors," his object being as he



explains in his Preface to publish it "as the work of a classic author, cum notis variorum." His plan was completed by the appearance in 1752 of *Paradise Regained* and the remainder of the poems also in quarto. This is the first edition which had had any care bestowed upon it beyond that of the printer's reader. It was reprinted at least eight times before the end of the century, when it was superseded by Todd's edition. The authorities for the notes collected by Newton, as given in the Editor's Preface, were Patrick Hume, Bentley, Pearce, Richardson, Warburton, Lauder, Benson, Upton, Heylin, whose notes were appropriated by Bentley, Jortin, Thyer, and Onslow, Speaker of the House of Commons.

In 1785, Thomas Warton brought out an edition of the *Minor Poems*, and a second appeared in 1791 after his death.

In 1795, *Paradise Regained* with Notes of various Authors was edited by Charles Dunster, M.A. The edition I have used is that of 1800.

In 1798 *Comus* was edited by H. J. Todd with Notes of various Commentators, and "a copy of the *Mask* from a manuscript belonging to His Grace the Duke of Bridgewater." This ms. is now in the Library of Bridgewater House, and by the kindness of the Earl of Ellesmere I have been allowed to collate it. It is called by Todd the Ashridge ms. and is quoted in the Notes to the present edition as "Egerton ms." or "Eg. ms."

In 1801 Todd published a complete edition of Milton's *Poetical Works*. This was followed by a second in 1809, and a third in 1826. After this the editions of most importance from a critical point of view are Mitford's in 1832, Keightley's in 1859, and Professor Masson's in 1874. There are of course a multitude of others, but I have only found it necessary to consult them occasionally, and I have reason to believe that a careful collation of them would only lead to a record of variations due to errors of the press.

Besides the printed copies, I have collated the ms. of *Comus* now in the Library of Bridgewater House, which has

been already mentioned, and the ms. of some of the Minor Poems preserved in the Library of Trinity College, Cambridge, and edited by me in 1899 at the request of the College Council. The ms. of *Comus* is supposed to be one of the many copies of the masque made by or for Henry Lawes, and the ms. in Trinity Library is mainly in Milton's own hand.

In three instances I have departed from the printed text and have preferred to follow the authority of Milton himself. In *Lycidas*, line 10, I read "he well knew" instead of "he knew," because in the Trinity ms. Milton has twice written "he well knew," and in a copy of the first printed edition, which is in the Cambridge University Library, Milton has in his own hand inserted "well." In Sonnet XIII. 9, I read "lend" instead of "send," which is the reading of the edition of 1673, because in the Trinity ms. "lend" is the reading of three copies, two of which are in Milton's own hand and the third in the handwriting of an amanuensis. On nearly the same authority in Sonnet XIV. 12 I read "in glorious themes" instead of "on glorious themes," for in this case Milton's own two copies have "in," and the amanuensis misled the printer who substituted "on."

Another ms. authority which I have sometimes quoted is Capell ms. This is a copy of *Paradise Lost* transcribed with elaborate care and prepared for the press by Edward Capell, the editor of *Shakespeare*. It was never published, and the volume is with the rest of the Capell Collection in Trinity Library. The editor intended to dedicate it to Pearce, Bishop of Rochester, who has already been mentioned in connexion with Bentley's edition. The date of the Preface is Jan. 23, 1767, but a note at the beginning of Book I. indicates that the transcript was begun July 23, 1759, and it was finished, according to a note at the end, Dec. 18, 1760. The text is followed by a Table of Various Readings.

The notation I have adopted in the Notes which record the Various Readings is easily explained. The earliest editions

are described as ed. 1, ed. 2, or ed. 3. The booksellers' reprints are denoted by the years in which they appeared. Other editions are described by the editor's name. Anonymous conjectures are denoted by Anon. conj., and if they are followed by a name in brackets it is the name of the editor by whom they are quoted. For convenience of reference I have added a list of editions and other authorities mentioned in the Notes.

The order of arrangement of the poems is as far as possible chronological.

I have now to express my thanks to those who have given me material assistance in my work: to the Earl of Ellesmere for allowing me to collate the ms. of *Comus* now in the Library of Bridgewater House: to the Librarians of the University and College Libraries in Cambridge, of the Advocates' Library, Edinburgh, of the University Library, Glasgow, of Trinity College, Dublin, of John Rylands' Library, Manchester, of Dr Williams's Library, Gordon Square, to the President of Magdalen College, Oxford, to the Vice-Provost of Eton, to the Librarian of St Paul's School, to Professor Walter Raleigh, to the Librarians of the Lambeth and Sion College Libraries, and many others for the help they have rendered me in my hitherto fruitless search for one of the title-pages to the first edition of *Paradise Lost*. And while in addition I wish gratefully to acknowledge the large debt I owe to previous editors of Milton I desire to record my protest against the slipshod habit of some who say, "Modern editions read," which has cost me many an hour of unprofitable research.

WILLIAM ALDIS WRIGHT.

TRINITY COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE.

28 *March*, 1903.

# LIST OF BOOKS QUOTED.

- |       |                                 |         |                             |
|-------|---------------------------------|---------|-----------------------------|
| 1637. | Comus.                          | 1707.   | Paradise Lost, ed. 8.       |
| 1638. | Lycidas.                        |         | Paradise Regained, Samson   |
| 1645. | Minor Poems.                    |         | Agonistes and Poems,        |
| 1667. | } Paradise Lost, ed. 1.         |         | ed. 5.                      |
| 1668. |                                 |         | Poems, ed. 4.               |
| 1669. |                                 | 1711.   | Paradise Lost, ed. 9.       |
| 1671. | Paradise Regained, ed. 1.       | 1713.   | Paradise Regained, Samson   |
|       | Samson Agonistes, ed. 1.        |         | Agonistes and Poems, ed. 5. |
| 1673. | Minor Poems, ed. 2.             | 1719.   | Paradise Lost, ed. 10.      |
| 1674. | Paradise Lost, ed. 2.           | 1720.   | Poetical Works, ed. Tickell |
| 1678. | Paradise Lost, ed. 3.           |         | (ed. 11 of P. L.).          |
| 1680. | Paradise Regained, ed. 2.       | 1725.   | Paradise Lost, ed. 12 (ed.  |
|       | Samson Agonistes, ed. 2.        |         | Fenton).                    |
| 1688. | Paradise Lost, ed. 4.           |         | Paradise Regained, Samson   |
|       | Paradise Regained.              |         | Agonistes and Poems, ed. 6. |
|       | Samson Agonistes.               | 1727.   | Paradise Lost, ed. 13.      |
| 1691. | Paradise Lost, ed. 5 (Bentley   |         | Paradise Regained, Samson   |
|       | and Tonson).                    |         | Agonistes and Poems, ed. 7. |
| 1692. | Paradise Lost, ed. 5 (Tonson).  | 1730.   | Paradise Lost, ed. 14.      |
| 1694. | Letters of State, ed. Phillips. | 1732.   | Paradise Lost, ed. Bentley. |
| 1695. | Paradise Lost, ed. 6.           |         | Mendowcourt, A Critique     |
|       | Paradise Regained.              |         | on Milton's Paradise Re-    |
|       | Samson Agonistes.               |         | gain'd.                     |
|       | Minor Poems, ed. 3.             | 1732-3. | Pearce, Review of Bent-     |
|       | Hume, Notes on Paradise         |         | ley's edition.              |
|       | Lost.                           | 1734.   | Richardson, Explanatory     |
| 1699. | The Life of Milton (by          |         | notes and remarks on        |
|       | Toland).                        |         | Milton's Paradise Lost.     |
| 1705. | Paradise Lost, ed. 7.           |         | Jortin, Remarks on Milton's |
|       | Paradise Regained, ed. 4.       |         | Paradise Regained.          |
|       | Samson Agonistes, and           | 1738.   | Paradise Lost, ed. 15.      |
|       | Poems, ed. 4.                   |         | Birch, Complete Collection  |

- |       |   |         |  |
|-------|---|---------|--|
|       | of the Historical, Political, and Miscellaneous Works of John Milton.             | 1843.   | Poetical Works, ed. Montgomery.  |
|       | Dalton, <i>Comus</i> , a Mask : (Now adapted to the Stage).                       | 1846.   | Landon, <i>Imaginary Conversations</i> .   |
| 1740. | Peck, <i>New Memoirs of the Life and Poetical Works of Milton</i> .               | 1855.   | <i>Paradise Lost</i> , Books I—IV., ed. Connon.                                  |
| 1749. | <i>Paradise Lost</i> , ed. Newton.  | 1859.   | Poetical Works, ed. Keightley.   |
| 1752. | <i>Paradise Regained</i> , <i>Samson Agonistes</i> and <i>Poems</i> , ed. Newton. | 1866.   | Poetical Works, ed. Browne.  |
| 1785. | <i>Minor Poems</i> , ed. Warton.  | 1874.   | Poetical Works, ed. Masson.  |
| 1791. | <i>Minor Poems</i> , ed. Warton, second edition.                                  | 1878.   | Poetical Works, ed. Bradshaw.  |
| 1798. | <i>Comus</i> , ed. Todd.  | 1884.   | <i>Paradise Lost</i> , Books I—VI., ed. Mull.                                    |
| 1801. | Poetical Works, ed. Todd.   | 1891.   | <i>Lycidas</i> , ed. Verity.   |
| 1809. | Poetical Works, ed. Todd, ed. 2.  |         | <i>Arcades</i> , ed. Verity.   |
| 1826. | Poetical Works, ed. Todd, ed. 3.  | 1892.   | <i>Samson Agonistes</i> , ed. Verity.  |
| 1832. | Poetical Works, ed. Mitford.  | 1892-6. | <i>Paradise Lost</i> , ed. Verity.   |
| 1835. | Poetical Works, ed. Brydges.  | 1895.   | <i>Sonnets</i> , ed. Verity.   |
|       | <i>Paradise Lost</i> , Books I—IV., ed. Major.                                    | 1897.   | <i>Paradise Lost</i> , ed. Rouse.  |
|       |   | 1898.   | <i>Paradise Regained</i> , <i>Samson Agonistes</i> and <i>Poems</i> , ed. Rouse. |
|       |   | 1901.   | <i>Milton's Lyric and Dramatic Poems</i> , ed. Sampson.                          |

## CORRECTION.

p. 567. In the notes on the titles of Sonnets I. and II., for "by Tickell" read "in 1713."

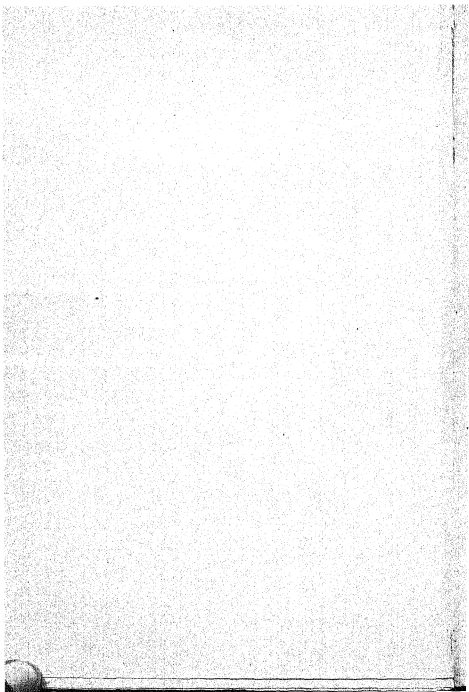
## ADDITIONS.

*Lycidas*, 154. *shores*] *shoals* Lowell conj.

*Paradise Lost*, vi, 866.

*Paradise Regained*, i. 361. } *to*] *down to* Lowell conj.

ENGLISH POEMS



## A PARAPHRASE ON PSALM CXIV.

*This and the following Psalm were done by the Author at  
fifteen years old.*

WHEN the blest seed of Teral's faithful son  
After long toil their liberty had won,  
And pass'd from Pharian fields to Canaan land,  
Led by the strength of the Almighty's hand,  
Jehovah's wonders were in Israel shown,  
His praise and glory was in Israel known.  
That saw the troubled sea, and shivering fled,  
And sought to hide his froth-becurled head  
Low in the earth; Jordan's clear streams recoil,  
As a faint host that hath received the foil.  
The high huge-bellied mountains skip like rams  
Amongst their ewes, the little hills like lambs.  
Why fled the ocean? and why skipp'd the mountains?  
Why turned Jordan toward his crystal fountains?  
Shake, Earth, and at the presence be agast  
Of Him that ever was and aye shall last,  
That glassy floods from rugged rocks can crush,  
And make soft rills from fiery flint-stones gush.



## PSALM CXXXVI.

LET us with a gladsome mind  
Praise the Lord, for he is kind;  
For his mercies aye endure,  
Ever faithful, ever sure.

Let us blaze his name abroad,  
For of gods he is the God;  
For his, etc.

O let us his praises tell,  
Who doth the wrathful tyrants quell;  
For his, etc.

Who with his miracles doth make  
Amazèd heaven and earth to shake;  
For his, etc.

Who by his wisdom did create  
The painted heavens so full of state;  
For his, etc.

Who did the solid earth ordain  
To rise above the watery plain;  
For his, etc.

Who, by his all-commanding might,  
Did fill the new-made world with light;  
For his, etc.

And caused the golden-tressed sun  
All the day long his course to run;  
For his, etc.

The horned moon to shine by night  
Amongst her spangled sisters bright;  
For his, etc.

He, with his thunder-clasping hand,  
Smote the first-born of Egypt land;  
For his, etc.

And, in despite of Pharaoh fell,  
He brought from thence his Israel;  
For his, etc.

The ruddy waves he cleft in twain  
Of the Erythrean main;  
For his, etc.

The floods stood still, like walls of glass,  
While the Hebrew bands did pass;  
For his, etc.

50

But full soon they did devour  
The tawny king with all his power;  
For his, etc.

His chosen people he did bless  
In the wasteful wilderness;  
For his, etc.

59

In bloody battle he brought down  
Kings of prowess and renown;  
For his, etc.

He foil'd bold Seon and his host,  
That ruled the Amorrean coast;  
For his, etc.

And large-limb'd Og he did subdue,  
With all his over-hardy crew;  
For his, etc.

70

And to his servant Israel  
He gave their land, therein to dwell;  
For his, etc.

He hath, with a piteous eye,  
Beheld us in our misery;  
For his, etc.

79

And freed us from the slavery  
Of the invading enemy;  
For his, etc.

All living creatures he doth feed,  
And with full hand supplies their need;  
For his, etc.

Let us, therefore, warble forth  
His mighty majesty and worth;  
For his, etc.

90

That his mansion hath on high,  
Above the reach of mortal eye;  
For his mercies aye endure,  
Ever faithful, ever sure.

## ON THE DEATH OF A FAIR INFANT DYING OF A COUGH.

*Anno ætatis 17.*

### I.

O FAIREST flower, no sooner blown but blasted,  
Soft silken primrose fading timelessly,  
Summer's chief honour, if thou hadst outlasted  
Bleak Winter's force that made thy blossom dry;  
For he, being amorous on that lovely dye  
That did thy cheek envermeil, thought to kiss,  
But kill'd, alas! and then bewail'd his fatal bliss.

### II.

For, since grim Aquilo, his charioteer,  
By boisterous rape the Athenian damsel got,  
He thought it touch'd his deity full near,  
If likewise he some fair one wedded not,  
Thereby to wipe away the infamous blot  
Of long-uncoupled bed and childless eld,  
Which 'mongst the wanton gods a foul reproach was held.

10

### III.

So, mounting up in icy-pearled car,  
Through middle empire of the freezing air  
He wander'd long, till thee he spied from far;  
There ended was his quest, there ceased his care;  
Down he descended from his snow-soft chair,  
But, all unwares, with his cold-kind embrace,  
Unhoused thy virgin soul from her fair bidding-place.

20

IV.

Yet art thou not inglorious in thy fate;  
For so Apollo, with unweeting hand,  
Whilom did slay his dearly-lovèd mate,  
Young Hyacinth, born on Eurotas' strand,  
Young Hyacinth, the pride of Spartan land;  
But then transform'd him to a purple flower:  
Alack, that so to change thee Winter had no power!

V.

Yet can I not persuade me thou art dead,  
Or that thy corse corrupts in earth's dark womb, 30  
Or that thy beauties lie in wormy bed,  
Hid from the world in a low-delvèd tomb;  
Could Heaven, for pity, thee so strictly doom?  
Oh no! for something in thy face did shine  
Above mortality, that shew'd thou wast divine.

VI.

Resolve me, then, O Soul most surely blest  
(If so it be that thou these plaints dost hear)!  
Tell me, bright Spirit, where'er thou hoverest,  
Whether above that high first-moving sphere,  
Or in the Elysian fields (if such there were), 40  
Oh, say me true if thou wert mortal wight,  
And why from us so quickly thou didst take thy flight.

VII.

Wert thou some star, which from the ruin'd roof  
Of shak'd Olympus by mischance didst fall;  
Which careful Jove in nature's true behoof  
Took up, and in fit place did reinstall?  
Or did of late Earth's sons besiege the wall  
Of sheeny Heaven, and thou some goddess fled  
Amongst us here below to hide thy nectar'd head?

## VIII.

Or wert thou that just maid who once before 50  
 Forsook the hated earth, oh! tell me sooth,  
 And camest again to visit us once more?  
 Or wert thou [Mercy], that sweet smiling Youth?  
 Or that crown'd Matron, sage white-robb'd Truth?  
 Or any other of that heavenly brood  
 Let down in cloudy throne to do the world some good?

## IX.

Or wert thou of the golden-winged host,  
 Who, having clad thyself in human weed,  
 To earth from thy prefixed seat didst post,  
 And after short abode fly back with speed, 60  
 As if to shew what creatures Heaven doth breed;  
 Thereby to set the hearts of men on fire  
 To scorn the sordid world, and unto Heaven aspire?

## X.

But, oh! why didst thou not stay here below  
 To bless us with thy heaven-loved innocence,  
 To slake his wrath whom sin hath made our foe,  
 To turn swift-rushing black perdition hence,  
 Or drive away the slaughtering pestilence,  
 To stand 'twixt us and our deserved smart?  
 But thou canst best perform that office where thou art. 70

## XI.

Then thou, the mother of so sweet a child,  
 Her false-imagined loss cease to lament,  
 And wisely learn to curb thy sorrows wild;  
 Think what a present thou to God hast sent,  
 And render him with patience what he lent:  
 This if thou do, he will an offspring give  
 That till the world's last end shall make thy name to live.

AT A VACATION EXERCISE IN THE COLLEGE,  
PART LATIN, PART ENGLISH.

*Anno ætatis 19.*

*The Latin Speeches ended, the English thus began:—*

HAIL, Native Language, that by sinews weak  
Didst move my first endeavouring tongue to speak,  
And madest imperfect words with childish trips,  
Half unpronounced, slide through my infant lips,  
Driving dumb Silence from the portal door,  
Where he had mutely sat two years before:  
Here I salute thee, and thy pardon ask  
That now I use thee in my latter task!  
Small loss it is that thence can come unto thee;  
I know my tongue but little grace can do thee. 10  
Thou need'st not be ambitious to be first;  
Believe me, I have thither pack'd the worst:  
And, if it happen as I did forecast,  
The daintest dishes shall be served up last.  
I pray thee then deny me not thy aid,  
For this same small neglect that I have made;  
But haste thee straight to do me once a pleasure,  
And from thy wardrobe bring thy chiefest treasure,  
Not those new-fangled toys, and trimming slight  
Which takes our late fantastics with delight; 20  
But cull those richest robes and gay'st attire,  
Which deepest spirits and choicest wits desire.  
I have some naked thoughts that rove about,  
And loudly knock to have their passage out,  
And, weary of their place, do only stay  
Till thou hast deck'd them in thy best array;  
That so they may, without suspect or fears,  
Fly swiftly to this fair assembly's ears.  
Yet I had rather, if I were to choose,  
Thy service in some graver subject use, 30  
Such as may make thee search thy coffers round,  
Before thou clothe my fancy in fit sound:

Such where the deep transported mind may soar  
 Above the wheeling poles, and at Heaven's door  
 Look in, and see each blissful deity  
 How he before the thunderous throne doth lie,  
 Listening to what unshorn Apollo sings  
 To the touch of golden wires, while Hebe brings  
 Immortal nectar to her kingly sire;  
 Then, passing through the spheres of watchful fire, 40  
 And misty regions of wide air next under,  
 And hills of snow and lofts of pill'd thunder,  
 May tell at length how green-eyed Neptune raves,  
 In Heaven's defiance mustering all his waves;  
 Then sing of secret things that came to pass  
 When beldam Nature in her cradle was;  
 And last of kings and queens and heroes old,  
 Such as the wise Demodocus once told  
 In solemn songs at king Alcinous' feast,  
 While sad Ulysses' soul and all the rest 50  
 Are held, with his melodious harmony,  
 In willing chains and sweet captivity.  
 But fie, my wandering Muse, how thou dost stray!  
 Expectance calls thee now another way.  
 Thou know'st it must be now thy only bent  
 To keep in compass of thy Predicament.  
 Then quick about thy purposed business come,  
 That to the next I may resign my room.

*Then ENS is represented as Father of the Predicaments, his ten sons; whereof the eldest stood for SUBSTANCE with his Canons; which ENS, thus speaking, explains:—*

Good luck befriend thee, Son; for at thy birth  
 The faery ladies danced upon the hearth. 60  
 Thy drowsy nurse hath sworn she did them spy  
 Come tripping to the room where thou didst lie,  
 And, sweetly singing round about thy bed,  
 Strew all their blessings on thy sleeping head.  
 She heard them give thee this, that thou should'st still  
 From eyes of mortals walk invisible.  
 Yet there is something that doth force my fear;  
 For once it was my dismal hap to hear

A sibyl old, bow-bent with crooked age,  
That far events full wisely could presage,  
And, in time's long and dark prospective glass,  
Foresaw what future days should bring to pass.  
'Your son,' said she, '(nor can you it prevent)  
Shall subject be to many an *Accident*.  
O'er all his brethren he shall reign as king;  
Yet every one shall make him underling,  
And those that cannot live from him asunder  
Ungratefully shall strive to keep him under.  
In worth and excellence he shall outgo them;  
Yet, being above them, he shall be below them.  
From others he shall stand in need of nothing,  
Yet on his brothers shall depend for clothing.  
To find a foe it shall not be his hap,  
And peace shall lull him in her flowery lap;  
Yet shall he live in strife, and at his door  
Devouring war shall never cease to roar;  
Yea, it shall be his natural property  
To harbour those that are at enmity.'  
What power, what force, what mighty spell, if not  
Your learned hands, can loose this Gordian knot?

70

80

90

*The next, QUANTITY and QUALITY, spake in prose: then  
RELATION was called by his name.*

Rivers, arise: whether thou be the son  
Of utmost Tweed, or Ouse, or gulfy Dun,  
Or Trent, who, like some earth-born giant, spreads  
His thirty arms along the indented meads,  
Or sullen Mole, that runneth underneath,  
Or Severn swift, guilty of maiden's death,  
Or rocky Avon, or of sedgy Lea,  
Or coaly Tyne, or ancient hallow'd Dee,  
Or Humber loud, that keeps the Scythian's name,  
Or Medway smooth, or royal-towered Thame.

100

*The rest was prose.*



## ON THE MORNING OF CHRIST'S NATIVITY.

*Composed 1629.*

### I.

THIS is the month, and this the happy morn,  
Wherein the Son of Heaven's eternal King,  
Of wedded Maid and Virgin Mother born,  
Our great redemption from above did bring;  
For so the holy Sages once did sing,  
That he our deadly forfeit should release,  
And with his Father work us a perpetual peace.

### II.

That glorious form, that light unsufferable,  
And that far-beaming blaze of majesty,  
Wherewith he wont at Heaven's high council-table  
To sit the midst of Trinal Unity,  
He laid aside; and here with us to be,  
Forsook the courts of everlasting day,  
And chose with us a darksome house of mortal clay.

### III.

Say, Heavenly Muse, shall not thy sacred vein  
Afford a present to the Infant God?  
Hast thou no verse, no hymn, or solemn strain,  
To welcome him to this his new abode,  
Now while the Heaven, by the sun's team untrod,  
Hath took no print of the approaching light,  
And all the spangled host keep watch in squadrons bright?

### IV.

See how from far upon the eastern road  
The star-led Wisards haste with odours sweet!  
O run, prevent them with thy humble ode,  
And lay it lowly at his blessed feet;  
Have thou the honour first thy Lord to greet,  
And join thy voice unto the angel quire,  
From out his secret altar touch'd with hallow'd fire.

THE HYMN.

I.

It was the winter wild,  
While the Heaven-born child  
    All meanly wrapt in the rude manger lies;  
Nature, in awe to him,  
Had doff'd her gaudy trim,  
    With her great Master so to sympathize:  
It was no season then for her  
To wanton with the sun, her lusty paramour.

30

II.

Only with speeches fair  
She woos the gentle air  
    To hide her guilty front with innocent snow,  
And on her naked shame,  
Pollute with sinful blame,  
    The saintly veil of maiden white to throw:  
Confounded, that her Maker's eyes  
Should look so near upon her foul deformities.

40

III.

But he, her fears to cease,  
Sent down the meek-eyed Peace;  
    She, crown'd with olive green, came softly sliding  
Down through the turning sphere,  
His ready harbinger,  
    With turtle wing the amorous clouds dividing;  
And, waving wide her myrtle wand,  
She strikes a universal peace through sea and land.

50

IV.

No war, or battle's sound,  
Was heard the world around;  
    The idle spear and shield were high uphung;  
The hooked chariot stood  
Unstain'd with hostile blood;  
    The trumpet spake not to the armed throng;  
And kings sat still with awful eye,  
As if they surely knew their sovran Lord was by.

60

## V.

But peaceful was the night  
 Wherein the Prince of Light  
     His reign of peace upon the earth began:  
 The winds, with wonder whist,  
 Smoothly the waters kiss'd,  
     Whispering new joys to the mild ocean,  
 Who now hath quite forgot to rave,  
 While birds of calm sit brooding on the charmed wave.

## VI.

The stars, with deep amaze,  
 Stand fix'd in steadfast gaze,  
     Bending one way their precious influence;  
 And will not take their flight,  
 For all the morning light,  
     Or Lucifer that often warn'd them thence;  
 But in their glimmering orbs did glow,  
 Until their Lord himself bespoke, and bid them go.

70

## VII.

And, though the shady gloom  
 Had given day her room,  
     The sun himself withheld his wonted speed;  
 And hid his head for shame,  
 As his inferior flame  
     The new-enlighten'd world no more should need:  
 He saw a greater sun appear  
 Than his bright throne or burning axletree could bear.

80

## VIII.

The shepherds on the lawn,  
 Or ere the point of dawn,  
     Sat simply chatting in a rustic row;  
 Full little thought they than  
 That the mighty Pan  
     Was kindly come to live with them below:  
 Perhaps their loves, or else their sheep,  
 Was all that did their silly thoughts so busy keep.

90

## IX.

When such music sweet  
Their hearts and ears did greet  
As never was by mortal finger strook,  
Divinely-warbled voice  
Answering the stringed noise,  
As all their souls in blissful rapture took:  
The air, such pleasure loth to lose,  
With thousand echoes still prolongs each heavenly close. 100

## X.

Nature, that heard such sound  
Beneath the hollow round  
Of Cynthia's seat, the airy region thrilling,  
Now was almost won  
To think her part was done,  
And that her reign had here its last fulfilling:  
She knew such harmony alone  
Could hold all Heaven and Earth in happier union.

## XI.

At last surrounds their sight  
A globe of circular light, 110  
That with long beams the shamefaced Night array'd;  
The helmed Cherubim  
And sworded Seraphim  
Are seen in glittering ranks with wings display'd,  
Harping in loud and solemn quire  
With unexpressive notes to Heaven's new-born Heir.

## XII.

Such music (as 'tis said)  
Before was never made,  
But when of old the Sons of Morning sung,  
While the Creator great 120  
His constellations set,  
And the well-balanced world on hinges hung;  
And cast the dark foundations deep,  
And bid the weltering waves their oozy channel keep.

## XIII.

Ring out, ye crystal spheres,  
 Once bless our human ears,  
     (If ye have power to touch our senses so);  
 And let your silver chime  
 Move in melodious time,  
     And let the bass of Heaven's deep organ blow; 130  
 And with your ninefold harmony  
 Make up full consort to the angelic symphony.

## XIV.

For, if such holy song  
 Enwrap our fancy long,  
     Time will run back, and fetch the Age of Gold;  
 And speckled Vanity  
 Will sicken soon and die,  
     And leprous Sin will melt from earthly mould;  
 And Hell itself will pass away,  
 And leave her dolorous mansions to the peering day. 140

## XV.

Yea, Truth and Justice then  
 Will down return to men,  
     Orb'd in a rainbow; and, like glories wearing,  
 Mercy will sit between,  
 Throned in celestial sheen,  
     With radiant feet the tissued clouds down steering;  
 And Heaven, as at some festival,  
 Will open wide the gates of her high palace-hall.

## XVI.

But wisest Fate says No,  
 This must not yet be so; 150  
     The Babe lies yet in smiling infancy  
 That on the bitter cross  
 Must redeem our loss,  
     So both himself and us to glorify:  
 Yet first to those ychain'd in sleep,  
 The wakeful trump of doom must thunder through the deep,

## XVII.

With such a horrid clang  
As on Mount Sinai rang,

While the red fire and smouldering clouds out brake:  
The aged Earth, agast  
With terror of that blast,

160

Shall from the surface to the centre shake;  
When at the world's last session  
The dreadful Judge in middle air shall spread his throne.

## XVIII.

And then at last our bliss  
Full and perfect is,

But now begins; for from this happy day,  
The old Dragon under ground,  
In straiter limits bound,

Not half so far casts his usurped sway;  
And, wroth to see his kingdom fail,  
Swindges the scaly horror of his folded tail.

170

## XIX.

The oracles are dumb;  
No voice or hideous hum

Runs through the arched roof in words deceiving.  
Apollo from his shrine  
Can no more divine,

With hollow shriek the steep of Delphos leaving.  
No nightly trance, or breathèd spell,  
Inspires the pale-eyed priest from the prophetic cell.

180

## XX.

The lonely mountains o'er,  
And the resounding shore,

A voice of weeping heard and loud lament;  
From haunted spring, and dale  
Edged with poplar pale,

The parting Genius is with sighing sent;  
With flower-inwoven tresses torn  
The Nymphs in twilight shade of tangled thickets mourn.

## XXI.

In consecrated earth,  
 And on the holy hearth,  
 The Lars and Lemures moan with midnight plaint; 190  
 In urns and altars round,  
 A drear and dying sound  
 Affrights the Flamens at their service quaint;  
 And the chill marble seems to sweat,  
 While each peculiar power forgoes his wonted seat.

## XXII.

Peor and Baälím  
 Forsake their temples dim,  
 With that twice-batter'd god of Palestine;  
 And mooned Ashtaroth, 200  
 Heaven's queen and mother both,  
 Now sits not girt with tapers' holy shine:  
 The Libyc Hammon shrinks his horn;  
 In vain the Tyrian maids their wounded Thammuz mourn.

## XXIII.

And sullen Moloch, fled,  
 Hath left in shadows dread  
 His burning idol all of blackest hue:  
 In vain with cymbals' ring  
 They call the grisly king,  
 In dismal dance about the furnace blue: 210  
 The brutish gods of Nile as fast,  
 Isis, and Orus, and the dog Anubis, haste.

## XXIV.

Nor is Osiris seen  
 In Memphian grove or green,  
 Trampling the unshower'd grass with lowings loud;  
 Nor can he be at rest  
 Within his sacred chest;  
 Nought but profoundest Hell can be his shroud:  
 In vain with timbrel'd anthems dark  
 The sable-stolèd sorcerers bear his worshipp'd ark. 220

## XXV.

He feels from Juda's land  
The dreaded Infant's hand;  
The rays of Bethlehem blind his dusky eyne;  
Nor all the gods beside  
Longer dare abide,  
Not Typhon huge ending in snaky twine:  
Our Babe, to shew his Godhead true,  
Can in his swaddling bands control the damned crew.

## XXVI.

So, when the sun in bed,  
Curtain'd with cloudy red,  
Pillows his chin upon an orient wave,  
The flocking shadows pale  
Troop to the infernal jail;  
Each fetter'd ghost slips to his several grave,  
And the yellow-skirted fays  
Fly after the night-steeds, leaving their moon-loved maze.

230

## XXVII.

But see! the Virgin blest  
Hath laid her Babe to rest:  
Time is our tedious song should here have ending:  
Heaven's youngest-teemed star  
Hath fix'd her polish'd car,  
Her sleeping Lord with handmaid lamp attending;  
And all about the courtly stable  
Bright-harness'd angels sit in order serviceable.

240



## UPON THE CIRCUMCISION.

YE flaming Powers, and winged Warriors bright,  
That erst with music, and triumphant song,  
First heard by happy watchful shepherds' ear,  
So sweetly sung your joy the clouds along,  
Through the soft silence of the listening night,  
Now mourn ; and, if sad share with us to bear  
Your fiery essence can distil no tear,  
Burn in your sighs, and borrow  
Seas wept from our deep sorrow.  
He who with all Heaven's heraldry whilere  
Enter'd the world now bleeds to give us ease.  
Alas ! how soon our sin  
Sore doth begin  
His infancy to seize !

10

O more exceeding love, or law more just ?  
Just law, indeed, but more exceeding love !  
For we, by rightful doom remediless,  
Were lost in death, till he, that dwelt above  
High-throned in secret bliss, for us frail dust  
Emptied his glory, even to nakedness ;  
And that great covenant which we still transgress  
Entirely satisfied,  
And the full wrath beside  
Of vengeful justice bore for our excess,  
And seals obedience first with wounding smart  
This day ; but oh ! ere long,  
Huge pangs and strong  
Will pierce more near his heart.

20

## THE PASSION.

### I.                    ace :

EREWHILE of music, and ethereal mirth,  
Wherewith the stage of Air and Earth did ring;  
And joyous news of Heavenly Infant's birth,  
My muse with Angels did divide to sing ;  
But headlong joy is ever on the wing,  
In wintry solstice like the shorten'd light  
Soon swallow'd up in dark and long outliving night.

### II.

For now to sorrow must I tune my song,  
And set my harp to notes of saddest woe,  
Which on our dearest Lord did seize ere long,        20  
Dangers, and snares, and wrongs, and worse than so,  
Which he for us did freely undergo :  
Most perfect Hero, tried in heaviest plight  
Of labours huge and hard, too hard for human wight !

### III.

He, sovran Priest, stooping his regal head,  
That dropt with odorous oil down his fair eyes,  
Poor fleshly tabernacle entered,  
His starry front low-roof'd beneath the skies :  
Oh, what a mask was there, what a disguise !  
Yet more : the stroke of death he must abide ;        30  
Then lies him meekly down fast by his brethren's side.

### IV.

These latest scenes confine my roving verse :  
To this horizon is my Phœbus bound.  
His godlike acts, and his temptations fierce,  
And former sufferings, elsewhere are found ;  
Loud o'er the rest Cremona's trump doth sound :  
Me softer airs befit, and softer strings  
Of lute, or viol still, more apt for mournful things.

UPON " V.

Night, best patroness of grief!

YE flaming <sup>ie</sup> thy thickest mantle throw, 30  
That erst my flatter'd fancy to belief  
First he-ven and earth are colour'd with my woe;  
So <sup>s</sup>urrows are too dark for day to know:  
Th<sup>ie</sup> leaves should all be black whereon I write,  
And letters, where my tears have wash'd, a wannish white.

VI.

See, see the chariot, and those rushing wheels,  
That whirl'd the prophet up at Chebar flood;  
My spirit some transporting cherub feels  
To bear me where the towers of Salem stood,  
Once glorious towers, now sunk in guiltless blood. 40  
There doth my soul in holy vision sit,  
In pensive trance, and anguish, and ecstatic fit.

VII.

Mine eye hath found that sad sepulchral rock  
That was the casket of Heaven's richest store,  
And here, though grief my feeble hands uplock,  
Yet on the softened quarry would I score  
My plaining verse as lively as before;  
For sure so well instructed are my tears  
That they would fitly fall in order'd characters.

VIII.

Or, should I thence, hurried on viewless wing, 50  
Take up a weeping on the mountains wild,  
The gentle neighbourhood of grove and spring  
Would soon unbosom all their echoes mild;  
And I (for grief is easily beguiled)  
Might think the infection of my sorrows loud  
Had got a race of mourners on some pregnant cloud.

*This Subject the Author finding to be above the years he had when he wrote it, and nothing satisfied with what was begun, left it unfinished.*

## ON TIME.

FLY, envious Time, till thou run out thy race :  
Call on the lazy leaden-stepping Hours,  
Whose speed is but the heavy plummet's pace ;  
And glut thyself with what thy womb devours,  
Which is no more than what is false and vain,  
And merely mortal dross ;  
So little is our loss,  
So little is thy gain !  
For, when as each thing bad thou hast entomb'd,  
And, last of all, thy greedy self consumed, 10  
Then long Eternity shall greet our bliss  
With an individual kiss,  
And Joy shall overtake us as a flood ;  
When every thing that is sincerely good,  
And perfectly divine,  
With Truth, and Peace, and Love, shall ever shine  
About the supreme throne  
Of him, to whose happy-making sight alone  
When once our heavenly-guided soul shall climb,  
Then, all this earthly grossness quit, 20  
Attired with stars we shall for ever sit,  
Triumphing over Death, and Chance, and thee, O Time !

## AT A SOLEMN MUSIC.

BLEST pair of Sirens, pledges of Heaven's joy,  
Sphere-born harmonious sisters, Voice and Verse,  
Wed your divine sounds, and mix'd power employ,  
Dead things with inbreathed sense able to pierce ;  
And to our high-raised phantasy present  
That undisturbed song of pure concent,  
Aye sung before the sapphire-colour'd throne  
To him that sits thereon,  
With saintly shout and solemn jubilee ;

Where the bright Seraphim in burning row  
 Their loud uplifted angel-trumpets blow,  
 And the Cherubic host in thousand quires  
 Touch their immortal harps of golden wires,  
 With those just Spirits that wear victorious palms,  
 Hymns devout and holy psalms  
 Singing everlastingly :  
 That we on Earth, with undiscording voice,  
 May rightly answer that melodious noise ;  
 As once we did, till disproportion'd sin  
 Jarr'd against nature's chime, and with harsh din  
 Broke the fair music that all creatures made  
 To their great Lord, whose love their motion sway'd  
 In perfect diapason, whilst they stood  
 In first obedience, and their state of good.  
 O, may we soon again renew that song,  
 And keep in tune with Heaven, till God ere long  
 To his celestial consort us unite,  
 To live with him, and sing in endless morn of light !

### SONG ON MAY MORNING.

Now the bright morning star, Day's harbinger,  
 Comes dancing from the east, and leads with her  
 The flowery May, who from her green lap throws  
 The yellow cowslip and the pale primrose.  
     Hail, bounteous May, that dost inspire  
     Mirth, and youth, and warm desire !  
     Woods and groves are of thy dressing ;  
     Hill and dale doth boast thy blessing.  
 Thus we salute thee with our early song,  
 And welcome thee, and wish thee long.

## ON SHAKESPEARE.

WHAT needs my Shakespeare for his honour'd bones  
The labour of an age in piled stones?  
Or that his hallow'd reliques should be hid  
Under a star-ypointing pyramid?  
Dear son of memory, great heir of fame,  
What need'st thou such weak witness of thy name?  
Thou in our wonder and astonishment  
Hast built thyself a livelong monument.  
For whilst, to the shame of slow-endeavouring art,  
Thy easy numbers flow, and that each heart  
Hath from the leaves of thy unvalued book  
Those Delphic lines with deep impression took,  
Then thou, our fancy of itself bereaving,  
Dost make us marble with too much conceiving,  
And so sepulchred in such pomp dost lie  
That kings for such a tomb would wish to die.

20

## ON THE UNIVERSITY CARRIER,

*who sickened in the time of his Vacancy, being forbid to go to London by  
reason of the Plague.*

HERE lies old Hobson. Death hath broke his girt,  
And here, alas! hath laid him in the dirt;  
Or else, the ways being foul, twenty to one  
He's here stuck in a slough, and overthrown.  
'Twas such a shifter that, if truth were known,  
Death was half glad when he had got him down;  
For he had any time this ten years full  
Dodged with him betwixt Cambridge and *The Bull*.  
And surely Death could never have prevail'd,  
Had not his weekly course of carriage fail'd;  
But lately, finding him so long at home,  
And thinking now his journey's end was come,  
And that he had ta'en up his latest inn,  
In the kind office of a chamberlin  
Shew'd him his room where he must lodge that night,  
Pull'd off his boots, and took away the light.  
If any ask for him, it shall be said,  
'Hobson has supp'd, and's newly gone to bed.'

20

## ANOTHER ON THE SAME.

HERE lieth one who did most truly prove  
That he could never die while he could move ;  
So hung his destiny, never to rot  
While he might still jog on and keep his trot ;  
Made of sphere-metal, never to decay  
Until his revolution was at stay.  
Time numbers motion, yet (without a crime  
'Gainst old truth) motion number'd out his time ;  
And, like an engine moved with wheel and weight,  
His principles being ceased, he ended straight. 10  
Rest, that gives all men life, gave him his death,  
And too much breathing put him out of breath ;  
Nor were it contradiction to affirm  
Too long vacation hasten'd on his term.  
Merely to drive the time away he sicken'd,  
Fainted, and died, nor would with ale be quicken'd.  
'Nay,' quoth he, on his swooning bed outstretch'd,  
'If I may not carry, sure I 'll ne'er be fetch'd,  
But vow, though the cross doctors all stood hearers,  
For one carrier put down to make six bearers.' 20  
Ease was his chief disease ; and, to judge right,  
He died for heaviness that his cart went light.  
His leisure told him that his time was come,  
And lack of load made his life burdensome,  
That even to his last breath (there be that say 't)  
As he were press'd to death, he cried, 'More weight !'  
But, had his doings lasted as they were,  
He had been an immortal carrier.  
Obedient to the moon he spent his date  
In course reciprocal, and had his fate 30  
Link'd to the mutual flowing of the seas ;  
Yet (strange to think) his wain was his increase.  
His letters are deliver'd all and gone ;  
Only remains this superscription.

AN EPITAPH ON THE MARCHIONESS OF  
WINCHESTER.

THIS rich marble doth inter  
The honour'd wife of Winchester,  
A Viscount's daughter, an Earl's heir,  
Besides what her virtues fair  
Added to her noble birth,  
More than she could own from Earth.  
Summers three times eight save one  
She had told ; alas ! too soon,  
After so short time of breath,  
To house with darkness and with death !  
Yet, had the number of her days  
Been as complete as was her praise,  
Nature and Fate had had no strife  
In giving limit to her life.  
Her high birth and her graces sweet  
Quickly found a lover meet ;  
The virgin quire for her request  
The god that sits at marriage feast ;  
He at their invoking came,  
But with a scarce well-lighted flame ;  
And in his garland, as he stood,  
Ye might discern a cypress bud.  
Once had the early matrons run  
To greet her of a lovely son,  
And now with second hope she goes,  
And calls Lucina to her throes ;  
But, whether by mischance or blame,  
Atropos for Lucina came,  
And with remorseless cruelty  
Spoil'd at once both fruit and tree.  
The hapless babe before his birth  
Had burial, yet not laid in earth ;  
And the languish'd mother's womb  
Was not long a living tomb.  
So have I seen some tender slip,  
Saved with care from winter's nip,

10

20

30



The pride of her carnation train,  
Pluck'd up by some unheedy swain,  
Who only thought to crop the flower  
New shot up from vernal shower ;  
But the fair blossom hangs the head  
Sideways, as on a dying bed,  
And those pearls of dew she wears  
Prove to be presaging tears  
Which the sad morn had let fall  
On her hastening funeral.  
Gentle Lady, may thy grave  
Peace and quiet ever have !  
After this thy travail sore,  
Sweet rest seize thee evermore,  
That, to give the world increase,  
Shortened hast thy own life's lease !  
Here, besides the sorrowing  
That thy noble house doth bring,  
Here be tears of perfect moan  
Wept for thee in Helicon ;  
And some flowers and some bays  
For thy hearse, to strew the ways,  
Sent thee from the banks of Came,  
Devoted to thy virtuous name ;  
Whilst thou, bright Saint, high sitt'st in glory,  
Next her, much like to thee in story,  
That fair Syrian shepherdess,  
Who, after years of barrenness,  
The highly-favour'd Joseph bore  
To him that served for her before,  
And at her next birth, much like thee,  
Through pangs fled to felicity,  
Far within the bosom bright  
Of blazing Majesty and Light :  
There with thee, new-welcome Saint,  
Like fortunes may her soul acquaint,  
With thee there clad in radiant sheen,  
No Marchioness, but now a Queen.

40

50

60

70

goddess of Melancholy in Ancient  
Mythology. So Milton invents her person-  
and provides her with a fanciful  
L'ALLEGRO. — fanciful. Genealogy.

Three-headed — Hence, loathed Melancholy, who guard'd the gate of hell.  
Of Cerberus and blackest Midnight born no such relation  
In Stygian cave forlorn, (dark) in Greek mythology.  
Shy — a 'Mongst horrid shapes, and shrieks, and sights unholy!  
nife, in hell. Find out some uncouth cell, figured like some ominous bird-  
note night. Where brooding Darkness spreads his jealous wings, over the  
And the night-raven sings; Cerberus cell of Melancholy.  
There, under ebon shades and low-brow'd rocks,  
As ragged as thy locks,  
In dark Cimmerian desert ever dwell. In the Cimmerian desert  
But come, thou Goddess fair and free, in the Cimmerian desert  
Three — In Heaven yclep'd Euphrosyne, dreams — and to hope  
And by men heart-easing Mirth; darkness.  
Whom lovely Venus at a birth,  
With two sister Graces more,  
To ivy-crowned Bacchus bore:  
Or whether (as some sager sing)  
The frolic wind that breathes the spring,  
Westwind — Zephyr, with Aurora playing, son of Aurora and her husband  
As he met her once a-Maying, goddess of dawn — morning  
There on beds of violets blue,  
And fresh-blown roses wash'd in dew,  
Fill'd her with thee, a daughter fair,  
So buxom, blithe, and debonair.  
Haste thee, Nymph, and bring with thee  
Jest and youthful Jollity, playing upon waters  
Quips, and Cranks, and wanton Wiles, sportive tricks  
Nods and Becks, and wreath'd Smiles,  
Such as hang on Hebe's cheek, youth and deep beauty of her  
And love to live in dimple sleek; ads.  
Sport that wrinkled Care derides,  
And Laughter holding both his sides.  
Come, and trip it as ye go,  
On the light fantastic toe;  
And in thy right hand lead with thee  
The mountain nymph, sweet Liberty;

And, if I give thee honour due,  
 Mirth, admit me of thy crew,  
 To live with her, and live with thee,  
 In unreprov'd pleasures free; *is a gay bird and merrily*  
 To hear the lark begin his flight, *beginning near the dawn*  
 And singing startle the dull night, *heavenly notes*  
 From his watch-tower in the skies,  
 Till the dappled dawn doth rise;  
 Then to come, in spite of sorrow, *contempt of sorrow*  
 And at my window bid good-morrow,  
 Through the sweet-briar or the vine, *sweet-scented plants*  
 Or the twisted eglantine; *and some things*  
 While the cock with lively din  
 Scatters the rear of Darkness thin; 50  
 And to the stack, or the barn door,  
 Stoutly struts his dames before:  
 Oft listening how the hounds and horn  
 Cheerly rouse the slumbering Morn,  
 From the side of some hoar hill,  
 Through the high wood echoing shrill:  
 Sometime walking, not unseen,  
 By hedgerow elms, on hillocks green,  
 Right against the eastern gate,  
 Where the great sun begins his state, 60  
 Robed in flames and amber light,  
 The clouds in thousand liveries light; *Ward - as in the Son*  
 While the ploughman, near at hand, *some sun*  
 Whistles o'er the furrow'd land,  
 And the milkmaid singeth blithe,  
 And the mower whets his sithe, *early morning is not for*  
 And every shepherd tells his tale *belonging to the*  
 Under the hawthorn in the dale.

Straight mine eye hath caught new pleasures,  
 Whilst the landskip round it measures: 70  
 Russet lawns, and fallows gray,  
 Where the nibbling flocks do stray;  
 Mountains on whose barren breast  
 The labouring clouds do often rest;  
 Meadows trim with daisies pled;  
 Shallow brooks, and rivers wide.

Towers and battlements it sees Windsor Castle -  
 Bosom'd high in tufted trees,  
 Where perhaps some beauty lies, *Consolation of life*  
 The cynosure of neighbouring eyes. *Life is a dream.*  
 Hard by, a cottage chimney smokes  
 From betwixt two aged oaks, *quarrel*  
 Where Corydon and Thyrsis met *name from pastoral*  
 Are at their savoury dinner set *poetry.*  
 Of herbs and other country messes,  
 Which the neat-handed Phillis dresses;  
 And then in haste her bower she leaves,  
 With Thestylis to bind the sheaves;  
 Or, if the earlier season lead,  
 To the tann'd haycock in the mead.  
 Sometimes with secure delight  
 The upland hamlets will invite,  
 When the merry bells ring round  
 And the jocund rebecks sound *more straight music needs*  
 To many a youth and many a maid *play'd upon with a lute*  
 Dancing in the chequer'd shade;  
 And young and old come forth to play  
 On a sunshine holiday,  
 Till the livelong daylight fail:  
 Then to the spicy nut-brown ale,  
 With stories told of many a feat, *from the heroic*  
 How fairy Mab the junkets eat:  
 She was pinch'd and pull'd, she said *the poem*  
 And he, by friar's lantern led, *the poem*  
 Tells how the drudging goblin sweat  
 To earn his cream-bowl duly set,  
 When in one night, ere glimpse of morn,  
 His shadowy flail hath thresh'd the corn,  
 That ten day-labourers could not end;  
 Then lies him down the lubbar fiend, *and was large*  
 And, stretch'd out all the chimney's length,  
 Basks at the fire his hairy strength,  
 And crop-full out of doors he flings,  
 Ere the first cock his matin rings.  
 Thus done the tales, to bed they creep,  
 By whispering winds soon lull'd asleep.

90

100

110

Towered cities please us then,  
 And the busy hum of men,  
 Where throngs of knights and barons bold,  
 In weeds of peace, high triumphs hold,  
 With store of ladies, whose bright eyes  
 Rain influence, and judge the prize  
 Of wit, or arms, while both contend  
 To win her grace whom all commend.  
 There let Hymen oft appear *God of marriage - the next,*  
 In saffron robe, with taper clear,  
 And pomp, and feast, and revelry,  
 With masque and antique pageantry;  
 Such sights as youthful poets dream  
 On summer eves by haunted stream.  
 Then to the well-trod stage anon,  
 If Jonson's learned sock be on, *Comedies of Jonson*  
 Or sweetest Shakespeare, Fancy's child,  
 Warble his native wood-notes wild,  
 And ever, against eating cares,  
 Lap me in soft Lydian airs *One of the Lydian King's words*  
 Married to immortal verse, *Of music known to all Greeks*  
 Such as the meeting soul may pierce  
 In notes, with many a winding bout  
 Of linked sweetness long drawn out,  
 With wanton heed, and giddy cunning,  
 The melting voice through mazes running,  
 Untwisting all the chains that tie  
 The hidden soul of harmony; *the perfect higher and mystical*  
 That Orpheus' self may heave his head *of Greek's time*  
 From golden slumber on a bed  
 Of heap'd Elysian flowers, and hear *Paradise*  
 Such strains as would have won the ear  
 Of Pluto to have quite set free,  
 His half-regain'd Eurydice. *what Orpheus in hell*  
 These delights if thou canst give,  
 Mirth, with thee I mean to live.

was soft and  
 delicious

All these  
 had perfect  
 made to  
 keep  
 well

120

130

140

150

## IL. PENSEROSO.

HENCE, vain deluding Joys,

The brood of Folly without father bred!

How little you bested, *profit to help*

Or fill the fixed mind with all your toys!

Dwell in some idle brain,

And fancies fond with gaudy shapes possess,

As thick and numberless *dust-bairns*

As the gay motes that people the sunbeams,

Or likest hovering dreams,

The fickle pensioners of Morpheus' train. *God of sleep*

But hail! thou Goddess sage and holy!

Hail! divinest Melancholy!

Whose saintly visage is too bright

To hit the sense of human sight,

And therefore to our weaker view

O'erlaid with black, staid Wisdom's hue;

Black, but such as in esteem *son of Ulysses and Andromeda*

Prince Memnon's sister might beseech,

Or that starr'd Ethiop queen that strove *Cassiopeia*

To set her beauty's praise above

The sea nymphs, and their powers offended. *Gods of wine and virgin*

Yet thou art higher far descended:

Thee bright-hair'd Vesta long of yore

To solitary Saturn bore;

His daughter she (in Saturn's reign

Such mixture was not held a stain).

Of in glimmering bowers and glades *front porch*

He met her, and in secret shades

Of woody Ida's inmost grove, *Mr. Dela*

Whilst yet there was no fear of Jove. *guptis*

Come, pensive Nun, devout and pure,

Sober, stedfast, and demure,

All in a robe of darkest grain,

Flowing with majestic train,

And sable stole of cypress lawn

Over thy decent shoulders drawn.

Come, but keep thy wonted state,  
 With even step, and musing gait,  
 And looks commercing with the skies,  
 Thy rapt soul sitting in thine eyes :  
 There held in holy passion still,  
 Forget thyself to marble, till  
 With a sad leaden downward cast  
 Thou fix them on the earth as fast.  
 And join with thee calm Peace and Quiet,  
 Spare Fast, that oft with gods doth diet,  
 And hears the Muses in a ring  
 Aye round about Jove's altar sing.  
 And add to these retired Leisure,  
 That in trim gardens takes his pleasure ;  
 But, first and chiefest, with thee bring  
 Him that yon soars on golden wing,  
 Guiding the fiery-wheeled throne,  
 The Cherub Contemplation ;  
 And the mute Silence hist along,  
 'Less Philomel will deign a song,  
 In her sweetest saddest plight,  
 Smoothing the rugged brow of Night,  
 While Cynthia checks her dragon yoke  
 Gently o'er the accusom'd oak.

40

50

60

Sweet bird, that shunn'st the noise of folly,  
 Most musical, most melancholy !  
 Thee, chauntress, oft the woods among  
 I woo, to hear thy even-song ;  
 And, missing thee, I walk unseen  
 On the dry smooth-shaven green,  
 To behold the wandering moon,  
 Riding near her highest noon,  
 Like one that had been led astray  
 Through the Heaven's wide pathless way,  
 And oft, as if her head she bow'd,  
 Stooping through a fleecy cloud.  
 Oft, on a plat of rising ground,  
 I hear the far-off curfew sound,  
 Over some wide-water'd shore  
 Swinging slow with sullen roar ;

70

(The place in which  
 the only of angels  
 the - to find  
 Contemplation  
 for doing  
 with

Nightingale  
 of King  
 Pandion of  
 Greece - was  
 changed into a night

Or, if the air will not permit,  
Some still removed place will fit,  
Where glowing embers through the room  
Teach light to counterfeit a gloom,  
Far from all resort of mirth,  
Save the cricket on the hearth,  
Or the bellman's drowsy charm  
To bless the doors from nightly harm.  
Or let my lamp at midnight hour  
Be seen in some high lonely tower,

80

Where I may oft outwatch the Bear,  
With ~~three~~ <sup>the</sup> great ~~Hermes~~ <sup>Ursa</sup>, or unsphere  
The spirit of Plato to unfold

*Constellation of Ursa  
Great Bear - till  
morning.*

What worlds or what vast regions hold  
The immortal mind that hath forsook  
Her mansion in this fleshly nook;  
And of those demons that are found  
In fire, air, flood, or under ground,  
Whose power hath a true consent  
With planet, or with element.

90

Sometime let gorgeous Tragedy  
In sceptred pall come sweeping by,  
Presenting Thebes, or Pelops' line,  
Or the tale of Troy divine,  
Or what (though rare) of later age  
Ennobled hath the buskin'd stage.

100

But, O sad Virgin, that thy power  
Might raise Museus from his bower,  
Or bid the soul of Orpheus sing  
Such notes as warbled to the string  
Drew iron tears down Pluto's cheek,  
And made Hell grant what Love did seek.

Or call up him that left half told  
The story of Cambuscan bold,  
Of Camball, and of Algarsife,  
And who had Canace to wife,  
That own'd the virtuous ring and glass,  
And of the wondrous horse of brass  
On which the Tartar king did ride;

*the king of Tartary - in  
Chaucer's story.  
from Don Quixote & Camilla*



And if aught else great bards beside  
 In sage and solemn tunes have sung,  
 Of turneys, and of trophies hung,  
 Of forests, and enchantments drear,  
 Where more is meant than meets the ear.

Thus, Night, oft see me in thy pale career,  
 Till civil-suited Morn appear,  
 Not trick'd and frownc'd, as she was wont  
 With the Attic boy to hunt,  
 But kerchieft in a comely cloud,  
 While rocking winds are piping loud,  
 Or usher'd with a shower still,  
 When the gust hath blown his fill,  
 Ending on the rustling leaves  
 With minute-drops from off the eaves.

And when the sun begins to fling  
 His flaring beams, me, Goddess, bring  
 To arched walks of twilight groves,  
 And shadows brown that Silvan loves,  
 Of pine, or monumental oak,  
 Where the rude axe with heav'd stroke  
 Was never heard the nymphs to daunt,  
 Or fright them from their hallow'd haunt.  
 There in close covert by some brook,  
 Where no profaner eye may look,  
 Hide me from Day's garish eye,  
 While the bee with honied thigh,  
 That at her flowery work doth sing,  
 And the waters murmuring,  
 With such consort as they keep,  
 Entice the dewy-feather'd Sleep.  
 And let some strange mysterious dream  
 Wave at his wings in airy stream  
 Of lively portraiture display'd,  
 Softly on my eyelids laid;  
 And, as I wake, sweet music breathe  
 Above, about, or underneath,  
 Sent by some Spirit to mortals good,  
 Or the unseen Genius of the wood.

130

140

150

But let my due feet never fail  
To walk the studious cloisters pale,  
And love the high embowed roof,  
With antic pillars massy proof,  
And storied windows richly dight,  
Casting a dim religious light.  
There let the pealing organ blow  
To the full-voiced quire below,  
In service high and anthems clear,  
As may with sweetness, through mine ear,  
Dissolve me into ecstasies,  
And bring all Heaven before mine eyes.

160

And may at last my weary age  
Find out the peaceful hermitage,  
The hairy gown and mossy cell,  
Where I may sit and rightly spell  
Of every star that Heaven doth shew,  
And every herb that sips the dew;  
Till old experience do attain  
To something like prophetic strain.

170

These pleasures, Melancholy, give,  
And I with thee will choose to live.

## ARCADES.

*Part of an Entertainment presented to the Countess Dowager of Derby at  
Harefield by some Noble Persons of her Family; who appear on the Scene  
in pastoral habit, moving toward the seat of state, with this song:*

### I. Song.

Look, Nymphs and Shepherds, look!  
What sudden blaze of majesty  
Is that which we from hence descry,  
Too divine to be mistook?

This, this is she  
To whom our vows and wishes bend:  
Here our solemn search hath end.

Fame, that her high worth to raise  
 Seem'd erst so lavish and profuse,  
 We may justly now accuse  
 Of detraction from her praise :  
 Less than half we find express'd ;  
 Envy bid conceal the rest.

10

Mark what radiant state she spreads,  
 In circle round her shining throne  
 Shooting her beams like silver threads :  
 This, this is she alone,  
 Sitting like a goddess bright  
 In the centre of her light.  
 Might she the wise Latona be,  
 Or the towered Cybele,  
 Mother of a hundred gods?  
 Juno dares not give her odds :  
 Who had thought this clime had held  
 A deity so unparallel'd?

20

*As they come forward, THE GENIUS OF THE WOOD appears, and,  
 turning toward them, speaks.*

*Gen.* Stay, gentle Swains, for, though in this disguise,  
 I see bright honour sparkle through your eyes ;  
 Of famous Arcady ye are, and sprung  
 Of that renown'd flood, so often sung,  
 Divine Alpheus, who, by secret sluice,  
 Stole under seas to meet his Arethuse ;  
 And ye, the breathing roses of the wood,  
 Fair silver-buskin'd Nymphs, as great and good.  
 I know this quest of yours and free intent  
 Was all in honour and devotion meant  
 To the great mistress of yon princely shrine,  
 Whom with low reverence I adore as mine,  
 And with all helpful service will comply  
 To further this night's glad solemnity,  
 And lead ye where ye may more near behold  
 What shallow-searching Fame hath left untold ;  
 Which I full oft, amidst these shades alone,  
 Have sat to wonder at, and gaze upon.

30

40

For know, by lot from Jove, I am the Power  
Of this fair wood, and live in oaken bower,  
To nurse the saplings tall, and curl the grove  
With ringlets quaint and wanton windings wove;  
And all my plants I save from nightly ill  
Of noisome winds and blasting vapours chill;  
And from the boughs brush off the evil dew, 30  
And heal the harms of thwarting thunder blue,  
Or what the cross dire-looking planet smites,  
Or hurtful worm with canker'd venom bites.  
When evening grey doth rise, I fetch my round  
Over the mount, and all this hallow'd ground;  
And early, ere the odorous breath of morn  
Awakes the slumbering leaves, or tassell'd horn  
Shakes the high thicket, haste I all about,  
Number my ranks, and visit every sprout  
With puissant words and murmurs made to bless. 60  
But else, in deep of night, when drowsiness  
Hath lock'd up mortal sense, then listen I  
To the celestial Sirens' harmony,  
That sit upon the nine infolded spheres,  
And sing to those that hold the vital shears,  
And turn the adamantine spindle round  
On which the fate of gods and men is wound.  
Such sweet compulsion doth in music lie,  
To lull the daughters of Necessity,  
And keep unsteady Nature to her law, 70  
And the low world in measured motion draw  
After the heavenly tune, which none can hear  
Of human mould with gross unpurg'd ear.  
And yet such music worthiest were to blaze  
The peerless height of her immortal praise  
Whose lustre leads us, and for her most fit,  
If my inferior hand or voice could hit  
Inimitable sounds. Yet, as we go,  
Whate'er the skill of lesser gods can show  
I will assay, her worth to celebrate, 80  
And so attend ye toward her glittering state;  
Where ye may all, that are of noble stem,  
Approach, and kiss her sacred vesture's hem.

II. *Song.*

O'er the smooth enamell'd green,  
 Where no print of step hath been,  
     Follow me, as I sing  
 And touch the warbled string :  
 Under the shady roof  
 Of branching elm star-proof  
     Follow me.  
 I will bring you where she sits,  
 Clad in splendour as befits  
     Her deity.  
 Such a rural Queen  
 All Arcadia hath not seen.

93

III. *Song.*

Nymphs and Shepherds, dance no more  
 By sandy Ladon's lilled banks ;  
 On old Lycæus, or Cyllene hear,  
     Trip no more in twilight ranks ;  
 Though Erymanth your loss deplore,  
     A better soil shall give ye thanks.  
 From the stony Mænalus  
 Bring your flocks, and live with us ;  
 Here ye shall have greater grace,  
 To serve the Lady of this place.  
 Though Syrinx your Pan's mistress were,  
 Yet Syrinx well might wait on her.  
     Such a rural Queen  
 All Arcadia hath not seen.

100

## COMUS.

A MASQUE PRESENTED AT LUDLOW CASTLE, 1634.

*To the Right Honourable John, Lord Viscount Brackley, son and  
heir-apparent to the Earl of Bridgewater etc.*

MY LORD,

This Poem, which received its first occasion of birth from yourself and others of your noble family, and much honour from your own person in the performance, now returns again to make a final dedication of itself to you. Although not openly acknowledged by the Author, yet it is a legitimate offspring, so lovely and so much desired that the often copying of it hath tired my pen to give my several friends satisfaction, and brought me to a necessity of producing it to the public view, and now to offer it up, in all rightful devotion, to those fair hopes and rare endowments of your much-promising youth, which give a full assurance to all that know you of a future excellence. Live, sweet Lord, to be the honour of your name; and receive this as your own from the hands of him who hath by many favours been long obliged to your most honoured Parents, and, as in this representation your attendant *Thyrsis*, so now in all real expression

Your faithful and most humble Servant,

H. LAWES.<sup>1</sup>

*The Copy of a Letter written by Sir Henry Wotton to the  
Author upon the following Poem.*

From the College, this 13 of April, 1638.

Sir,

It was a special favour when you lately bestowed upon me here the first taste of your acquaintance, though no longer than to make me know that I wanted more time to value it and to enjoy it rightly; and, in

<sup>1</sup> This Dedication first appeared in the edition of 1637. It was reprinted in 1645, but omitted in 1673.

truth, if I could then have imagined your farther stay in these parts, which I understood afterwards by Mr H., I would have been bold, in our vulgar phrase, to mend my draught (for you left me with an extreme thirst), and to have begged your conversation again, jointly with your said learned friend, at a poor meal or two, that we might have banded together some good Authors of the ancient time; among which I observed you to have been familiar.

Since your going, you have charged me with new obligations, both for a very kind letter from you dated the 6th of this month, and for a dainty piece of entertainment which came therewith. Wherein I should much commend the tragical part, if the lyrical did not ravish me with a certain Doric delicacy in your Songs and Odes, whereunto I must plainly confess to have seen yet nothing parallel in our language: *Ipsa mollities*. But I must not omit to tell you that I now only owe you thanks for intimating unto me (how modestly soever) the true artificer. For the work itself I had viewed some good while before with singular delight; having received it from our common friend Mr R., in the very close of the late R.'s Poems, printed at Oxford: whereunto it was added (as I now suppose) that the accessory might help out the principal, according to the art of Stationers, and to leave the reader *con la bocca dolce*.

Now, Sir, concerning your travels; wherein I may challenge a little more privilege of discourse with you. I suppose you will not blanch Paris in your way: therefore I have been bold to trouble you with a few lines to Mr M. B., whom you shall easily find attending the young Lord S. as his governor; and you may surely receive from him good directions for the shaping of your farther journey into Italy, where he did reside, by my choice, some time for the King, after mine own recess from Venice.

I should think that your best line will be through the whole length of France to Marseilles, and thence by sea to Genoa; whence the passage into Tuscany is as diurnal as a Gravesend barge. I hasten, as you do, to Florence or Siena, the rather to tell you a short story, from the interest you have given me in your safety.

At Siena I was tabled in the house of one Alberto Scipioni, an old Roman courtier in dangerous times; having been steward to the Duca di Pagliano, who with all his family were strangled, save this only man that escaped by foresight of the tempest. With him I had often much chat of those affairs, into which he took pleasure to look back from his native harbour; and, at my departure toward Rome (which had been the centre of his experience), I had won confidence enough to beg his advice how I might carry myself securely there without offence of others or of mine own conscience. '*Signor Arrigo mio*,' says he, '*i pensieri stretti ed il viso sciolto* will go safely over the whole world.' Of which Delphian oracle (for so I have found it) your judgment doth need no commentary; and

therefore, Sir, I will commit you with it to the best of all securities, God's dear love, remaining

Your friend, as much at command as any of longer date,

HENRY WOTTON.

*Postscript.*

Sir: I have expressly sent this my footboy to prevent your departure without some acknowledgment from me of the receipt of your obliging letter; having myself through some business, I know not how, neglected the ordinary conveyance. In any part where I shall understand you fixed, I shall be glad and diligent to entertain you with home-novelties, even for some fomentation of our friendship, too soon interrupted in the cradle.

---

THE PERSONS.

THE ATTENDANT SPIRIT, afterwards in the  
habit of THYRSIS.

COMUS, with his Crew.

THE LADY.

FIRST BROTHER.

SECOND BROTHER.

SABRINA, the Nymph.

The Chief Persons which presented were:—

The Lord Brackley;

Mr Thomas Egerton, his Brother;

The Lady Alice Egerton.



## COMUS.

*The first Scene discovers a wild wood.*

*The ATTENDANT SPIRIT descends or enters.*

BEFORE the starry threshold of Jove's court  
 My mansion is, where those immortal shapes  
 Of bright aerial spirits live insphered  
 In regions mild of calm and serene air,  
 Above the smoke and stir of this dim spot  
 Which men call Earth, and, with low-thoughted care,  
 Confined and pester'd in this pinfold here,  
 Strive to keep up a frail and feverish being,  
 Unmindful of the crown that Virtue gives,  
 After this mortal change, to her true servants  
 Amongst the enthroned gods on sainted seats.  
 Yet some there be that by due steps aspire  
 To lay their just hands on that golden key  
 That opes the palace of Eternity.  
 To such my errand is; and, but for such,  
 I would not soil these pure ambrosial weeds  
 With the rank vapours of this sin-worn mould.

10

But to my task. Neptune, besides the sway  
 Of every salt flood and each ebbing stream,  
 Took in by lot 'twixt high and nether Jove  
 Imperial rule of all the sea-girt isles  
 That, like to rich and various gems, inlay  
 The unadorned bosom of the deep;  
 Which he, to grace his tributary gods,  
 By course commits to several government,  
 And gives them leave to wear their sapphire crowns  
 And wield their little tridents. But this Isle,  
 The greatest and the best of all the main,  
 He quarters to his blue-hair'd deities;  
 And all this tract that fronts the falling sun  
 A noble Peer of mickle trust and power  
 Has in his charge, with temper'd awe to guide

20

30

An old and haughty nation, proud in arms :  
Where his fair offspring, nursed in princely lore,  
Are coming to attend their father's state,  
And new-entrusted sceptre. But their way  
Lies through the perplex'd paths of this drear wood,  
The nodding horror of whose shady brows  
Threats the forlorn and wandering passenger ;  
And here their tender age might suffer peril,  
But that, by quick command from sovran Jove,  
I was despatch'd for their defence and guard :  
And listen why ; for I will tell you now  
What never yet was heard in tale or song,  
From old or modern bard, in hall or bower.

Bacchus, that first from out the purple grape  
Crush'd the sweet poison of misused wine,  
After the Tuscan mariners transform'd,  
Coasting the Tyrrhene shore, as the winds listed,  
On Circe's island fell. (Who knows not Circe,  
The daughter of the Sun? whose charmed cup  
Whoever tasted lost his upright shape,  
And downward fell into a grovelling swine.)  
This Nymph, that gazed upon his clustering locks,  
With ivy berries wreathed, and his blithe youth,  
Had by him, ere he parted thence, a son  
Much like his father, but his mother more,  
Whom therefore she brought up, and Comus named :  
Who, ripe and frolic of his full-grown age,  
Roving the Celtic and Iberian fields,  
At last betakes him to this ominous wood,  
And, in thick shelter of black shades imbower'd,  
Excels his mother at her mighty art ;  
Offering to every weary traveller  
His orient liquor in a crystal glass,  
To quench the drouth of Phœbus ; which as they taste  
(For most do taste through fond intemperate thirst),  
Soon as the potion works, their human count'nance,  
The express resemblance of the gods, is changed  
Into some brutish form of wolf, or bear,  
Or ounce, or tiger, hog, or bearded goat,  
All other parts remaining as they were.

And they, so perfect is their misery,  
 Not once perceive their foul disfigurement,  
 But boast themselves more comely than before,  
 And all their friends and native home forget,  
 To roll with pleasure in a sensual sty.  
 Therefore, when any favour'd of high Jove  
 Chances to pass through this advent'rous glade,  
 Swift as the sparkle of a glancing star  
 I shoot from heaven to give him safe convoy,  
 As now I do. But first I must put off  
 These my sky-robcs, span out of Iris' woof,  
 And take the weeds and likeness of a swain  
 That to the service of this house belongs,  
 Who, with his soft pipe and smooth-dittied song,  
 Well knows to still the wild winds when they roar,  
 And hush the waving woods ; nor of less faith,  
 And in this office of his mountain watch  
 Likeliest, and nearest to the present aid  
 Of this occasion. But I hear the tread  
 Of hateful steps ; I must be viewless now.

80

90

COMUS *enters, with a charming-rod in one hand, his glass in the other ; with him a rout of monsters, headed like sundry sorts of wild beasts, but otherwise like men and women, their apparel glistening. They come in making a riotous and merrily noise, with torches in their hands.*

Comus. The star that bids the shepherd fold  
 Now the top of heaven doth hold ;  
 And the gilded car of day  
 His glowing axle doth allay  
 In the steep Atlantic stream ;  
 And the slope sun his upward beam  
 Shoots against the dusky pole,  
 Pacing toward the other goal  
 Of his chamber in the east.  
 Meanwhile, welcome joy and feast,  
 Midnight shout and revelry,  
 Tipsy dance and jollity.  
 Braid your locks with rosy twine,  
 Dropping odours, dropping wine.  
 Rigour now is gone to bed,

100

And Advice with scrupulous head,  
Strict Age, and sour Severity,  
With their grave saws, in slumber lie.  
We, that are of purer fire,  
Imitate the starry quire,  
Who, in their nightly watchful spheres,  
Lead in swift round the months and years.  
The sounds and seas, with all their finny drove,  
Now to the moon in wavering morrice move;  
And on the tawny sands and shelves  
Trip the pert faeries and the dapper elves.  
By dimpled brook and fountain brim,  
The wood-nymphs, deck'd with daisies trim,  
Their merry wakes and pastimes keep:  
What hath night to do with sleep?  
Night hath better sweets to prove;  
Venus now wakes, and wakens Love.  
Come, let us our rites begin;  
'Tis only daylight that makes sin,  
Which these dun shades will ne'er report.  
Hail, goddess of nocturnal sport,  
Dark-veil'd Cotytto, to whom the secret flame  
Of midnight torches burns! mysterious dame,  
That ne'er art call'd but when the dragon womb  
Of Stygian darkness spets her thickest gloom,  
And makes one blot of all the air,  
Stay thy cloudy ebon chair,  
Wherein thou ridest with Hecat', and befriend  
Us thy vow'd priests, till utmost end  
Of all thy dues be done, and none left out,  
Ere the blabbing eastern scout,  
The nice Morn on the Indian steep,  
From her cabin'd loop-hole peep,  
And to the tell-tale Sun descry  
Our conceal'd solemnity.  
Come, knit hands, and beat the ground  
In a light fantastic round.

*The Measure.*

Break off, break off! I feel the different pace  
Of some chaste footing near about this ground.

Run to your shrouds within these brakes and trees ;  
 Our number may affright. Some virgin sure  
 (For so I can distinguish by mine art)  
 Benighted in these woods ! Now to my charms,  
 And to my wily trains : I shall ere long  
 Be well stock'd with as fair a herd as grazed  
 About my mother Circe. Thus I hurl  
 My dazzling spells into the spongy air,  
 Of power to cheat the eye with blear illusion,  
 And give it false presentments, lest the place  
 And my quaint habits breed astonishment,  
 And put the damsel to suspicious flight ;  
 Which must not be, for that's against my course.  
 I, under fair pretence of friendly ends,  
 And well-placed words of glozing courtesy,  
 Baited with reasons not unpalatable,  
 Wind me into the easy-hearted man,  
 And hug him into snares. When once her eye  
 Hath met the virtue of this magic dust  
 I shall appear some harmless villager,  
 Whom thrift keeps up about his country gear.  
 But here she comes ; I fairly step aside,  
 And hearken, if I may, her business here.

150

160

*The LADY enters.*

*Lady.* This way the noise was, if mine ear be true,  
 My best guide now. Methought it was the sound  
 Of riot and ill-managed merriment,  
 Such as the jocund flute or gamesome pipe  
 Stirs up among the loose unletter'd hinds,  
 When, for their teeming flocks and granges full,  
 In wanton dance they praise the bounteous Pan,  
 And thank the gods amiss. I should be loth  
 To meet the rudeness and swill'd insolence  
 Of such late wassailers ; yet, oh ! where else  
 Shall I inform my unacquainted feet  
 In the blind mazes of this tangled wood ?  
 My brothers, when they saw me wearied out  
 With this long way, resolving here to lodge  
 Under the spreading favour of these pines,

170

180

Stepp'd, as they said, to the next thicket side  
To bring me berries, or such cooling fruit  
As the kind hospitable woods provide.  
They left me then when the grey-hooded Even,  
Like a sad votarist in palmer's weed,  
Rose from the hindmost wheels of Phœbus' wain.  
But where they are, and why they came not back,  
Is now the labour of my thoughts. 'Tis likeliest  
They had engaged their wandering steps too far;  
And envious darkness, ere they could return,  
Had stolen them from me. Else, O thievish Night,  
Why shouldst thou, but for some felonious end,  
In thy dark lantern thus close up the stars  
That Nature hung in heaven, and fill'd their lamps  
With everlasting oil, to give due light  
To the misled and lonely traveller?  
This is the place, as well as I may guess,  
Whence even now the tumult of loud mirth  
Was rife, and perfect in my listening ear;  
Yet nought but single darkness do I find.  
What might this be? A thousand fantasies  
Begin to throng into my memory,  
Of calling shapes, and beckoning shadows dire,  
And airy tongues that syllable men's names  
On sands and shores and desert wildernesses.  
These thoughts may startle well, but not astound  
The virtuous mind, that ever walks attended  
By a strong siding champion, Conscience.—  
O, welcome, pure-eyed Faith, white-handed Hope,  
Thou hovering angel girt with golden wings,  
And thou unblemish'd form of Chastity!  
I see ye visibly, and now believe  
That He, the Supreme Good, to whom all things ill  
Are but as slavish officers of vengeance,  
Would send a glistering guardian, if need were,  
To keep my life and honour unassail'd.  
Was I deceived, or did a sable cloud  
Turn forth her silver lining on the night?  
I did not err: there does a sable cloud  
Turn forth her silver lining on the night,

199

200

210

220

And casts a gleam over this tufted grove.  
 I cannot hallo to my brothers, but  
 Such noise as I can make to be heard farthest  
 I'll venture; for my new-enliven'd spirits  
 Prompt me, and they perhaps are not far off.

*Song.*

Sweet Echo, sweetest nymph, that livest unseen

230

Within thy airy shell

By slow Meander's margent green,

And in the violet-embroider'd vale

Where the love-lorn nightingale

Nightly to thee her sad song mourneth well.

Canst thou not tell me of a gentle pair

That likest thy Narcissus are?

O, if thou have

Hid them in some flowery cave,

Tell me but where,

240

Sweet Queen of Parley, Daughter of the sphere!

So may'st thou be translated to the skies,

And give resounding grace to all heaven's harmonies!

*Comus.* Can any mortal mixture of earth's mould

Breathe such divine enchanting ravishment?

Sure something holy lodges in that breast,

And with these raptures moves the vocal air

To testify his hidden residence.

How sweetly did they float upon the wings

Of silence, through the empty-vaulted night,

250

At every fall smoothing the raven down

Of darkness till it smiled! I have oft heard

My mother Circe with the Sirens three,

Amidst the flowery-kirtled Naiades,

Culling their potent herbs and baleful drugs,

Who, as they sung, would take the prison'd soul,

And lap it in Elysium: Scylla wept,

And chid her barking waves into attention,

And fell Charybdis murmur'd soft applause.

Yet they in pleasing slumber lull'd the sense,

260

And in sweet madness robb'd it of itself;

But such a sacred and home-felt delight,  
 Such sober certainty of waking bliss,  
 I never heard till now. I'll speak to her,  
 And she shall be my queen.—Hail, foreign wonder!  
 Whom certain these rough shades did never breed,  
 Unless the goddess that in rural shrine  
 Dwell'st here with Pan or Silvan, by blest song  
 Forbidding every bleak unkindly fog  
 To touch the prosperous growth of this tall wood.

270

*Lady.* Nay, gentle shepherd, ill is lost that praise  
 That is address'd to unattending ears.  
 Not any boast of skill, but extreme shift  
 How to regain my sever'd company,  
 Compell'd me to awake the courteous Echo  
 To give me answer from her mossy couch.

*Comus.* What chance, good Lady, hath bereft you thus?

*Lady.* Dim darkness and this leavy labyrinth.

*Comus.* Could that divide you from near-ushering guides?

*Lady.* They left me weary on a grassy turf.

280

*Comus.* By falsehood, or discourtesy, or why?

*Lady.* To seek i' the valley some cool friendly spring.

*Comus.* And left your fair side all unguarded, Lady?

*Lady.* They were but twain, and purposed quick return.

*Comus.* Perhaps forestalling night prevented them.

*Lady.* How easy my misfortune is to hit!

*Comus.* Imports their loss, beside the present need?

*Lady.* No less than if I should my brothers lose.

*Comus.* Were they of manly prime, or youthful bloom?

*Lady.* As smooth as Hebe's their unrazor'd lips.

290

*Comus.* Two such I saw, what time the labour'd ox

In his loose traces from the furrow came,  
 And the swink'd hedger at his supper sat.  
 I saw them under a green mantling vine,  
 That crawls along the side of yon small hill,  
 Plucking ripe clusters from the tender shoots;  
 Their port was more than human, as they stood:  
 I took it for a faery vision  
 Of some gay creatures of the element,  
 That in the colours of the rainbow live,  
 And play i' the plighted clouds. I was awe-strook,

300



And, as I pass'd, I worshipp'd. If those you seek,  
It were a journey like the path to Heaven  
To help you find them.

*Lady.* Gentle villager,

What readiest way would bring me to that place?

*Comus.* Due west it rises from this shrubby point.

*Lady.* To find out that, good shepherd, I suppose,  
In such a scant allowance of star-light,  
Would overtask the best land-pilot's art,  
Without the sure guess of well-practised feet.

310

*Comus.* I know each lane, and every alley green,  
Dingle, or bushy dell, of this wild wood,  
And every bosky bourn from side to side,  
My daily walks and ancient neighbourhood;  
And, if your stray attendance be yet lodged,  
Or shroud within these limits, I shall know  
Ere morrow wake, or the low-roosted lark  
From her thatch'd pallet rouse. If otherwise,  
I can conduct you, Lady, to a low  
But loyal cottage, where you may be safe  
Till further quest.

320

*Lady.* Shepherd, I take thy word,  
And trust thy honest-offer'd courtesy,  
Which oft is sooner found in lowly sheds,  
With smoky rafters, than in tapestry halls  
And courts of princes, where it first was named,  
And yet is most pretended. In a place  
Less warranted than this, or less secure,  
I cannot be, that I should fear to change it.  
Eye me, blest Providence, and square my trial  
To my proportion'd strength! Shepherd, lead on. . .

330

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter the TWO BROTHERS.*

*Eld. Bro.* Unmuffle, ye faint stars; and thou, fair moon,  
That won'tst to love the traveller's benison,  
Stoop thy pale visage through an amber cloud,  
And disinherit Chaos, that reigns here  
In double night of darkness and of shades;  
Or, if your influence be quite damm'd up

With black usurping mists, some gentle taper,  
 Though a rush-candle from the wicker hole  
 Of some clay habitation, visit us  
 With thy long levell'd rule of streaming light,  
 And thou shalt be our star of Arcady,  
 Or Tyrian Cynosure.

340

*Sec. Bro.* Or, if our eyes  
 Be barr'd that happiness, might we but hear  
 The folded flocks, penn'd in their wattled cotes,  
 Or sound of pastoral reed with oaten stops,  
 Or whistle from the lodge, or village cock  
 Count the night-watches to his feathery dames,  
 'Twould be some solace yet, some little cheering,  
 In this close dungeon of innumerable boughs.  
 But, Oh, that hapless virgin, our lost sister!  
 Where may she wander now, whither betake her  
 From the chill dew, amongst rude burs and thistles?  
 Perhaps some cold bank is her bolster now,  
 Or 'gainst the rugged bark of some broad elm  
 Leans her unpillow'd head, fraught with sad fears.  
 What if in wild amazement and affright,  
 Or, while we speak, within the direful grasp  
 Of savage hunger, or of savage heat!

350

*Eld. Bro.* Peace, brother: be not over-exquisite  
 To cast the fashion of uncertain evils;  
 For, grant they be so, while they rest unknown,  
 What need a man forestall his date of grief,  
 And run to meet what he would most avoid?  
 Or, if they be but false alarms of fear  
 How bitter is such self-delusion!  
 I do not think my sister so to seek,  
 Or so unprincipled in virtue's book,  
 And the sweet peace that goodness bosoms ever,  
 As that the single want of light and noise  
 (Not being in danger, as I trust she is not)  
 Could stir the constant mood of her calm thoughts,  
 And put them into misbecoming plight.  
 Virtue could see to do what Virtue would  
 By her own radiant light, though sun and moon  
 Were in the flat sea sunk. And Wisdom's self

360

370

Oft seeks to sweet retired solitude,  
 Where, with her best nurse, Contemplation,  
 She plumes her feathers, and lets grow her wings,  
 That, in the various bustle of resort,  
 Were all-to ruffled, and sometimes impair'd.  
 He that has light within his own clear breast  
 May sit i' the centre, and enjoy bright day:  
 But he that hides a dark soul and foul thoughts  
 Benighted walks under the mid-day sun;  
 Himself is his own dungeon.

380

*Sec. Bro.* 'Tis most true  
 That musing Meditation most affects  
 The pensive secrecy of desert cell,  
 Far from the cheerful haunt of men and herds,  
 And sits as safe as in a senate-house;  
 For who would rob a hermit of his weeds,  
 His few books, or his beads, or maple dish,  
 Or do his grey hairs any violence?  
 But Beauty, like the fair Hesperian tree  
 Laden with blooming gold, had need the guard  
 Of dragon watch with unenchanted eye  
 To save her blossoms, and defend her fruit,  
 From the rash hand of bold Incontinence.  
 You may as well spread out the unsunn'd heaps  
 Of miser's treasure by an outlaw's den,  
 And tell me it is safe, as bid me hope  
 Danger will wink on Opportunity,  
 And let a single helpless maiden pass  
 Uninjured in this wild surrounding waste.  
 Of night or loneliness it recks me not;  
 I fear the dread events that dog them both,  
 Lest some ill-greeting touch attempt the person  
 Of our unowned sister.

390

400

*Eld. Bro.* I do not, brother,  
 Infer as if I thought my sister's state  
 Secure without all doubt or controversy;  
 Yet, where an equal poise of hope and fear  
 Does arbitrate the event, my nature is  
 That I incline to hope rather than fear,  
 And gladly banish squint suspicion.

410

My sister is not so defenceless left  
As you imagine; she has a hidden strength,  
Which you remember not.

*Sec. Bro.*

What hidden strength,  
Unless the strength of Heaven, if you mean that?

*Eld. Bro.* I mean that too, but yet a hidden strength,  
Which, if Heaven gave it, may be term'd her own.

'Tis chastity, my brother, chastity:

She that has that is clad in complete steel,  
And, like a quiver'd nymph with arrows keen,  
May trace huge forests, and unharbour'd heaths,  
Infamous hills, and sandy perilous wilds;  
Where, through the sacred rays of chastity,  
No salvage fierce, bandite, or mountaineer,  
Will dare to soil her virgin purity.

Yea, there where very desolation dwells,  
By grots and caverns shagg'd with horrid shades,  
She may pass on with unblench'd majesty,  
Be it not done in pride, or in presumption.

Some say no evil thing that walks by night,  
In fog or fire, by lake or moorish fen,  
Blue meagre hag, or stubborn unlaid ghost,  
That breaks his magic chains at curfew time,  
No goblin or swart faery of the mine,  
Hath hurtful power o'er true virginity.

Do ye believe me yet, or shall I call  
Antiquity from the old schools of Greece  
To testify the arms of chastity?

Hence had the huntress Dian her dread bow,  
Fair silver-shafted queen for ever chaste,  
Wherewith she tamed the brindled lioness  
And spotted mountain pard, but set at nought  
The frivolous bolt of Cupid; gods and men  
Fear'd her stern frown, and she was queen o' the woods.

What was that snaky-headed Gorgon shield  
That wise Minerva wore, unconquer'd virgin,  
Wherewith she freezed her foes to congeal'd stone,  
But rigid looks of chaste austerity,  
And noble grace that dash'd brute violence  
With sudden adoration and blank awe?

So dear to Heaven is saintly chastity  
 That, when a soul is found sincerely so,  
 A thousand liveried angels lackey her,  
 Driving far off each thing of sin and guilt,  
 And in clear dream and solemn vision  
 Tell her of things that no gross ear can hear  
 Till oft converse with heavenly habitants  
 Begin to cast a beam on the outward shape,  
 The unpolluted temple of the mind,  
 And turns it by degrees to the soul's essence,  
 Till all be made immortal. But, when lust,  
 By unchaste looks, loose gestures, and foul talk,  
 But most by lewd and lavish act of sin,  
 Lets in defilement to the inward parts,  
 The soul grows clotted by contagion,  
 Imbodies, and imbrutes, till she quite lose  
 The divine property of her first being.  
 Such are those thick and gloomy shadows damp  
 Oft seen in charnel vaults and sepulchres,  
 Lingered and sitting by a new-made grave,  
 As loth to leave the body that it loved,  
 And link'd itself by carnal sensuality  
 To a degenerate and degraded state.

460

470

*Sec. Bro.* How charming is divine Philosophy!  
 Not harsh and crabbed, as dull fools suppose,  
 But musical as is Apollo's lute,  
 And a perpetual feast of nectar'd sweets,  
 Where no crude surfeit reigns.

*Eld. Bro.* List! list! I hear  
 Some far-off hallo break the silent air.

480

*Sec. Bro.* Methought so too; what should it be?

*Eld. Bro.* For certain,  
 Either some one, like us, night-founder'd here,  
 Or else some neighbour woodman, or, at worst,  
 Some roving robber calling to his fellows.

*Sec. Bro.* Heaven keep my sister! Again, again, and near!  
 Best draw, and stand upon our guard.

*Eld. Bro.* I'll hallo.  
 If he be friendly, he comes well: if not,  
 Defence is a good cause, and Heaven be for us.

*Enter the ATTENDANT SPIRIT, habited like a shepherd.*

That hallo I should know. What are you? speak.

490

Come not too near; you fall on iron stakes else.

*Spir.* What voice is that? my young Lord? speak again.

*Sec. Bro.* O brother, 'tis my father's Shepherd, sure.

*Eld. Bro.* Thyrsis! whose artful strains have oft delay'd  
The huddling brook to hear his madrigal,

And sweeten'd every musk-rose of the dale.

How camest thou here, good swain? Hath any ram

Slipp'd from the fold, or young kid lost his dam,

Or straggling wether the pent flock forsook?

How couldst thou find this dark sequester'd nook?

500

*Spir.* O my loved master's heir, and his next joy,  
I came not here on such a trivial toy

As a stray'd ewe, or to pursue the stealth

Of pilfering wolf; not all the fleecy wealth

That doth enrich these downs is worth a thought

To this my errand, and the care it brought.

But, oh! my virgin Lady, where is she?

How chance she is not in your company?

*Eld. Bro.* To tell thee sadly, Shepherd, without blame

Or our neglect, we lost her as we came.

510

*Spir.* Ay me unhappy! then my fears are true.

*Eld. Bro.* What fears, good Thyrsis? Prithee briefly shew.

*Spir.* I'll tell ye. 'Tis not vain or fabulous  
(Though so esteem'd by shallow ignorance)

What the sage poets, taught by the heavenly Muse,

Storied of old in high immortal verse

Of dire Chimeras and enchanted isles,

And rifted rocks whose entrance leads to Hell,

For such there be, but unbelief is blind.

Within the navel of this hideous wood,

520

Immured in cypress shades, a sorcerer dwells,

Of Bacchus and of Circe born, great Comus,

Deep skill'd in all his mother's witcheries,

And here to every thirsty wanderer

By sly enticement gives his baneful cup,

With many murmurs mix'd, whose pleasing poison

The visage quite transforms of him that drinks,

And the inglorious likeness of a beast  
Fixes instead, unfrizzling reason's mintage  
Character'd in the face. This have I learnt  
Tending my flocks hard by i' the hilly crofts  
That brow this bottom glade: whence night by night  
He and his monstrous rout are heard to howl  
Like stabled wolves, or tigers at their prey,  
Doing abhorred rites to Hecate  
In their obscurèd haunts of inmost bowers.  
Yet have they many baits and guileful spells  
To inveigle and invite the unwary sense  
Of them that pass unweeting by the way.  
This evening late, by then the chewing flocks  
Had ta'en their supper on the savoury herb  
Of knot-grass dew-besprent, and were in fold,  
I sat me down to watch upon a bank  
With ivy canopied, and interwove  
With flaunting honeysuckle, and began,  
Wrapt in a pleasing fit of melancholy,  
To meditate my rural minstrelsy,  
Till fancy had her fill. But ere a close  
The wonted roar was up amidst the woods,  
And fill'd the air with barbarous dissonance;  
At which I ceased, and listen'd them a while,  
Till an unusual stop of sudden silence  
Gave respite to the drowsy-flighted steeds  
That draw the litter of close-curtain'd Sleep.  
At last a soft and solemn-breathing sound  
Rose like a steam of rich distill'd perfumes,  
And stole upon the air, that even Silence  
Was took ere she was ware, and wish'd she might  
Deny her nature, and be never more,  
Still to be so displaced. I was all ear,  
And took in strains that might create a soul  
Under the ribs of Death. But, oh! ere long  
Too well I did perceive it was the voice  
Of my most honour'd Lady, your dear sister.  
Amazed I stood, harrow'd with grief and fear;  
And 'O poor hapless nightingale,' thought I,  
'How sweet thou sing'st, how near the deadly snare!'

530

540

550

560

Then down the lawns I ran with headlong haste,  
 Through paths and turnings often trod by day,  
 Till, guided by mine ear, I found the place  
 Where that damn'd wizard, hid in sly disguise  
 (For so by certain signs I knew), had met  
 Already, ere my best speed could prevent,  
 The aidless innocent lady, his wish'd prey;  
 Who gently ask'd if he had seen such two,  
 Supposing him some neighbour villager.  
 Longer I durst not stay, but soon I guess'd  
 Ye were the two she meant; with that I sprung  
 Into swift flight, till I had found you here;  
 But further know I not.

570

*Sec. Bro.* O night and shades,  
 How are ye join'd with hell in triple knot  
 Against the unarmed weakness of one virgin,  
 Alone and helpless! Is this the confidence  
 You gave me, brother?

580

*Eld. Bro.* Yes, and keep it still;  
 Lean on it safely; not a period  
 Shall be unsaid for me. Against the threats  
 Of malice or of sorcery, or that power  
 Which erring men call Chance, this I hold firm:  
 Virtue may be assail'd, but never hurt,  
 Surprised by unjust force, but not enthrall'd;  
 Yea, even that which Mischief meant most harm  
 Shall in the happy trial prove most glory.  
 But evil on itself shall back recoil,  
 And mix no more with goodness, when at last,  
 Gather'd like scum, and settled to itself,  
 It shall be in eternal restless change  
 Self-fed and self-consumed. If this fail,  
 The pillar'd firmament is rottenness,  
 And earth's base built on stubble. But come, let's on!  
 Against the opposing will and arm of Heaven  
 May never this just sword be lifted up;  
 But, for that damn'd magician, let him be girt  
 With all the grisly legions that troop  
 Under the sooty flag of Acheron,  
 Harpies and Hydras, or all the monstrous forms

590

600



'Twixt Africa and Ind, I'll find him out,  
And force him to return his purchase back,  
Or drag him by the curls to a foul death,  
Cursed as his life.

*Spir.* Alas! good vent'rous youth,  
I love thy courage yet, and bold emprise;  
But here thy sword can do thee little stead.  
Far other arms and other weapons must  
Be those that quell the might of hellish charms.  
He with his bare wand can unthread thy joints,  
And crumble all thy sinews.

*Eld. Bro.* Why, prithee, Shepherd,  
How durst thou then thyself approach so near  
As to make this relation?

*Spir.* Care and utmost shifts  
How to secure the Lady from surprisal  
Brought to my mind a certain shepherd lad,  
Of small regard to see to, yet well skill'd  
In every virtuous plant and healing herb  
That spreads her verdant leaf to the morning ray.  
He loved me well, and oft would beg me sing;  
Which when I did, he on the tender grass  
Would sit, and hearken even to ecstasy,  
And in requital ope his leathern scrip,  
And shew me simples of a thousand names,  
Telling their strange and vigorous faculties.  
Amongst the rest a small unsightly root,  
But of divine effect, he cull'd me out.  
The leaf was darkish, and had prickles on it,  
But in another country, as he said,  
Bore a bright golden flower, but not in this soil:  
Unknown, and like esteem'd, and the dull swain  
Treads on it daily with his clouted shoon;  
And yet more med'cinal is it than that Moly  
That Hermes once to wise Ulysses gave.  
He called it Harmony, and gave it me,  
And bade me keep it as of sovran use  
'Gainst all enchantments, mildew blast, or damp,  
Or gastly Furies' apparition.  
I pursed it up, but little reckoning made,

610

620

630

640

Till now that this extremity compell'd.  
 But now I find it true; for by this means  
 I knew the foul enchanter, though disguised,  
 Enter'd the very lime-twigs of his spells,  
 And yet came off. If you have this about you  
 (As I will give you when we go) you may  
 Boldly assault the necromancer's hall;  
 Where if he be, with dauntless hardihood  
 And brandish'd blade rush on him: break his glass,  
 And shed the luscious liquor on the ground;  
 But seize his wand. Though he and his curst crew  
 Fierce sign of battle make, and menace high,  
 Or, like the sons of Vulcan, vomit smoke,  
 Yet will they soon retire, if he but shrink.  
*Eld. Bro.* Thyrsis, lead on apace; I'll follow thee;  
 And some good angel bear a shield before us!

629

*The Scene changes to a stately palace, set out with all manner of deliciousness: soft music, tables spread with all dainties. COMUS appears with his rabble, and THE LADY set in an enchanted chair; to whom he offers his glass; which she puts by, and goes about to rise.*

*Comus.* Nay, Lady, sit. If I but wave this wand,  
 Your nerves are all chain'd up in alabaster,  
 And you a statue, or as Daphne was,  
 Root-bound, that fled Apollo.

660

*Lady.* Fool, do not boast.  
 Thou canst not touch the freedom of my mind  
 With all thy charms, although this corporal rind  
 Thou hast immanacled while Heaven sees good.

*Comus.* Why are you vex'd, Lady? why do you frown?  
 Here dwell no frowns, nor anger; from these gates  
 Sorrow flies far. See, here be all the pleasures  
 That fancy can beget on youthful thoughts,  
 When the fresh blood grows lively, and returns  
 Brisk as the April buds in primrose season.  
 And first behold this cordial julep here,  
 That flames and dances in his crystal bounds,  
 With spirits of balm and fragrant syrups mix'd.  
 Not that Nepenthes which the wife of Thone

670

In Egypt gave to Jove-born Helena  
 Is of such power to stir up joy as this,  
 To life so friendly, or so cool to thirst.  
 Why should you be so cruel to yourself,  
 And to those dainty limbs, which Nature lent  
 For gentle usage and soft delicacy?  
 But you invert the covenants of her trust,  
 And harshly deal, like an ill borrower,  
 With that which you received on other terms,  
 Scorning the unexempt condition  
 By which all mortal frailty must subsist,  
 Refreshment after toil, ease after pain,  
 That have been tired all day without repast,  
 And timely rest have wanted. But, fair virgin,  
 This will restore all soon.

68a

*Lady.*

'Twill not, false traitor!  
 'Twill not restore the truth and honesty  
 That thou hast banish'd from thy tongue with lies.  
 Was this the cottage and the safe abode  
 Thou told'st me of? What grim aspects are these,  
 These ugly-headed monsters? Mercy guard me!  
 Hence with thy brew'd enchantments, foul deceiver!  
 Hast thou betray'd my credulous innocence  
 With vizard'd falsehood and base forgery?  
 And wouldst thou seek again to trap me here  
 With lickerish baits, fit to ensnare a brute?  
 Were it a draught for Juno when she banquets,  
 I would not taste thy treasonous offer. None  
 But such as are good men can give good things;  
 And that which is not good is not delicious  
 To a well-govern'd and wise appetite.

69a

70a

*Comus.* O foolishness of men! that lend their ears  
 To those budge doctors of the Stoic fur,  
 And fetch their precepts from the Cynic tub,  
 Praising the lean and sallow Abstinence!  
 Wherefore did Nature pour her bounties forth  
 With such a full and unwithdrawing hand,  
 Covering the earth with odours, fruits, and flocks,  
 Thronging the seas with spawn innumerable,  
 But all to please and sate the curious taste?

71a

And set to work millions of spinning worms,  
That in their green shops weave the smooth-hair'd silk,  
To deck her sons ; and, that no corner might  
Be vacant of her plenty, in her own loins  
She hutch'd the all-worshipp'd ore and precious gems,  
To store her children with. If all the world 720  
Should, in a pet of temperance, feed on pulse,  
Drink the clear stream, and nothing wear but frieze,  
The All-giver would be unthank'd, would be unpraised,  
Not half his riches known, and yet despised ;  
And we should serve him as a grudging master,  
As a penurious niggard of his wealth,  
And live like Nature's bastards, not her sons,  
Who would be quite surcharged with her own weight,  
And strangled with her waste fertility :  
The earth cumber'd, and the wing'd air dark'd with plumes, 730  
The herds would over-multitude their lords ;  
The sea o'erfraught would swell, and the unsought diamonds  
Would so emblaze the forehead of the deep,  
And so bestud with stars, that they below  
Would grow inured to light, and come at last  
To gaze upon the sun with shameless brows.  
List, Lady ; be not coy, and be not cozen'd  
With that same vaunted name, Virginity.  
Beauty is Nature's coin ; must not be hoarded,  
But must be current ; and the good thereof 740  
Consists in mutual and partaken bliss,  
Unsavoury in the enjoyment of itself.  
If you let slip time, like a neglected rose  
It withers on the stalk with languish'd head.  
Beauty is Nature's brag, and must be shewn  
In courts, at feasts, and high solemnities,  
Where most may wonder at the workmanship.  
It is for homely features to keep home ;  
They had their name thence : coarse complexions  
And cheeks of sorry grain will serve to ply 750  
The sampler, and to tease the huswife's wool.  
What need a vermeil-tinctured lip for that,  
Love-darting eyes, or tresses like the morn ?  
There was another meaning in these gifts ;

Think what, and be advised ; you are but young yet.

*Lady.* I had not thought to have unlock'd my lips  
In this unhallow'd air, but that this juggler  
Would think to charm my judgment, as mine eyes,  
Obtruding false rules prank'd in reason's garb.

I hate when Vice can bolt her arguments  
And Virtue has no tongue to check her pride.  
Impostor ! do not charge most innocent Nature,

As if she would her children should be riotous  
With her abundance. She, good cateress,

Means her provision only to the good,  
That live according to her sober laws,  
And holy dictate of spare Temperance.

If every just man that now pines with want  
Had but a moderate and beseeming share  
Of that which lewdly-pamper'd Luxury

Now heaps upon some few with vast excess,  
Nature's full blessings would be well dispensed  
In unsuperfluous even proportion,

And she no whit encumber'd with her store ;  
And then the Giver would be better thank'd,  
His praise due paid : for swinish gluttony  
Ne'er looks to Heaven amidst his gorgeous feast,  
But with besotted base ingratitude

Crams, and blasphemes his Feeder. Shall I go on ?  
Or have I said enough ? To him that dares

Arm his profane tongue with contemptuous words  
Against the sun-clad power of Chastity

Fain would I something say ;—yet to what end ?

Thou hast nor ear, nor soul, to apprehend

The sublime notion and high mystery

That must be utter'd to unfold the sage

And serious doctrine of Virginitv ;

And thou art worthy that thou shouldst not know

More happiness than this thy present lot.

Enjoy your dear wit, and gay rhetoric,

That hath so well been taught her dazzling fence ;

Thou art not fit to hear thyself convinced.

Yet, should I try, the uncontrolled worth

Of this pure cause would kindle my rapt spirits

To such a flame of sacred vehemence  
That dumb things would be moved to sympathize,  
And the brute Earth would lend her nerves, and shake,  
Till all thy magic structures, rear'd so high,  
Were shatter'd into heaps o'er thy false head.

Comus. She fables not. I feel that I do fear  
Her words set off by some superior power;  
And, though not mortal, yet a cold shuddering dew  
Dips me all o'er, as when the wrath of Jove  
Speaks thunder and the chains of Erebus  
To some of Saturn's crew. I must dissemble,  
And try her yet more strongly.—Come, no more!  
This is mere moral babble, and direct  
Against the canon laws of our foundation.  
I must not suffer this; yet 'tis but the lees  
And settlings of a melancholy blood.  
But this will cure all straight; one sip of this  
Will bathe the drooping spirits in delight  
Beyond the bliss of dreams. Be wise, and taste...

800

810

*The BROTHERS rush in with swords drawn, wrest his glass out of his hand,  
and break it against the ground: his rout make signs of resistance, but  
are all driven in. The ATTENDANT SPIRIT comes in.*

Spir. What! have you let the false enchanter scape?  
O ye mistook; ye should have snatch'd his wand,  
And bound him fast. Without his rod reversed,  
And backward mutters of dissevering power,  
We cannot free the Lady that sits here  
In stony fetters fix'd and motionless.  
Yet stay: be not disturb'd; now I bethink me,  
Some other means I have which may be used,  
Which once of Melibœus old I learnt,  
The soothest shepherd that e'er piped on plains.

820

There is a gentle Nymph not far from hence,  
That with moist curb sways the smooth Severn stream:  
Sabrina is her name: a virgin pure;  
Whilom she was the daughter of Lochrine,  
That had the sceptre from his father Brute.  
She, guiltless damsel, flying the mad pursuit

Of her enragèd stepdame, Guendolen,  
 Commended her fair innocence to the flood  
 That stay'd her flight with his cross-flowing course.  
 The water-nymphs, that in the bottom play'd,  
 Held up their pearled wrists, and took her in,  
 Bearing her straight to agèd Nereus' hall;  
 Who, piteous of her woes, rear'd her lank head,  
 And gave her to his daughters to imbathe  
 In nectar'd lavers strew'd with asphodil,  
 And through the porch and inlet of each sense  
 Dropt in ambrosial oils, till she revived,  
 And underwent a quick immortal change,  
 Made Goddess of the river. Still she retains  
 Her maiden gentleness, and oft at eve  
 Visits the herds along the twilight meadows,  
 Helping all urchin blasts, and ill-luck signs  
 That the shrewd meddling elf delights to make,  
 Which she with precious vial'd liquors heals:  
 For which the shepherds, at their festivals,  
 Carol her goodness loud in rustic lays,  
 And throw sweet garland wreaths into her stream  
 Of pansies, pinks, and gaudy daffodils.  
 And, as the old swain said, she can unlock  
 The clasping charm, and thaw the numbing spell,  
 If she be right invoked in warbled song;  
 For maidenhood she loves, and will be swift  
 To aid a virgin, such as was herself,  
 In hard-besetting need. This will I try,  
 And add the power of some adjuring verse.

830

840

850

*Song.*

Sabrina fair,  
 Listen where thou art sitting  
 Under the glassy, cool, translucent wave,  
 In twisted braids of lilies knitting  
 The loose train of thy amber-dropping hair;  
 Listen for dear honour's sake,  
 Goddess of the silver lake,  
 Listen and save!

860

Listen, and appear to us,  
 In name of great Oceanus,  
 By the earth-shaking Neptune's mace,  
 And Tethys' grave majestic pace;  
 By hoary Nereus' wrinkled look,  
 And the Carpathian wizard's hook;  
 By scaly Triton's winding shell,  
 And old soothsaying Glaucus' spell;  
 By Lencoe's lovely hands,  
 And her son that rules the strands;  
 By Thetis' tinsel-slipper'd feet,  
 And the songs of Sirens sweet;  
 By dead Parthenope's dear tomb,  
 And fair Ligea's golden comb,  
 Wherewith she sits on diamond rocks  
 Sleeking her soft alluring locks;  
 By all the nymphs that nightly dance  
 Upon thy streams with wily glance;  
 Rise, rise, and heave thy rosy head  
 From thy coral-paven bed,  
 And bridle in thy headlong wave,  
 Till thou our summons answer'd have.

870

880

Listen and save!

SABRINA rises, attended by Water-nymphs, and sings.

By the rushy-fringed bank,  
 Where grows the willow and the osier dank,  
 My sliding chariot stays,  
 Thick set with agate, and the azurn sheen  
 Of turkis blue, and emerald green,  
 That in the channel strays:  
 Whilst from off the waters fleet  
 Thus I set my printless feet  
 O'er the cowslip's velvet head,  
 That bends not as I tread.  
 Gentle swain, at thy request

890

900

I am here!

*Spir.* Goddess dear,  
 We implore thy powerful hand  
 To undo the charmed band



Of true virgin here distress'd  
Through the force and through the wile  
Of unblest enchanter vile.

*Sabr.* Shepherd, 'tis my office best  
To help ensnared chastity.  
Brightest Lady, look on me. 910  
Thus I sprinkle on thy breast  
Drops that from my fountain pure  
I have kept of precious cure ;  
Thrice upon thy finger's tip,  
Thrice upon thy rubied lip :  
Next this marble venom'd seat,  
Smear'd with gums of glutinous heat,  
I touch with chaste palms moist and cold.  
Now the spell hath lost his hold ;  
And I must haste ere morning hour 920  
To wait in Amphitrite's bower.

*SARRINA descends, and THE LADY rises out of her seat.*

*Spir.* Virgin, daughter of Locline,  
Sprung of old Anchises' line,  
May thy brimmed waves for this  
Their full tribute never miss  
From a thousand petty rills,  
That tumble down the snowy hills :  
Summer drouth or singèd air  
Never scorch thy tresses fair,  
Nor wet October's torrent flood 930  
Thy molten crystal fill with mud ;  
May thy billows roll ashore  
The beryl and the golden ore ;  
May thy lofty head be crown'd  
With many a tower and terrace round,  
And here and there thy banks upon  
With groves of myrrh and cinnamon.

Come, Lady ; while Heaven lends us grace,  
Let us fly this cursèd place,  
Lest the sorcerer us entice 940  
With some other new device.  
Not a waste or needless sound

Till we come to holier ground.  
 I shall be your faithful guide  
 Through this gloomy covert wide;  
 And not many furlongs thence  
 Is your Father's residence,  
 Where this night are met in state  
 Many a friend to gratulate  
 His wish'd presence, and beside  
 All the swains that there abide  
 With jigs and rural dance resort.  
 We shall catch them at their sport,  
 And our sudden coming there  
 Will double all their mirth and cheer.  
 Come, let us haste; the stars grow high,  
 But Night sits monarch yet in the mid sky.

950

*The Scene changes, presenting Ludlow Town, and the President's Castle;  
 then come in Country Dancers; after them the ATTENDANT SPIRIT,  
 with the two BROTHERS and THE LADY.*

*Song.*

*Spir.* Back, shepherds, back! enough your play  
 Till next sun-shine holiday.  
 Here be, without duck or nod,  
 Other trippings to be trod  
 Of lighter toes, and such court guise  
 As Mercury did first devise  
 With the mincing Dryades  
 On the lawns and on the leas.

950

*This second Song presents them to their Father and Mother.*

Noble Lord and Lady bright,  
 I have brought ye new delight.  
 Here behold so goodly grown  
 Three fair branches of your own.  
 Heaven hath timely tried their youth,  
 Their faith, their patience, and their truth,  
 And sent them here through hard assays  
 With a crown of deathless praise,  
 To triumph in victorious dance  
 O'er sensual folly and intemperance.

970

*The dances ended, the SPIRIT epiloguizes.*

*Spir.* To the ocean now I fly,  
 And those happy climes that lie  
 Where day never shuts his eye,  
 Up in the broad fields of the sky.  
 There I suck the liquid air,  
 All amidst the gardens fair  
 Of Hesperus, and his daughters three  
 That sing about the golden tree.  
 Along the crisped shades and bowers  
 Revels the spruce and jocund Spring;  
 The Graces and the rosy-bosom'd Hours  
 Thither all their bounties bring.  
 There eternal Summer dwells,  
 And west winds with musky wing  
 About the cedarn alleys fling  
 Nard and cassia's balmy smells.  
 Iris there with humid bow  
 Waters the odorous banks, that blow  
 Flowers of more mingled hue  
 Than her purfled scarf can shew,  
 And drenches with Elysian dew  
 (List, mortals, if your ears be true)  
 Beds of hyacinth and roses,  
 Where young Adonis oft reposes,  
 Waxing well of his deep wound  
 In slumber soft, and on the ground  
 Sadly sits the Assyrian queen.  
 But far above, in spangled sheen,  
 Celestial Cupid, her famed son, advanced  
 Holds his dear Psyche, sweet entranced,  
 After her wandering labours long,  
 Till free consent the gods among  
 Make her his eternal bride,  
 And from her fair unspotted side  
 Two blissful twins are to be born,  
 Youth and Joy; so Jove hath sworn.  
 But now my task is smoothly done:  
 I can fly, or I can run

980

990

1000

1010

Quickly to the green earth's end,  
Where the bow'd welkin slow doth bend,  
And from thence can soar as soon  
To the corners of the moon.

Mortals, that would follow me,  
Love Virtue: she alone is free.  
She can teach ye how to climb  
Higher than the sphery chime;  
Or if Virtue feeble were,  
Heaven itself would stoop to her.

1020

# LYCIDAS.

*In this Monody the Author bewails a learned Friend, unfortunately drowned in his passage from Chester on the Irish Seas, 1637. And by occasion foretells the ruine of our corrupted Clergy then in their height.*

YET once more, O ye laurels, and once more,  
Ye myrtles brown, with ivy never sere,  
I come to pluck your berries harsh and crude,  
And with forced fingers rude  
Shatter your leaves before the mellowing year.  
Bitter constraint, and sad occasion dear,  
Compels me to disturb your season due;  
For Lycidas is dead, dead ere his prime,  
Young Lycidas, and hath not left his peer.  
Who would not sing for Lycidas? he well knew  
Himself to sing, and build the lofty rhyme.  
He must not float upon his watery bier  
Unwept, and welter to the parching wind,  
Without the meed of some melodious tear.

10

Begin then, Sisters of the sacred well,  
That from beneath the seat of Jove doth spring;  
Begin, and somewhat loudly sweep the string.

Hence with denial vain and coy excuse;  
 So may some gentle Muse  
 With lucky words favour my destined urn,  
 And as he passes turn,  
 And bid fair peace be to my sable shroud.

For we were nursed upon the self-same hill,  
 Fed the same flock, by fountain, shade and rill:  
 Together both, ere the high lawns appear'd  
 Under the opening eyelids of the Morn,  
 We drove a-field, and both together heard  
 What time the gray-fly winds her sultry horn,  
 Battening our flocks with the fresh dews of night,  
 Oft till the star that rose at evening bright  
 Toward Heaven's descent had sloped his westering wheel.  
 Meanwhile the rural ditties were not mute,  
 Temper'd to the oaten flute;  
 Rough Satyrs danced, and Fauns with cloven heel  
 From the glad sound would not be absent long,  
 And old Damocetas loved to hear our song.

But, O the heavy change, now thou art gone,  
 Now thou art gone, and never must return!  
 Thee, Shepherd, thee the woods and desert caves,  
 With wild thyme and the gadding vine o'ergrown,  
 And all their echoes mourn.  
 The willows, and the hazel copses green,  
 Shall now no more be seen  
 Fanning their joyous leaves to thy soft lays.  
 As killing as the canker to the rose,  
 Or taint-worm to the weanling herds that graze,  
 Or frost to flowers that their gay wardrobe wear,  
 When first the white-thorn blows:  
 Such, Lycidas, thy loss to shepherds' ear.

Where were ye, Nymphs, when the remorseless deep  
 Closed o'er the head of your loved Lycidas?  
 For neither were ye playing on the steep  
 Where your old bards, the famous Druids, lie,  
 Nor on the shaggy top of Mona high,  
 Nor yet where Deva spreads her wisard stream.  
 Ay me! I fondly dream,  
 Had ye been there—for what could that have done?

What could the Muse herself that Orpheus bore,  
The Muse herself, for her enchanting son,  
Whom universal Nature did lament,  
When by the rout that made the hideous roar,  
His gory visage down the stream was sent,  
Down the swift Hebrus to the Lesbian shore?

60

Alas! what boots it with uncessant care  
To tend the homely slighted shepherd's trade,  
And strictly meditate the thankless Muse?  
Were it not better done, as others use,  
To sport with Amaryllis in the shade,  
Or with the tangles of Naxos's hair?  
Fame is the spur that the clear spirit doth raise  
(That last infirmity of noble mind)

70

To scorn delights, and live laborious days;  
But the fair guerdon when we hope to find,  
And think to burst out into sudden blaze,  
Comes the blind Fury with the abhorred shears,  
And slits the thin-spun life. "But not the praise,"  
Phœbus replied, and touch'd my trembling ears:  
"Fame is no plant that grows on mortal soil,  
Nor in the glittering foil

80

Set off to the world, nor in broad rumour lies,  
But lives and spreads aloft by those pure eyes,  
And perfect witness of all-judging Jove;  
As he pronounces lastly on each deed,  
Of so much fame in Heaven expect thy meed."

O fountain Arethuse, and thou honour'd flood,  
Smooth-sliding Mincius, crown'd with vocal reeds,  
That strain I heard was of a higher mood:

But now my oat proceeds,  
And listens to the herald of the sea,  
That came in Neptune's plea.

90

He ask'd the waves, and ask'd the felon winds,  
What hard mishap hath doom'd this gentle swain?  
And question'd every gust of rugged wings  
That blows from off each beaked promontory.  
They knew not of his story;  
And sage Hippotades their answer brings:  
That not a blast was from his dungeon stray'd,

The air was calm, and on the level brine  
 Sleek Panope with all her sisters play'd.  
 It was that fatal and perfidious bark,  
 Built in the eclipse, and rigg'd with curses dark,  
 That sunk so low that sacred head of thine.

100

Next Camus, reverend sire, went footing slow,  
 His mantle hairy and his bonnet sedge,  
 Inwrought with figures dim, and on the edge  
 Like to that sanguine flower inscribed with woe.  
 "Ah! who hath reft" (quoth he) "my dearest pledge?"  
 Last came, and last did go,

The Pilot of the Galilean Lake;

Two massy keys he bore of metals twain

110

(The golden opes, the iron shuts amain);

He shook his mitred locks, and stern bespake:

"How well could I have spared for thee, young swain,

Enough of such as, for their bellies' sake,

Creep, and intrude, and climb into the fold!

Of other care they little reckoning make

Than how to scramble at the shearers' feast,

And shove away the worthy bidden guest.

Blind mouths! that scarce themselves know how to hold

A sheep-hook, or have learnt aught else the least

120

That to the faithful herdman's art belongs!

What recks it them? What need they? They are sped;

And when they list, their lean and flashy songs

Grate on their scrannel pipes of wretched straw;

The hungry sheep look up, and are not fed,

But swoln with wind, and the rank mist they draw,

Rot inwardly, and foul contagion spread;

Besides what the grim wolf with privy paw

Daily devours apace, and nothing said;

But that two-handed engine at the door

130

Stands ready to smite once, and smite no more."

Return, Alpheus, the dread voice is past

That shrunk thy streams; return, Sicilian Muse,

And call the vales, and bid them hither cast

Their bells, and flowrets of a thousand hues.

Ye valleys low, where the mild whispers use

Of shades, and wanton winds, and gushing brooks,

On whose fresh lap the swart star sparsely looks,  
 Throw hither all your quaint enamell'd eyes,  
 That on the green turf suck the honied showers,  
 And purple all the ground with vernal flowers.  
 Bring the rathe primrose that forsaken dies,  
 The tufted crow-toe, and pale jessamine,  
 The white pink, and the pansy freakt with jet,  
 The glowing violet,

140

The musk-rose, and the well-attired woodbine,  
 With cowslips wan that hang the pensive head,  
 And every flower that sad embroidery wears;  
 Bid amaranthus all his beauty shed,

And daffadillies fill their cups with tears,  
 To strew the laureate hearse where Lycid' lies.  
 For, so to interpose a little ease,

150

Let our frail thoughts dally with false surmise;  
 Ay me! whilst thee the shores and sounding seas  
 Wash far away, where'er thy bones are hurl'd;  
 Whether beyond the stormy Hebrides,

Where thou perhaps, under the whelming tide,  
 Visit'st the bottom of the monstrous world;  
 Or whether thou, to our moist vows denied,  
 Sleep'st by the fable of Bellerus old,

160

Where the great Vision of the guarded mount  
 Looks toward Namancos and Bayona's hold:  
 Look homeward, Angel, now, and melt with ruth;  
 And, O ye dolphins, waft the hapless youth.

Weep no more, woeful shepherds, weep no more,

For Lycidas your sorrow is not dead,  
 Sunk though he be beneath the watery floor;  
 So sinks the day-star in the ocean bed,  
 And yet anon repairs his drooping head,  
 And tricks his beams, and with new-spangled ore

170

Flames in the forehead of the morning sky:  
 So Lycidas sunk low, but mounted high,  
 Through the dear might of Him that walk'd the waves,  
 Where, other groves and other streams along,  
 With nectar pure his oozy locks he laves,  
 And hears the unexpressive nuptial song,  
 In the blest kingdoms meek of joy and love.



There entertain him all the saints above,  
 In solemn troops and sweet societies,  
 That sing, and singing in their glory move,  
 And wipe the tears for ever from his eyes.  
 Now, Lycidas, the shepherds weep no more;  
 Henceforth thou art the Genius of the shore,  
 In thy large recompense, and shalt be good  
 To all that wander in that perilous flood.

180

Thus sang the uncouth swain to the oaks and rills,  
 While the still Morn went out with sandals gray;  
 He touch'd the tender stops of various quills,  
 With eager thought warbling his Doric lay:  
 And now the sun had stretch'd out all the hills,  
 And now was dropt into the western bay;  
 At last he rose, and twitch'd his mantle blue:  
 To-morrow to fresh woods, and pastures new.

190

## SONNETS.

## I.

## TO THE NIGHTINGALE.

O NIGHTINGALE, that on yon bloomy spray  
 Warblest at eve, when all the woods are still;  
 Thou with fresh hope the lover's heart dost fill,  
 While the jolly hours lead on propitious May:  
 Thy liquid notes that close the eye of day,  
 First heard before the shallow cuckoo's bill,  
 Portend success in love; Oh, if Jove's will  
 Have link'd that amorous power to thy soft lay,  
 Now timely sing, ere the rude bird of hate  
 Foretell my hopeless doom in some grove nigh;  
 As thou from year to year hast sung too late  
 For my relief, yet hadst no reason why:  
 Whether the Muse, or Love, call thee his mate,  
 Both them I serve, and of their train am I.

5

10

## II.

ON HIS BEING ARRIVED TO THE AGE OF TWENTY-THREE.

How soon hath Time, the subtle thief of youth,  
 Stolen on his wing my three-and-twentieth year!  
 My hasting days fly on with full career,  
 But my late spring no bud or blossom shew'th.  
 Perhaps my semblance might deceive the truth,  
 That I to manhood am arrived so near;  
 And inward ripeness doth much less appear,  
 That some more timely-happy spirits endu'th.  
 Yet be it less or more, or soon or slow,  
 It shall be still in strictest measure even  
 To that same lot, however mean or high,  
 Toward which Time leads me, and the will of Heaven;  
 All is, if I have grace to use it so,  
 As ever in my great Task-Master's eye.

## III.

DONNA leggiadra, il cui bel nome onora  
 L'erbosa val di Reno e il nobil varco,  
 Bene è colui d'ogni valore scarco  
 Qual tuo spirito gentil non innamora,  
 Che dolcemente mostra sì di fuora,  
 De' sui atti soavi giammai parco,  
 E i don', che son d'amor saette ed arco,  
 Laonde l'alta tua virtù s'infiora.  
 Quando tu vaga parli, o lieta canti,  
 Che mover possa duro alpestre legno,  
 Guardi ciascun a gli occhi ed a gli orecchi  
 L'entrata chi di te si truova indegno;  
 Grazia sola di sù gli vaglia, innanti  
 Che 'l disio amoroso al cuor s'invicchi.

## IV.

QUAL in colle aspro, al imbrunir di sera,  
 L' avvezza giovinetta pastorella  
 Va bagnando l' erbetta strana e bella  
 Che mal si spande a disusata spera,  
 Fuor di sua natia alma primavera, 5  
 Così Amor meco insù la lingua snella  
 Desta il fior novo di strania favella,  
 Mentre io di te, vezzosamente altera,  
 Canto, dal mio buon popol non inteso,  
 E 'l bel Tamigi cangio col bel Arno. 10  
 Amor lo volse, ed io, a l' altrui peso,  
 Seppi ch' Amor cosa mai volse indarno.  
 Deh! foss' il mio cuor lento e 'l duro seno  
 A chi pianta dal ciel si buon terreno.

## CANZONE.

RIDONSI donne e giovani amorosi,  
 M' accostandosi attorno, e 'Perchè scrivi,  
 Perchè tu scrivi in lingua ignota e strana,  
 Verseggiando d' amor, e come t' osi?  
 Dinne, se la tua speme sia mai vana, 5  
 E de' pensieri lo miglior t' arrivi!  
 Così mi van burlando: 'altri rivi,  
 Altri lidi t' aspettan, ed altre onde,  
 Nelle cui verdi sponde  
 Spuntati ad or ad or a la tua chioma 10  
 L' immortal guiderdon d' eterne frondi.  
 Perchè alle spalle tue soverchia soma?  
 Canzon, dirotti, e tu per me rispondi:  
 'Dice mia Donna, e 'l suo dir è il mio cuore,  
 "Questa è lingua di cui si vanta Amore." 15

## V.

DIODATI (e te 'l dirò con maraviglia),  
Quel ritroso io, ch' amor spreggiar solea  
E de' suoi lacci spesso mi ridea,  
Già caddi, ov' uom dabben talor s' impiglia.  
Nè treccie d' oro, nè guancia vermiglia  
M' abbaglian sì, ma sotto nova idea  
Pellegrina bellezza che 'l cuor bea,  
Portamenti alti onesti, e nelle ciglia  
Quel sereno fulgor d' amabil nero,  
Parole adorne di lingua più d' una,  
E 'l cantar che di mezzo l' emispero  
Traviar ben può la faticosa Luna;  
E degli occhi suoi avventa sì gran fuoco  
Che l' incerar gli orecchi mi fia poco.

5

10

## VI.

PER certo i bei vostr' occhi, Donna mia,  
Esser non può che non sian lo mio sole;  
Sì mi percuoton forte, come ei suole  
Per l' arene di Libia chi s' invia,  
Mentre un caldo vapor (nè senti pria)  
Da quel lato si spinge ove mi duole,  
Che forse amanti nelle lor parole  
Chiaman sospir; io non so che si sia.  
Parte rinchiusa e turbida si cela  
Scossomi il petto, e poi n' uscendo poco  
Quivi d' attorno o s' agghiaccia o s' ingiela;  
Ma quanto agli occhi giunge a trovar loco  
Tutte le notti a me suol far piovose,  
Finchè mia alba rivien colma di rose.

5

10

## VII.

GIOVANE, piano, e semplicitto amante,  
 Poichè fuggir me stesso in dubbio sono,  
 Madonna, a voi del mio cuor l' umil dono  
 Farò divoto. Io certo a prove tante  
 L' ebbi fedele, intrepido, costante, 5  
 Di pensieri leggiadro, accorto, e buono.  
 Quando rugge il gran mondo, e scocca il tuono,  
 S' arma di se, e d' intero diamante,  
 Tanto del forse e d' invidia sicuro,  
 Di timori, e speranze al popol use, 10  
 Quanto d' ingegno e d' alto valor vago,  
 E di cetra sonora, e delle Muse.  
 Sol troverete in tal parte men duro  
 Ove Amor mise l' insanabil ago.

## VIII.

WHEN THE ASSAULT WAS INTENDED TO THE CITY.

CAPTAIN, or Colonel, or Knight in arms,  
 Whose chance on these defenceless doors may seize,  
 If deed of honour did thee ever please,  
 Guard them, and him within protect from harms.  
 He can requite thee; for he knows the charms 5  
 That call fame on such gentle acts as these,  
 And he can spread thy name o'er lands and seas,  
 Whatever clime the sun's bright circle warms.  
 Lift not thy spear against the Muses' bower:  
 The great Emathian conqueror bid spare 10  
 The house of Pindarus, when temple and tower  
 Went to the ground; and the repeated air  
 Of sad Electra's poet had the power  
 To save the Athenian walls from ruin bare.

## IX.

## TO A VIRTUOUS YOUNG LADY.

LADY, that in the prime of earliest youth  
Wisely hast shunn'd the broad way and the green,  
And with those few art eminently seen  
That labour up the hill of heavenly Truth;  
The better part with Mary and with Ruth  
Chosen thou hast; and they that overween,  
And at thy growing virtues fret their spleen,  
No anger find in thee, but pity and ruth.  
Thy care is fix'd, and zealously attends  
To fill thy odorous lamp with deeds of light,  
And hope that reaps not shame. Therefore be sure  
Thou, when the Bridegroom with his feastful friends  
Passes to bliss at the mid-hour of night,  
Hast gain'd thy entrance, Virgin wise and pure.

## X.

## TO THE LADY MARGARET LEY.

DAUGHTER to that good Earl, once President  
Of England's Council and her Treasury,  
Who lived in both, unstain'd with gold or fee,  
And left them both, more in himself content,  
Till the sad breaking of that Parliament  
Broke him, as that dishonest victory  
At Chæronœa, fatal to liberty,  
Kill'd with report that old man eloquent;  
Though later born than to have known the days  
Wherein your father flourish'd, yet by you,  
Madam, methinks I see him living yet:  
So well your words his noble virtues praise  
That all both judge you to relate them true  
And to possess them, honour'd Margaret.

## XI.

ON THE DETRACTION WHICH FOLLOWED UPON MY WRITING  
CERTAIN TREATISES.

A BOOK was writ of late called *Tetrachordon*,  
And woven close, both matter, form, and style;  
The subject new: it walk'd the town a while,  
Numbering good intellects; now seldom pored on.  
Cries the stall-reader, "Bless us! what a word on 5  
A title-page is this!"; and some in file  
Stand spelling false, while one might walk to Mile-  
End Green. Why, is it harder, sirs, than *Gordon*,  
*Colkitto*, or *Macdonnel*, or *Galasp*?  
Those rugged names to our like mouths grow sleek 10  
That would have made Quintilian stare and gasp.  
Thy age, like ours, O soul of Sir John Cheek,  
Hated not learning worse than toad or asp,  
When thou taught'st Cambridge and King Edward Greek.

## XII.

ON THE SAME.

I DID but prompt the age to quit their clogs  
By the known rules of ancient liberty,  
When straight a barbarous noise environs me  
Of owls and cuckoos, asses, apes, and dogs;  
As when those hinds that were transform'd to frogs 5  
Rail'd at Latona's twin-born progeny,  
Which after held the sun and moon in fee.  
But this is got by casting pearl to hogs,  
That bawl for freedom in their senseless mood,  
And still revolt when Truth would set them free. 10  
Licence they mean when they cry Liberty;  
For who loves that must first be wise and good:  
But from that mark how far they rove we see,  
For all this waste of wealth and loss of blood.

## XIII.

TO MR H. LAWES ON HIS AIRS.

HARRY, whose tuneful and well-measured song  
 First taught our English music how to span  
 Words with just note and accent, not to scan  
 With Midas' ears, committing short and long,  
 Thy worth and skill exempts thee from the throng, 5  
 With praise enough for Envy to look wan;  
 To after age thou shalt be writ the man  
 That with smooth air couldst humour best our tongue.  
 Thou honour'st verse, and verse must lend her wing  
 To honour thee, the priest of Phœbus' quire, 10  
 That tunest their happiest lines in hymn or story.  
 Dante shall give Fame leave to set thee higher  
 Than his Casella, whom he wooed to sing,  
 Met in the milder shades of Purgatory.

## XIV.

ON THE RELIGIOUS MEMORY OF MRS CATHERINE THOMSON,  
 MY CHRISTIAN FRIEND, DECEASED DEC. 16, 1646.

WHEN Faith and Love, which parted from thee never,  
 Had ripen'd thy just soul to dwell with God,  
 Meekly thou didst resign this earthy load  
 Of death, called life, which us from life doth sever.  
 Thy works, and alms, and all thy good endeavour, 5  
 Stay'd not behind, nor in the grave were trod;  
 But, as Faith pointed with her golden rod,  
 Follow'd thee up to joy and bliss for ever.  
 Love led them on; and Faith, who knew them best  
 Thy handmaids, clad them o'er with purple beams 10  
 And azure wings, that up they flew so drest,  
 And spake the truth of thee in glorious themes  
 Before the Judge; who thenceforth bid thee rest,  
 And drink thy fill of pure immortal streams.



ON THE NEW FORCERS OF CONSCIENCE UNDER THE LONG  
PARLIAMENT.

BECAUSE you have thrown off your Prelate Lord,  
 And with stiff vows renounced his Liturgy,  
 To seize the widow'd whore Plurality  
 From them whose sin ye envied, not abhorr'd;  
 Dare ye for this adjure the civil sword 5  
 To force our consciences that Christ set free,  
 And ride us with a classic hierarchy,  
 Taught ye by mere A. S. and Rutherford?  
 Men whose life, learning, faith, and pure intent,  
 Would have been held in high esteem with Paul 10  
 Must now be named and printed heretics  
 By shallow Edwards and Scotch What-d'ye-call!  
 But we do hope to find out all your tricks,  
 Your plots and packings, worse than those of Trent,  
 That so the Parliament 15  
 May with their wholesome and preventive shears  
 Clip your phylacteries, though baulk your ears,  
 And succour our just fears,  
 When they shall read this clearly in your charge:  
 New Presbyter is but old Priest writ large. 20

## XV.

TO THE LORD GENERAL FAIRFAX, AT THE SIEGE OF  
COLCHESTER.

FAIRFAX, whose name in arms through Europe rings,  
 Filling each mouth with envy or with praise,  
 And all her jealous monarchs with amaze,  
 And rumours loud that daunt remotest kings;  
 Thy firm unshaken virtue ever brings 5  
 Victory home, though new rebellions raise  
 Their Hydra heads, and the false North displays  
 Her broken league to imp their serpent wings.  
 O yet a nobler task awaits thy hand  
 (For what can war but endless war still breed?) 10  
 Till truth and right from violence be freed,  
 And public faith clear'd from the shameful brand  
 Of public fraud. In vain doth Valour bleed,  
 While Avarice and Rapine share the land.

## XVI.

TO THE LORD GENERAL CROMWELL,

ON THE PROPOSALS OF CERTAIN MINISTERS AT THE  
COMMITTEE FOR PROPAGATION OF THE GOSPEL.

CROMWELL, our chief of men, who through a cloud  
 Not of war only, but detractions rude,  
 Guided by faith and matchless fortitude,  
 To peace and truth thy glorious way hast plough'd,  
 And on the neck of crowned Fortune proud 5  
 Hast rear'd God's trophies, and his work pursued,  
 While Darwen stream, with blood of Scots imbrued,  
 And Dunbar field, resounds thy praises loud,  
 And Worcester's laureate wreath: yet much remains 10  
 To conquer still; Peace hath her victories  
 No less renown'd than War: new foes arise,  
 Threatening to bind our souls with secular chains.  
 Help us to save free conscience from the paw  
 Of hireling wolves, whose Gospel is their maw.

## XVII.

TO SIR HENRY VANE THE YOUNGER.

VANE, young in years, but in sage counsel old,  
 Than whom a better senator ne'er held  
 The helm of Rome, when gowns, not arms, repell'd  
 The fierce Epirot and the African bold;  
 Whether to settle peace, or to unfold 5  
 The drift of hollow states hard to be spell'd;  
 Then to advise how war may best upheld  
 Move by her two main nerves, iron and gold,  
 In all her equipage; besides, to know  
 Both spiritual power and civil, what each means, 10  
 What severs each, thou hast learn'd, which few have done.  
 The bounds of either sword to thee we owe:  
 Therefore on thy firm hand Religion leans  
 In peace, and reckons thee her eldest son.

## XVIII.

## ON THE LATE MASSACRE IN PIEMONTE.

AVENGE, O Lord, thy slaughter'd saints, whose bones  
 Lie scatter'd on the Alpine mountains cold;  
 Even them who kept thy truth so pure of old,  
 When all our fathers worshipp'd stocks and stones,  
 Forget not: in thy book record their groans 5  
 Who were thy sheep, and in their ancient fold  
 Slain by the bloody Piemontese, that roll'd  
 Mother with infant down the rocks. Their moans  
 The vales redoubled to the hills, and they  
 To heaven. Their martyr'd blood and ashes sow 10  
 O'er all the Italian fields, where still doth sway  
 The triple Tyrant; that from these may grow  
 A hundredfold, who, having learnt thy way,  
 Early may fly the Babylonian woe.

## XIX.

## ON HIS BLINDNESS.

WHEN I consider how my light is spent  
 Ere half my days in this dark world and wide,  
 And that one talent which is death to hide  
 Lodged with me useless, though my soul more bent  
 To serve therewith my Maker, and present 5  
 My true account, lest He returning chide;  
 "Doth God exact day-labour, light denied?"  
 I fondly ask. But Patience, to prevent  
 That murmur, soon replies, "God doth not need  
 Either man's work or his own gifts. Who best 10  
 Bear his mild yoke, they serve him best. His state  
 Is kingly: thousands at his bidding speed,  
 And post o'er land and ocean without rest;  
 They also serve who only stand and wait."

## XX.

TO MR LAWRENCE.

LAWRENCE, of virtuous father virtuous son,  
 Now that the fields are dank, and ways are mire,  
 Where shall we sometimes meet, and by the fire  
 Help waste a sullen day, what may be won  
 From the hard season gaining? Time will run 5  
 On smother, till Favonius reinspire  
 The frozen earth, and clothe in fresh attire  
 The lily and rose, that neither sow'd nor spun.  
 What neat repast shall feast us, light and choice,  
 Of Attic taste, with wine, whence we may rise 10  
 To hear the lute well touch'd, or artful voice  
 Warble immortal notes and Tuscan air?  
 He who of those delights can judge, and spare  
 To interpose them oft, is not unwise.

## XXI.

TO CYRIACK SKINNER.

CYRIACK, whose grandsire on the royal bench  
 Of British Themis, with no mean applause,  
 Pronounced, and in his volumes taught, our laws,  
 Which others at their bar so often wrench;  
 To-day deep thoughts resolve with me to drench 5  
 In mirth that after no repenting draws;  
 Let Euclid rest, and Archimedes pause,  
 And what the Swede intends, and what the French.  
 To measure life learn thou betimes, and know  
 Toward solid good what leads the nearest way; 10  
 For other things mild Heaven a time ordains,  
 And disapproves that care, though wise in show,  
 That with superfluous burden loads the day,  
 And, when God sends a cheerful hour, refrains.

## XXII.

TO THE SAME.

CYRIACK, this three years' day these eyes, though clear,  
 To outward view, of blemish or of spot,  
 Bereft of light, their seeing have forgot ;  
 Nor to their idle orbs doth sight appear  
 Of sun, or moon, or star, throughout the year, 5  
 Or man, or woman. Yet I argue not  
 Against Heaven's hand or will, nor bate a jot  
 Of heart or hope, but still bear up and steer  
 Right onward. What supports me, dost thou ask?  
 The conscience, friend, to have lost them overplied 10  
 In Liberty's defence, my noble task,  
 Of which all Europe talks from side to side.  
 This thought might lead me through the world's vain mask  
 Content, though blind, had I no better guide.

## XXIII.

ON HIS DECEASED WIFE.

METHOUGHT I saw my late espoused saint  
 Brought to me like Alcestis from the grave,  
 Whom Jove's great son to her glad husband gave,  
 Rescued from Death by force, though pale and faint.  
 Mine, as whom wash'd from spot of child-bed taint 5  
 Purification in the Old Law did save,  
 And such as yet once more I trust to have  
 Full sight of her in Heaven without restraint,  
 Came vested all in white, pure as her mind.  
 Her face was veil'd ; yet to my fancied sight 10  
 Love, sweetness, goodness, in her person shined  
 So clear as in no face with more delight.  
 But, oh ! as to embrace me she inclined,  
 I waked, she fled, and day brought back my night.

## TRANSLATIONS.

### SCRAPS FROM THE PROSE WRITINGS.

FROM 'OF REFORMATION TOUCHING CHURCH DISCIPLINE  
IN ENGLAND,' 1641.

[DANTE, *Inferno*, XIX. 115.]

AH, Constantine, of how much ill was cause,  
Not thy conversion, but those rich domains  
That the first wealthy Pope received of thee!

[PETRARCH, *Sonnet* 107.]

FOUNDED in chaste and humble poverty,  
'Gainst them that raised thee dost thou lift thy horn,  
Impudent whore? Where hast thou placed thy hope?  
In thy adulterers, or thy ill-got wealth?  
Another Constantine comes not in haste.

[ARIOSTO, *Orl. Fur.* XXXIV. Stanz. 80.]

THEN passed he to a flowery mountain green,  
Which once smelt sweet, now stinks as odiously:  
This was that gift (if you the truth will have)  
That Constantine to good Sylvestro gave.

FROM THE APOLOGY FOR SMECTYMNUUS, 1642.

[HORACE, *Sat.* I. I, 24.]

LAUGHING to teach the truth  
What hinders? as some teachers give to boys  
Junkets and knacks, that they may learn apace.

[HORACE, *Sat.* 1. 10, 14.]

JOKING decides great things  
Stronglier and better oft than earnest can.

[SOPHOCLES, *Electra*, 624.]

'Tis you that say it, not I. You do the deeds,  
And your ungodly deeds find me the words.

FROM AREOPAGITICA, 1644.

[EURIPIDES, *Suppliants*, 438.]

THIS is true liberty, when freeborn men,  
Having to advise the public, may speak free:  
Which he who can and will deserves high praise:  
Who neither can nor will may hold his peace.  
What can be juster in a state than this?

FROM TETRACHORDON, 1645.

[HORACE, *Epist.* 1. 16, 40.]

WHOM do we count a good man? Whom but he  
Who keeps the laws and statutes of the senate,  
Who judges in great suits and controversies,  
Whose witness and opinion wins the cause?  
But his own house, and the whole neighbourhood,  
Sees his foul inside through his whited skin.

FROM 'THE TENURE OF KINGS AND MAGISTRATES,' 1649.

[SENECA, *Her. Fur.* 922.]

THERE can be slain  
No sacrifice to God more acceptable  
Than an unjust and wicked king.

FROM THE HISTORY OF BRITAIN, 1670.

GODDESS of Shades, and Huntress, who at will  
Walk'st on the rolling sphere, and through the deep,  
On thy third reign, the Earth, look now, and tell  
What land, what seat of rest thou bidd'st me seek,  
What certain seat, that I may worship thee  
For aye, with temples vow'd, and virgin quires.

BRUTUS, far to the west, in the ocean wide,  
Beyond the realm of Gaul, a land there lies,  
Sea-girt it lies, where giants dwelt of old;  
Now void, it fits thy people. Thither bend  
Thy course; there shalt thou find a lasting seat;  
There to thy sons another Troy shall rise,  
And kings be born of thee, whose dreaded might  
Shall awe the world, and conquer nations bold.

## THE FIFTH ODE OF HORACE, LIB. I.

*Quis nulli gracilis te puer in rosa.*

Rendered almost word for word, without rhyme, according to the  
Latin measure, as near as the language will permit.

WHAT slender youth, bedew'd with liquid odours,  
Courts thee on roses in some pleasant cave,  
Pyrria? For whom bind'st thou  
In wreaths thy golden hair,  
Plain in thy neatness? Oh, how oft shall he  
On faith and changèd gods complain, and seas  
Rough with black winds and storms  
Unwonted shall admire,  
Who now enjoys thee credulous, all gold;  
Who always vacant, always amiable,  
Hopes thee, of flattering gales  
Unmindful! Hapless they  
To whom thou untried seem'st fair! Me, in my vow'd  
Picture, the sacred wall declares to have hung  
My dank and dropping weeds  
To the stern God of Sea.

5

10

15



## AD PYRRHAM. ODE V.

*Horatius ex Pyrrha illecebris tanquam e naufragio entataverat, cujus amore irretitos affirmat esse miseros.*

QUIS multâ gracilis te puer in rosâ  
 Perfusus liquidis urget odoribus  
     Grato, Pyrrha, sub antro?  
     Cui flavam religas comam  
 Simplex munditiæ! Heu, quoties fidem  
 Mutatosque Deos flebit, et aspera  
     Nigris æquora ventis  
     Emirabitur insolens,  
 Qui nunc te fruitur credulus aureâ;  
 Qui semper vacuum, semper amabilem,  
     Sperat, nescius auræ  
     Fallacis! Miseri quibus  
 Intentata nites. Me tabulâ sacer  
 Votivâ paries indicat uvida  
     Suspendisse potenti  
     Vestimenta maris Deo.

*April, 1648.—J. M.*

Nine of the Psalms done into metre; wherein all, but what is in a different character, are the very words of the Text, translated from the original.

## PSALM LXXX.

- 1 THOU Shepherd that dost Israel keep,  
     Give ear *in time of need*,  
 Who leadest like a flock of sheep  
     *Thy lovèd Joseph's seed*,  
 That sitt'st between the Cherubs *bright*,  
     *Between their wings outspread*;  
 Shine forth, and from thy cloud give light,  
     *And on our foes thy dread.*
- 2 In Ephraim's view and Benjamin's,  
     And in Manasseh's sight,

- <sup>1</sup>Awake thy strength, come, and be seen  
To save us by thy might.
- 3 Turn us again; *thy grace divine*  
To us, O God, *vouchsafe*;  
Cause thou thy face on us to shine,  
And then we shall be safe.
- 4 Lord God of Hosts, how long wilt thou,  
How long wilt thou declare  
Thy <sup>2</sup>smoking wrath, and *angry brow*,  
Against thy people's prayer?
- 5 Thou feed'st them with the bread of tears;  
Their bread with tears they eat;  
And makest them <sup>3</sup>largely drink the tears  
*Wherewith their cheeks are wet.*
- 6 A strife thou makest us *and a prey*  
To every neighbour foe;  
Among themselves they <sup>4</sup>laugh, they <sup>4</sup>play,  
And <sup>4</sup>flouts at us they throw.
- 7 Return us, *and thy grace divine*,  
O God of Hosts, *vouchsafe*;  
Cause thou thy face on us to shine,  
And then we shall be safe.
- 8 A Vine from Egypt thou hast brought,  
*Thy free love made it thine*,  
And drovest out nations *proud and haughty*,  
To plant this *lovely Vine*.
- 9 Thou didst prepare for it a place,  
And root it deep and fast,  
That it *began to grow apace*,  
*And filled the land at last.*
- 10 With her *green shade* that cover'd all,  
The hills were *overspread*;  
Her boughs as *high as cedars tall*  
*Advanced their lofty head.*
- 11 Her branches *on the western side*  
Down to the sea she sent,  
And *upward to that river wide*  
Her other branches *went*.

<sup>1</sup> Gnoreru.<sup>2</sup> Shalish.<sup>3</sup> Gnashanta.<sup>4</sup> Jilgnagu.

- 12 Why hast thou laid her hedges low,  
And broken down her fence,  
That all may pluck her, as they go,  
*With rudest violence?* 50
- 13 The *tusked* boar out of the wood  
Upturns it by the roots;  
Wild beasts there browse, and make their food  
*Her grapes and tender shoots.*
- 14 Return now, God of Hosts; look down  
From Heaven, thy seat divine;  
Behold us, *but without a frown*,  
And visit this *thy* Vine. 60
- 15 Visit this Vine, which thy right hand  
Hath set, and planted *long*,  
And the young branch, that for thyself  
Thou hast made firm and strong.
- 16 But now it is consumed with fire,  
And cut *with axes* down;  
They perish at thy dreadful ire,  
At thy rebuke and frown.
- 17 Upon the man of thy right hand  
Let thy *good* hand be *laid*;  
Upon the Son of Man, whom thou  
Strong for thyself hast made. 70
- 18 So shall we not go back from thee  
*To ways of sin and shame*:  
Quicken us thou; then *gladly* we  
Shall call upon thy Name.
- 19 Return us, *and thy grace divine*,  
Lord God of Hosts, *vouchsafe*;  
Cause thou thy face on us to shine,  
And then we shall be safe. 80

## PSALM LXXXI.

- 1 To God our strength sing loud *and clear*;  
Sing loud to God *our King*;  
To Jacob's God, *that all may hear*,  
Loud acclamations ring.
- 2 Prepare a hymn, prepare a song;  
The timbrel hither bring;  
The *cheerful* psaltery bring along,  
And harp *with pleasant string*.
- 3 Blow, *as is wont*, in the new moon,  
With trumpet's *lofty sound*,  
The appointed time, the day whereon  
Our solemn feast *comes round*.
- 4 This was a statute *given of old*  
For Israel *to observe*,  
A law of Jacob's God *to hold*,  
From whence they might *not swerve*.
- 5 This he a testimony ordain'd  
In Joseph, *not to change*,  
When as he pass'd through Egypt land;  
The tongue I heard was strange.
- 6 From burden, *and from slavish toil*,  
I set his shoulder free;  
His hands from pots, *and miry soil*,  
Deliver'd were *by me*.
- 7 When trouble did thee sore assail,  
On me then didst thou call,  
And I to free thee *did not fail*,  
And led thee out of thrall.  
I answer'd thee <sup>1</sup>in thunder deep,  
With clouds encompass'd round;  
I tried thee at the water steep  
Of Meriba *renowned*.
- 8 Hear, O my people, *hearken well*:  
I testify to thee,  
Thou ancient stock of Israel,  
If thou wilt list to me:

<sup>1</sup> *Be Sather ragnum.*

## PSALM LXXXIII.

- 1 BE not thou silent *now at length*;  
     O God, hold not thy peace:  
     Sit not thou still, O God *of strength*,  
     *We cry and do not cease.*
- 2 For lo! thy *furious* foes *now* <sup>1</sup>swell,  
     And <sup>1</sup>storm outrageously;  
     And they that hate thee, *proud and fell*,  
     Exalt their heads full high.
- 3 Against thy people they <sup>2</sup>contrive  
     <sup>3</sup>Their plots and counsels deep;  
     <sup>4</sup>Them to ensnare they chiefly strive  
     <sup>5</sup>Whom thou dost hide and keep.
- 4 'Come, let us cut them off,' say they,  
     'Till they no nation be;  
     That Israel's name for ever may  
     Be lost in memory.'
- 5 For they consult <sup>6</sup>with all their might,  
     And all as one in mind  
     Themselves against thee they unite,  
     And in firm union bind.
- \* 6 The tents of Edom, and the brood  
     Of *scornful* Ishmael,  
     Moab, with them of Hagar's blood,  
     *That in the desert dwell,*
- 7 Gebal and Ammon *there conspire*,  
     And *hateful* Amalec,  
     The Philistims, and they of Tyre,  
     *Whose bounds the sea doth check.*
- 8 With them *great* Asshur also bands,  
     *And doth confirm the knot*;  
     *All these have lent their armed hands*  
     To aid the sons of Lot.
- 9 Do to them as to Midian *bold*,  
     *That wasted all the coast*;

<sup>1</sup> *Jehemajun.*<sup>2</sup> *Jagnarinnu.*<sup>3</sup> *Sod.*<sup>4</sup> *Jithjagnatsn gual.*<sup>5</sup> *Tsephuneca.*<sup>6</sup> *Lev jachdan.*

- To Sisera, and as *is told*  
Thou didst to Jabin's host,  
When at the brook of Kishon *old*  
They were repulsed and slain,  
10 At Endor quite cut off, and roll'd  
As dung upon the plain.  
11 As Zeb and Oreb evil sped,  
So let their princes speed;  
As Zeba and Zalmunna *bled*,  
So let their princes *bleed*.  
12 For they amidst their pride have said,  
'By right now shall we seize  
God's houses, and will now invade  
'Their stately palaces.'  
13 My God, oh make them as a wheel;  
*No quiet let them find*;  
Giddy and restless let them reel,  
Like stubble from the wind.  
14 As, when an aged wood takes fire  
Which on a sudden strays,  
The greedy flame runs higher and higher,  
Till all the mountains blaze;  
15 So with thy whirlwind them pursue,  
And with thy tempest chase;  
16 And till they yield thee honour due,  
Lord, fill with shame their face.  
17 Ashamed and troubled let them be,  
Troubled and shamed for ever,  
Ever confounded, and so die  
With shame, and *scape it never*.  
18 Then shall they know that thou, whose name  
Jehovah is alone,  
Art the Most High, and thou the same  
O'er all the earth art *One*.

<sup>1</sup> *Nooth Elohim* bears both.

<sup>2</sup> They seek thy Name: *Heb.*

## PSALM LXXXIV.

- 1 How lovely are thy dwellings fair!  
O Lord of Hosts, how dear  
The *pleasant* tabernacles are,  
Where thou dost dwell so near!
- 2 My soul doth long and almost die  
Thy courts, O Lord, to see;  
My heart and flesh aloud do cry,  
O living God, for thee.
- 3 There even the sparrow, *freed from wrong*,  
Hath found a house of *rest*;  
The swallow there, to lay her young,  
Hath built her *brooding* nest;  
Even by thy altars, Lord of Hosts,  
They find their *safe* abode;  
And home they fly from round the coasts  
Toward thee, my King, my God.
- 4 Happy who in thy house reside,  
Where thee they ever praise!
- 5 Happy whose strength in thee doth bide,  
And in their hearts thy ways!
- 6 They pass through Baca's *thirsty* vale,  
That dry and barren ground,  
As through a fruitful watery dale  
Where springs and showers abound.
- 7 They journey on from strength to strength  
With joy and gladsome cheer,  
Till all before our God at length  
In Sion do appear.
- 8 Lord God of Hosts, hear *now* my prayer,  
O Jacob's God, give ear:
- 9 Thou, God, our shield, look on the face  
Of thy anointed *dear*.
- 10 For one day in thy courts to be  
Is better and more blest  
Than in the joys of vanity  
A thousand days at *best*.

20

20

30

- I in the temple of my God  
 Had rather keep a door  
 Than dwell in tents *and rich abode*  
 With sin *for evermore*.
- 11 For God, the Lord, both sun and shield,  
 Gives grace and glory *bright*;  
 No good from them shall be withheld  
 Whose ways are just and right.
- 12 Lord *God* of Hosts *that reign'st on high*,  
 That man is *truly* blest  
 Who *only* on thee doth rely,  
 And in thee only rest.

## PSALM LXXXV.

- 1 THY land to favour graciously  
 Thou hast not, Lord, been slack;  
 Thou hast from *hard* captivity  
 Returned Jacob back.
- 2 The iniquity thou didst forgive  
*That wrought* thy people woe,  
 And all their sin *that did thee grieve*  
 Hast hid *where none shall know*.
- 3 Thine anger all thou hadst removed,  
 And *calmly* didst return  
 From thy <sup>1</sup>fierce wrath, which we had proved  
 Far worse than fire to burn.
- 4 God of our saving health and peace,  
 Turn us, and us restore;  
 Thine indignation cause to cease  
 Toward us, *and chide no more*.
- 5 Wilt thou be angry without end,  
 For ever angry thus?  
 Wilt thou thy frowning ire extend  
 From age to age on us?

<sup>1</sup> *Heb.* The burning heat of thy wrath.



## PSALM LXXXIV.

- 1 How lovely are thy dwellings fair!  
     O Lord of Hosts, how dear  
     The *pleasant* tabernacles are,  
     *Where thou dost dwell so near!*
- 2 My soul doth long and almost die  
     Thy courts, O Lord, to see;  
     My heart and flesh aloud do cry,  
     O living God, for thee.
- 3 There even the sparrow, *freed from wrong,*  
     Hath found a house of *rest*;  
     The swallow there, to lay her young,  
     Hath built her *brooding* nest;  
     Even *by* thy altars, Lord of Hosts,  
     *They find their safe abode;*  
     *And home they fly from round the coasts*  
     *Toward thee, my King, my God.*
- 4 Happy who in thy house reside,  
     Where thee they ever praise!
- 5 Happy whose strength in thee doth bide,  
     And in their hearts thy ways!
- 6 They pass through Baca's *thirsty* vale,  
     *That dry and barren ground,*  
     As through a fruitful watery dale  
     Where springs and showers abound.
- 7 They journey on from strength to strength  
     *With joy and gladsome cheer,*  
     *Till all before our God at length*  
     In Sion do appear.
- 8 Lord God of Hosts, hear *now* my prayer,  
     O Jacob's God, give ear:
- 9 Thou, God, our shield, look on the face  
     Of thy anointed *dear*.
- 10 For one day in thy courts *to be*  
     Is better *and more blest*  
     Than *in the joys of vanity*  
     A thousand days *at best*.

20

20

20

- I in the temple of my God  
 Had rather keep a door  
 Than dwell in tents *and rich abode*  
 With sin *for evermore*. 40
- 11 For God, the Lord, both sun and shield,  
 Gives grace and glory *bright*;  
 No good from them shall be withheld  
 Whose ways are just and right.
- 12 Lord God of Hosts *that reign'st on high*,  
 That man is *truly* blest  
 Who *only* on thee doth rely,  
 And in thee only rest.

## PSALM LXXXV.

- 1 THY land to favour graciously  
 Thou hast not, Lord, been slack;  
 Thou hast from *hard* captivity  
 Returned Jacob back.
- 2 The iniquity thou didst forgive  
*That wrought* thy people woe,  
 And all their sin *that did thee grieve*  
 Hast hid *where none shall know*.
- 3 Thine anger all thou hadst removed,  
 And *calmly* didst return 10  
 From thy <sup>1</sup>fierce wrath, which we had proved  
 Far worse than fire to burn.
- 4 God of our saving health and peace,  
 Turn us, and us restore;  
 Thine indignation cause to cease  
 Toward us, *and chide no more*.
- 5 Wilt thou be angry without end,  
 For ever angry thus?  
 Wilt thou thy frowning ire extend  
 From age to age on us? 20

<sup>1</sup> *Heb.* The burning heat of thy wrath.

- 6 Wilt thou not <sup>1</sup>turn and *hear our voice,*  
 And us again <sup>1</sup>revive,  
 That so thy people may rejoice,  
 By thee preserved alive?
- 7 Cause us to see thy goodness, Lord;  
 To us thy mercy shew;  
 Thy saving health to us afford,  
*And life in us renew.*
- 8 *And now* what God the Lord will speak  
 I will *go straight and* hear, 30  
 For to his people he speaks peace,  
 And to his saints *full dear*;  
 To his dear saints he will speak peace;  
 But let them never more  
 Return to folly, *but surcease*  
*To trespass as before.*
- 9 Surely to such as do him fear  
 Salvation is at hand,  
 And glory shall *ere long appear*  
*To dwell within our land.* 40
- 10 Mercy and Truth, *that long were miss'd,*  
 Now *joyfully* are met;  
 Sweet Peace and Righteousness have kiss'd,  
*And hand in hand are set.*
- 11 Truth from the earth *like to a flower*  
 Shall bud and blossom *then*;  
 And Justice from her heavenly bower  
 Look down *on mortal men.*
- 12 The Lord will also then bestow  
 Whatever thing is good; 50  
 Our land shall forth in plenty throw  
 Her fruits *to be our food.*
- 13 Before him Righteousness shall go,  
*His royal harbinger*;  
 Then <sup>2</sup>will he come, and not be slow;  
 His footsteps cannot err.

<sup>1</sup> *Heb.* Turn to quicken us.

<sup>2</sup> *Heb.* He will set his steps to the way.

## PSALM LXXXVI.

- 1 THY *gracious* ear, O Lord, incline;  
O hear me, *I thee pray*;  
For I am poor, and almost pine  
With need *and sad decay*.
- 2 Preserve my soul; for <sup>1</sup>I have trod  
Thy ways, and love the just:  
Save thou thy servant, O my God,  
Who *still* in thee doth trust.
- 3 Pity me, Lord, for daily thee  
I call; 4 O make rejoice  
Thy servant's soul for, Lord, to thee  
I lift my soul *and voice*.
- 5 For thou art good; thou, Lord, art prone  
To pardon; thou to all  
Art full of mercy, thou *alone*,  
To them that on thee call.
- 6 Unto my supplication, Lord,  
Give ear, and to the cry  
Of my *incessant* prayers afford  
Thy hearing graciously.
- 7 I in the day of my distress  
Will call on thee *for aid*;  
For thou wilt *grant* me *free access*,  
*And answer what I pray'd*.
- 8 Like thee among the gods is none,  
O Lord; nor any works  
*Of all that other gods have done*  
Like to thy *glorious* works.
- 9 The nations all whom thou hast made  
Shall come, *and all shall frame*  
To bow them low before thee, Lord,  
And glorify thy name.
- 10 For great thou art, and wonders great  
By thy strong hand are done;
- <sup>1</sup> *Heb.* I am good, loving, a doer of good and holy things.

Thou *in thy everlasting seat*  
Remainest God alone.

- 11 Teach me, O Lord, thy way *most right*;  
I in thy truth will bide;

To fear thy name my heart unite;  
*So shall it never slide.*

40

- 12 Thee will I praise, O Lord my God,  
*Thee honour and adore*

With my whole heart, and blaze abroad  
Thy name for evermore.

- 13 For great thy mercy is toward me,  
And thou hast freed my soul,  
Ev'n from the lowest hell set free,  
*From deepest darkness foul.*

- 14 O God, the proud against me rise,  
And violent men are met

50

To seek my life, and in their eyes  
No fear of thee have set.

- 15 But thou, Lord, art the God most mild,  
Readiest thy grace to shew,

Slow to be angry, and *art styled*  
Most merciful, most true.

- 16 Oh turn to me *thy face at length*,  
And me have mercy on;

Unto thy servant give thy strength,  
And save thy handmaid's son.

60

- 17 Some sign of good to me afford,  
And let my foes *then* see,

And be ashamed, because thou, Lord,  
Dost help and comfort me.

## PSALM LXXXVII.

- 1 AMONG the holy mountains *high*  
Is his foundation fast;  
*There seated in his sanctuary,*  
*His temple there is placed.*
- 2 Sion's *fair* gates the Lord loves more  
Than all the dwellings *fair*  
Of Jacob's *land*, though there be store,  
*And all within his care.*
- 3 City of God, most glorious things  
Of thee *abroad* are spoke.  
I mention Egypt, *where proud kings*  
*Did our forefathers yoke;*
- 4 I mention Babel to my friends,  
Philistia *full of scorn*,  
And Tyre, with Ethiop's *utmost ends*:  
Lo! this man there was born.
- 5 But *twice that praise shall in our ear*  
Be said of Sion *last*:  
This and this man was born in her;  
High God shall fix her fast.
- 6 The Lord shall write it in a scroll,  
That ne'er shall be out-worn,  
When he the nations doth enroll,  
That this man there was born.
- 7 Both they who sing and they who dance  
*With sacred songs are there;*  
In thee *fresh brooks and soft streams glance*,  
*And all my fountains clear.*

## PSALM LXXXVIII.

- 1 LORD GOD, that dost me save and keep,  
 All day to thee I cry,  
 And all night long before thee *weep*,  
 Before thee *prostrate lie*.
- 2 Into thy presence let my prayer  
*With sighs devout ascend*;  
 And to my cries, that *ceaseless are*,  
 Thine ear with favour bend.
- 3 For, cloy'd with woes and trouble store,  
 Surcharged my soul doth lie;  
 My life, *at death's uncheerful door*,  
 Unto the grave draws nigh.
- 4 Reckon'd I am with them that pass  
 Down to the *dismal* pit;  
 I am a <sup>1</sup>man but weak, alas!  
 And for that name unfit,
- 5 From life discharged and parted quite  
 Among the dead *to sleep*,  
 And like the slain *in bloody fight*  
 That in the grave lie *deep*;
- Whom thou rememberest no more,  
 Dost never more regard:  
 Them, from thy hand deliver'd o'er,  
*Death's hideous house hath barr'd.*
- 6 Thou, in the lowest pit *profound*,  
 Hast set me *all forlorn*,  
 Where thickest darkness *hovers round*,  
 In horrid deeps *to mourn*.
- 7 Thy wrath, *from which no shelter saves*,  
 Full sore doth press on me;  
<sup>2</sup>Thou break'st upon me all thy waves,  
<sup>2</sup>And all thy waves break me.
- 8 Thou dost my friends from me estrange,  
 And makest me odious,

<sup>1</sup> *Heb.* A man without manly strength.<sup>2</sup> The Hebrew bears both.

- Me to them odious, *for they change,*  
 And I here pent up thus.
- 9 Through sorrow and affliction great  
 Mine eye grows dim and dead;  
 Lord, all the day I thee entreat,  
 My hands to thee I spread. 40
- 10 Wilt thou do wonders on the dead?  
 Shall the deceased arise  
 And praise thee *from their loathsome bed*  
*With pale and hollow eyes?*
- 11 Shall they thy loving-kindness tell  
 On whom the grave *hath hold?*  
 Or they *who* in perdition dwell  
 Thy faithfulness *unfold?*
- 12 In darkness can thy mighty *hand*  
 Or wondrous acts be known? 50  
 Thy justice in the *gloomy* land  
 Of *dark* oblivion?
- 13 But I to thee, O Lord, do cry  
*Ere yet my life be spent;*  
 And *up to thee* my prayer *doth lie*  
 Each morn, and thee prevent.
- 14 Why wilt thou, Lord, my soul forsake  
 And hide thy face from me,
- 15 That am already bruised, and <sup>1</sup>shake  
 With terror sent from thee; 60  
 Bruised and afflicted, and *so low*  
 As ready to expire,  
 While I thy terrors undergo,  
 Astonish'd with thine ire?
- 16 Thy fierce wrath over me doth flow;  
 Thy threatenings cut me through:
- 17 All day they round about me go;  
 Like waves they me pursue.
- 18 Lover and friend thou hast removed,  
 And sever'd from me far: 70  
 They *fly me now* whom I have loved,  
 And as in darkness are.

<sup>1</sup> *Heb. Præ concussione.*



## PSALM I.

*Done into verse 1653.*

BLEST is the man who hath not walk'd astray  
 In counsel of the wicked, and i' the way  
 Of sinners hath not stood, and in the seat  
 Of scorners hath not sat; but in the great  
 Jehovah's Law is ever his delight,  
 And in his Law he studies day and night.  
 He shall be as a tree which planted grows  
 By watery streams, and in his season knows  
 To yield his fruit; and his leaf shall not fall,  
 And what he takes in hand shall prosper all. 20  
 Not so the wicked; but, as chaff which fann'd  
 The wind drives, so the wicked shall not stand  
 In judgment, or abide their trial then,  
 Nor sinners in the assembly of just men.  
 For the Lord knows the upright way of the just,  
 And the way of bad men to ruin must.

## PSALM II.

*Done August 8, 1653.—Terzetti.*

WHY do the Gentiles tumult, and the nations  
 Muse a vain thing, the kings of the earth upstand  
 With power, and princes in their congregations  
 Lay deep their plots together through each land  
 Against the Lord and his Messiah dear?  
 'Let us break off,' say they, 'by strength of hand,  
 Their bonds, and cast from us, no more to wear,  
 Their twisted cords.' He who in heaven doth dwell  
 Shall laugh; the Lord shall scoff them, then severe  
 Speak to them in his wrath, and in his fell 20  
 And fierce ire trouble them. 'But I,' saith he,  
 'Anointed have my King (though ye rebel)

On Sion my holy hill.' A firm decree  
 I will declare: the Lord to me hath said,  
 'Thou art my Son; I have begotten thee  
 This day; ask of me, and the grant is made:  
 As thy possession I on thee bestow  
 The Heathen, and, as thy conquest to be sway'd,  
 Earth's utmost bounds: them shalt thou bring full low  
 With iron sceptre bruised, and them disperse  
 Like to a potter's vessel shiver'd so.'  
 And now be wise at length, ye kings averse;  
 Be taught, ye judges of the earth; with fear  
 Jehovah serve, and let your joy converse  
 With trembling; kiss the Son, lest he appear  
 In anger, and ye perish in the way,  
 If once his wrath take fire, like fuel sere.  
 Happy all those who have in him their stay.

## PSALM III.

*August 9, 1653.*

*When he fled from Absalom.*

LORD, how many are my foes!  
 How many those  
 That in arms against me rise!  
 Many are they  
 That of my life distrustfully thus say,  
 'No help for him in God there lies.'  
 But thou, Lord, art my shield, my glory;  
 Thee, through my story,  
 The exalter of my head I count:  
 Aloud I cried  
 Unto Jehovah; he full soon replied,  
 And heard me from his holy mount.  
 I lay and slept; I waked again:  
 For my sustain  
 Was the Lord. Of many millions  
 The populous rout

I fear not, though, encamping round about,  
 They pitch against me their pavilions.  
 Rise, Lord; save me, my God! for thou  
     Hast smote ere now  
 On the cheek-bone all my foes,  
     Of men abhor'd  
 Hast broke the teeth. This help was from the Lord;  
 Thy blessing on thy people flows. \*

20

## PSALM IV.

*August 10, 1653.*

ANSWER me when I call,  
 God of my righteousness;  
 In straits and in distress  
 Thou didst me disenthral  
 And set at large: now spare,  
 Now pity me, and hear my earnest prayer.  
 Great ones, how long will ye  
 My glory have in scorn?  
 How long be thus forborne  
 Still to love vanity?  
 To love, to seek, to prize  
 Things false and vain, and nothing else but lies?  
 Yet know the Lord hath chose,  
 Chose to himself apart,  
 The good and meek of heart  
 (For whom to choose he knows);  
 Jehovah from on high  
 Will hear my voice what time to him I cry.  
 Be awed, and do not sin;  
 Speak to your hearts alone  
 Upon your beds, each one,  
 And be at peace within.  
 Offer the offerings just  
 Of righteousness, and in Jehovah trust.

10

20

Many there be that say  
 'Who yet will shew us good?'  
 Talking like this world's brood;  
 But, Lord, thus let me pray:  
 On us lift up the light,  
 Lift up the favour, of thy count'nance bright. 30  
 Into my heart more joy  
 And gladness thou hast put  
 Than when a year of glut  
 Their stores doth over-cloy,  
 And from their plenteous grounds  
 With vast increase their corn and wine abounds.  
 In peace at once will I  
 Both lay me down and sleep;  
 For thou alone dost keep  
 Me safe where'er I lie: 40  
 As in a rocky cell  
 Thou, Lord, alone in safety makest me dwell.

## PSALM V.

August 12, 1653.

JEHOVAH, to my words give ear,  
 My meditation weigh;  
 The voice of my complaining hear,  
 My King and God, for unto thee I pray.  
 Jehovah, thou my early voice  
 Shalt in the morning hear;  
 I' the morning I to thee with choice  
 Will rank my prayers, and watch till thou appear.  
 For thou art not a God that takes  
 In wickedness delight; 10  
 Evil with thee no biding makes;  
 Fools or mad men stand not within thy sight.

All workers of iniquity  
 Thou hatest; and them unblest  
 Thou wilt destroy that speak a lie;  
 The bloody and guileful man God doth detest.  
 But I will in thy mercies dear,  
 Thy numerous mercies, go  
 Into thy house; I, in thy fear,  
 Will towards thy holy temple worship low. 20  
 Lord, lead me in thy righteousness,  
 Lead me, because of those  
 That do observe if I transgress;  
 Set thy ways right before where my step goes.  
 For in his faltering mouth unstable  
 No word is firm or sooth;  
 Their inside, troubles miscrable;  
 An open grave their throat, their tongue they smooth.  
 God, find them guilty; let them fall  
 By their own counsels quell'd; 30  
 Push them in their rebellions all  
 Still on; for against thee they have rebell'd.  
 Then all who trust in thee shall bring  
 Their joy, while thou from blame  
 Defend'st them: they shall ever sing,  
 And shall triumph in thee, who love thy name.  
 For thou, Jehovah, wilt be found  
 To bless the just man still:  
 As with a shield thou wilt surround  
 Him with thy lasting favour and good will. 40

## PSALM VI.

*August 13, 1653.*

LORD, in thy anger do not reprehend me,  
 Nor in thy hot displeasure me correct;  
 Pity me, Lord, for I am much deject,  
 Am very weak and faint; heal and amend me:  
 For all my bones, that even with anguish ache,  
 Are troubled; yea, my soul is troubled sore;  
 And thou, O Lord, how long? Turn, Lord; restore

My soul ; oh, save me, for thy goodness' sake !  
 For in death no remembrance is of thee ;  
 Who in the grave can celebrate thy praise? 10  
 Wearied I am with sighing out my days ;  
 Nightly my couch I make a kind of sea ;  
 My bed I water with my tears ; mine eye  
 Through grief consumes, is waxen old and dark  
 I' the midst of all mine enemies that mark.  
 Depart, all ye that work iniquity,  
 Depart from me ; for the voice of my weeping  
 The Lord hath heard ; the Lord hath heard my prayer ;  
 My supplication with acceptance fair  
 The Lord will own, and have me in his keeping. 20  
 Mine enemies shall all be blank, and dash'd  
 With much confusion ; then, grown red with shame,  
 They shall return in haste the way they came,  
 And in a moment shall be quite abash'd.

## PSALM VII.

*August 14, 1653.*

*Upon the words of Chush the Benjamite against him.*

LORD, my God, to thee I fly ;  
 Save me, and secure me under  
 Thy protection while I cry ;  
 Lest, as a lion (and no wonder),  
 He haste to tear my soul asunder,  
 Tearing and no rescue nigh.

Lord, my God, if I have thought  
 Or done this ; if wickedness  
 Be in my hands ; if I have wrought  
 Ill to him that meant me peace ; 10  
 Or to him have render'd less,  
 And not freed my foe for nought :

Let the enemy pursue my soul,  
And overtake it ; let him tread  
My life down to the earth, and roll  
In the dust my glory dead,  
In the dust, and there outspread  
Lodge it with dishonour foul.

Rise, Jehovah, in thine ire ;  
Rouse thyself amidst the rage  
Of my foes that urge like fire ;  
And wake for me, their fury assuage ;  
Judgment here thou didst engage  
And command, which I desire.

20

So the assemblies of each nation  
Will surround thee, seeking right :  
Thence to thy glorious habitation  
Return on high, and in their sight.  
Jehovah judgeth most upright  
All people from the world's foundation.

30

Judge me, Lord ; be judge in this  
According to my righteousness,  
And the innocence which is  
Upon me : cause at length to cease  
Of evil men the wickedness,  
And their power that do amiss.

But the just establish fast,  
Since thou art the just God that tries  
Hearts and reins. On God is cast  
My defence, and in him lies ;  
In him who, both just and wise,  
Saves the upright of heart at last.

40

God is a just judge and severe,  
And God is every day offended ;  
If the unjust will not forbear,  
His sword he whets ; his bow hath bended  
Already, and for him intended  
The tools of death that waits him near.

(His arrows purposely made he  
For them that persecute.) Behold,  
He travails big with vanity;  
Trouble he hath conceived of old  
As in a womb, and from that mould  
Hath at length brought forth a lie.

He digg'd a pit, and delved it deep,  
And fell into the pit he made:  
His mischief, that due course doth keep,  
Turns on his head: and his ill trade  
Of violence will undelay'd  
Fall on his crown with ruin steep.

Then will I Jehovah's praise  
According to his justice raise,  
And sing the Name and Deity  
Of Jehovah the Most High.

## PSALM VIII.

*August 14, 1653.*

O JEHOVAH our Lord, how wondrous great  
And glorious is thy name through all the earth!  
So as above the heavens thy praise to set,  
Out of the tender mouths of latest bearth,  
Out of the mouths of babes and sucklings thou  
Hast founded strength, because of all thy foes,  
To stint the enemy, and slack the avenger's brow,  
That bends his rage thy providence to oppose.

When I behold thy heavens, thy fingers' art,  
The moon and stars, which thou so bright hast set  
In the pure firmament, then saith my heart,  
Oh, what is man that thou rememberest yet  
And think'st upon him, or of man begot  
That him thou visit'st, and of him art found?  
Scarce to be less than gods thou madest his lot;  
With honour and with state thou hast him crown'd.



O'er the works of thy hand thou madest him lord ;  
Thou hast put all under his lordly feet,  
All flocks and herds, by thy commanding word,  
All beasts that in the field or forest meet,  
Fowl of the heavens, and fish that through the wet  
Sea-paths in shoals do slide, and know no dearth.  
O Jehovah our Lord, how wondrous great  
And glorious is thy name through all the earth !

# PARADISE LOST.

## COMMENDATORY VERSES.

IN PARADISUM AMISSAM SUMMI POETÆ  
JOHANNIS MILTONI.

QUI legis Amissam Paradisum, grandia magni  
Carmina Miltoni, quid nisi cuncta legis?  
Res cunctas, et cunctarum primordia rerum,  
Et fata, et fines, continet iste liber.  
Intima panduntur magni penetralia mundi,  
Scribitur et toto quicquid in orbe latet;  
Terreque, tractusque maris, cœlumque profundum,  
Sulphureumque Erebi flammivomumque specus;  
Quæque colunt terras, pontumque, et Tartara cæca,  
Quæque colunt summi lucida regna poli;  
Et quodcunque ullis conclusum est finibus usquam;  
Et sine fine Chaos, et sine fine Deus;  
Et sine fine magis si quid magis est sine fine,  
In Christo erga homines conciliatus amor.  
Hæc qui speraret quis crederet esse futurum?  
Et tamen hæc hodie terra Britannia legit.  
O quantos in bella duces, quæ protulit arma!  
Quæ canit, et quanta prælia dira tuba!  
Cœlestes acies, atque in certamine cœlum!  
Et quæ cœlestes pugna deceret agros!  
Quantus in ætheriis tollit se Lucifer armis,  
Atque ipso graditur vix Michael minor!  
Quantis et quam funestis concurrat iris,  
Dum ferus hic stellas protegit, ille rapit!  
Dum vulsos montes cœu tela reciproca torquent,  
Et non mortali desuper igno pluunt:

20

20

Stat dubius cui se parti concedat Olympus,  
 Et metuit pugnae non superesse suae.  
 At simul in coelis Messiae insignia fulgent,  
 Et currus animæ, armaque digna Deo,  
 Horrendumque rotæ strident, et sæva rotarum  
 Erumpunt torvis fulgura luminibus,  
 Et flammæ vibrant, et vera tonitrua rauco  
 Admistis flammis insonuere polo,  
 Excidit attonitis mens omnis, et impetus omnis,  
 Et cassis dextris irrita tela cadunt;  
 Ad poenas fugiunt, et, ceu foret Orcus asyllum,  
 Infernis certant condere se tenebris.  
 Cedite, Romani Scriptores; cedite, Graeci;  
 Et quos fama recens vel celebravit anus:  
 Hæc quicumque leget tantum cecinisse putabit  
 Mæonidem ranas, Virgilium culices.

30

40

S. B., M.D.

## ON PARADISE LOST.

WHEN I beheld the Poet blind, yet bold,  
 In slender book his vast design unfold,  
 Messiah crown'd, God's reconciled decree,  
 Rebelling Angels, the Forbidden Tree,  
 Heaven, Hell, Earth, Chaos, all; the argument  
 Held me a while misdoubting his intent,  
 That he would ruin (for I saw him strong)  
 The sacred truths to fable and old song  
 (So Samson groped the temple's posts in spite),  
 The world o'erwhelming to revenge his sight.

10

Yet as I read, soon growing less severe,  
 I liked his project, the success did fear;  
 Through that wide field how he his way should find  
 O'er which lame Faith leads Understanding blind;  
 Lest he perplex'd the things he would explain,  
 And what was easy he should render vain.

Or, if a work so infinite he spanned,  
 Jealous I was that some less skilful hand  
 (Such as disquiet always what is well,  
 And by ill-imitating would excel)

20

Might hence presume the whole Creation's day  
To change in scenes, and shew it in a play.

Pardon me, mighty Poet; nor despise  
My causeless, yet not impious, surmise.  
But I am now convinced, and none will dare  
Within thy labours to pretend a share.  
Thou hast not miss'd one thought that could be fit,  
And all that was improper dost omit;  
So that no room is here for writers left,  
But to detect their ignorance or theft.

That majesty which through thy work doth reign  
Draws the devout, deterring the profane.  
And things divine thou treat'st of in such state  
As them preserves, and thee, inviolate.  
At once delight and horror on us seize;  
Thou sing'st with so much gravity and ease,  
And above human flight dost soar aloft  
With plume so strong, so equal, and so soft.  
The bird named from that Paradise you sing  
So never flags, but always keeps on wing.

Where could'st thou words of such a compass find?  
Whence furnish such a vast expense of mind?  
Just Heaven, thee like Tiresias to requite,  
Rewards with prophecy thy loss of sight.

Well might'st thou scorn thy readers to allure  
With tinkling rime, of thy own sense secure;  
While the Town-Bayes writes all the while and spells,  
And, like a pack-horse, tires without his bells.  
Their fancies like our bushy points appear;  
The poets tag them, we for fashion wear.  
I too, transported by the mode, offend,  
And while I meant to praise thee, must commend.  
Thy verse created like thy theme sublime,  
In number, weight, and measure, needs not rime.

A. M.

## THE VERSE.

The measure is English heroic verse, without rime, as that of Homer in Greek, and of Virgil in Latin; rime being no necessary adjunct or true ornament of poem or good verse, in longer works especially, but the invention of a barbarous age, to set off wretched matter and lame metre; graced indeed since by the use of some famous modern poets, carried away by custom, but much to their own vexation, hindrance, and constraint to express many things otherwise, and for the most part worse, than else they would have expressed them. Not without cause, therefore, some both Italian and Spanish poets of prime note have rejected rime both in longer and shorter works, as have also, long since, our best English tragedies; as a thing of itself, to all judicious ears, trivial and of no true musical delight; which consists only in apt numbers, fit quantity of syllables, and the sense variously drawn out from one verse into another, not in the jingling sound of like endings, a fault avoided by the learned ancients both in poetry and all good oratory. This neglect then of rime so little is to be taken for a defect, though it may seem so perhaps to vulgar readers, that it rather is to be esteemed an example set, the first in English, of ancient liberty recovered to heroic poem from the troublesome and modern bondage of riming.

## BOOK I.

## THE ARGUMENT.

This First Book proposes, first in brief, the whole subject, Man's disobedience, and the loss thereupon of Paradise, wherein he was placed : then touches the prime cause of his fall, the Serpent, or rather Satan in the Serpent ; who revolting from God, and drawing to his side many legions of Angels, was by the command of God driven out of Heaven with all his crew into the great Deep. Which action passed over, the Poem hastes into the midst of things ; presenting Satan with his Angels now fallen into Hell, described here, not in the Centre (for Heaven and Earth may be supposed as yet not made, certainly not yet accursed) but in a place of utter darkness, fittest called Chaos : here Satan with his Angels lying on the burning lake, thunderstruck and astonished, after a certain space recovers, as from confusion ; calls up him who, next in order and dignity, lay by him ; they confer of their miserable fall. Satan awakens all his legions, who lay till then in the same manner confounded ; they rise : their numbers, array of battle, their chief leaders named, according to the idols known afterwards in Canaan and the countries adjoining. To these Satan directs his speech ; comforts them with hope yet of regaining Heaven ; but tells them lastly of a new world and new kind of creature to be created, according to an ancient prophecy or report in Heaven ; for that Angels were long before this visible creation was the opinion of many ancient Fathers. To find out the truth of this prophecy, and what to determine thereon, he refers to a full council. What his associates thence attempt. Pandemonium, the palace of Satan, rises, suddenly built out of the Deep : the infernal Peers there sit in council.

OF Man's first disobedience, and the fruit  
Of that forbidden Tree, whose mortal taste  
Brought death into the world, and all our woe,  
With loss of Eden, till one greater Man  
Restore us, and regain the blissful seat,  
Sing, Heavenly Muse, that on the secret top  
Of Oreb, or of Sinai, didst inspire  
That shepherd, who first taught the chosen seed,

In the beginning how the Heavens and Earth  
Rose out of Chaos: or, if Sion hill  
Delight thee more, and Siloa's brook that flow'd  
Fast by the oracle of God, I thence  
Invoke thy aid to my advent'rous song,  
That with no middle flight intends to soar  
Above the Aonian mount, while it pursues  
Things unattempted yet in prose or rhyme.  
And chiefly thou, O Spirit, that dost prefer  
Before all temples the upright heart and pure,  
Instruct me, for thou know'st; thou from the first  
Wast present, and, with mighty wings outspread,  
Dove-like sat'st brooding on the vast Abyss,  
And madest it pregnant: what in me is dark  
Illumine, what is low raise and support;  
That to the highth of this great argument  
I may assert Eternal Providence,  
And justify the ways of God to men.

Say first (for Heaven hides nothing from thy view,  
Nor the deep tract of Hell), say first what cause  
Moved our grand parents, in that happy state,  
Favour'd of Heaven so highly, to fall off  
From their Creator, and transgress his will  
For one restraint, lords of the world besides?  
Who first seduced them to that foul revolt?  
The infernal Serpent; he it was, whose guile,  
Stirr'd up with envy and revenge, deceived  
The Mother of Mankind, what time his pride  
Had cast him out from Heaven, with all his host  
Of rebel Angels, by whose aid, aspiring  
To set himself in glory above his peers,  
He trusted to have equall'd the Most High,  
If he opposed; and with ambitious aim  
Against the throne and monarchy of God  
Raised impious war in Heaven and battle proud,  
With vain attempt. Him the Almighty Power  
Hur'd headlong flaming from the ethereal sky,  
With hideous ruin and combustion, down  
To bottomless perdition; there to dwell  
In adamantine chains and penal fire,

Who durst defy the Omnipotent to arms.

Nine times the space that measures day and night 50

To mortal men, he with his horrid crew

Lay vanquish'd, rolling in the fiery gulf,

Confounded though immortal. But his doom

Reserved him to more wrath; for now the thought

Both of lost happiness and lasting pain

Torments him; round he throws his baleful eyes,

That witness'd huge affliction and dismay,

Mix'd with obdurate pride and steadfast hate.

At once, as far as Angels ken, he views

The dismal situation waste and wild: 60

A dungeon horrible, on all sides round

As one great furnace flamed; yet from those flames

No light, but rather darkness visible

Served only to discover sights of woe,

Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace

And rest can never dwell, hope never comes

That comes to all; but torture without end

Still urges, and a fiery deluge, fed

With ever-burning sulphur unconsumed.

Such place Eternal Justice had prepared 70

For those rebellious; here their prison ordain'd

In utter darkness, and their portion set

As far removed from God and light of Heaven

As from the centre thrice to the utmost pole.

Oh how unlike the place from whence they fell!

There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelm'd

With floods and whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,

He soon discerns; and, weltering by his side,

One next himself in power, and next in crime,

Long after known in Palestine, and named 80

Beëlzebub. To whom the Arch-Enemy,

And thence in Heaven called Satan, with bold words

Breaking the horrid silence, thus began:

"If thou beest he—but Oh how fall'n! how changed

From him, who in the happy realms of light,

Clothed with transcendent brightness, didst outshine

Myriads, though bright! if he whom mutual league,

United thoughts and counsels, equal hope



And hazard in the glorious enterprise,  
Join'd with me once, now misery hath join'd  
In equal ruin: into what pit thou seest  
From what highth fall'n, so much the stronger proved  
He with his thunder: and till then who knew  
The force of those dire arms? Yet not for those,  
Nor what the potent victor in his rage  
Can else inflict, do I repent, or change,  
Though changed in outward lustre, that fix'd mind,  
And high disdain from sense of injured merit,  
That with the Mightiest raised me to contend,  
And to the fierce contention brought along  
Innumerable force of Spirits arm'd,  
That durst dislike his reign, and, me preferring,  
His utmost power with adverse power opposed  
In dubious battle on the plains of Heaven,  
And shook his throne. What though the field be lost?  
All is not lost; the unconquerable will,  
And study of revenge, immortal hate,  
And courage never to submit or yield:  
And what is else not to be overcome?  
That glory never shall his wrath or might  
Extort from me. To bow and sue for grace  
With suppliant knee, and deify his power  
Who, from the terror of this arm, so late  
Doubted his empire—that were low indeed;  
That were an ignominy and shame beneath  
This downfall; since by fate the strength of gods  
And this empyreal substance cannot fail;  
Since, through experience of this great event,  
In arms not worse, in foresight much advanced,  
We may with more successful hope resolve  
To wage by force or guile eternal war,  
Irreconcilable to our grand foe,  
Who now triumphs, and in the excess of joy  
Sole reigning holds the tyranny of Heaven."

So spake the apostate Angel, though in pain,  
Vaunting aloud, but rack'd with deep despair;  
And him thus answer'd soon his bold compeer:

"O Prince, O Chief of many thronèd powers,

That led the embattled Seraphim to war  
Under thy conduct, and, in dreadful deeds  
Fearless, endanger'd Heaven's perpetual King,  
And put to proof his high supremacy,  
Whether upheld by strength, or chance, or fate!  
Too well I see and rue the dire event  
That with sad overthrow and foul defeat  
Hath lost us Heaven, and all this mighty host  
In horrible destruction laid thus low,  
As far as gods and heavenly essences  
Can perish: for the mind and spirit remains  
Invincible, and vigour soon returns,  
Though all our glory extinct, and happy state  
Here swallow'd up in endless misery.  
But what if he our conqueror (whom I now  
Of force believe almighty, since no less  
Than such could have o'erpower'd such force as ours)  
Have left us this our spirit and strength entire,  
Strongly to suffer and support our pains,  
That we may so suffice his vengeful ire;  
Or do him mightier service, as his thralls  
By right of war, whate'er his business be,  
Here in the heart of Hell to work in fire,  
Or do his errands in the gloomy deep?  
What can it then avail, though yet we feel  
Strength undiminish'd, or eternal being  
To undergo eternal punishment?"

Whereto with speedy words the Arch-Fiend replied:  
"Fall'n Cherub, to be weak is miserable,  
Doing or suffering: but of this be sure,  
To do aught good never will be our task,  
But ever to do ill our sole delight,  
As being the contrary to his high will  
Whom we resist. If then his providence  
Out of our evil seek to bring forth good,  
Our labour must be to pervert that end,  
And out of good still to find means of evil;  
Which oft-times may succeed, so as perhaps  
Shall grieve him, if I fail not, and disturb  
His inmost counsels from their destined aim."

But see! the angry victor hath recall'd  
His ministers of vengeance and pursuit  
Back to the gates of Heaven; the sulphurous hail,  
Shot after us in storm, o'erblown hath laid  
The fiery surge that from the precipice  
Of Heaven received us falling; and the thunder,  
Wing'd with red lightning and impetuous rage,  
Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now  
To bellow through the vast and boundless deep.  
Let us not slip the occasion, whether scorn  
Or satiate fury yield it from our foe.  
Seest thou yon dreary plain, forlorn and wild,  
The seat of desolation, void of light,  
Save what the glimmering of these livid flames  
Casts pale and dreadful? Thither let us tend  
From off the tossing of these fiery waves;  
There rest, if any rest can harbour there;  
And, re-assembling our afflicted powers,  
Consult how we may henceforth most offend  
Our enemy, our own loss how repair,  
How overcome this dire calamity,  
What reinforcement we may gain from hope,  
If not what resolution from despair."

Thus Satan, talking to his nearest mate,  
With head uplift above the wave, and eyes  
That sparkling blazed; his other parts besides,  
Prone on the flood, extended long and large,  
Lay floating many a rood, in bulk as huge  
As whom the fables name of monstrous size,  
Titanian, or Earth-born, that war'd on Jove,  
Briareos or Typhon, whom the den  
By ancient Tarsus held, or that sea-beast  
Leviathan, which God of all his works  
Created hugest that swim the ocean stream:  
Him, haply, slumbering on the Norway foam,  
The pilot of some small night-founder'd skiff  
Deeming some island, oft, as seamen tell,  
With fixed anchor in his scaly rind,  
Moors by his side under the lee, while night  
Invests the sea, and wished morn delays:

So stretch'd out huge in length the Arch-Fiend lay,  
Chain'd on the burning lake; nor ever thence  
Had risen or heaved his head, but that the will  
And high permission of all-ruling Heaven  
Left him at large to his own dark designs,  
That with reiterated crimes he might  
Heap on himself damnation, while he sought  
Evil to others, and enraged might see  
How all his malice served but to bring forth  
Infinite goodness, grace and mercy shewn  
On Man by him seduced, but on himself  
Treble confusion, wrath and vengeance pour'd.

210

220

Forthwith upright he rears from off the pool  
His mighty stature; on each hand the flames  
Driven backward slope their pointing spires, and, roll'd  
In billows, leave i' the midst a horrid vale.  
Then with expanded wings he steers his flight  
Aloft, incumbent on the dusky air,  
That felt unusual weight; till on dry land  
He lights, if it were land that ever burn'd  
With solid, as the lake with liquid fire,  
And such appear'd in hue, as when the force  
Of subterranean wind transports a hill  
Torn from Pelorus, or the shatter'd side  
Of thundering *Ætna*, whose combustible  
And fuell'd entrails thence conceiving fire,  
Sublimed with mineral fury, aid the winds,  
And leave a sing'd bottom all involved  
With stench and smoke: such resting found the sole  
Of unblest feet. Him followed his next mate,  
Both glorying to have scaped the Stygian flood  
As gods, and by their own recover'd strength,  
Not by the sufferance of supernal power.

230

240

"Is this the region, this the soil, the clime,"  
Said then the lost Archangel, "this the seat  
That we must change for Heaven? this mournful gloom  
For that celestial light? Be it so, since he  
Who now is sovran can dispose and bid  
What shall be right: farthest from him is best,  
Whom reason hath equall'd, force hath made supreme.

Above his equals. Farewell, happy fields,  
Where joy for ever dwells! Hail, horrors! hail,  
Infernal world! and thou, profoundest Hell,  
Receive thy new possessor, one who brings  
A mind not to be changed by place or time.  
The mind is its own place, and in itself  
Can make a Heaven of Hell, a Hell of Heaven.  
What matter where, if I be still the same,  
And what I should be, all but less than he  
Whom thunder hath made greater? Here at least  
We shall be free; the Almighty hath not built  
Here for his envy, will not drive us hence:  
Here we may reign secure, and in my choice  
To reign is worth ambition, though in Hell:  
Better to reign in Hell, than serve in Heaven.  
But wherefore let we then our faithful friends,  
The associates and co-partners of our loss,  
Lie thus astonish'd on the oblivious pool,  
And call them not to share with us their part  
In this unhappy mansion, or once more  
With rallied arms to try what may be yet  
Regain'd in Heaven, or what more lost in Hell?"

So Satan spake; and him Beëlzebub  
Thus answer'd: "Leader of those armies bright  
Which but the Omnipotent none could have foil'd,  
If once they hear that voice, their liveliest pledge  
Of hope in fears and dangers, heard so oft  
In worst extremes, and on the perilous edge  
Of battle when it raged, in all assaults  
Their surest signal, they will soon resume  
New courage and revive, though now they lie  
Groveling and prostrate on yon lake of fire,  
As we erewhile, astounded and amazed;  
No wonder, fall'n such a pernicious highth!"

He scarce had ceased when the superior Fiend  
Was moving toward the shore; his ponderous shield,  
Ethereal temper, massy, large, and round,  
Behind him cast. The broad circumference  
Hung on his shoulders like the moon, whose orb  
Through optic glass the Tuscan artist views

At evening from the top of Fesolè,  
Or in Valdarno, to descry new lands,  
Rivers, or mountains, in her spotty globe.  
His spear, to equal which the tallest pine  
Hewn on Norwegian hills, to be the mast  
Of some great ammiral, were but a wand,  
He walk'd with, to support uneasy steps  
Over the burning marle, not like those steps  
On Heaven's azure; and the torrid clime  
Smote on him sore besides, vaulted with fire.  
Nathless he so endured, till on the beach  
Of that inflamèd sea he stood, and call'd  
His legions, Angel forms, who lay entranced,  
Thick as autumnal leaves that strow the brooks: 290  
In Vallombrosa, where the Etrurian shades  
High over-arch'd embower; or scatter'd sedge  
Afloat, when with fierce winds Orion arm'd  
Hath vex'd the Red-Sea coast, whose waves o'erthrew  
Busris and his Memphian chivalry,  
While with perfidious hatred they pursued  
The sojourners of Goshen, who beheld  
From the safe shore their floating carcasses  
And broken chariot wheels: so thick bestrown,  
Abject and lost, lay these, covering the flood,  
Under amazement of their hideous change.  
He call'd so loud that all the hollow deep  
Of Hell resounded: "Princes, Potentates,  
Warriors, the flower of Heaven, once yours, now lost,  
If such astonishment as this can seize  
Eternal Spirits: or have ye chosen this place  
After the toil of battle to repose  
Your wearied virtue, for the ease you find 300  
To slumber here, as in the vales of Heaven?  
Or in this abject posture have ye sworn  
To adore the conqueror, who now beholds  
Cherub and Seraph rolling in the flood  
With scatter'd arms and ensigns, till anon  
His swift pursuers from Heaven gates discern  
The advantage, and descending tread us down  
Thus drooping, or with linked thunderbolts

Transfix us to the bottom of this gulf?

Awake, arise, or be for ever fall'n!"

330

They heard, and were abash'd, and up they sprung

Upon the wing, as when men wont to watch

On duty, sleeping found by whom they dread,

Rouse and bestir themselves ere well awake.

Nor did they not perceive the evil plight

In which they were, or the fierce pains not feel;

Yet to their General's voice they soon obey'd

Innumerable. As when the potent rod

Of Amram's son, in Egypt's evil day,

Waved round the coast, up call'd a pitchy cloud

340

Of locusts, warping on the eastern wind,

That o'er the realm of impious Pharaoh hung

Like night, and darken'd all the land of Nile:

So numberless were those bad Angels seen

Hovering on wing under the cope of Hell,

'Twixt upper, nether, and surrounding fires;

Till, as a signal given, the uplifted spear

Of their great Sultan waving to direct

Their course, in even balance down they light

On the firm brimstone, and fill all the plain:

350

A multitude, like which the populous North

Pour'd never from her frozen loins, to pass

Rhene or the Danaw, when her barbarous sons

Came like a deluge on the South, and spread

Beneath Gibraltar to the Libyan sands.

Forthwith, from every squadron and each band,

The heads and leaders thither haste where stood

Their great Commander; godlike shapes, and forms

Excelling human, princely dignities,

And powers that erst in Heaven sat on thrones;

360

Though of their names in heavenly records now

Be no memorial, blotted out and rased

By their rebellion from the Books of Life.

Nor had they yet among the sons of Eve

Got them new names, till, wandering o'er the Earth,

Through God's high sufferance for the trial of Man,

By falsities and lies the greatest part

Of Mankind they corrupted to forsake

God their Creator, and the invisible  
Glory of him that made them to transform  
Oft to the image of a brute, adorn'd  
With gay religions full of pomp and gold,  
And devils to adore for deities.  
Then were they known to men by various names,  
And various idols through the heathen world.

Say, Muse, their names then known, who first, who last,  
Roused from the slumber on that fiery couch,  
At their great Emperor's call, as next in worth  
Came singly where he stood on the bare strand,  
While the promiscuous crowd stood yet aloof.

The chief were those who, from the pit of Hell  
Roaming to seek their prey on Earth, durst fix  
Their seats long after next the seat of God,  
Their altars by his altar, gods adored  
Among the nations round, and durst abide  
Jehovah thundering out of Sion, throned  
Between the Cherubim; yea, often placed  
Within his sanctuary itself their shrines,  
Abominations; and with cursèd things  
His holy rites and solemn feasts profaned,  
And with their darkness durst affront his light.  
First, Moloch, horrid king, besmear'd with blood  
Of human sacrifice, and parents' tears,  
Though, for the noise of drums and timbrels loud,  
Their children's cries unheard, that pass'd through fire  
To his grim idol. Him the Ammonite  
Worshipp'd in Rabba and her watery plain,  
In Argob and in Basan, to the stream  
Of utmost Arnon. Nor content with such  
Audacious neighbourhood, the wisest heart  
Of Solomon he led by fraud to build  
His temple right against the temple of God  
On that opprobrious hill, and made his grove  
The pleasant valley of Hinnom, Tophet thence  
And black Gehenna call'd, the type of Hell.  
Next Chemos, the obscene dread of Moab's sons,  
From Aroer to Nebo, and the wild  
Of southmost Abarim; in Hesebon



And Horonaim, Seon's realm, beyond  
The flowery dale of Sibma clad with vines, 410  
And Elealè to the Asphaltic pool.  
Peor his other name, when he enticed  
Israel in Sittim, on their march from Nile,  
To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe,  
Yet thence his lustful orgies he enlarged  
Even to that hill of scandal, by the grove  
Of Moloch homicide, lust hard by hate;  
Till good Josiah drove them thence to Hell.  
With these came they who, from the bordering flood  
Of old Euphrates to the brook that parts 420  
Egypt from Syrian ground, had general names  
Of Baalim and Ashtaroth, those male,  
These feminine. For Spirits, when they please,  
Can either sex assume, or both; so soft  
And uncompounded is their essence pure,  
Not tied or manacled with joint or limb,  
Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,  
Like cumbrous flesh; but, in what shape they choose,  
Dilated or condensed, bright or obscure,  
Can execute their aery purposes, 430  
And works of love or enmity fulfil.  
For those the race of Israel oft forsook  
Their living Strength, and unfrequented left  
His righteous altar, bowing lowly down  
To bestial gods; for which their heads as low  
Bow'd down in battle, sunk before the spear  
Of despicable foes. With these in troop  
Came Astoreth, whom the Phœnicians call'd  
Astarte, Queen of Heaven, with crescent horns;  
To whose bright image nightly by the moon 440  
Sidonian virgins paid their vows and songs;  
In Sion also not unsung, where stood  
Her temple on the offensive mountain, built  
By that uxorious king whose heart, though large,  
Beguiled by fair idolatresses, fell  
To idols foul. Thammuz came next behind,  
Whose annual wound in Lebanon allured  
The Syrian damsels to lament his fate

In amorous ditties all a summer's day,  
While smooth Adonis from his native rock  
Ran purple to the sea, supposed with blood  
Of Thammuz yearly wounded: the love-tale  
Infected Sion's daughters with like heat,  
Whose wanton passions in the sacred porch  
Ezekiel saw, when by the vision led  
His eye survey'd the dark idolatries  
Of alienated Judah. Next came one  
Who mourn'd in earnest, when the captive ark  
Maim'd his brute image, head and hands lapt off  
In his own temple, on the grunsel edge,  
Where he fell flat, and shamed his worshippers:  
Dagon his name, sea monster, upward man  
And downward fish; yet had his temple high  
Rear'd in Azotus, dreaded through the coast  
Of Palestine, in Gath and Ascalon,  
And Accaron and Gaza's frontier bounds.  
Him follow'd Rimmon, whose delightful seat  
Was fair Damascus, on the fertile banks  
Of Abbana and Pharphar, lucid streams.  
He also against the house of God was bold:  
A leper once he lost and gain'd a king,  
Ahaz, his sottish conqueror, whom he drew  
God's altar to disparage and displace  
For one of Syrian mode, whereon to burn  
His odious offerings, and adore the gods  
Whom he had vanquish'd. After these appear'd  
A crew who, under names of old renown,  
Osiris, Isis, Orus, and their train,  
With monstrous shapes and sorceries abused  
Fanatic Egypt and her priests, to seek  
Their wandering gods disguised in brutish forms  
Rather than human. Nor did Israel scape  
The infection, when their borrow'd gold composed  
The calf in Oreb; and the rebel king  
Doubled that sin in Bethel and in Dan,  
Likening his Maker to the graz'd ox,  
Jehovah, who, in one night, when he pass'd  
From Egypt marching, equal'd with one stroke

450

460

470

480

Both her first-born and all her bleating gods.  
Belial came last, than whom a Spirit more lewd  
Fell not from Heaven, or more gross to love  
Vice for itself. To him no temple stood  
Or altar smoked; yet who more oft than he  
In temples and at altars, when the priest  
Turns atheist, as did Eli's sons, who fill'd  
With lust and violence the house of God?  
In courts and palaces he also reigns,  
And in luxurious cities, where the noise  
Of riot ascends above their loftiest towers,  
And injury and outrage; and when night  
Darkens the streets, then wander forth the sons  
Of Belial, flown with insolence and wine.  
Witness the streets of Sodom, and that night  
In Gibeah, when the hospitable door  
Exposed a matron, to avoid worse rape.

490

500

These were the prime in order and in might;  
The rest were long to tell, though far renown'd,  
The Ionian gods, of Javan's issue held  
Gods, yet confess'd later than Heaven and Earth,  
Their boasted parents: Titan, Heaven's first-born,  
With his enormous brood, and birthright seized  
By younger Saturn; he from mightier Jove,  
His own and Rhea's son, like measure found;  
So Jove usurping reign'd. These, first in Crete  
And Ida known, thence on the snowy top  
Of cold Olympus ruled the middle air,  
Their highest Heaven; or on the Delphian cliff,  
Or in Dodona, and through all the bounds  
Of Doric land; or who with Saturn old  
Fled over Adria to the Hesperian fields,  
And o'er the Celtic roam'd the utmost isles.

510

520

All these and more came flocking; but with looks  
Downcast and damp, yet such wherein appear'd  
Obscure some glimpse of joy, to have found their Chief  
Not in despair, to have found themselves not lost  
In loss itself; which on his countenance cast  
Like doubtful hue. But he, his wonted pride  
Soon recollecting, with high words, that bore

Semblance of worth, not substance, gently raised  
Their fainting courage, and dispell'd their fears :  
Then straight commands that, at the warlike sound  
Of trumpets loud and clarions, be uprear'd  
His mighty standard. That proud honour claim'd  
Azazel as his right, a Cherub tall :  
Who forthwith from the glittering staff unfurl'd  
The imperial ensign, which, full high advanced,  
Shone like a meteor streaming to the wind,  
With gems and golden lustre rich emblaz'd,  
Seraphic arms and trophies ; all the while  
Sonorous metal blowing martial sounds :  
At which the universal host up sent  
A shout that tore Hell's concave, and beyond  
Frighted the reign of Chaos and old Night.  
All in a moment through the gloom were seen  
Ten thousand banners rise into the air,  
With orient colours waving ; with them rose  
A forest huge of spears ; and thronging helms  
Appear'd, and serried shields in thick array  
Of depth immeasurable. Anon they move  
In perfect phalanx to the Dorian mood  
Of flutes and soft recorders ; such as raised  
To highth of noblest temper heroes old  
Arming to battle, and instead of rage  
Deliberate valour breathed, firm and unmoved  
With dread of death to flight or foul retreat ;  
Nor wanting power to mitigate and swage,  
With solemn touches, troubled thoughts, and chase  
Anguish and doubt and fear and sorrow and pain  
From mortal or immortal minds. Thus they,  
Breathing united force with fixed thought,  
Moved on in silence to soft pipes that charm'd  
Their painful steps o'er the burnt soil ; and now  
Advanced in view they stand, a horrid front  
Of dreadful length and dazzling arms, in guise  
Of warriors old, with order'd spear and shield,  
Awaiting what command their mighty Chief  
Had to impose. He through the armed files  
Darts his experienced eye, and soon traverse

530

540

550

560

The whole battalion views, their order due,  
Their visages and stature as of gods ;  
Their number last he sums. And now his heart  
Distends with pride, and hardening in his strength  
Glories ; for never, since created Man,  
Met such embodied force as, named with these,  
Could merit more than that small infantry  
Warr'd on by cranes : though all the giant brood  
Of Phlegra with the heroic race were join'd  
That fought at Thebes and Ilium, on each side  
Mix'd with auxiliiar gods ; and what resounds  
In fable or romance of Uther's son,  
Begirt with British and Armoric knights ;  
And all who since, baptized or infidel,  
Jousted in Aspramont, or Montalban,  
Damasco, or Marocco, or Trebisond ;  
Or whom Biserta sent from Afric shore  
When Charlemain with all his peerage fell  
By Fontarabbia. Thus far these beyond  
Compare of mortal prowess, yet observed  
Their dread Commander. He, above the rest  
In shape and gesture proudly eminent,  
Stood like a tower ; his form had yet not lost  
All her original brightness, nor appear'd  
Less than Archangel ruin'd, and the excess  
Of glory obscured : as when the sun new-risen  
Looks through the horizontal misty air  
Shorn of his beams, or from behind the moon,  
In dim eclipse, disastrous twilight sheds  
On half the nations, and with fear of change  
Perplexes monarchs. Darken'd so, yet shone  
Above them all the Archangel ; but his face  
Deep scars of thunder had intrench'd, and care  
Sat on his faded cheek, but under brows  
Of dauntless courage, and considerate pride  
Waiting revenge. Cruel his eye, but cast  
Signs of remorse and passion, to behold  
The fellows of his crime, the followers rather  
(Far other once beheld in bliss), condemn'd  
For ever now to have their lot in pain ;

579

580

590

600

Millions of Spirits for his fault amerced  
Of Heaven, and from eternal splendours flung  
For his revolt; yet faithful how they stood,  
Their glory wither'd: as, when Heaven's fire  
Hath scathed the forest oaks or mountain pines,  
With singèd top their stately growth, though bare,  
Stands on the blasted heath. He now prepared  
To speak; whereat their doubled ranks they bend  
From wing to wing, and half enclose him round  
With all his peers: attention held them mute.  
Thrice he assay'd, and thrice, in spite of scorn,  
Tears, such as Angels weep, burst forth: at last  
Words interwove with sighs found out their way:

“O myriads of immortal Spirits! O Powers  
Matchless, but with the Almighty! and that strife  
Was not inglorious, though the event was dire,  
As this place testifies, and this dire change,  
Hateful to utter. But what power of mind,  
Foreseeing or presaging, from the depth  
Of knowledge past or present, could have fear'd  
How such united force of gods, how such  
As stood like these, could ever know repulse?  
For who can yet believe, though after loss,  
That all these puissant legions, whose exile  
Hath emptied Heaven, shall fail to re-ascend,  
Self-raised, and re-possess their native seat?  
For me, be witness all the host of Heaven,  
If counsels different, or danger shunn'd  
By me, have lost our hopes. But he who reigns  
Monarch in Heaven, till then as one secure  
Sat on his throne, upheld by old repute,  
Consent, or custom, and his regal state  
Put forth at full, but still his strength conceal'd,  
Which tempted our attempt, and wrought our fall.  
Henceforth his might we know, and know our own,  
So as not either to provoke, or dread  
New war, provoked; our better part remains  
To work in close design, by fraud or guile,  
What force effected not; that he no less  
At length from us may find, who overcomes

By force hath overcome but half his foe.  
Space may produce new worlds; whereof so rife  
There went a faine in Heaven that he ere long  
Intended to create, and therein plant  
A generation whom his choice regard  
Should favour equal to the Sons of Heaven.  
Thither, if but to pry, shall be perhaps  
Our first eruption, thither or elsewhere;  
For this infernal pit shall never hold  
Celestial Spirits in bondage, nor the Abyss  
Long under darkness cover. But these thoughts  
Full counsel must mature. Peace is despair'd,  
For who can think submission? War, then, war  
Open or understood, must be resolved."

650

660

He spake; and, to confirm his words, out flew  
Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs  
Of mighty Cherubim; the sudden blaze  
Far round illumined Hell. Highly they raged  
Against the Highest, and fierce with grasped arms  
Clash'd on their sounding shields the din of war,  
Hurling defiance toward the vault of Heaven.

There stood a hill not far, whose grisly top  
Belch'd fire and rolling smoke; the rest entire  
Shone with a glossy scurf, undoubted sign  
That in his womb was hid metallic ore,  
The work of sulphur. Thither, wing'd with speed,  
A numerous brigad hasten'd: as when bands  
Of pioners, with spade and pickaxe arm'd,  
Forerun the royal camp, to trench a field,  
Or cast a rampart. Mammon led them on,  
Mammon, the least erected Spirit that fell  
From Heaven, for even in Heaven his looks and thoughts  
Were always downward bent, admiring more  
The riches of Heaven's pavement, trodden gold,  
Than aught divine or holy else enjoy'd  
In vision beatific. By him first  
Men also, and by his suggestion taught,  
Ransack'd the centre, and with impious hands  
Rifled the bowels of their mother Earth  
For treasures better hid. Soon had his crew

670

679

Open'd into the hill a spacious wound,  
And digg'd out ribs of gold. Let none admire  
That riches grow in Hell; that soil may best  
Deserve the precious bane. And here let those  
Who boast in mortal things, and wondering tell  
Of Babel, and the works of Memphian kings,  
Learn how their greatest monuments of fame,  
And strength, and art, are easily outdone  
By Spirits reprobate, and in an hour  
What in an age they with incessant toil  
And hands innumerable scarce perform.  
Nigh on the plain, in many cells prepared,  
That underneath had veins of liquid fire  
Sluic'd from the lake, a second multitude  
With wondrous art founded the massy ore,  
Severing each kind, and scumm'd the bullion dross.  
A third as soon had form'd within the ground  
A various mould, and from the boiling cells  
By strange conveyance fill'd each hollow nook:  
As in an organ, from one blast of wind,  
To many a row of pipes the sound-board breathes.  
Anon out of the earth a fabric huge  
Rose like an exhalation, with the sound  
Of dulcet symphonies and voices sweet;  
Built like a temple, where pilasters round  
Were set, and Doric pillars overlaid  
With golden architrave; nor did there want  
Cornice or frieze, with bossy sculptures graven;  
The roof was fretted gold. Not Babylon,  
Nor great Alcairo, such magnificence  
Equall'd in all their glories, to enshrine  
Belus or Serapis their gods, or seat  
Their kings, when Egypt with Assyria strove  
In wealth and luxury. The ascending pile  
Stood fix'd her stately highth, and straight the doors,  
Opening their brazen folds, discover, wide  
Within, her ample spaces o'er the smooth  
And level pavement: from the arched roof,  
Pendent by subtle magic, many a row  
Of starry lamps and blazing cressets, fed



With naphtha and asphaltus, yielded light  
As from a sky. The hasty multitude  
Admiring enter'd, and the work some praise,  
And some the architect : his hand was known  
In Heaven by many a towered structure high,  
Where sceptred Angels held their residence,  
And sat as princes, whom the supreme King  
Exalted to such power, and gave to rule,  
Each in his Hierarchy, the Orders bright.  
Nor was his name unheard or unadored  
In ancient Greece ; and in Ausonian land  
Men call'd him Mulciber ; and how he fell  
From Heaven they fabled, thrown by angry Jove  
Sheer o'er the crystal battlements : from morn  
To noon he fell, from noon to dewy eve,  
A summer's day ; and with the setting sun  
Dropt from the zenith, like a falling star,  
On Lemnos, the Ægean isle. Thus they relate,  
Erring ; for he with this rebellious rout  
Fell long before ; nor aught avail'd him now  
To have built in Heaven high towers ; nor did he scape  
By all his engines, but was headlong sent  
With his industrious crew to build in Hell.

Meanwhile the winged haralds, by command  
Of sovran power, with awful ceremony  
And trumpet's sound, throughout the host proclaim  
A solemn council forthwith to be held  
At Pandemonium, the high capital  
Of Satan and his peers. Their summons call'd  
From every band and squared regiment  
By place or choice the worthiest ; they anon  
With hundreds and with thousands trooping came  
Attended. All access was throng'd, the gates  
And porches wide, but chief the spacious hall  
(Though like a cover'd field, where champions bold  
Wont ride in arm'd, and at the Soldan's chair  
Defied the best of Panim chivalry  
To mortal combat, or career with lance)  
Thick swarm'd, both on the ground and in the air,  
Brush'd with the hiss of rustling wings. As bees

In spring time, when the sun with Taurus rides,  
Pour forth their populous youth about the hive  
In clusters; they among fresh dews and flowers  
Fly to and fro, or on the smoothed plank,  
The suburb of their straw-built citadel,  
New rubb'd with balm, expatiate and confer  
Their state affairs. So thick the aery crowd  
Swarm'd and were straiten'd; till, the signal given,  
Behold a wonder! they but now who seem'd  
In bigness to surpass Earth's giant sons,  
Now less than smallest dwarfs, in narrow room  
Throng numberless, like that Pygmean race  
Beyond the Indian mount; or faery elves,  
Whose midnight revels, by a forest side  
Or fountain, some belated peasant sees,  
Or dreams he sees, while overhead the moon  
Sits arbitress, and nearer to the Earth  
Wheels her pale course; they, on their mirth and dance  
Intent, with jocund music charm his ear;  
At once with joy and fear his heart rebounds.  
Thus incorporeal Spirits to smallest forms  
Reduced their shapes immense, and were at large,  
Though without number still, amidst the hall  
Of that infernal court. But far within,  
And in their own dimensions like themselves,  
The great Seraphic Lords and Cherubim  
In close recess and secret conclave sat,  
A thousand demi-gods on golden seats,  
Frequent and full. After short silence then  
And summons read, the great consult began.

779

780

790

M. A. A. A.

2. 3. 2001

## BOOK II.

## THE ARGUMENT.

The consultation begun, Satan debates whether another battle be to be hazarded for the recovery of Heaven : some advise it, others dissuade. A third proposal is preferred, mentioned before by Satan, to search the truth of that prophecy or tradition in Heaven concerning another world, and another kind of creature, equal, or not much inferior, to themselves, about this time to be created. Their doubt who shall be sent on this difficult search : Satan, their chief, undertakes alone the voyage ; is honoured and applauded. The council thus ended, the rest betake them several ways and to several employments, as their inclinations lead them, to entertain the time till Satan return. He passes on his journey to Hell gates, finds them shut, and who sat there to guard them ; by whom at length they are opened, and discover to him the great gulf between Hell and Heaven ; with what difficulty he passes through, directed by Chaos, the Power of that place, to the sight of this new world which he sought.

HIGH on a throne of royal state, which far  
Outshone the wealth of Ormus and of Ind,  
Or where the gorgeous East with richest hand  
Showers on her kings barbaric pearl and gold,  
Satan exalted sat, by merit raised  
To that bad eminence ; and, from despair  
Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aspires  
Beyond thus high, insatiate to pursue  
Vain war with Heaven ; and, by success untaught,  
His proud imaginations thus display'd :

10

“Powers and Dominions, Deities of Heaven !  
For since no deep within her gulf can hold  
Immortal vigour, though oppress'd and fall'n,  
I give not Heaven for lost : from this descent  
Celestial Virtues rising will appear  
More glorious and more dread than from no fall,  
And trust themselves to fear no second fate.  
Me though just right, and the fix'd laws of Heaven,  
Did first create your leader, next, free choice,

With what besides, in counsel or in fight,  
Hath been achiev'd of merit, yet this loss,  
Thus far at least recover'd, hath much more  
Establish'd in a safe unenvied throne,  
Yielded with full consent. The happier state  
In Heaven, which follows dignity, might draw  
Envy from each inferior; but who here  
Will envy whom the highest place exposes  
Foremost to stand against the Thunderer's aim  
Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share  
Of endless pain? Where there is then no good  
For which to strive, no strife can grow up there  
From faction; for none sure will claim in Hell  
Precedence, none, whose portion is so small  
Of present pain, that with ambitious mind  
Will covet more. With this advantage then  
To union, and firm faith, and firm accord,  
More than can be in Heaven, we now return  
To claim our just inheritance of old,  
Surer to prosper than prosperity  
Could have assured us; and by what best way,  
Whether of open war or covert guile,  
We now debate; who can advise may speak."

He ceased; and next him Moloch, sceptred king,  
Stood up, the strongest and the fiercest Spirit  
That fought in Heaven, now fiercer by despair.  
His trust was with the Eternal to be deem'd  
Equal in strength, and rather than be less  
Cared not to be at all; with that care lost  
Went all his fear: of God, or Hell, or worse,  
He reck'd not, and these words thereafter spake:

"My sentence is for open war: of wiles,  
More unexpert, I boast not: them let those  
Contrive who need, or when they need, not now.  
For while they sit contriving, shall the rest,  
Millions that stand in arms, and longing wait  
The signal to ascend, sit lingering here  
Heaven's fugitives, and for their dwelling-place  
Accept this dark opprobrious den of shame,  
The prison of his tyranny who reigns

By our delay? No! let us rather choose,  
Arm'd with Hell flames and fury, all at once  
O'er Heaven's high towers to force resistless way,  
Turning our tortures into horrid arms  
Against the Torturer; when to meet the noise  
Of his almighty engine he shall hear  
Infernal thunder, and for lightning see  
Black fire and horror shot with equal rage  
Among his Angels, and his throne itself  
Mix'd with Tartarean sulphur and strange fire,  
His own invented torments. But perhaps  
The way seems difficult and steep to scale  
With upright wing against a higher foe.  
Let such bethink them, if the sleepy drench  
Of that forgetful lake benumb not still,  
That in our proper motion we ascend  
Up to our native seat; descent and fall  
To us is adverse. Who but felt of late,  
When the fierce foe hung on our broken rear  
Insulting, and pursued us through the deep,  
With what compulsion and laborious flight  
We sunk thus low? The ascent is easy then;  
The event is fear'd: should we again provoke  
Our stronger, some worse way his wrath may find  
To our destruction, if there be in Hell  
Fear to be worse destroy'd! What can be worse  
Than to dwell here, driven out from bliss, condemn'd  
In this abhorred deep to utter woe;  
Where pain of unextinguishable fire  
Must exercise us without hope of end,  
The vassals of his anger, when the scourge  
Inexorably, and the torturing hour,  
Calls us to penance? More destroy'd than thus,  
We should be quite abolish'd, and expire.  
What fear we then? what doubt we to incense  
His utmost ire? which, to the highth enraged,  
Will either quite consume us, and reduce  
To nothing this essential, happier far  
Than miserable to have eternal being!  
Or if our substance be indeed divine,

60

70

80

90

And cannot cease to be, we are at worst  
On this side nothing; and by proof we feel  
Our power sufficient to disturb his Heaven,  
And with perpetual inroads to alarm,  
Though inaccessible, his fatal throne:  
Which, if not victory, is yet revenge."

100

He ended frowning, and his look denounc'd  
Desperate revenge, and battle dangerous  
To less than gods. On the other side up rose  
Belial, in act more graceful and humane;  
A fairer person lost not Heaven; he seem'd  
For dignity composed, and high exploit;  
But all was false and hollow: though his tongue  
Dropp'd manna, and could make the worse appear  
The better reason, to perplex and dash  
Maturest counsels: for his thoughts here low;  
To vice industrious, but to nobler deeds  
Timorous and slothful: yet he pleased the ear,  
And with persuasive accent thus began:

110

"I should be much for open war, O Peers,  
As not behind in hate, if what was urg'd  
Main reason to persuade immediate war  
Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast  
Ominous conjecture on the whole success;  
When he who most excels in fact of arms,  
In what he counsels and in what excels  
Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair  
And utter dissolution, as the scope  
Of all his aim, after some dire revenge.  
First, what revenge? The towers of Heaven are fill'd  
With armed watch, that render all access  
Impregnable; oft on the bordering deep  
Encamp their legions, or with obscure wing  
Scout far and wide into the realm of Night,  
Scorning surprise. Or could we break our way  
By force, and at our heels all Hell should rise  
With blackest insurrection, to confound  
Heaven's purest light, yet our great enemy  
All incorruptible would on his throne  
Sit unpolled, and the ethereal mould

120

130

Incapable of stain would soon expel 140  
 Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire,  
 Victorious. Thus repulsed, our final hope  
 Is flat despair: we must exasperate  
 The almighty victor to spend all his rage,  
 And ~~that~~ must end us, that must be our cure,  
 To be no more. Sad cure! for who would lose,  
 Though full of pain, this intellectual being,  
 Those thoughts ~~to~~ wander through eternity,  
 To perish rather, swallow'd up and lost  
 In the wide womb of uncreated Night, 150  
 Devoid of sense and motion? And who knows,  
 Let this be good, whether our angry foe  
 Can give it, or will ever? How he can  
 Is doubtful; that he never will is sure.  
 Will he, so wise, loose at once his ire,  
 Belike through impotence, or unaware,  
 To give his enemies their wish, and end  
 Them in his anger, whom his anger saves  
 To punish endless? 'Wherefore cease we, then?'  
 Say they who counsel war; 'we are decreed, 160  
 Reserved, and destined to eternal woe;  
 Whatever ~~doing~~, what can we suffer more,  
 What can we suffer worse?' Is this then worst,  
 Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in arms?  
 What, when we fled amain, pursued and strook  
 With Heaven's afflicting thunder, and besought  
 The deep to shelter us? this Hell then seem'd  
 A refuge from those wounds. Or when we lay  
 Chain'd on the burning lake? that sure was worse.  
 What if the breath that kindled those grim fires, 170  
 Awaked, should blow them into sevenfold rage,  
 And plunge us in the flames? or from above  
 Should intermitted vengeance arm again  
 His red right hand to plague us? What if all  
 Her stores were open'd, and this firmament  
 Of Hell should spout her cataracts of fire,  
 Impendent horrors, threatening hideous fall  
 One day upon our heads; while we perhaps,  
 Designing or exhorting glorious war,

Caught in a fiery tempest shall be hurl'd,  
Each on his rock transfix'd, the sport and prey  
Of racking whirlwinds, or for ever sunk  
Under yon boiling ocean, wrapt in chains;  
There to converse with everlasting groans,  
Unrespited, unpitied, unreprieved,  
Ages of hopeless end? This would be worse.  
War therefore, open or conceal'd, alike  
My voice dissuades; for what can force or guile  
With him, or who deceive his mind, whose eye  
Views all things at one view? He from Heaven's highth  
All these our motions vain sees and derides,  
Not more almighty to resist our might  
Than wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.  
Shall we then live thus vile, the race of Heaven  
Thus trampled, thus expell'd to suffer here  
Chains and these torments? Better these than worse,  
By my advice; since fate inevitable  
Subdues us, and omnipotent decree,  
The victor's will. To suffer, as to do,  
Our strength is equal, nor the law unjust  
That so ordains: this was at first resolved,  
If we were wise, against so great a foe  
Contending, and so doubtful what might fall.  
I laugh, when those who at the spear are bold  
And vent'rous, if that fail them, shrink, and fear  
What yet they know must follow, to endure  
Exile, or ignominy, or bonds, or pain,  
The sentence of their conqueror. This is now  
Our doom; which if we can sustain and bear,  
Our supreme foe in time may much remit  
His anger, and perhaps, thus far removed,  
Not mind us not offending, satisfied  
With what is punish'd; whence these raging fires  
Will slacken, if his breath stir not their flames.  
Our purer essence then will overcome  
Their noxious vapour, or inured not feel,  
Or changed at length, and to the place conform'd  
In temper and in nature, will receive  
Familiar the fierce heat, and void of pain;



This horror will grow mild, this darkness light;  
 Besides what hope the never-ending flight  
 Of future days may bring, what chance, what change  
 Worth waiting, since our present lot appears  
 For happy though but ill, for ill not worst,  
 If we procure not to ourselves more woe."

220

Thus Belial, with words clothed in reason's garb,  
 Counsell'd ignoble ease, and peaceful sloth,  
 Not peace; and after him thus Mammon spake:

"Either to disenthroned the King of Heaven  
 We war, if war be best, or to regain  
 Our own right lost: him to unthrone we then  
 May hope, when everlasting Fate shall yield  
 To fickle Chance, and Chaos judge the strife.  
 The former, vain to hope, argues as vain  
 The latter; for what place can be for us  
 Within Heaven's bound, unless Heaven's Lord supreme  
 We overpower? Suppose he should relent  
 And publish grace to all, on promise made  
 Of new subjection; with what eyes could we  
 Stand in his presence humble, and receive  
 Strict laws imposed, to celebrate his throne  
 With warbled hymns, and to his Godhead sing  
 Forced Halleluiahs; while he lordly sits  
 Our envied Sovran, and his altar breathes  
 Ambrosial odours and ambrosial flowers,  
 Our servile offerings? This must be our task  
 In Heaven, this our delight; how wearisome  
 Eternity so spent in worship paid  
 To whom we hate! Let us not then pursue,  
 By force impossible, by leave obtain'd  
 Unacceptable, though in Heaven, our state  
 Of splendid vassalage; but rather seek  
 Our own good from ourselves, and from our own  
 Live to ourselves, though in this vast recess,  
 Free, and to none accountable, preferring  
 Hard liberty before the easy yoke  
 Of servile pomp. Our greatness will appear  
 Then most conspicuous, when great things of small,  
 Useful of hurtful, prosperous of adverse,

230

240

250

We can create, and in what place soe'er  
 Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain  
 Through labour and endurance. This deep world  
 Of darkness do we dread? How oft amidst  
 Thick clouds and dark doth Heaven's all-ruling Sire  
 Choose to reside, his glory unobscured,  
 And with the majesty of darkness round  
 Covers his throne, from whence deep thunders roar,  
 Mustering their rage, and Heaven resembles Hell!  
 As he our darkness, cannot we his light  
 Imitate when we please? This désert soil  
 Wants not her hidden lustre, gems and gold;  
 Nor want we skill or art, from whence to raise  
 Magnificence; and what can Heaven shew more?  
 Our torments also may in length of time  
 Become our elements, these piercing fires  
 As soft as now severe, our temper changed  
 Into their temper; which must needs remove  
 The sensible of pain. All things invite  
 To peaceful counsels, and the settled state  
 Of order, how in safety best we may  
 Compose our present evils, with regard  
 Of what we are and where, dismissing quite  
 All thoughts of war. Ye have what I advise."

He scarce had finish'd, when such murmur fill'd  
 The assembly, as when hollow rocks retain  
 The sound of blustering winds, which all night long  
 Had roused the sea, now with hoarse cadence lull  
 Seafaring men o'erwatch'd, whose bark by chance,  
 Or pinnacle, anchors in a craggy bay  
 After the tempest: such applause was heard  
 As Mammon ended, and his sentence pleased,  
 Advising peace; for such another field  
 They dreaded worse than Hell; so much the fear  
 Of thunder and the sword of Michaël  
 Wrought still within them; and no less desire  
 To found this nether empire, which might rise,  
 By policy, and long process of time,  
 In emulation opposite to Heaven.  
 Which when Beëlzebub perceived, than whom,

Satan except, none higher sat, with grave  
Aspect he rose, and in his rising seem'd 300  
A pillar of state; deep on his front engraven  
Deliberation sat and public care;  
And princely counsel in his face yet shone,  
Majestic though in ruin. Sage he stood,  
With Atlantean shoulders fit to bear  
The weight of mightiest monarchies; his look  
Drew audience and attention still as night  
Or summer's noontide air, while thus he spake:  
"Thrones and imperial Powers, Offspring of Heaven, 310  
Ethereal Virtues! or these titles now  
Must we renounce, and, changing style, be call'd  
Princes of Hell? for so the popular vote  
Inclines, here to continue, and build up here  
A growing empire: doubtless! while we dream,  
And know not that the King of Heaven hath doom'd  
This place our dungeon, not our safe retreat  
Beyond his potent arm, to live exempt  
From Heaven's high jurisdiction, in new league  
Banded against his throne, but to remain 320  
In strictest bondage, though thus far removed,  
Under the inevitable curb, reserved  
His captive multitude. For he, be sure,  
In highth or depth, still first and last will reign  
Sole king, and of his kingdom lose no part  
By our revolt, but over Hell extend  
His empire, and with iron sceptre rule  
Us here, as with his golden those in Heaven.  
What sit we then projecting peace and war?  
War hath determined us, and foil'd with loss 330  
Irreparable; terms of peace yet none  
Vouchsafed or sought; for what peace will be given  
To us enslaved, but custody severe,  
And stripes, and arbitrary punishment  
Inflicted? and what peace can we return,  
But, to our power, hostility and hate,  
Untamed reluctance, and revenge, though slow,  
Yet ever plotting how the conqueror least  
May reap his conquest, and may least rejoice

In doing what we most in suffering feel?  
Nor will occasion want, nor shall we need  
With dangerous expedition to invade  
Heaven, whose high walls fear no assault or siege  
Or ambush from the deep. What if we find  
Some easier enterprise? There is a place  
(If ancient and prophetic fame in Heaven  
Err not), another world, the happy seat  
Of some new race called Man, about this time  
To be created like to us, though less  
In power and excellence, but favour'd more  
Of him who rules above; so was his will  
Pronounced among the gods, and by an oath,  
That shook Heaven's whole circumference, confirm'd.  
Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn  
What creatures there inhabit, of what mould,  
Or substance, how endued, and what their power,  
And where their weakness, how attempted best,  
By force or subtlety. Though Heaven be shut,  
And Heaven's high Arbitrator sit secure  
In his own strength, this place may lie exposed,  
The utmost border of his kingdom, left  
To their defence who hold it; here perhaps  
Some advantageous act may be achieved  
By sudden onset: either with Hell fire  
To waste his whole creation, or possess  
All as our own, and drive, as we were driven,  
The puny habitants; or if not drive,  
Seduce them to our party, that their God  
May prove their foe, and with repenting hand  
Abolish his own works. This would surpass  
Common revenge, and interrupt his joy  
In our confusion, and our joy upraise  
In his disturbance; when his darling sons,  
Hurl'd headlong to partake with us, shall curse  
Their frail original, and faded bliss,  
Faded so soon! Advise if this be worth  
Attempting, or to sit in darkness here  
Hatching vain empires." Thus Beelzebub  
Pleaded his devilish counsel, first devised

245

350

360

370

By Satan, and in part proposed ; for whence,  
 But from the author of all ill, could spring  
 So deep a malice, to confound the race  
 Of Mankind in one root, and Earth with Hell  
 To mingle and involve, done all to spite  
 The great Creator? But their spite still serves  
 His glory to augment. The bold design  
 Pleased highly those infernal States, and joy  
 Sparkled in all their eyes ; with full assent  
 They vote : whereat his speech he thus renews :

380

"Well have ye judged, well ended long debate,  
 Synod of gods, and, like to what ye are,  
 Great things resolved ; which from the lowest deep  
 Will once more lift us up, in spite of fate,  
 Nearer our ancient seat ; perhaps in view  
 Of those bright confines, whence, with neighbouring arms  
 And opportune excursion, we may chance  
 Re-enter Heaven ; or else in some mild zone  
 Dwell not unvisited of Heaven's fair light,  
 Secure, and at the brightening orient beam  
 Purge off this gloom ; the soft delicious air,  
 To heal the scar of these corrosive fires,  
 Shall breathe her balm. But first, whom shall we send  
 In search of this new world? whom shall we find  
 Sufficient? who shall tempt with wandering feet  
 The dark, unbottom'd, infinite Abyss,  
 And through the palpable obscure find out  
 His uncouth way, or spread his aery flight,  
 Upborne with indefatigable wings  
 Over the vast abrupt, ere he arrive  
 The happy isle? What strength, what art, can then  
 Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe  
 Through the strict senteries and stations thick  
 Of Angels watching round? Here he had need  
 All circumspection, and we now no less  
 Choice in our suffrage ; for on whom we send  
 The weight of all, and our last hope, relies."

390

400

410

This said, he sat ; and expectation held  
 His look suspense, awaiting who appear'd  
 To second, or oppose, or undertake

The perilous attempt; but all sat mute,  
Pondering the danger with deep thoughts; and each  
In other's countenance read his own dismay,  
Astonish'd. None among the choice and prime  
Of those Heaven-warring champions could be found  
So hardly as to proffer or accept,  
Alone, the dreadful voyage; till at last  
Satan, whom now transcendent glory raised  
Above his fellows, with monarchal pride  
Conscious of highest worth, unmoved thus spake:

"O Progeny of Heaven, empyreal Thrones!  
With reason hath deep silence and demur  
Seized us, though undismay'd. Long is the way  
And hard, that out of Hell leads up to light;  
Our prison strong, this huge convex of fire,  
Outrageous to devour, immures us round  
Ninefold, and gates of burning adamant,  
Bar'd over us, prohibit all egress.  
These pass'd, if any pass, the void profound  
Of unessential Night receives him next,  
Wide gaping, and with utter loss of being  
Threatens him, plunged in that abortive gulf.  
If thence he scape into whatever world,  
Or unknown region, what remains him less  
Than unknown dangers and as hard escape?  
But I should ill become this throne, O Peers,  
And this imperial sovranity, adorn'd  
With splendour, arm'd with power, if aught proposed  
And judg'd of public moment, in the shape  
Of difficulty or danger, could deter  
Me from attempting. Wherefore do I assume  
These royalties, and not refuse to reign,  
Refusing to accept as great a share  
Of hazard as of honour, due alike  
To him who reigns, and so much to him due  
Of hazard more, as he above the rest  
High honour'd sits? Go therefore, mighty Powers,  
Terror of Heaven, though fall'n; intend at home,  
While here shall be our home, what best may ease  
The present misery, and render Hell

More tolerable ; if there be cure or charm 460  
 To respite, or deceive, or slack the pain  
 Of this ill mansion ; intermit no watch  
 Against a wakeful foe, while I abroad  
 Through all the coasts of dark destruction seek,  
 Deliverance for us all : this enterprise  
 None shall partake with me." Thus saying, rose  
 The Monarch, and prevented all reply ;  
 Prudent, lest, from his resolution raised,  
 Others among the chief might offer now  
 (Certain to be refused) what erst they fear'd, 470  
 And, so refused, might in opinion stand  
 His rivals, winning cheap the high repute  
 Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they  
 Dreaded not more the adventure than his voice  
 Forbidding ; and at once with him they rose ;  
 Their rising all at once was as the sound  
 Of thunder heard remote. Towards him they bend  
 With awful reverence prone ; and as a god  
 Extol him equal to the Highest in Heaven.  
 Nor fail'd they to express how much they praised 480  
 That for the general safety he despised  
 His own ; for neither do the Spirits damn'd  
 Lose all their virtue ; lest bad men should boast  
 Their specious deeds on Earth, which glory excites,  
 Or close ambition varnish'd o'er with zeal.

Thus they their doubtful consultations dark  
 Ended, rejoicing in their matchless Chief :  
 As when from mountain tops the dusky clouds  
 Ascending, while the North wind sleeps, o'erspread  
 Heaven's cheerful face, the louring element 490  
 Scowls o'er the darken'd landskip snow or shower ;  
 If chance the radiant sun with farewell sweet  
 Extend his evening beam, the fields revive,  
 The birds their notes renew, and bleating herds  
 Attest their joy, that hill and valley rings.  
 O shame to men ! Devil with devil damn'd  
 Firm concord holds, men only disagree  
 Of creatures rational, though under hope  
 Of heavenly grace ; and, God proclaiming peace,

Yet live in hatred, enmity, and strife  
Among themselves, and levy cruel wars,  
Wasting the Earth, each other to destroy :  
As if (which might induce us to accord)  
Man had not hellish foes enow besides,  
That day and night for his destruction wait !

The Stygian council thus dissolved ; and forth  
In order came the grand infernal Peers ;  
Midst came their mighty Paramount, and seem'd  
Alone the antagonist of Heaven, nor less  
Than Hell's dread Emperor, with pomp supreme,  
And god-like imitated state ; him round  
A globe of fiery Seraphim enclosed

With bright emblazonry, and horrent arms.  
Then of their session ended they bid cry  
With trumpet's regal sound the great result :  
Toward the four winds four speedy Cherubim  
Put to their mouths the sounding alchymy,  
By harald's voice explain'd ; the hollow Abyss  
Heard far and wide, and all the host of Hell  
With deafening shout return'd them loud acclaim.

Thence more at ease their minds and somewhat raised  
By false presumptuous hope, the rangèd powers  
Disband ; and wandering each his several way  
Pursues, as inclination or sad choice  
Leads him perplex'd, where he may likeliest find  
Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain  
The irksome hours, till his great Chief return.

Part on the plain, or in the air sublime,  
Upon the wing or in swift race contend,  
As at the Olympian games or Pythian fields ;  
Part curb their fiery steeds, or shun the goal  
With rapid wheels, or fronted brigads form :  
As when, to warn proud cities, war appears  
Waged in the troubled sky, and armies rush  
To battle in the clouds ; before each van  
Prick forth the aery knights, and couch their spears,  
Till thickest legions close ; with feats of arms  
From either end of Heaven the welkin burns.  
Others, with vast Typhœan rage more fell,



Rend up both rocks and hills, and ride the air  
In whirlwind ; Hell scarce holds the wild uproar :  
As when Alcides, from Æchalia crown'd  
With conquest, felt the envenom'd robe, and tore  
Through pain up by the roots Thessalian pines,  
And Lichas from the top of Ceta threw  
Into the Euboic sea. Others more mild,  
Retreated in a silent valley, sing  
With notes angelical to many a harp  
Their own heroic deeds and hapless fall  
By doom of battle ; and complain that Fate  
Free Virtue should enthrall to Force or Chance. 540  
Their song was partial, but the harmony  
(What could it less when Spirits immortal sing?)  
Suspended Hell, and took with ravishment  
The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet  
(For eloquence the soul, song charms the sense)  
Others apart sat on a hill retired,  
In thoughts more elevate, and reason'd high  
Of providence, foreknowledge, will, and fate,  
Fix'd fate, free will, foreknowledge absolute, 560  
And found no end, in wandering mazes lost.  
Of good and evil much they argued then,  
Of happiness and final misery,  
Passion and apathy, and glory and shame,  
Vain wisdom all, and false philosophy !  
Yet with a pleasing sorcery could charm  
Pain for a while or anguish, and excite  
Fallacious hope, or arm the obdured breast  
With stubborn patience as with triple steel.  
Another part, in squadrons and gross bands, 570  
On bold adventure to discover wide  
That dismal world, if any clime perhaps  
Might yield them easier habitation, bend  
Four ways their flying march, along the banks  
Of four infernal rivers that disgorge  
Into the burning lake their baleful streams :  
Abhorred Styx, the flood of deadly hate ;  
Sad Acheron of sorrow, black and deep ;  
Cocytus, named of lamentation loud

Heard on the rueful stream ; fierce Phlegethon,  
Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.  
Far off from these a slow and silent stream,  
Lethæ, the river of oblivion, rolls  
Her watery labyrinth, whereof who drinks  
Forthwith his former state and being forgets,  
Forgets both joy and grief, pleasure and pain.  
Beyond this flood a frozen continent  
Lies dark and wild, beat with perpetual storms  
Of whirlwind and dire hail, which on firm land  
Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin seems  
Of ancient pile ; all else deep snow and ice,  
A gulf profound as that Serbonian bog  
Betwixt Damiatra and Mount Casius old,  
Where armies whole have sunk : the parching air  
Burns froze, and cold performs the effect of fire.  
Thither, by harpy-footed Furies haled,  
At certain revolutions all the damn'd  
Are brought ; and feel by turns the bitter change  
Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,  
From beds of raging fire to starve in ice  
Their soft ethereal warmth, and there to pine  
Immovable, infix'd, and frozen round,  
Periods of time ; thence hurried back to fire.  
They ferry over this Lethean sound  
Both to and fro, their sorrow to augment,  
And wish and struggle, as they pass, to reach  
The tempting stream, with one small drop to lose  
In sweet forgetfulness all pain and woe,  
All in one moment, and so near the brink ;  
But Fate withstands, and, to oppose the attempt,  
Medusa with Gorgonian terror guards  
The ford, and of itself the water flies  
All taste of living wight, as once it fled  
The lip of Tantalus. Thus roving on  
In confused march forlorn, the advent'rous bands,  
With shuddering horror pale, and eyes agast,  
View'd first their lamentable lot, and found  
No rest. Through many a dark and dreary vale  
They pass'd, and many a region dolorous,

520

592

600

610

O'er many a frozen, many a fiery Alp,  
Rocks, caves, lakes, fens, bogs, dens, and shades of death,  
A universe of death, which God by curse  
Created evil, for evil only good,  
Where all life dies, death lives, and Nature breeds,  
Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things,  
Abominable, inutterable, and worse  
Than fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceived,  
Gorgons, and Hydras, and Chimæras dire.

620

Meanwhile the Adversary of God and Man,  
Satan, with thoughts inflamed of highest design,  
Puts on swift wings, and toward the gates of Hell  
Explores his solitary flight; sometimes  
He scours the right-hand coast, sometimes the left;  
Now shaves with level wing the deep, then soars  
Up to the fiery concave towering high.  
As when far off at sea a fleet descried  
Hangs in the clouds, by equinoctial winds  
Close sailing from Bengala, or the isles  
Of Ternate and Tidore, whence merchants bring  
Their spicy drugs; they on the trading flood,  
Through the wide Ethiopian to the Cape,  
Ply stemming nightly toward the pole: so seem'd  
Far off the flying Fiend. At last appear  
Hell bounds, high reaching to the horrid roof,  
And thrice threefold the gates; three folds were brass,  
Three iron, three of adamantine rock,  
Impenetrable, impaled with circling fire,  
Yet unconsumed. Before the gates there sat  
On either side a formidable Shape.

630

640

The one seem'd woman to the waist, and fair,  
But ended foul in many a scaly fold  
Voluminous and vast, a serpent arm'd  
With mortal sting. About her middle round  
A cry of Hell-hounds never ceasing bark'd  
With wide Cerberean mouths full loud, and rung  
A hideous peal; yet, when they list, would creep,  
If aught disturb'd their noise, into her womb,  
And kennel there, yet there still bark'd and howl'd  
Within unseen. Far less abhorr'd than these

650

Vex'd Scylla, bathing in the sea that parts  
Calabria from the hoarse Trinacrian shore;  
Nor uglier follow the night-hag, when, call'd  
In secret, riding through the air she comes,  
Lured with the smell of infant blood, to dance  
With Lapland witches, while the labouring moon  
Eclipses at their charms. The other Shape,  
If shape it might be call'd that shape had none  
Distinguishable in member, joint, or limb;  
Or substance might be call'd that shadow seem'd,  
For each seem'd either; black it stood as Night,  
Fierce as ten Furies, terrible as Hell,  
And shook a dreadful dart; what seem'd his head  
The likeness of a kingly crown had on.  
Satan was now at hand, and from his seat  
The monster moving onward came as fast,  
With horrid strides; Hell trembled as he strode.  
The undaunted Fiend what this might be admired,  
Admired, not fear'd—God and his Son except,  
Created thing nought valued he nor shunn'd—  
And with disdainful look thus first began:

“Whence and what art thou, execrable Shape,  
That dar’st, though grim and terrible, advance  
Thy miscreated front athwart my way  
To yonder gates? Through them I mean to pass,  
That be assured, without leave ask’d of thee.  
Retire, or taste thy folly, and learn by proof,  
Hell-born, not to contend with Spirits of Heaven.”

To whom the Goblin, full of wrath, replied:  
“Art thou that Traitor Angel, art thou he,  
Who first broke peace in Heaven and faith, till then  
Unbroken, and in proud rebellious arms  
Drew after him the third part of Heaven’s sons,  
Conjured against the Highest, for which both thou  
And they, outcast from God, are here condemn’d  
To waste eternal days in woe and pain?  
And reckon’st thou thyself with Spirits of Heaven,  
Hell-doom’d, and breathest defiance here and scorn,  
Where I reign king, and, to enrage thee more,  
Thy king and lord? Back to thy punishment,

False fugitive, and to thy speed add wings,  
Lest with a whip of scorpions I pursue  
Thy lingering, or with one stroke of this dart  
Strange horror seize thee, and pangs unfelt before."

700

So spake the grisly Terror, and in shape,  
So speaking and so threatening, grew tenfold  
More dreadful and deform. On the other side,  
Incensed with indignation, Satan stood  
Unterrified, and like a comet burn'd,  
That fires the length of Ophiuchus huge  
In the arctic sky, and from his horrid hair  
Shakes pestilence and war. Each at the head  
Level'd his deadly aim; their fatal hands  
No second stroke intend; and such a frown  
Each cast at the other, as when two black clouds,  
With Heaven's artillery fraught, come rattling on  
Over the Caspian, then stand front to front  
Hovering a space, till winds the signal blow  
To join their dark encounter in mid air:  
So frown'd the mighty combatants, that Hell  
Grew darker at their frown; so match'd they stood;  
For never but once more was either like  
To meet so great a foe. And now great deeds  
Had been achieved, whereof all Hell had rung,  
Had not the snaky Sorceress, that sat  
Fast by Hell gate and kept the fatal key,  
Risen, and with hideous outcry rush'd between.

710

720

"O father, what intends thy hand," she cried,  
"Against thy only son? What fury, O son,  
Possesses thee to bend that mortal dart  
Against thy father's head? and know'st for whom;  
For him who sits above, and laughs the while  
At thee ordain'd his drudge, to execute  
Whate'er his wrath, which he calls justice, bids,  
His wrath, which one day will destroy ye both!"

730

She spake, and at her words the hellish Pest  
Forbore; then these to her Satan return'd:

"So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange  
Thou interposest, that my sudden hand,  
Prevented, spares to tell thee yet by deeds

What it intends, till first I know of thee  
What thing thou art, thus double-form'd, and why,  
In this infernal vale first met, thou call'st  
Me father, and that phantasm call'st my son.  
I know thee not, nor ever saw till now  
Sight more detestable than him and thee."

749

To whom thus the Portress of Hell gate replied :  
"Hast thou forgot me then, and do I seem  
Now in thine eye so foul? once deem'd so fair  
In Heaven, when at the assembly, and in sight  
Of all the Seraphim with thee combined  
In bold conspiracy against Heaven's King,  
All on a sudden miserable pain  
Surprised thee; dim thine eyes, and dizzy swum  
In darkness, while thy head flames thick and fast  
Threw forth, till on the left side opening wide,  
Likest to thee in shape and countenance bright,  
Then shining heavenly fair, a goddess arm'd,  
Out of thy head I sprung. Amazement seized  
All the host of Heaven; back they recoil'd afraid  
At first, and call'd me *Sin*, and for a sign  
Portentous held me; but, familiar grown,  
I pleased, and with attractive graces won  
The most averse, thee chiefly, who full oft  
Thyself in me thy perfect image viewing  
Becamest enamour'd; and such joy thou took'st  
With me in secret, that my womb conceived  
A growing burden. Meanwhile war arose,  
And fields were fought in Heaven; wherein remain'd  
(For what could else?) to our almighty foe  
Clear victory, to our part loss and rout  
Through all the Empyrean. Down they fell,  
Driven headlong from the pitch of Heaven, down  
Into this deep, and in the general fall  
I also; at which time this powerful key  
Into my hand was given, with charge to keep  
These gates for ever shut, which none can pass  
Without my opening. Pensive here I sat  
Alone; but long I sat not, till my womb,  
Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown,

750

760

770

Prodigious motion felt and rueful throes. 780  
 At last this odious offspring whom thou seest,  
 Thine own begotten, breaking violent way,  
 Tore through my entrails, that, with fear and pain  
 Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew  
 Transform'd; but he, my inbred enemy,  
 Forth issued, brandishing his fatal dart,  
 Made to destroy. I fled, and cried out *Death!*  
 Hell trembled at the hideous name, and sigh'd  
 From all her caves, and back resounded *Death!*  
 I fled; but he pursued (though more, it seems, 790  
 Inflamed with lust than rage) and swifter far,  
 Me overtook, his mother, all dismay'd,  
 And, in embraces forcible and foul  
 Engendering with me, of that rape begot  
 These yelling monsters, that with ceaseless cry  
 Surround me, as thou saw'st, hourly conceived  
 And hourly born, with sorrow infinite  
 To me; for, when they list, into the womb  
 That bred them they return, and howl, and gnaw  
 My bowels, their repast; then, bursting forth 800  
 Afresh, with conscious terrors vex me round,  
 That rest or intermission none I find.  
 Before mine eyes in opposition sits  
 Grim Death, my son and foe, who sets them on,  
 And me, his parent, would full soon devour  
 For want of other prey, but that he knows  
 His end with mine involved, and knows that I  
 Should prove a bitter morsel, and his bane,  
 Whenever that shall be; so Fate pronounced.  
 But thou, O father, I forewarn thee, skun 810  
 His deadly arrow; neither vainly hope  
 To be invulnerable in those bright arms,  
 Though temper'd heavenly; for that mortal dint,  
 Save he who reigns above, none can resist."

She finish'd; and the subtle Fiend his lore  
 Soon learn'd, now milder, and thus answer'd smooth:

"Dear daughter, since thou claim'st me for thy sire,  
 And my fair son here shew'st me, the dear pledge  
 Of dalliance had with thee in Heaven, and joys

Then sweet, now sad to mention, through dire change 829  
Befall'n us unforeseen, unthought of, know,  
I come no enemy, but to set free  
From out this dark and dismal house of pain  
Both him and thee, and all the heavenly host  
Of Spirits that, in our just pretences arm'd,  
Fell with us from on high. From them I go  
This uncouth errand sole, and one for all  
Myself expose, with lonely steps to tread  
The unfounded deep, and through the void immense  
To search with wandering quest a place foretold 830  
Should be, and, by concurring signs, ere now  
Created vast and round, a place of bliss  
In the purlieus of Heaven, and therein placed  
A race of upstart creatures, to supply  
Perhaps our vacant room, though more removed,  
Lest Heaven, surcharged with potent multitude,  
Might hap to move new broils. Be this, or aught  
Than this more secret, now design'd, I haste  
To know; and, this once known, shall soon return,  
And bring ye to the place where thou and Death 840  
Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen  
Wing silently the buxom air, embalm'd  
With odours: there ye shall be fed and fill'd  
Immeasurably; all things shall be your prey."

He ceased, for both seem'd highly pleased, and Death  
Grinn'd horrible a gastly smile, to hear  
His famine should be fill'd, and bless'd his maw  
Destined to that good hour. No less rejoiced  
His mother bad, and thus bespake her sire:

"The key of this infernal pit, by due 850  
And by command of Heaven's all-powerful King,  
I keep, by him forbidden to unlock  
These adamant gates; against all force  
Death ready stands to interpose his dart,  
Fearless to be o'ermatch'd by living might.  
But what owe I to his commands above,  
Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down  
Into this gloom of Tartarus profound,  
To sit in hateful office here confined,



Inhabitant of Heaven and heavenly-born,  
Here in perpetual agony and pain,  
With terrors and with clamours compass'd round  
Of mine own brood, that on my bowels feed?  
Thou art my father, thou my author, thou  
My being gavest me; whom should I obey  
But thee? whom follow? Thou wilt bring me soon  
To that new world of light and bliss, among  
The gods who live at ease, where I shall reign  
At thy right hand voluptuous, as befits  
Thy daughter and thy darling, without end."

860

870

Thus saying, from her side the fatal key,  
Sad instrument of all our woe, she took;  
And, towards the gate rolling her bestial train,  
Forthwith the huge portcullis high up drew,  
Which but herself not all the Stygian powers  
Could once have moved; then in the key-hole turns  
The intricate wards, and every bolt and bar  
Of massy iron or solid rock with ease  
Unfastens; on a sudden open fly,  
With impetuous recoil and jarring sound,  
The infernal doors, and on their hinges grate  
Harsh thunder, that the lowest bottom shook  
Of Erebus. She open'd, but to shut

880

Excell'd her power; the gates wide open stood,  
That with extended wings a banner'd host,  
Under spread ensigns marching, might pass through  
With horse and chariots rank'd in loose array;  
So wide they stood, and like a furnace mouth  
Cast forth redounding smoke and ruddy flame.

890

Before their eyes in sudden view appear  
The secrets of the hoary deep, a dark  
Illimitable ocean, without bound,  
Without dimension; where length, breadth, and highth,  
And time, and place, are lost; where eldest Night  
And Chaos, ancestors of Nature, hold  
Eternal anarchy, amidst the noise  
Of endless wars, and by confusion stand.  
For Hot, Cold, Moist, and Dry, four champions fierce,  
Strive here for mastery, and to battle bring

Their embryon atoms; they around the flag  
Of each his faction, in their several clans,  
Light-arm'd or heavy, sharp, smooth, swift, or slow,  
Swarm populous, unnumber'd as the sands  
Of Barca or Cyrene's torrid soil,  
Levied to side with warring winds, and poise  
Their lighter wings. To whom these most adhere  
He rules a moment; Chaos umpire sits,  
And by decision more embroils the fray  
By which he reigns; next him, high arbiter,  
Chance governs all. Into this wild Abyss,  
The womb of Nature, and perhaps her grave,  
Of neither sea, nor shore, nor air, nor fire,  
But all these in their pregnant causes mix'd  
Confusedly, and which thus must ever fight,  
Unless the Almighty Maker them ordain  
His dark materials to create more worlds,  
Into this wild Abyss the wary Fiend  
Stood on the brink of Hell and look'd a while,  
Pondering his voyage; for no narrow frith  
He had to cross. Nor was his ear less peal'd  
With noises loud and ruinous (to compare  
Great things with small) than when Bellona storms,  
With all her battering engines bent to rase  
Some capital city; or less than if this frame  
Of Heaven were falling, and these elements  
In mutiny had from her axle torn  
The steadfast Earth. At last his sail-broad vans  
He spreads for flight, and in the surging smoke  
Uplifted spurns the ground; thence many a league,  
As in a cloudy chair, ascending rides  
Audacious; but, that seat soon falling, meets  
A vast vacuity: all unawares,  
Fluttering his pennons vain, plumb down he drops  
Ten thousand fathom deep, and to this hour  
Down had been falling, had not by ill chance  
The strong rebuff of some tumultuous cloud,  
Instinct with fire and nitre, hurried him  
As many miles aloft; that fury stay'd,  
Quench'd in a boggy Syrtis, neither sea,

Nor good dry land, nigh founder'd, on he fares,  
 Treading the crude consistence, half on foot,  
 Half flying; behoves him now both oar and sail.  
 As when a gryphon through the wilderness  
 With winged course, o'er hill or moory dale,  
 Pursues the Arimaspan, who by stealth  
 Had from his wakeful custody purloin'd  
 The guarded gold: so eagerly the Fiend  
 O'er bog or steep, through strait, rough, dense, or rare,  
 With head, hands, wings, or feet, pursues his way,  
 And swims, or sinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies.  
 At length a universal hubbub wild  
 Of stunning sounds and voices all confused,  
 Borne through the hollow dark, assaults his ear  
 With loudest vehemence. Thither he plies  
 Undaunted, to meet there whatever Power  
 Or Spirit of the nethermost Abyss  
 Might in that noise reside, of whom to ask  
 Which way the nearest coast of darkness lies  
 Bordering on light; when straight behold the throne  
 Of Chaos, and his dark pavilion spread  
 Wide on the wasteful Deep! With him enthroned  
 Sat sable-vested Night, eldest of things,  
 The consort of his reign; and by them stood  
 Orcus and Ades, and the dreaded name  
 Of Demogorgon; Rumour next and Chance,  
 And Tumult and Confusion all embroil'd,  
 And Discord with a thousand various mouths.

To whom Satan, turning boldly, thus: "Ye Powers  
 And Spirits of this nethermost Abyss,  
 Chaos and ancient Night, I come no spy,  
 With purpose to explore or to disturb  
 The secrets of your realm; but, by constraint  
 Wandering this darksome desert, as my way  
 Lies through your spacious empire up to light,  
 Alone and without guide, half lost, I seek  
 What readiest path leads where your gloomy bounds  
 Confine with Heaven; or if some other place,  
 From your dominion won, the Ethereal King  
 Possesses lately, thither to arrive

I travel this profound. Direct my course :  
Directed, no mean recompense it brings  
To your behoof, if I that region lost,  
All usurpation thence expell'd, reduce  
To her original darkness and your sway  
(Which is my present journey), and once more  
Erect the standard there of ancient Night.  
Yours be the advantage all, mine the revenge !”

Thus Satan ; and him thus the Anarch old,  
With faltering speech and visage incomposed,  
Answer'd : “ I know thee, stranger, who thou art,  
That mighty leading Angel, who of late  
Made head against Heaven's King, though overthrown.  
I saw and heard ; for such a numerous host  
Fled not in silence through the frighted deep,  
With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout,  
Confusion worse confounded ; and Heaven gates  
Pour'd out by millions her victorious bands,  
Pursuing. I upon my frontiers here  
Keep residence ; if all I can will serve  
That little which is left so to defend,  
Encroach'd on still through our intestine broils  
Weakening the sceptre of old Night : first Hell,  
Your dungeon, stretching far and wide beneath ;  
Now lately Heaven and Earth, another world  
Hung o'er my realm, link'd in a golden chain  
To that side Heaven from whence your legions fell.  
If that way be your walk, you have not far ;  
So much the nearer danger. Go, and speed !  
Havoc, and spoil, and ruin, are my gain.”

He ceased ; and Satan stay'd not to reply,  
But, glad that now his sea should find a shore,  
With fresh alacrity and force renew'd.  
Springs upward, like a pyramid of fire,  
Into the wild expanse, and through the shock  
Of fighting elements, on all sides round  
Environ'd, wins his way ; harder beset  
And more endanger'd, than when Argo pass'd  
Through Bosphorus betwixt the justling rocks ;  
Or when Ulysses on the larboard shunn'd

Nor good dry land, nigh founder'd, on he fares,  
Treading the crude consistence, half on foot,  
Half flying; behoves him now both oar and sail.  
As when a gryphon through the wilderness  
With winged course, o'er hill or moory dale,  
Pursues the Arimasbian, who by stealth  
Had from his wakeful custody purloin'd  
The guarded gold: so eagerly the Fiend  
O'er bog or steep, through strait, rough, dense, or rare,  
With head, hands, wings, or feet, pursues his way,  
And swims, or sinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies. 940  
At length a universal hubbub wild  
Of stunning sounds and voices all confused,  
Borne through the hollow dark, assaults his ear  
With loudest vehemence. Thither he plies  
Undaunted, to meet there whatever Power  
Or Spirit of the nethermost Abyss  
Might in that noise reside, of whom to ask  
Which way the nearest coast of darkness lies  
Bordering on light; when straight behold the throne  
Of Chaos, and his dark pavilion spread 960  
Wide on the wasteful Deep! With him enthroned  
Sat sable-vested Night, eldest of things,  
The consort of his reign; and by them stood  
Orcus and Aides, and the dreaded name  
Of Demogorgon; Rumour next and Chance,  
And Tumult and Confusion all embroil'd,  
And Discord with a thousand various mouths.

To whom Satan, turning boldly, thus: "Ye Powers  
And Spirits of this nethermost Abyss,  
Chaos and ancient Night, I come no spy,  
With purpose to explore or to disturb 970  
The secrets of your realm; but, by constraint  
Wandering this darksome desert, as my way  
Lies through your spacious empire up to light,  
Alone and without guide, half lost, I seek  
What readiest path leads where your gloomy bounds  
Confine with Heaven; or if some other place,  
From your dominion won, the Ethereal King  
Possesses lately, thither to arrive

I travel this profound. Direct my course :  
Directed, no mean recompense it brings  
To your behoof, if I that region lost,  
All usurpation thence expell'd, reduce  
To her original darkness and your sway  
(Which is my present journey), and once more  
Erect the standard there of ancient Night.  
Yours be the advantage all, mine the revenge !”

980

Thus Satan ; and him thus the Anarch old,  
With faltering speech and visage incomposed,  
Answer'd : “ I know thee, stranger, who thou art,  
That mighty leading Angel, who of late  
Made head against Heaven's King, though overthrown.  
I saw and heard ; for such a numerous host  
Fled not in silence through the frightened deep,  
With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout,  
Confusion worse confounded ; and Heaven gates  
Pour'd out by millions her victorious bands,  
Pursuing. I upon my frontiers here  
Keep residence ; if all I can will serve  
That little which is left so to defend,  
Encroach'd on still through our intestine broils  
Weakening the sceptre of old Night : first Hell,  
Your dungeon, stretching far and wide beneath ;  
Now lately Heaven and Earth, another world  
Hung o'er my realm, link'd in a golden chain  
To that side Heaven from whence your legions fell.  
If that way be your walk, you have not far ;  
So much the nearer danger. Go, and speed !  
Havoc, and spoil, and ruin, are my gain.”

990

1000

He ceased ; and Satan stay'd not to reply,  
But, glad that now his sea should find a shore,  
With fresh alacrity and force renew'd  
Springs upward, like a pyramid of fire,  
Into the wild expanse, and through the shock  
Of fighting elements, on all sides round  
Environ'd, wins his way ; harder beset  
And more endanger'd, than when Argo pass'd  
Through Bosphorus betwixt the justling rocks ;  
Or when Ulysses on the larboard shunn'd

1010

Charybdis, and by the other whirlpool steer'd :  
So he with difficulty and labour hard  
Moved on : with difficulty and labour he ;  
But, he once pass'd, soon after, when Man fell,  
Strange alteration ! Sin and Death amain  
Following his track, such was the will of Heaven,  
Paved after him a broad and beaten way  
Over the dark Abyss, whose boiling gulf  
Tamely endured a bridge of wondrous length,  
From Hell continued, reaching the utmost orb  
Of this frail world ; by which the Spirits perverse  
With easy intercourse pass to and fro  
To tempt or punish mortals, except whom  
God and good Angels guard by special grace.

1020

1030

But now at last the sacred influence  
Of light appears, and from the walls of Heaven  
Shoots far into the bosom of dim Night  
A glimmering dawn. Here Nature first begins  
Her farthest verge, and Chaos to retire  
As from her outmost works, a broken foe,  
With tumult less and with less hostile din ;  
That Satan with less toil, and now with ease,  
Wafts on the calmer wave by dubious light,  
And, like a weather-beaten vessel, holds  
Gladly the port, though shrouds and tackle torn ;  
Or in the emptier waste, resembling air,  
Weighs his spread wings, at leisure to behold  
Far off the empyreal Heaven, extended wide  
In circuit, undetermined square or round,  
With opal towers and battlements adorn'd  
Of living sapphire, once his native seat ;  
And fast by, hanging in a golden chain,  
This pendent world, in bigness as a star  
Of smallest magnitude close by the moon.  
Thither full fraught with mischievous revenge,  
Accurst, and in a cursèd hour, he hies.

1040

1050

## BOOK III.

## THE ARGUMENT.

God, sitting on his throne, sees Satan flying towards this World, then newly created; shows him to the Son, who sat at his right hand; foretells the success of Satan in perverting mankind; clears his own justice and wisdom from all imputation, having created Man free, and able enough to have withstood his Tempter; yet declares his purpose of grace towards him, in regard he fell not of his own malice, as did Satan, but by him seduced. The Son of God renders praises to his Father for the manifestation of his gracious purpose towards Man; but God again declares that grace cannot be extended towards Man without the satisfaction of Divine Justice: Man hath offended the majesty of God by aspiring to Godhead, and therefore, with all his progeny, devoted to death, must die, unless some one can be found sufficient to answer for his offence, and undergo his punishment. The Son of God freely offers himself a ransom for Man: the Father accepts him, ordains his incarnation, pronounces his exaltation above all names in Heaven and Earth; commands all the Angels to adore him: they obey, and, hymning to their harps in full quire, celebrate the Father and the Son. Meanwhile Satan alights upon the bare convex of this World's outermost orb; where wandering he first finds a place since called the Limbo of Vanity; what persons and things fly up thither: thence comes to the gate of Heaven, described ascending by stairs, and the waters above the firmament that flow about it. His passage thence to the orb of the Sun: he finds there Uriel, the regent of that orb, but first changes himself into the shape of a meaner Angel, and pretending a zealous desire to behold the new Creation, and Man whom God had placed here, inquires of him the place of his habitation, and is directed: alights first on Mount Niphates.

HAIL, holy Light, offspring of Heaven first-born!  
Or of the Eternal coeternal beam  
May I express thee unblamed? since God is light,  
And never but in unapproached light  
Dwelt from eternity, dwelt then in thee,  
Bright effluence of bright essence increate!  
Or hear'st thou rather pure Ethereal stream,



Whose fountain who shall tell? Before the sun,  
Before the Heavens, thou wert, and at the voice  
Of God, as with a mantle, didst invest  
The rising world of waters dark and deep,  
Won from the void and formless infinite!  
Thee I revisit now with bolder wing,  
Escaped the Stygian pool, though long detain'd  
In that obscure sojourn, while in my flight,  
Through utter and through middle darkness borne,  
With other notes than to the Orphean lyre  
I sung of Chaos and eternal Night;  
Taught by the heavenly Muse to venture down  
The dark descent, and up to re-ascend,  
Though hard and rare: thee I revisit safe,  
And feel thy sovran vital lamp; but thou  
Revisit'st not these eyes, that roll in vain  
To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn;  
So thick a drop serene hath quench'd their orbs,  
Or dim suffusion veil'd. Yet not the more  
Cease I to wander where the Muses haunt  
Clear spring, or shady grove, or sunny hill,  
Smit with the love of sacred song; but chief  
Thee, Sion, and the flowery brooks beneath,  
That wash thy hallow'd feet, and warbling flow,  
Nightly I visit; nor sometimes forget  
Those other two equalPd with me in fate,  
So were I equalPd with them in renown,  
Blind Thamyras and blind Mæonides,  
And Tiresias and Phineus, prophets old:  
Then feed on thoughts that voluntary move  
Harmonious numbers; as the wakeful bird  
Sings darkling, and in shadiest covert hid  
Tunes her nocturnal note. Thus with the year  
Seasons return; but not to me returns  
Day, or the sweet approach of even or morn,  
Or sight of vernal bloom, or summer's rose,  
Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine;  
But cloud instead and ever-during dark  
Surrounds me, from the cheerful ways of men  
Cut off, and, for the book of knowledge fair,

19

23

39

49

Presented with a universal blank  
Of Nature's works, to me expunged and rased,  
And wisdom at one entrance quite shut out.  
So much the rather thou, celestial Light,  
Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers  
Irradiate: there plant eyes, all mist from thence  
Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell  
Of things invisible to mortal sight.

Now had the Almighty Father from above,  
From the pure Empyrean where he sits  
High throned above all highth, bent down his eye,  
His own works and their works at once to view:  
About him all the Sanctities of Heaven  
Stood thick as stars, and from his sight received  
Beatitude past utterance; on his right  
The radiant image of his glory sat,  
His only Son. On Earth he first beheld  
Our two first parents, yet the only two  
Of mankind, in the Happy Garden placed,  
Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,  
Uninterrupted joy, unrival'd love,  
In blissful solitude. He then survey'd  
Hell and the gulf between, and Satan there,  
Coasting the wall of Heaven on this side Night  
In the dun air sublime, and ready now  
To stoop with wearied wings and willing feet  
On the bare outside of this World, that seem'd  
Firm land imbosom'd without firmament,  
Uncertain which, in ocean or in air.  
Him God beholding from his prospect high,  
Wherein past, present, future, he beholds,  
Thus to his only Son foreseeing spake:

"Only begotten Son, seest thou what rage  
Transports our Adversary? whom no bounds  
Prescribed, no bars of Hell, nor all the chains  
Heap'd on him there, nor yet the main Abyss  
Wide interrupt, can hold; so bent he seems  
On desperate revenge, that shall redound  
Upon his own rebellious head. And now,  
Through all restraint broke loose, he wings his way

Not far off Heaven, in the precincts of light,  
Directly towards the new-created World,  
And Man there placed, with purpose to assay 99  
If him by force he can destroy, or, worse,  
By some false guile pervert: and shall pervert;  
For Man will hearken to his glozing lies,  
And easily transgress the sole command,  
Sole pledge of his obedience; so will fall  
He and his faithless progeny. Whose fault?  
Whose but his own? Ingrate, he had of me  
All he could have; I made him just and right,  
Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall.  
Such I created all the Ethereal Powers 100  
And Spirits, both them who stood and them who fail'd;  
Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell.  
Not free, what proof could they have given sincere  
Of true allegiance, constant faith, or love,  
Where only what they needs must do appear'd,  
Not what they would? what praise could they receive,  
What pleasure I, from such obedience paid,  
When will and reason (reason also is choice),  
Useless and vain, of freedom both despoil'd,  
Made passive both, had served necessity, 110  
Not me? They therefore, as to right belong'd,  
So were created, nor can justly accuse  
Their Maker, or their making, or their fate,  
As if predestination overruled  
Their will, disposed by absolute decree  
Or high foreknowledge. They themselves decreed  
Their own revolt, not I: if I foreknew,  
Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,  
Which had no less proved certain unforeknown.  
So without least impulse or shadow of fate, 120  
Or aught by me immutably foreseen,  
They trespass, authors to themselves in all,  
Both what they judge and what they choose; for so  
I form'd them free, and free they must remain  
Till they enthrall themselves: I else must change  
Their nature, and revoke the high decree  
Unchangeable, eternal, which ordain'd

Their freedom; they themselves ordain'd their fall.  
 The first sort by their own suggestion fell,  
 Self-tempted, self-depraved; Man falls, deceived  
 By the other first: Man therefore shall find grace;  
 The other, none. In mercy and justice both,  
 Through Heaven and Earth, so shall my glory excel;  
 But mercy, first and last, shall brightest shine."

130

Thus while God spake ambrosial fragrance fill'd  
 All Heaven, and in the blessed Spirits elect  
 Sense of new joy ineffable diffused.

Beyond compare the Son of God was seen  
 Most glorious; in him all his Father shone  
 Substantially express'd; and in his face  
 Divine compassion visibly appear'd,  
 Love without end, and without measure grace;  
 Which uttering, thus he to his Father spake:

140

"O Father, gracious was that word which closed  
 Thy sovran sentence, that Man should find grace;  
 For which both Heaven and Earth shall high extol  
 Thy praises, with the innumerable sound  
 Of hymns and sacred songs, wherewith thy throne  
 Encompass'd shall resound thee ever blest.

150

For should Man finally be lost, should Man,  
 Thy creature late so loved, thy youngest son,  
 Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though join'd  
 With his own folly? that be from thee far,  
 That far be from thee, Father, who art judge  
 Of all things made, and judgest only right!  
 Or shall the Adversary thus obtain

His end, and frustrate thine? shall he fulfil  
 His malice, and thy goodness bring to nought,  
 Or proud return, though to his heavier doom,  
 Yet with revenge accomplish'd, and to Hell  
 Draw after him the whole race of mankind,  
 By him corrupted? or wilt thou thyself

160

Abolish thy creation, and unmake,  
 For him, what for thy glory thou hast made?  
 So should thy goodness and thy greatness both  
 Be question'd and blasphemed without defence."

To whom the great Creator thus replied:

"O Son, in whom my soul hath chief delight,  
Son of my bosom, Son who art alone  
My word, my wisdom, and effectual might, 170  
All hast thou spoken as my thoughts are, all  
As my eternal purpose hath decreed.  
Man shall not quite be lost, but saved who will;  
Yet not of will in him, but grace in me  
Freely vouchsafed. Once more I will renew  
His laps'd powers, though forfeit, and enthralld  
By sin to foul exorbitant desires:  
Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand  
On even ground against his mortal foe;  
By me upheld, that he may know how frail 180  
His fall'n condition is, and to me owe  
All his deliverance, and to none but me.  
Some I have chosen of peculiar grace,  
Elect above the rest; so is my will:  
The rest shall hear me call, and oft be warn'd  
Their sinful state, and to appease betimes  
The incens'd Deity, while offer'd grace  
Invites; for I will clear their senses dark,  
What may suffice, and soften stony hearts  
To pray, repent, and bring obedience due. 190  
To prayer, repentance, and obedience due,  
Though but endeavour'd with sincere intent,  
Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut.  
And I will place within them as a guide  
My umpire Conscience; whom if they will hear,  
Light after light well used they shall attain,  
And to the end persisting safe arrive.  
This my long sufferance and my day of grace  
They who neglect and scorn shall never taste;  
But hard be harden'd, blind be blinded more, 200  
That they may stumble on, and deeper fall;  
And none but such from mercy I exclude.  
But yet all is not done. Man, disobeying,  
Disloyal breaks his fealty, and sins  
Against the high supremacy of Heaven,  
Affecting Godhead, and so, losing all,  
To expiate his treason hath nought left,

But, to destruction sacred and devote,  
He with his whole posterity must die;  
Die he or justice must; unless for him  
Some other, able and as willing, pay  
The rigid satisfaction, death for death.  
Say, Heavenly Powers, where shall we find such love?  
Which of ye will be mortal, to redeem  
Man's mortal crime, and just the unjust to save?  
Dwells in all Heaven charity so dear?"

219

He ask'd, but all the heavenly quire stood mute,  
And silence was in Heaven: on Man's behalf  
Patron or intercessor none appear'd,  
Much less that durst upon his own head draw  
The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set.  
And now without redemption all mankind  
Must have been lost, adjudged to Death and Hell  
By doom severe, had not the Son of God,  
In whom the fulness dwells of love divine,  
His dearest mediation thus renew'd:

223

"Father, thy word is pass'd, Man shall find grace;  
And shall grace not find means, that finds her way,  
The speediest of thy winged messengers,  
To visit all thy creatures, and to all  
Comes unprevented, unimplored, unsought?  
Happy for Man, so coming! He her aid  
Can never seek, once dead in sins and lost;  
Atonement for himself, or offering meet,  
Indebted and undone, hath none to bring.  
Behold me, then: me for him, life for life,  
I offer; on me let thine anger fall;  
Account me Man: I for his sake will leave  
Thy bosom, and this glory next to thee  
Freely put off, and for him lastly die  
Well pleased; on me let Death wreak all his rage:  
Under his gloomy power I shall not long  
Lie vanquish'd: thou hast given me to possess  
Life in myself for ever; by thee I live;  
Though now to Death I yield, and am his due  
All that of me can die, yet, that debt paid,  
Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsome grave,

230

241

His prey, nor suffer my unspotted soul  
For ever with corruption there to dwell;  
But I shall rise victorious, and subdue  
250 My vanquisher, spoil'd of his vaunted spoil.  
Death his death's wound shall then receive, and stoop  
Inglorious, of his mortal sting disarm'd;  
I through the ample air in triumph high  
Shall lead Hell captive maugre Hell, and shew  
The powers of Darkness bound. Thou, at the sight  
Pleased, out of Heaven shalt look down and smile,  
While, by thee raised, I ruin all my foes,  
Death last, and with his carcase glut the grave;  
Then, with the multitude of my redeem'd,  
260 Shall enter Heaven, long absent, and return,  
Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud  
Of anger shall remain, but peace assured  
And reconciliation: wrath shall be no more  
Thenceforth, but in thy presence joy entire."

His words here ended; but his meek aspect  
Silent yet spake, and breathed immortal love  
To mortal men, above which only shone  
Filial obedience: as a sacrifice  
Glad to be offer'd, he attends the will  
270 Of his great Father. Admiration seized  
All Heaven, what this might mean, and whither tend  
Wondering; but soon the Almighty thus replied:

"O thou in Heaven and Earth the only peace  
Found out for mankind under wrath, O thou  
My sole complacence! well thou know'st how dear  
To me are all my works; nor Man the least,  
Though last created, that for him I spare  
Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,  
280 By losing thee a while, the whole race lost!  
Thou therefore, whom thou only canst redeem,  
Their nature also to thy nature join;  
And be thyself Man among men on Earth,  
Made flesh, when time shall be, of virgin seed,  
By wondrous birth; be thou in Adam's room  
The head of all mankind, though Adam's son.  
As in him perish all men, so in thee,

As from a second root, shall be restored  
As many as are restored; without thee, none.  
His crime makes guilty all his sons; thy merit,  
Imputed, shall absolve them who renounce  
Their own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,  
And live in thee transplanted, and from thee  
Receive new life. So Man, as is most just,  
Shall satisfy for Man, be judged and die,  
And dying rise, and rising with him raise  
His brethren, ransom'd with his own dear life.  
So heavenly love shall outdo hellish hate,  
Giving to death, and dying to redeem,  
So dearly to redeem what hellish hate  
So easily destroy'd, and still destroys  
In those who, when they may, accept not grace.  
Nor shalt thou, by descending to assume  
Man's nature, lessen or degrade thine own.  
Because thou hast, though throned in highest bliss  
Equal to God, and equally enjoying  
God-like fruition, quitted all to save  
A world from utter loss, and hast been found  
By merit more than birthright Son of God,  
Found worthiest to be so by being good,  
Far more than great or high; because in thee  
Love hath abounded more than glory abounds;  
Therefore thy humiliation shall exalt  
With thee thy manhood also to this throne:  
Here shalt thou sit incarnate, here shalt reign  
Both God and Man, Son both of God and Man,  
Anointed universal King. All power  
I give thee; reign for ever, and assume  
Thy merits; under thee, as Head supreme,  
Thrones, Princedoms, Powers, Dominions, I reduce:  
All knees to thee shall bow of them that bide  
In Heaven, or Earth, or under Earth in Hell.  
When thou, attended gloriously from Heaven,  
Shalt in the sky appear, and from thee send  
The summoning Archangels to proclaim  
Thy dread tribunal, forthwith from all winds  
The living, and forthwith the cited dead

290

300

310

320



Of all past ages, to the general doom  
Shall hasten: such a peal shall rouse their sleep.  
Then, all thy Saints assembled, thou shalt judge  
Bad men and Angels; they arraign'd shall sink  
Beneath thy sentence; Hell, her numbers full,  
Thenceforth shall be for ever shut. Meanwhile  
The World shall burn, and from her ashes spring  
New Heaven and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell,  
And after all their tribulations long  
See golden days, fruitful of golden deeds,  
With Joy and Love triumphing, and fair Truth.  
Then thou thy regal sceptre shalt lay by,  
For regal sceptre then no more shall need;  
God shall be all in all. But all ye gods,  
Adore him who, to compass all this, dies;  
Adore the Son, and honour him as me."

No sooner had the Almighty ceased, but all  
The multitude of Angels, with a shout  
Loud as from numbers without number, sweet  
As from blest voices, uttering joy, Heaven rung  
With jubilee, and loud hosannas fill'd  
The eternal regions. Lowly reverent  
Towards either throne they bow, and to the ground  
With solemn adoration down they cast  
Their crowns inwove with amarant and gold:  
Immortal amarant, a flower which once  
In Paradise, fast by the Tree of Life,  
Began to bloom, but soon for Man's offence  
To Heaven removed, where first it grew, there grows  
And flowers aloft, shading the Fount of Life,  
And where the River of Bliss through midst of Heaven  
Rolls o'er Elysian flowers her amber stream.  
With these that never fade the Spirits elect  
Bind their resplendent locks inwreathed with beams.  
Now in loose garlands thick thrown off, the bright  
Pavement, that like a sea of jasper shone,  
Impurpled with celestial roses smiled.  
Then, crown'd again, their golden harps they took,  
Harps ever tuned, that glittering by their side  
Like quivers hung; and with preamble sweet

Of charming symphony they introduce  
 Their sacred song, and waken raptures high:  
 No voice exempt, no voice but well could join  
 Melodious part; such concord is in Heaven.

370

Thee, Father, first they sung Omnipotent,  
 Immutable, Immortal, Infinite,  
 Eternal King; thee, Author of all being,  
 Fountain of light, thyself invisible  
 Amidst the glorious brightness where thou sitt'st  
 Throned inaccessible, but when thou shadest  
 The full blaze of thy beams, and through a cloud  
 Drawn round about thee like a radiant shrine  
 Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appear,  
 Yet dazzle Heaven, that brightest Seraphim  
 Approach not, but with both wings veil their eyes.

380

Thee next they sang, of all creation first,  
 Begotten Son, Divine Similitude,  
 In whose conspicuous countenance, without cloud  
 Made visible, the Almighty Father shines,  
 Whom else no creature can behold: on thee  
 Impress'd the effulgence of his glory abides;  
 Transfused on thee his ample Spirit rests.

He Heaven of Heavens, and all the powers therein,  
 By thee created; and by thee threw down  
 The aspiring Dominations. Thou that day  
 Thy Father's dreadful thunder didst not spare,  
 Nor stop thy flaming chariot wheels, that shook  
 Heaven's everlasting frame, while o'er the necks  
 Thou drovest of warring Angels disarray'd.

390

Back from pursuit, thy powers with loud acclaim  
 Thee only extoll'd, Son of thy Father's might,  
 To execute fierce vengeance on his foes;  
 Not so on Man; him, through their malice fall'n,  
 Father of mercy and grace, thou didst not doom  
 So strictly, but much more to pity incline.

400

No sooner did thy dear and only Son  
 Perceive thee purposed not to doom frail Man  
 So strictly, but much more to pity inclined,  
 He, to appease thy wrath, and end the strife  
 Of mercy and justice in thy face discern'd,

Regardless of the bliss wherein he sat  
Second to thee, offer'd himself to die  
For Man's offence. O unexampled love!  
Love nowhere to be found less than divine!  
Hail, Son of God, Saviour of men! Thy name  
Shall be the copious matter of my song  
Henceforth, and never shall my harp thy praise  
Forget, nor from thy Father's praise disjoin.

410

Thus they in Heaven, above the starry sphere,  
Their happy hours in joy and hymning spent.  
Meanwhile, upon the firm opacous globe  
Of this round World, whose first convex divides  
The luminous inferior orbs, enclosed  
From Chaos and the inroad of Darkness old,  
Satan alighted walks. A globe far off  
It seemed; now seems a boundless continent,  
Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of Night  
Starless exposed, and ever-threatening storms  
Of Chaos blustering round, inclement sky;  
Save on that side which from the wall of Heaven,  
Though distant far, some small reflexion gains  
Of glimmering air less vex'd with tempest loud;  
Here walk'd the Fiend at large in spacious field.  
As when a vulture on Imaus bred,  
Whose snowy ridge the roving Tartar bounds,  
Dislodging from a region scarce of prey,  
To gorge the flesh of lambs or yeanling kids  
On hills where flocks are fed, flies toward the springs  
Of Ganges or Hydaspes, Indian streams;  
But in his way lights on the barren plains  
Of Sericana, where Chineses drive  
With sails and wind their cany waggons light:  
So, on this windy sea of land, the Fiend  
Walk'd up and down alone, bent on his prey;  
Alone, for other creature in this place,  
Living or lifeless, to be found was none,  
None yet; but store hereafter from the Earth  
Up hither like aerial vapours flew  
Of all things transitory and vain, when sin  
With vanity had fill'd the works of men:

420

430

440

Both all things vain, and all who in vain things  
Built their fond hopes of glory or lasting fame,  
Or happiness in this or the other life. 439  
All who have their reward on earth, the fruits  
Of painful superstition and blind zeal,  
Nought seeking but the praise of men, here find  
Fit retribution, empty as their deeds ;  
All the unaccomplish'd works of Nature's hand,  
Abortive, monstrous, or unkindly mix'd,  
Dissolved on Earth, fleet hither, and in vain,  
Till final dissolution, wander here ;  
Not in the neighbouring moon, as some have dream'd :  
Those argent fields more likely habitants, 440  
Translated saints, or middle Spirits, hold,  
Betwixt the angelical and human kind.  
Hither, of ill-join'd sons and daughters born,  
First from the ancient world those giants came,  
With many a vain exploit, though then renown'd ;  
The builders next of Babel on the plain  
Of Sennaar, and still with vain design  
New Babels, had they wherewithal, would build ;  
Others came single : he who, to be deem'd  
A god, leap'd fondly into *Ætna* flames, 441  
*Empedocles* ; and he who, to enjoy  
*Plato's* *Elysium*, leap'd into the sea,  
*Cleombrotus* ; and many more, too long,  
Embryos and idiots, eremites and friars  
White, black, and grey, with all their truquery.  
Here pilgrims roam, that stray'd so far to seek  
In *Golgotha* him dead who lives in Heaven ;  
And they who, to be sure of *Paradise*,  
Dying put on the weeds of *Dominic*,  
Or in *Franciscan* think to pass disguised. 442  
They pass the planets seven, and pass the fix'd,  
And that crystalline sphere whose balance weighs  
The trepidation talk'd, and that first mov'd ;  
And now *Saint Peter* at Heaven's wicket seems  
To wait them with his keys, and now at foot  
Of Heaven's ascent they lift their feet, when, lo !  
A violent cross wind from either coast

Blows them transverse, ten thousand leagues awry,  
Into the devious air. Then might ye see  
Cowls, hoods, and habits, with their wearers, tost  
And flutter'd into rags; then reliques, beads,  
Indulgences, dispenses, pardons, bulls,  
The sport of winds: all these, upwhirl'd aloft,  
Fly o'er the backside of the World far off  
Into a limbo large and broad, since call'd  
The Paradise of Fools; to few unknown  
Long after, now unpeopled and untrod.

490

All this dark globe the Fiend found as he pass'd;  
And long he wander'd, till at last a gleam  
Of dawning light turn'd thitherward in haste  
His travell'd steps. Far distant he descries,  
Ascending by degrees magnificent  
Up to the wall of Heaven, a structure high;  
At top whereof, but far more rich, appear'd  
The work as of a kingly palace gate,  
With frontispiece of diamond and gold  
Embellish'd; thick with sparkling orient gems  
The portal shone, inimitable on Earth  
By model, or by shading pencil drawn.  
The stairs were such as whereon Jacob saw  
Angels ascending and descending, bands  
Of guardians bright, when he from Esau fled  
To Padan-Aram, in the field of Luz  
Dreaming by night under the open sky,  
And waking cried, "This is the gate of Heaven."  
Each stair mysteriously was meant, nor stood  
There always, but drawn up to Heaven sometimes  
Viewless; and underneath a bright sea flow'd  
Of jasper, or of liquid pearl, whereon  
Who after came from Earth sailing arrived,  
Wafted by Angels, or flew o'er the lake,  
Rapt in a chariot drawn by fiery steeds.  
The stairs were then let down, whether to dare  
The Fiend by easy ascent, or aggravate  
His sad exclusion from the doors of bliss;  
Direct against which open'd from beneath,  
Just o'er the blissful seat of Paradise,

500

510

520

A passage down to the Earth, a passage wide ;  
Wider by far than that of after-times  
Over Mount Sion, and, though that were large,  
Over the Promised Land to God so dear ;  
By which, to visit oft those happy tribes,  
On high behests his Angels to and fro  
Pass'd frequent, and his eye with choice regard,  
From Paneas, the fount of Jordan's flood,  
To Beersaba, where the Holy Land  
Borders on Egypt and the Arabian shore :  
So wide the opening seem'd, where bounds were set  
To darkness, such as bound the ocean wave.

Satan from hence, now on the lower stair,  
That scaled by steps of gold to Heaven gate,  
Looks down with wonder at the sudden view  
Of all this World at once. As when a scout,  
Through dark and desert ways with peril gone  
All night, at last by break of cheerful dawn  
Obtains the brow of some high-climbing hill,  
Which to his eye discovers unaware  
The goodly prospect of some foreign land  
First seen, or some renown'd metropolis  
With glistening spires and pinnacles adorn'd,  
Which now the rising sun gilds with his beams :  
Such wonder seized, though after Heaven seen,  
The Spirit malign, but much more envy seized,  
At sight of all this World beheld so fair,  
Round he surveys (and well might where he stood,  
So high above the circling canopy  
Of Night's extended shade) from eastern point  
Of Libra to the fleecy star that bears  
Andromeda far off Atlantic seas  
Beyond the horizon ; then from pole to pole  
He views in breadth ; and, without longer pause,  
Down right into the World's first region throws  
His flight precipitant, and winds with ease  
Through the pure marble air his oblique way  
Amongst innumerable stars, that shone  
Stars distant, but nigh hand seem'd other worlds ;  
Or other worlds they seem'd, or happy isles,

Like those Hesperian Gardens famed of old,  
 Fortunate fields, and groves, and flowery vales,  
 Thrice happy isles; but who dwelt happy there 570  
 He stay'd not to inquire. Above them all  
 The golden sun, in splendour likest Heaven,  
 Allured his eye. Thither his course he bends,  
 Through the calm firmament (but up or down,  
 By centre or eccentric, hard to tell,  
 Or longitude) where the great luminary,  
 Aloof the vulgar constellations thick,  
 That from his lordly eye keep distance due,  
 Dispenses light from far. They, as they move  
 Their starry dance in numbers that compute 580  
 Days, months, and years, towards his all-cheering lamp  
 Turn swift their various motions, or are turn'd  
 By his magnetic beam, that gently warms  
 The Universe, and to each inward part  
 With gentle penetration, though unseen,  
 Shoots invisible virtue even to the deep;  
 So wondrously was set his station bright.

There lands the Fiend, a spot like which perhaps  
 Astronomer in the sun's lucent orb  
 Through his glazed optic tube yet never saw. 590  
 The place he found beyond expression bright,  
 Compared with aught on Earth, metal or stone;  
 Not all parts like, but all alike inform'd  
 With radiant light, as glowing iron with fire;  
 If metal, part seem'd gold, part silver clear;  
 If stone, carbuncle most or chrysolite,  
 Ruby or topaz, to the twelve that shone  
 In Aaron's breast-plate, and a stone besides,  
 Imagined rather oft than elsewhere seen,  
 That stone, or like to that, which here below 600  
 Philosophers in vain so long have sought;  
 In vain, though by their powerful art they bind  
 Volatile Hermes, and call up unbound  
 In various shapes old Proteus from the sea,  
 Drain'd through a limbec to his native form.  
 What wonder then if fields and regions here  
 Breathe forth elixir pure, and rivers run

Potable gold, when, with one virtuous touch,  
The arch-chemic sun, so far from us remote,  
Produces, with terrestrial humour mix'd,  
Here in the dark so many precious things  
Of colour glorious and effect so rare?  
Here matter new to gaze the Devil met  
Undazzled; far and wide his eye commands;  
For sight no obstacle found here, nor shade,  
But all sunshine, as when his beams at noon  
Culminate from the equator, as they now  
Shot upward still direct, whence no way round  
Shadow from body opaque can fall; and the air,  
Nowhere so clear, sharpen'd his visual ray  
To objects distant far, whereby he soon  
Saw within ken a glorious Angel stand,  
The same whom John saw also in the sun;  
His back was turn'd, but not his brightness hid;  
Of beaming sunny rays a golden tiar  
Circled his head, nor less his locks behind  
Illustrious on his shoulders sledge with wings  
Lay waving round: on some great charge employ'd  
He seem'd, or fix'd in cogitation deep.

610

620

630

Glad was the Spirit impure, as now in hope  
To find who might direct his wandering flight  
To Paradise, the happy seat of Man,  
His journey's end, and our beginning woe.  
But first he casts to change his proper shape,  
Which else might work him danger or delay:  
And now a stripling Cherub he appears,  
Not of the prime, yet such as in his face  
Youth smiled celestial, and to every limb  
Suitable grace diffused; so well he feign'd.  
Under a coronet his flowing hair  
In curls on either cheek play'd; wings he wore  
Of many a colour'd plume sprinkled with gold,  
His habit fit for speed succinct; and held  
Before his decent steps a silver wand.  
He drew not nigh unheard; the Angel bright,  
Ere he drew nigh, his radiant visage turn'd,  
Admonish'd by his ear, and straight was known

640



The Archangel Uriel; one of the seven  
Who in God's presence, nearest to his throne,  
Stand ready at command, and are his eyes 630  
That run through all the Heavens, or down to the Earth  
Bear his swift errands over moist and dry,  
O'er sea and land. Him Satan thus accosts:

"Uriel! for thou of those seven Spirits that stand  
In sight of God's high throne, gloriously bright,  
The first art wont his great authentic will  
Interpreter through highest Heaven to bring,  
Where all his Sons thy embassy attend;  
And here art likeliest by supreme decree  
Like honour to obtain, and as his eye 660  
To visit oft this new creation round;  
Unspeakable desire to see and know  
All these his wondrous works, but chiefly Man,  
His chief delight and favour, him for whom  
All these his works so wondrous he ordain'd,  
Hath brought me from the quires of Cherubim  
Alone thus wandering. Brightest Seraph, tell  
In which of all these shining orbs hath Man  
His fixed seat; or fixed seat hath none,  
But all these shining orbs his choice to dwell; 670  
That I may find him, and with secret gaze  
Or open admiration him behold.

On whom the great Creator hath bestow'd  
Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces pour'd;  
That both in him and all things, as is meet,  
The Universal Maker we may praise;  
Who justly hath driven out his rebel foes  
To deepest Hell, and, to repair that loss,  
Created this new happy race of Men  
To serve him better: wise are all his ways!" 680

So spake the false dissembler unperceived;  
For neither man nor Angel can discern  
Hypocrisy, the only evil that walks  
Invisible, except to God alone,  
By his permissive will, through Heaven and Earth;  
And oft, though Wisdom wake, Suspicion sleeps  
At Wisdom's gate, and to Simplicity

Resigns her charge, while Goodness thinks no ill  
Where no ill seems : which now for once beguiled  
Uriel, though regent of the sun, and held  
The sharpest sighted Spirit of all in Heaven ;  
Who to the fraudulent impostor foul,  
In his uprightness, answer thus return'd :

“Fair Angel, thy desire, which tends to know  
The works of God, thereby to glorify  
The great Work-master, leads to no excess  
That reaches blame, but rather merits praise  
The more it seems excess, that led thee hither  
From thy empyreal mansion thus alone,  
To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps,  
Contented with report, hear only in Heaven ;  
For wonderful indeed are all his works,  
Pleasant to know, and worthiest to be all  
Had in remembrance always with delight ;  
But what created mind can comprehend  
Their number, or the wisdom infinite  
That brought them forth, but hid their causes deep ?

I saw when at his word the formless mass,  
This World's material mould, came to a heap :  
Confusion heard his voice, and wild uproar  
Stood ruled, stood vast infinitude confined ;  
Till at his second bidding Darkness fled,  
Light shone, and order from disorder sprung.  
Swift to their several quarters hasted then  
The cumbrous elements, earth, flood, air, fire ;  
And this ethereal quintessence of Heaven  
Flew upward, spirited with various forms,  
That roll'd orbicular, and turned to stars  
Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move ;  
Each had his place appointed, each his course ;  
The rest in circuit walls this Universe.

Look downward on that globe, whose hither side  
With light from hence, though but reflected, shines :  
That place is Earth, the seat of Man ; that light  
His day, which else, as the other hemisphere,  
Night would invade ; but there the neighbouring moon  
(So call that opposite fair star) her aid

Timely interposes, and, her monthly round  
 Still ending, still renewing, through mid Heaven,  
 With borrow'd light her countenance triform  
 Hence fills and empties, to enlighten the Earth,  
 And in her pale dominion checks the night.  
 That spot to which I point is Paradise,  
 Adam's abode ; those lofty shades his bower.  
 Thy way thou canst not miss ; me mine requires."

739

Thus said, he turn'd ; and Satan, bowing low,  
 As to superior Spirits is wont in Heaven,  
 Where honour due and reverence none neglects,  
 Took leave, and toward the coast of Earth beneath,  
 Down from the ecliptic, sped with hoped success,  
 Throws his steep flight in many an aery wheel,  
 Nor stay'd till on Niphates' top he lights.

740

## BOOK IV.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Satan, now in prospect of Eden, and nigh the place where he must now attempt the bold enterprise which he undertook alone against God and Man, falls into many doubts with himself, and many passions, fear, envy, and despair ; but at length confirms himself in evil ; journeys on to Paradise, whose outward prospect and situation is described ; overleaps the bounds ; sits, in the shape of a cornucopia, on the Tree of Life, as highest in the Garden, to look about him. The Garden described : Satan's first sight of Adam and Eve ; his wonder at their excellent form and happy state, but with resolution to work their fall ; overhears their discourse ; thence gathers that the Tree of Knowledge was forbidden them to eat of under penalty of death, and thereon intends to found his temptation by seducing them to transgress ; then leaves them a while, to know further of their state by some other means. Meanwhile Uriel, descending on a sunbeam, warns Gabriel, who had in charge the gate of Paradise, that some evil Spirit had escaped the Deep, and passed at noon by his Sphere, in the shape of a good Angel, down to Paradise ; discovered after by his furious gestures in the mount. Gabriel promises to find him ere morning. Night coming on,

Adam and Eve discourse of going to their rest : their lower described ; their evening worship. Gabriel, drawing forth his bands of night-watch to walk the round of Paradise, appoints two strong Angels to Adam's lower, lest the evil Spirit should be there doing some harm to Adam or Eve sleeping : there they find him at the ear of Eve, tempting her in a dream, and bring him, though unwilling, to Gabriel ; by whom questioned, he scornfully answers, prepares resistance, but, hindered by a sign from Heaven, flies out of Paradise.

O FOR that warning voice, which he who saw  
The Apocalypse heard cry in Heaven aloud,  
Then when the Dragon, put to second rout,  
Came furious down to be revenged on men,  
"Woe to the inhabitants on Earth!" that now,  
While time was, our first parents had been warn'd  
The coming of their secret foe, and scaped,  
Haply so scaped, his mortal snare! For now  
Satan, now first inflamed with rage, came down,  
The tempter ere the accuser of mankind,  
To wreak on innocent frail Man his loss  
Of that first battle, and his flight to Hell:  
Yet not rejoicing in his speed, though bold  
Far off and fearless, nor with cause to boast,  
Begins his dire attempt; which, nigh the birth  
Now rolling, boils in his tumultuous breast,  
And like a devilish engine back recoils  
Upon himself. Horror and doubt distract  
His troubled thoughts, and from the bottom stir  
The Hell within him; for within him Hell  
He brings, and round about him, nor from Hell  
One step, no more than from himself, can fly  
By change of place. Now conscience wakes despair  
That slumber'd; wakes the bitter memory  
Of what he was, what is, and what must be  
Worse: of worse deeds worse sufferings must ensue.  
Sometimes towards Eden, which now in his view  
Lay pleasant, his grieved look he fixes sad;  
Sometimes towards Heaven and the full-blazing sun,  
Which now sat high in his meridian tower:  
Then, much revolving, thus in sighs began:

10

22

30

"O thou that, with surpassing glory crown'd,  
Look'st from thy sole dominion like the god  
Of this new World; at whose sight all the stars  
Hide their diminish'd heads; to thee I call,  
But with no friendly voice, and add thy name,  
O Sun, to tell thee how I hate thy beams,  
That bring to my remembrance from what state  
I fell, how glorious once above thy sphere  
Till pride and worse ambition threw me down,  
Warring in Heaven against Heaven's matchless King.  
Ah, wherefore? He deserved no such return  
From me, whom he created what I was  
In that bright eminence, and with his good  
Upbraided none; nor was his service hard.  
What could be less than to afford him praise,  
The easiest recompense, and pay him thanks,  
How due! Yet all his good proved ill in me,  
And wrought but malice. Lifted up so high,  
I scorn'd subjection, and thought one step higher  
Would set me highest, and in a moment quit  
The debt immense of endless gratitude,  
So burdensome, still paying, still to owe;  
Forgetful what from him I still received;  
And understood not that a grateful mind  
By owing owes not, but still pays, at once  
Indebted and discharged: what burden then?  
Oh, had his powerful destiny ordain'd  
Me some inferior Angel, I had stood  
Then happy; no unbounded hope had raised  
Ambition. Yet why not? some other Power  
As great might have aspired, and me, though mean,  
Drawn to his part. But other Powers as great  
Fell not, but stand unshaken, from within  
Or from without, to all temptations arm'd.  
Hadst thou the same free will and power to stand?  
Thou hadst. Whom hast thou then, or what, to accuse,  
But Heaven's free love dealt equally to all?  
Be then his love accurst, since, love or hate,  
To me alike it deals eternal woe.  
Nay, cursed be thou; since against his thy will

49

59

69

79

Chose freely what it now so justly rues.  
Me miserable ! which way shall I fly  
Infinite wrath and infinite despair ?  
Which way I fly is Hell ; myself am Hell ;  
And, in the lowest deep, a lower deep  
Still threatening to devour me opens wide,  
To which the Hell I suffer seems a Heaven.  
O then at last relent ! Is there no place  
Left for repentance, none for pardon left ?  
None left but by submission ; and that word  
Disdain forbids me, and my dread of shame  
Among the Spirits beneath, whom I seduced  
With other promises and other vaunts  
Than to submit, boasting I could subdue  
The Omnipotent. Ay me ! they little know  
How dearly I abide that boast so vain,  
Under what torments inwardly I groan,  
While they adore me on the throne of Hell,  
With diadem and sceptre high advanced,  
The lower still I fall, only supreme  
In misery : such joy ambition finds.  
But say I could repent, and could obtain  
By act of grace my former state ; how soon  
Would highth recal high thoughts, how soon unsay  
What feign'd submission swore ! Ease would recant  
Vows made in pain, as violent and void—  
For never can true reconciliation grow  
Where wounds of deadly hate have pierced so deep—  
Which would but lead me to a worse relapse  
And heavier fall : so should I purchase dear  
Short intermission, bought with double smart.  
This knows my Punisher ; therefore as far  
From granting he, as I from begging, peace.  
All hope excluded thus, behold, instead  
Of us, outcast, exiled, his new delight,  
Mankind created, and for him this World !  
So farewell hope, and with hope farewell fear,  
Farewell remorse ! All good to me is lost ;  
Evil, be thou my good : by thee at least  
Divided empire with Heaven's King I hold,

50

60

100

110

By thee, and more than half perhaps will reign ;  
As Man ere long and this new World shall know."

Thus while he spake, each passion dimm'd his face,  
Thrice changed with pale, ire, envy, and despair ;  
Which marr'd his borrow'd visage, and betray'd  
Him counterfeit, if any eye beheld ;  
For heavenly minds from such distempers foul  
Are ever clear. Whereof he soon aware  
Each perturbation smooth'd with outward calm,  
Artificer of fraud ; and was the first  
That practised falsehood under saintly shew,  
Deep malice to conceal, couch'd with revenge :  
Yet not enough had practised to deceive  
Uriel, once warn'd ; whose eye pursued him down  
The way he went, and on the Assyrian mount  
Saw him disfigured, more than could befall  
Spirit of happy sort : his gestures fierce  
He mark'd and mad demeanour, then alone,  
As he supposed, all unobserved, unseen.

So on he fares, and to the border comes  
Of Eden, where delicious Paradise,  
Now nearer, crowns with her enclosure green,  
As with a rural mound, the champain head  
Of a steep wilderness, whose hairy sides  
With thicket overgrown, grotesque and wild,  
Access denied ; and overhead up grew  
Insuperable highth of loftiest shade,  
Cedar, and pine, and fir, and branching palm,  
A sylvan scene, and, as the ranks ascend  
Shade above shade, a woody theatre  
Of stateliest view. Yet higher than their tops  
The verdurous wall of Paradise up sprung ;  
Which to our general sire gave prospect large  
Into his nether empire neighbouring round.  
And higher than that wall a circling row  
Of goodliest trees, loaden with fairest fruit,  
Blossoms and fruits at once of golden hue,  
Appear'd, with gay enamell'd colours mix'd ;  
On which the sun more glad impress'd his beams  
Than in fair evening cloud, or humid bow,

When God hath shower'd the earth: so lovely seem'd  
That landskip. And of pure now purer air  
Meets his approach, and to the heart inspires  
Vernal delight and joy, able to drive  
All sadness but despair; now gentle gales,  
Fanning their odoriferous wings, dispense  
Native perfumes, and whisper whence they stole  
Those balmy spoils. As when to them who sail  
Beyond the Cape of Hope, and now are past  
Mozambic, off at sea north-east winds blow  
Sabeian odours from the spicy shore  
Of Araby the Blest: with such delay  
Well pleased they slack their course, and many a league  
Cheer'd with the grateful smell old Ocean smiles:  
So entertain'd those odorous sweets the Fiend  
Who came their bane, though with them better pleased  
Than Asmodæus with the fishy fume  
That drove him, though enamour'd, from the spouse  
Of Tobit's son, and with a vengeance sent  
From Media post to Egypt, there fast bound.

Now to the ascent of that steep savage hill  
Satan had journey'd on, pensive and slow;  
But further way found none; so thick entwined,  
As one continued brake, the undergrowth  
Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplex'd  
All path of man or beast that pass'd that way.  
One gate there only was, and that look'd east  
On the other side: which when the Arch-Felon saw,  
Due entrance he disdain'd, and in contempt  
At one slight bound high overleap'd all bound  
Of hill or highest wall, and sheer within  
Lights on his feet. As when a prowling wolf,  
Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,  
Watching where shepherds pen their flocks at eve,  
In hurdled cotes amid the field secure,  
Leaps o'er the fence with ease into the fold;  
Or as a thief, bent to unhoard the cash  
Of some rich burgher, whose substantial doors,  
Cross-barred and bolted fast, fear no assault,  
In at the window climbs, or o'er the tiles:



So climb this first grand thief into God's fold:  
So since into his Church lewd hirelings climb.  
Thence up he flew, and on the Tree of Life,  
The middle tree and highest there that grew,  
Sat like a cormorant; yet not true life  
Thereby regain'd, but sat devising death  
To them who lived; nor on the virtue thought  
Of that life-giving plant, but only used  
For prospect what, well used, had been the pledge  
Of immortality. So little knows  
Any but God alone to value right  
The good before him, but perverts best things  
To worst abuse, or to their meanest use.

200

Beneath him, with new wonder, now he views,  
To all delight of human sense exposed,  
In narrow room Nature's whole wealth; yea, more,  
A Heaven on Earth; for blissful Paradise  
Of God the garden was, by him in the east  
Of Eden planted: Eden stretch'd her line  
From Auran eastward to the royal towers  
Of great Seleucia, built by Grecian kings,  
Or where the sons of Eden long before  
Dwelt in Telassar. In this pleasant soil  
His far more pleasant garden God ordain'd.  
Out of the fertile ground he caused to grow  
All trees of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste;  
And all amid them stood the Tree of Life,  
High eminent, blooming ambrosial fruit  
Of vegetable gold; and next to life,  
Our death, the Tree of Knowledge, grew fast by,  
Knowledge of good bought dear by knowing ill.  
Southward through Eden went a river large,  
Nor changed his course, but through the shaggy hill  
Passed underneath ingulfed; for God had thrown  
That mountain as his garden mould, high raised  
Upon the rapid current, which, through veins  
Of porous earth with kindly thirst up drawn,  
Rose a fresh fountain, and with many a rill  
Water'd the garden; thence united fell  
Down the steep glade, and met the nether flood,

210

220

230

Which from his darksome passage now appears;  
And now divided into four main streams,  
Runs diverse, wandering many a famous realm  
And country whereof here needs no account;  
But rather to tell how, if art could tell,  
How from that sapphire fount the crisped brooks,  
Rolling on orient pearl and sands of gold,  
With mazy error under pendent shades  
Ran nectar, visiting each plant, and fed  
Flowers worthy of Paradise; which not nice art  
In beds and curious knots, but Nature boon  
Pour'd forth profuse on hill, and dale, and plain,  
Both where the morning sun first warmly smote  
The open field, and where the unpierced shade  
Imbrown'd the noon-tide bowers. Thus was this place,  
A happy rural seat of various view:  
Groves whose rich trees wept odorous gums and balm;  
Others whose fruit, burnish'd with golden rind,  
Hung amiable, Hesperian fables true,  
If true, here only, and of delicious taste.  
Betwixt them lawns, or level downs, and flocks  
Grazing the tender herb, were interposed,  
Or palmy hillock; or the flowery lap  
Of some irriguous valley spread her store,  
Flowers of all hue, and without thorn the rose.  
Another side, umbrageous grots and caves  
Of cool recess, o'er which the mantling vine  
Lays forth her purple grape, and gently creeps  
Luxuriant; meanwhile murmuring waters fall  
Down the slope hills, dispersed, or in a lake,  
That to the fringed bank with myrtle crown'd  
Her crystal mirror holds, unite their streams.  
The birds their quire apply; airs, vernal airs,  
Breathing the smell of field and grove, attune  
The trembling leaves, while universal Pan,  
Knit with the Graces and the Hours in dance,  
Led on the eternal Spring. Not that fair field  
Of Enna, where Proserpin gathering flowers,  
Herself a fairer flower, by gloomy Dis  
Was gather'd, which cost Ceres all that pain

M.

To seek her through the world; nor that sweet grove  
Of Daphne by Orontes, and the inspired  
Castalian spring, might with this Paradise  
Of Eden strive; nor that Nyseian isle,  
Girt with the river Triton, where old Cham,  
Whom Gentiles Ammon call and Lybian Jove,  
Hid Amalthea, and her florid son,  
Young Bacchus, from his stepdame Rhea's eye;  
Nor where Abassin kings their issue guard,  
Mount Amara, though this by some supposed  
True Paradise, under the Ethiop line  
By Nilus' head, enclosed with shining rock,  
A whole day's journey high, but wide remote  
From this Assyrian garden, where the Fiend  
Saw undelighted all delight, all kind  
Of living creatures, new to sight and strange.

289

Two of far nobler shape, erect and tall,  
God-like erect, with native honour clad,  
In naked majesty seem'd lords of all,  
And worthy seem'd; for in their looks divine  
The image of their glorious Maker shone,  
Truth, wisdom, sanctitude severe and pure,  
Severe, but in true filial freedom placed;  
Whence true authority in men; though both  
Not equal, as their sex not equal seem'd:  
For contemplation he and valour form'd,  
For softness she and sweet attractive grace;  
He for God only, she for God in him.  
His fair large front and eye sublime declared  
Absolute rule; and hyacinthine locks  
Round from his parted forelock manly hung  
Clustering, but not beneath his shoulders broad:  
She, as a veil down to the slender waist,  
Her unadorned golden tresses wore  
Dishevell'd, but in wanton ringlets waved,  
As the vine curls her tendrils, which implied  
Subjection, but required with gentle sway,  
And by her yielded, by him best received,  
Yielded with coy submission, modest pride,  
And sweet, reluctant, amorous delay.

299

309

319

Nor those mysterious parts were then conceal'd;  
Then was not guilty shame, dishonest shame  
Of Nature's works, honour dishonourable,  
Sin-bred, how have ye troubled all mankind  
With shews instead, mere shews of seeming pure,  
And banish'd from man's life his happiest life,  
Simplicity and spotless innocence!  
So pass'd they naked on, nor shunn'd the sight  
Of God or Angel, for they thought no ill;  
So hand in hand they pass'd, the loveliest pair  
That ever since in love's embraces met:  
Adam the goodliest man of men since born  
His sons, the fairest of her daughters Eve.  
Under a tuft of shade that on a green  
Stood whispering soft, by a fresh fountain side,  
They sat them down; and after no more toil  
Of their sweet gardening labour than sufficed  
To recommend cool Zephyr, and made ease  
More easy, wholesome thirst and appetite  
More grateful, to their supper-fruits they fell,  
Nectarine fruits, which the compliant boughs  
Yielded them, sidelong as they sat recline  
On the soft downy bank damask'd with flowers.  
The savoury pulp they chew, and in the rind,  
Still as they thirsted, scoop the brimming stream;  
Nor gentle purpose, nor endearing smiles  
Wanted, nor youthful dalliance, as befits  
Fair couple link'd in happy nuptial league,  
Alone as they. About them frisking play'd  
All beasts of the earth, since wild, and of all chase  
In wood or wilderness, forest or den.  
Sporting the lion ramp'd, and in his paw  
Dandled the kid; bears, tigers, ounces, pards,  
Gamboll'd before them; the unwieldy elephant,  
To make them mirth, us'd all his might, and wreathed  
His lithe proboscis; close the serpent sly,  
Insinuating, wove with Gordian twine  
His braided train, and of his fatal gulle  
Gave proof unheeded. Others on the grass  
Couch'd, and now fill'd with pasture gazing sat,

320

330

340

350

Or bedward ruminating ; for the sun,  
Declined, was hasting now with prone career  
To the Ocean Isles, and in the ascending scale  
Of Heaven the stars that usher evening rose :  
When Satan still in gaze, as first he stood,  
Scarce thus at length fail'd speech recover'd sad :

“O Hell ! what do mine eyes with grief behold ?  
Into our room of bliss thus high advanced  
Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps, 360  
Not Spirits, yet to heavenly Spirits bright  
Little inferior ; whom my thoughts pursue  
With wonder, and could love, so lively shines  
In them divine resemblance, and such grace  
The hand that form'd them on their shape hath pour'd.  
Ah ! gentle pair, ye little think how nigh  
Your change approaches, when all these delights  
Will vanish, and deliver ye to woe,  
More woe, the more your taste is now of joy :  
Happy, but for so happy ill secured 370  
Long to continue, and this high seat, your Heaven,  
Ill fenced for Heaven to keep out such a foe  
As now is enter'd ; yet no purposed foe  
To you, whom I could pity thus forlorn,  
Though I unpitied. League with you I seek,  
And mutual amity, so strait, so close,  
That I with you must dwell, or you with me,  
Henceforth : my dwelling, haply, may not please,  
Like this fair Paradise, your sense ; yet such  
Accept your Maker's work ; he gave it me, 380  
Which I as freely give. Hell shall unfold,  
To entertain you two, her widest gates,  
And send forth all her kings ; there will be room,  
Not like these narrow limits, to receive  
Your numerous offspring ; if no better place,  
Thank him who puts me loath to this revenge  
On you who wrong me not, for him who wrong'd.  
And, should I at your harmless innocence  
Melt, as I do, yet public reason just,  
Honour and empire with revenge enlarged 390  
By conquering this new World, compels me now

To do what else, though damn'd, I should abhor."

So spake the Fiend, and with necessity,  
The tyrant's plea, excused his devilish deeds.  
Then from his lofty stand on that high tree  
Down he alights among the sportful herd  
Of those four-footed kinds, himself now one,  
Now other, as their shape served best his end  
Nearer to view his prey, and unespied  
To mark what of their state he more might learn  
By word or action mark'd. About them round  
A lion now he stalks with fiery glare;  
Then as a tiger, who by chance hath spied  
In some purlieu two gentle fawns at play,  
Straight couches close; then, rising, changes oft  
His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground,  
Whence rushing he might surest seize them both,  
Griped in each paw: when Adam, first of men,  
To first of women, Eve, thus moving speech,  
Turn'd him all ear to hear new utterance flow:

"Sole partner and sole part of all these joys,  
Dearer thyself than all, needs must the Power  
That made us, and for us this ample World,  
Be infinitely good, and of his good  
As liberal and free as infinite,  
That raised us from the dust, and placed us here  
In all this happiness, who at his hand  
Have nothing merited, nor can perform  
Aught whereof he hath need; he who requires  
From us no other service than to keep  
This one, this easy charge, of all the trees  
In Paradise that bear delicious fruit  
So various, not to taste that only Tree  
Of Knowledge, planted by the Tree of Life;  
So near grows death to life, whate'er death is;  
Some dreadful thing no doubt; for well thou know'st  
God hath pronounced it death to taste that Tree;  
The only sign of our obedience left  
Among so many signs of power and rule  
Conferr'd upon us, and dominion given  
Over all other creatures that possess

Earth, air, and sea. Then let us not think hard  
One easy prohibition, who enjoy  
Free leave so large to all things else, and choice  
Unlimited of manifold delights ;  
But let us ever praise him, and extol  
His bounty, following our delightful task,  
To prune these growing plants, and tend these flowers ;  
Which, were it toilsome, yet with thee were sweet."

To whom thus Eve replied : "O thou for whom  
And from whom I was form'd flesh of thy flesh,  
And without whom am to no end, my guide  
And head! what thou hast said is just and right.  
For we to him indeed all praises owe,  
And daily thanks ; I chiefly, who enjoy  
So far the happier lot, enjoying thee  
Pre-eminent by so much odds, while thou  
Like consort to thyself canst nowhere find.

That day I oft remember, when from sleep  
I first awaked, and found myself reposed  
Under a shade on flowers, much wondering where  
And what I was, whence thither brought, and how.  
Not distant far from thence a murmuring sound  
Of waters issued from a cave, and spread  
Into a liquid plain ; then stood unmoved,  
Pure as the expanse of Heaven. I thither went  
With unexperienced thought, and laid me down  
On the green bank, to look into the clear  
Smooth lake, that to me seem'd another sky.

As I bent down to look, just opposite  
A shape within the watery gleam appear'd,  
Bending to look on me : I started back,  
It started back ; but pleased I soon return'd,  
Pleased it return'd as soon with answering looks  
Of sympathy and love. There I had fix'd  
Mine eyes till now, and pined with vain desire,  
Had not a voice thus warn'd me : 'What thou seest,  
What there thou seest, fair creature, is thyself ;  
With thee it came and goes : but follow me,  
And I will bring thee where no shadow stays  
Thy coming, and thy soft embraces, he

Whose image thou art ; him thou shalt enjoy  
 Inseparably thine ; to him shalt bear  
 Multitudes like thyself, and thence be called  
 Mother of human race.' What could I do  
 But follow straight, invisibly thus led ?  
 Till I espied thee, fair indeed and tall,  
 Under a platane ; yet methought less fair,  
 Less winning soft, less amiably mild,  
 Than that smooth watery image. Back I turn'd ;  
 Thou, following, cried'st aloud, 'Return, fair Eve ;  
 Whom dost thou ? whom thou dost, of him thou art,  
 His flesh, his bone ; to give thee being I lent  
 Out of my side to thee, nearest my heart,  
 Substantial life, to have thee by my side  
 Henceforth an individual solace dear :  
 Part of my soul, I seek thee, and thee claim  
 My other half.' With that thy gentle hand  
 Seized mine : I yielded ; and from that time see  
 How beauty is excell'd by manly grace  
 And wisdom, which alone is truly fair."

So spake our general mother, and with eyes  
 Of conjugal attraction unproved,  
 And meek surrender, half embracing lean'd  
 On our first father ; half her swelling breast  
 Naked met his, under the flowing gold  
 Of her loose tresses hid. He, in delight  
 Both of her beauty and submissive charms,  
 Smiled with superior love, as Jupiter  
 On Juno smiles when he impregns the clouds  
 That shed May flowers, and press'd her matron lip  
 With kisses pure. Aside the Devil turn'd  
 For envy ; yet with jealous leer malign  
 Eyed them askance, and to himself thus plain'd :

"Sight hateful, sight tormenting ! thus these two,  
 Imparadis'd in one another's arms,  
 The happier Eden, shall enjoy their fill  
 Of bliss on bliss ; while I to Hell am thrust,  
 Where neither joy nor love, but fierce desire,  
 Among our other torments not the least,  
 Still unfulfill'd, with pain of longing pines.



Yet let me not forget what I have gain'd  
From their own mouths. All is not theirs, it seems ;  
One fatal tree there stands, of Knowledge call'd,  
Forbidden them to taste. Knowledge forbidden?  
Suspicious, reasonless. Why should their Lord  
Envy them that? can it be sin to know?  
Can it be death? and do they only stand  
By ignorance? is that their happy state,  
The proof of their obedience and their faith? 500  
O fair foundation laid whereon to build  
Their ruin! Hence I will excite their minds  
With more desire to know, and to reject  
Envious commands, invented with design  
To keep them low, whom knowledge might exalt  
Equal with gods. Aspiring to be such,  
They taste and die: what likelier can ensue?  
But first with narrow search I must walk round  
This garden, and no corner leave unspied ;  
A chance but chance may lead where I may meet 530  
Some wandering Spirit of Heaven, by fountain side,  
Or in thick shade retired, from him to draw  
What further would be learn'd. Live while ye may,  
Yet happy pair; enjoy, till I return,  
Short pleasures; for long woes are to succeed."

So saying, his proud step he scornful turn'd,  
But with sly circumspection, and began  
Through wood, through waste, o'er hill, o'er dale, his roam.  
Meanwhile in utmost longitude, where Heaven  
With Earth and Ocean meets, the setting sun 540  
Slowly descended, and with right aspect  
Against the eastern gate of Paradise  
Level'd his evening rays. It was a rock  
Of alabaster, piled up to the clouds,  
Conspicuous far, winding with one ascent  
Accessible from Earth, one entrance high;  
The rest was craggy cliff, that overhung  
Still as it rose, impossible to climb.  
Betwixt these rocky pillars Gabriel sat,  
Chief of the angelic guards, awaiting night; 550  
About him exercised heroic games

The unarmed youth of Heaven; but nigh at hand  
 Celestial armoury, shields, helms, and spears,  
 Hung high, with diamond flaming and with gold.  
 Thither came Uriel, gliding through the even  
 On a sun beam, swift as a shooting star  
 In autumn thwarts the night, when vapours fired  
 Impress the air, and shews the mariner  
 From what point of his compass to beware  
 Impetuous winds. He thus began in haste :

"Gabriel, to thee thy course by lot hath given  
 Charge and strict watch, that to this happy place  
 No evil thing approach or enter in ;

This day at highth of noon came to my sphere  
 A Spirit, zealous, as he seem'd, to know  
 More of the Almighty's works, and chiefly Man,  
 God's latest image. I describ'd his way  
 Bent all on speed, and mark'd his aery gait ;  
 But in the mount that lies from Eden north,  
 Where he first lighted, soon discern'd his looks  
 Alien from Heaven, with passions foul obscured.  
 Mine eye pursued him still, but under shade  
 Lost sight of him. One of the banish'd crew,  
 I fear, hath ventured from the Deep, to raise  
 New troubles ; him thy care must be to find."

To whom the winged warrior thus return'd :  
 "Uriel, no wonder if thy perfect sight,  
 Amid the Sun's bright circle where thou sitt'st,  
 See far and wide. In at this gate none pass  
 The vigilance here placed, but such as come  
 Well known from Heaven ; and since meridian hour  
 No creature thence. If Spirit of other sort,  
 So minded, have o'erleap'd these earthy bounds  
 On purpose, hard thou know'st it to exclude  
 Spiritual substance with corporeal bar.  
 But if within the circuit of these walks,  
 In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom  
 Thou tell'st, by morrow dawning I shall know."

So promised he ; and Uriel to his charge  
 Return'd on that bright beam, whose point now raised  
 Bore him slope downward to the sun, now fall'n

Beneath the Azores ; whether the prime orb,  
Incredible how swift, had thither rolled  
Diurnal, or this less volubil Earth,  
By shorter flight to the east, had left him there,  
Arraying with reflected purple and gold  
The clouds that on his western throne attend.

Now came still Evening on, and Twilight gray  
Had in her sober livery all things clad ;  
Silence accompanied ; for beast and bird,  
They to their grassy couch, these to their nests,  
Were slunk, all but the wakeful nightingale ;  
She all night long her amorous descant sung :  
Silence was pleased. Now glow'd the firmament  
With living sapphires ; Hesperus, that led  
The starry host, rode brightest, till the Moon,  
Rising in clouded majesty, at length  
Apparent queen, unveil'd her peerless light,  
And o'er the dark her silver mantle threw ;  
When Adam thus to Eve : " Fair consort, the hour  
Of night, and all things now retired to rest,  
Mind us of like repose, since God hath set  
Labour and rest, as day and night to men  
Successive ; and the timely dew of sleep,  
Now falling with soft slumberous weight, inclines  
Our eye-lids. Other creatures all day long  
Rove idle, unemploy'd, and less need rest ;  
Man hath his daily work of body or mind  
Appointed, which declares his dignity,  
And the regard of Heaven on all his ways ;  
While other animals unactive range,  
And of their doings God takes no account.  
To-morrow, ere fresh morning streak the east  
With first approach of light, we must be risen,  
And at our pleasant labour, to reform  
Yon flowery arbours, yonder alleys green,  
Our walks at noon, with branches overgrown,  
That mock our scant manuring, and require  
More hands than ours to lop their wanton growth.  
Those blossoms also, and those dropping gums,  
That lie bestrown, unsightly and unsmooth,

600

610

620

630

Ask riddance, if we mean to tread with ease ;  
Meanwhile, as Nature wills, night bids us rest."

To whom thus Eve, with perfect beauty adorn'd :

"My author and disposer, what thou bidd'st

Unargued I obey ; so God ordains :

God is thy law, thou mine : to know no more

Is woman's happiest knowledge, and her praise.

With thee conversing I forget all time,

All seasons and their change : all please alike.

640

Sweet is the breath of Morn, her rising sweet,

With charm of earliest birds ; pleasant the Sun,

When first on this delightful land he spreads

His orient beams, on herb, tree, fruit, and flower,

Glistening with dew ; fragrant the fertile Earth

After soft showers ; and sweet the coming on

Of grateful Evening mild ; then silent Night,

With this her solemn bird, and this fair Moon,

And these the genus of Heaven, her starry train :

But neither breath of Morn, when she ascends

650

With charm of earliest birds ; nor rising Sun

On this delightful land ; nor herb, fruit, flower,

Glistening with dew ; nor fragrance after showers ;

Nor grateful Evening mild ; nor silent Night,

With this her solemn bird ; nor walk by moon,

Or glittering star-light, without thee is sweet.

But wherefore all night long shine these ? for whom

This glorious sight, when sleep hath shut all eyes ?"

To whom our general ancestor replied :

"Daughter of God and Man, accomplished Eve,

660

Those have their course to finish round the Earth

By morrow evening, and from land to land

In order, though to nations yet unborn,

Ministering light prepared, they set and rise ;

Lest total Darkness should by night regain

Her old possession, and extinguish life

In nature and all things ; which these soft fires

Not only enlighten, but with kindly heat

Of various influence foment and warm,

Temper or nourish, or in part shed down

670

Their stellar virtue on all kinds that grow

On Earth, made hereby apter to receive  
Perfection from the sun's more potent ray.  
These then, though unbelied in deep of night,  
Shine not in vain. Nor think, though men were none,  
That Heaven would want spectators, God want praise.  
Millions of spiritual creatures walk the Earth  
Unseen, both when we wake, and when we sleep :  
All these with ceaseless praise his works behold,  
Both day and night. How often, from the steep 680  
Of echoing hill or thicket, have we heard  
Celestial voices to the midnight air,  
Sole, or responsive each to other's note,  
Singing their great Creator ! Oft in bands  
While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk,  
With heavenly touch of instrumental sounds  
In full harmonic number join'd, their songs  
Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to Heaven."

Thus talking, hand in hand alone they pass'd  
On to their blissful bower. It was a place 690  
Chosen by the sovran Planter, when he framed  
All things to Man's delightful use. The roof  
Of thickest covert was inwoven shade,  
Laurel and myrtle, and what higher grew  
Of firm and fragrant leaf ; on either side  
Acanthus, and each odorous bushy shrub,  
Fenced up the verdant wall ; each beauteous flower,  
Iris all hues, roses, and jessamine,  
Rear'd high their flourish'd heads between, and wrought  
Mosaic ; under-foot the violet, 700  
Crocus, and hyacinth, with rich inlay  
Broider'd the ground, more colour'd than with stone  
Of costliest emblem. Other creature here,  
Beast, bird, insect, or worm, durst enter none ;  
Such was their awe of Man. In shadier bower  
More sacred and sequester'd, though but feign'd,  
Pan or Sylvanus never slept, nor Nymph  
Nor Faunus haunted. Here, in close recess,  
With flowers, garlands, and sweet-smelling herbs  
Espous'd Eve deck'd first her nuptial bed, 710  
And heavenly choirs the hymenæan sung,

What day the genial Angel to our sire  
Brought her, in naked beauty more adorn'd,  
More lovely, than Pandora, whom the gods  
Endow'd with all their gifts; and, O! too like  
In sad event, when, to the unwiser son  
Of Japhet brought by Hermes, she ensnared  
Mankind with her fair looks, to be avenged  
On him who had stole Jove's authentic fire.

Thus at their shady lodge arrived, both stood,  
Both turn'd, and under open sky adored  
The God that made both sky, air, Earth, and Heaven,  
Which they beheld, the moon's resplendent globe,  
And starry pole: "Thou also madest the night,  
Maker Omnipotent; and thou the day,  
Which we, in our appointed work employ'd,  
Have finish'd, happy in our mutual help  
And mutual love, the crown of all our bliss  
Ordain'd by thee; and this delicious place,  
For us too large, where thy abundance wants  
Partakers, and uncropt falls to the ground.  
But thou hast promised from us two a race  
To fill the Earth, who shall with us extol  
Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake,  
And when we seek, as now, thy gift of sleep."

This said unanimous, and other rites  
Observing none but adoration pure,  
Which God likes best, into their inmost bower  
Handed they went; and, eased the putting off  
These troublesome disguises which we wear,  
Straight side by side were laid; nor turn'd, I ween,  
Adam from his fair spouse, nor Eve the rites  
Mysterious of connubial love refused:  
Whatever hypocrites austere talk  
Of purity, and place, and innocence,  
Defaming as impure what God declares  
Pure, and commands to some, leaves free to all.  
Our Maker bids increase; who bids abstain  
But our destroyer, foe to God and Man?  
Hail, wedded Love, mysterious law, true source  
Of human offspring, sole propriety

In Paradise of all things common else!  
 By thee adulterous lust was driven from men  
 Among the bestial herds to range; by thee,  
 Founded in reason, loyal, just, and pure,  
 Relations dear, and all the charities  
 Of father, son, and brother, first were known.  
 Far be it that I should write thee sin or blame,  
 Or think thee unbefitting holiest place,  
 Perpetual fountain of domestic sweets,  
 Whose bed is undefiled and chaste pronounced,  
 Present or past, as saints and patriarchs used.  
 Here Love his golden shafts employs, here lights  
 His constant lamp, and waves his purple wings,  
 Reigns here and revels: not in the bought smile  
 Of harlots, loveless, joyless, unendear'd,  
 Casual fruition; nor in court-amours,  
 Mix'd dance, or wanton mask, or midnight ball,  
 Or serenate, which the starved lover sings  
 To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain.  
 These, lul'd by nightingales, embracing slept,  
 And on their naked limbs the flowery roof  
 Shower'd roses, which the morn repair'd. Sleep on,  
 Blest pair! and, O! yet happiest, if ye seek  
 No happier state, and know to know no more!

760

770

Now had night measured with her shadowy cone  
 Half way up hill this vast sublunar vault;  
 And from their ivory port the Cherubim  
 Forth issuing, at the accustom'd hour, stood arm'd  
 To their night-watches in warlike parade;  
 When Gabriel to his next in power thus spake:

780

"Uzzel, half these draw off, and coast the south  
 With strictest watch; these other wheel the north:  
 Our circuit meets full west." As flame they part,  
 Half wheeling to the shield, half to the spear.  
 From these, two strong and subtle Spirits he call'd  
 That near him stood, and gave them thus in charge:

"Ithuriel and Zephon, with wing'd speed  
 Search through this garden; leave unsearch'd no nook;  
 But chiefly where those two fair creatures lodge,  
 Now laid perhaps asleep, secure of harm.

790

This evening from the sun's decline arrived  
Who tells of some infernal Spirit seen  
Hitherward bent (who could have thought?), escaped  
The bars of Hell, on errand bad, no doubt:  
Such, where ye find, seize fast, and hither bring.<sup>a</sup>

So saying, on he led his radiant files,  
Dazzling the moon; these to the bower direct  
In search of whom they sought. Him there they found  
Squat like a toad, close at the ear of Eve,  
Assaying by his devilish art to reach  
The organs of her fancy, and with them forge  
Illusions as he list, phantasms and dreams;  
Or if, inspiring venom, he might taint  
The animal spirits, that from pure blood arise  
Like gentle breaths from rivers pure, thence raise  
At least distemper'd, discontented thoughts,  
Vain hopes, vain aims, inordinate desires,  
Blown up with high conceits engendering pride.  
Him thus intent Ithuriel with his spear  
Touch'd lightly; for no falsehood can endure  
Touch of celestial temper, but returns  
Of force to its own likeness: up he starts,  
Discover'd and surprised. As when a spark  
Lights on a heap of nitrous powder, laid  
Fit for the tun, some magazine to store  
Against a rumour'd war, the smutty grain,  
With sudden blaze diffused, inflames the air:  
So started up in his own shape the Fiend.  
Back stept those two fair Angels, half amazed  
So sudden to behold the grisly King;  
Yet thus, unmoved with fear, accost him soon:

"Which of those rebel Spirits adjudged to Hell  
Com'st thou, escaped thy prison? and, transform'd,  
Why sat'st thou like an enemy in wait,  
Here watching at the head of these that sleep?"

"Know ye not, then," said Satan, filled with scorn,  
"Know ye not me? Ye knew me once no mate  
For you, there sitting where ye durst not soar!  
Not to know me argues yourselves unknown,  
The lowest of your throng; or if ye know,



Why ask ye, and superfluous begin  
Your message, like to end as much in vain?"

To whom thus Zephon, answering scorn with scorn:

"Think not, revolted Spirit, thy shape the same,  
Or undiminish'd brightness, to be known  
As when thou stood'st in Heaven upright and pure.  
That glory then, when thou no more wast good,  
Departed from thee; and thou reblest now  
Thy sin and place of doom obscure and foul.  
But come; for thou, be sure, shalt give account  
To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep  
This place inviolable, and these from harm."

846

So spake the Cherub; and his grave rebuke,  
Severe in youthful beauty, added grace  
Invincible. Abash'd the Devil stood,  
And felt how awful goodness is, and saw  
Virtue in her shape how lovely; saw, and pined  
His loss; but chiefly to find here observed  
His lustre visibly impair'd; yet seem'd  
Undaunted. "If I must contend," said he,  
"Best with the best, the sender, not the sent;  
Or all at once: more glory will be won,  
Or less be lost." "Thy fear," said Zephon bold,  
"Will save us trial what the least can do  
Single against thee, wicked and thence weak."

850

The Fiend replied not, overcome with rage;  
But, like a proud steed rein'd, went haughty on,  
Champing his iron curb: to strive or fly  
He held it vain; awe from above had quell'd  
His heart, not else dismay'd. Now drew they nigh  
The western point, where those half-rounding guards  
Just met, and closing stood in squadron join'd,  
Awaiting next command. To whom their chief,  
Gabriel, from the front thus call'd aloud:

856

"O friends, I hear the tread of nimble feet  
Hasting this way, and now by glimpse discern  
Ithuriel and Zephon through the shade;  
And with them comes a third, of regal port,  
But faded splendour wan, who by his gait  
And fierce demeanour seems the Prince of Hell;

870

Not likely to part hence without contest.  
Stand firm, for in his look defiance lours."

He scarce had ended, when those two approach'd,  
And brief related whom they brought, where found,  
How busied, in what form and posture couch'd.  
To whom, with stern regard, thus Gabriel spake:  
"Why hast thou, Satan, broke the bounds prescribed  
To thy transgressions, and disturb'd the charge  
Of others, who approve not to transgress  
By thy example, but have power and right  
To question thy bold entrance on this place;  
Employ'd, it seems, to violate sleep, and those  
Whose dwelling God hath planted here in bliss?"

To whom thus Satan, with contemptuous brow:  
"Gabriel, thou hadst in Heaven the esteem of wise,  
And such I held thee; but this question ask'd  
Puts me in doubt. Lives there who loves his pain?  
Who would not, finding way, break loose from Hell,  
Though thither doom'd? Thou wouldst thyself, no doubt, 880  
And boldly venture to whatever place  
Farthest from pain, where thou mightst hope to change  
Torment with ease, and soonest recompense  
Dole with delight; which in this place I sought:  
To thee no reason, who know'st only good,  
But evil hast not tried. And wilt object  
His will who bound us? let him surer bar  
His iron gates, if he intends our stay  
In that dark durance. Thus much what was ask'd:  
The rest is true, they found me where they say; 900  
But that implies not violence or harm."

Thus he in scorn. The warlike Angel moved,  
Disdainfully half smiling, thus replied:  
"O loss of one in Heaven to judge of wise,  
Since Satan fell, whom folly overthrew,  
And now returns him from his prison scaped,  
Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise  
Or not who ask what boldness brought him hither  
Unlicensed from his bounds in Hell prescribed!  
So wise he judges it to fly from pain 920  
However, and to scape his punishment!"

So judge thou still, presumptuous, till the wrath,  
Which thou incur'st by flying, meet thy flight  
Sevenfold, and scourge that wisdom back to Hell,  
Which taught thee yet no better, that no pain  
Can equal anger infinite provoked.

But wherefore thou alone? wherefore with thee  
Came not all Hell broke loose? is pain to them  
Less pain, less to be fled? or thou than they  
Less hardy to endure? Courageous chief,  
The first in flight from pain, hadst thou alleged  
To thy deserted host this cause of flight,  
Thou surely hadst not come sole fugitive."

920

To which the Fiend thus answer'd, frowning stern:

"Not that I less endure, or shrink from pain,  
Insulting Angel! well thou know'st I stood  
Thy fiercest, when in battle to thy aid  
The blasting vollied thunder made all speed,  
And seconded thy else not dreaded spear.  
But still thy words at random, as before,  
Argue thy inexperience what behoves,  
From hard assays and ill successes past,  
A faithful leader; not to hazard all  
Through ways of danger by himself untried.  
I therefore, I alone, first undertook

930

To wing the desolate Abyss, and spy  
This new-created World, whereof in Hell  
Fame is not silent; here in hope to find  
Better abode, and my afflicted powers  
To settle here on Earth, or in mid air;  
Though for possession put to try once more  
What thou and thy gay legions dare against;  
Whose easier business were to serve their Lord  
High up in Heaven, with songs to hymn his throne,  
And practised distances to cringe, not fight."

940

To whom the warrior Angel soon replied:

"To say and straight unsay, pretending first  
Wise to fly pain, professing next the spy,  
Argues no leader, but a liar traced,  
Satan; and couldst thou 'faithful' add? O name,  
O sacred name of faithfulness profaned!

950

Faithful to whom? to thy rebellious crew?  
Army of fiends, fit body to fit head,  
Was this your discipline and faith engaged,  
Your military obedience, to dissolve  
Allegiance to the acknowledged Power Supreme?  
And thou, sly hypocrite, who now wouldst seem  
Patron of liberty, who more than thou  
Once fawn'd, and cringed, and servilely adored  
Heaven's awful Monarch? wherefore, but in hope  
To dispossess him, and thyself to reign?  
But mark what I decreed thee now: Avaunt!  
Fly thither whence thou fledst. If from this hour  
Within these hallow'd limits thou appear,  
Back to the infernal pit I drag thee chain'd,  
And seal thee so as henceforth not to scorn  
The facile gates of Hell too slightly barr'd."

So threaten'd he; but Satan to no threats  
Gave heed, but waxing more in rage replied:

"Then, when I am thy captive, talk of chains,  
Proud limitary Cherub! but ere then  
Far heavier load thyself expect to feel  
From my prevailing arm, though Heaven's King  
Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy compeers,  
Used to the yoke, drawest his triumphant wheels  
In progress through the road of Heaven star-paved."

While thus he spake, the angelic squadron bright  
Turn'd fiery red, sharpening in moon'd horns  
Their phalanx, and began to hem him round  
With ported spears, as thick as when a field  
Of Ceres ripe for harvest waving bends  
Her bearded grove of ears which way the wind  
Sways them; the careful ploughman doubting stands  
Lest on the threshing-floor his hopeful sheaves  
Prove chaff. On the other side, Satan, alarm'd,  
Collecting all his might, dilated stood,  
Like Teneriff or Atlas, unremoved:  
His stature reach'd the sky, and on his crest  
Sat Horror plumed; nor wanted in his grasp  
What seem'd both spear and shield. Now dreadful deeds  
Might have ensued; nor only Paradise,

In this commotion, but the starry cope  
Of Heaven perhaps, or all the elements  
At least, had gone to wrack, disturb'd and torn  
With violence of this conflict, had not soon  
The Eternal, to prevent such horrid fray,  
Hung forth in Heaven his golden scales, yet seen  
Betwixt Astraea and the Scorpion sign,  
Wherein all things created first he weigh'd,  
The pendulous round Earth with balanced air  
In counterpoise, now ponders all events,  
Battles and realms. In these he put two weights,  
The sequel each of parting and of fight:  
The latter quick up flew, and kick'd the beam;  
Which Gabriel spying thus bespake the Fiend:

1000

"Satan, I know thy strength, and thou know'st mine;  
Neither our own, but given; what folly then  
To boast what arms can do! since thine no more  
Than Heaven permits, nor mine, though doubled now  
To trample thee as mire. For proof look up,  
And read thy lot in yon celestial sign,  
Where thou art weigh'd, and-shewn how light, how weak  
If thou resist." The Fiend look'd up, and knew  
His mounted scale aloft: nor more; but fled  
Murmuring, and with him fled the shades of night.

1010

## BOOK V.

## THE ARGUMENT.

Morning approached, Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream; he likes it not, yet comforts her: they come forth to their day labours: their morning hymn at the door of their bower. God, to render Man inexcusable, sends Raphael to admonish him of his obedience, of his free estate, of his enemy near at hand—who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to Paradise; his appearance described; his coming discerned by Adam afar off, sitting at the door of his bower; he goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of Paradise got together by Eve; their discourse at table. Raphael performs his message, minds Adam of his state and of his enemy; relates, at Adam's request, who that enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his first revolt in Heaven, and the occasion thereof; how he drew his legions after him to the parts of the North, and there incited them to rebel with him, persuading all but only Abdiel, a Seraph, who in argument dissuades and opposes him, then forsakes him.

Now Morn, her rosy steps in the eastern clime  
Advancing, sow'd the earth with orient pearl,  
When Adam waked, so custom'd; for his sleep  
Was aery light, from pure digestion bred,  
And temperate vapours bland, which the only sound  
Of leaves and fuming rills, Aurora's fan,  
Lightly dispersed, and the shrill matin song  
Of birds on every bough; so much the more  
His wonder was to find unwaken'd Eve  
With tresses discomposed, and glowing cheek,  
As through unquiet rest. He, on his side  
Leaning half-raised, with looks of cordial love  
Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld  
Beauty, which, whether waking or asleep,  
Shot forth peculiar graces; then, with voice  
Mild as when Zephyrus on Flora breathes,  
Her hand soft touching, whisper'd thus: "Awake,  
My fairest, my espoused, my latest found,

Heaven's last, best gift, my ever new delight !  
 Awake ! the morning shines, and the fresh field  
 Calls us ; we lose the prime, to mark how spring  
 Our tended plants, how blows the citron grove,  
 What drops the myrrh, and what the balmy reed,  
 How Nature paints her colours, how the bee  
 Sits on the bloom extracting liquid sweet."

Such whispering waked her, but with startled eye  
 On Adam, whom embracing, thus she spake :

"O sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,  
 My glory, my perfection ! glad I see  
 Thy face, and morn return'd ; for I this night  
 (Such night till this I never pass'd) have dream'd,  
 If dream'd, not, as I oft am wont, of thee,  
 Works of day past, or morrow's next design,  
 But of offence and trouble, which my mind  
 Knew never till this irksome night. Methought,  
 Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk  
 With gentle voice ; I thought it thine. It said,  
 'Why sleep'st thou, Eve ? now is the pleasant time,  
 The cool, the silent, save where silence yields  
 To the night-warbling bird, that now awake  
 Tunes sweetest his love-labour'd song ; now reigns  
 Full-orb'd the moon, and, with more pleasing light,  
 Shadowy sets off the face of things ; in vain,  
 If none regard. Heaven wakes with all his eyes,  
 Whom to behold but thee, Nature's desire,  
 In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment  
 Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze ?'

I rose as at thy call, but found thee not :  
 To find thee I directed then my walk ;  
 And on, methought, alone I pass'd through ways  
 That brought me on a sudden to the Tree  
 Of interdicted Knowledge. Fair it seem'd,  
 Much fairer to my fancy than by day ;  
 And, as I wondering look'd, beside it stood  
 One shaped and wing'd like one of those from Heaven  
 By us oft seen : his dewy locks distill'd  
 Ambrosia. On that Tree he also gazed ;  
 And, 'O fair plant,' said he, 'with fruit surcharged,

Deigns none to ease thy load and taste thy sweet,  
Nor god, nor man? Is knowledge so despised?  
Or envy, or what reserve forbids to taste?  
Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold  
Longer thy offer'd good, why else set here?'  
This said, he paused not, but with vent'rous arm  
He pluck'd, he tasted. Me damp horror chill'd  
At such bold words vouch'd with a deed so bold;  
But he thus, overjoy'd: 'O fruit divine,  
Sweet of thyself, but much more sweet thus clogg'd,  
Forbidden here, it seems, as only fit  
For gods, yet able to make gods of men!  
And why not gods of men, since good, the more  
Communicated, more abundant grows,  
The author not impair'd, but honour'd more?  
Here, happy creature, fair angelic Eve,  
Partake thou also: happy though thou art,  
Happier thou may'st be, worthier canst not be;  
Taste this, and be henceforth among the gods  
Thyself a goddess; not to Earth confined,  
But sometimes in the Air, as we; sometimes  
Ascend to Heaven, by merit thine, and see  
What life the gods live there, and such live thou.'  
So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,  
Even to my mouth of that same fruit held part  
Which he had pluck'd; the pleasant savoury smell  
So quicken'd appetite that I, methought,  
Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the clouds  
With him I flew, and underneath beheld  
The Earth outstretch'd immense, a prospect wide  
And various: wondering at my flight and change  
To this high exaltation, suddenly  
My guide was gone, and I, methought, sunk down,  
And fell asleep; but, O, how glad I waked  
To find this but a dream! Thus Eve her night  
Related, and thus Adam answer'd sad:  
"Best image of myself, and dearer half,  
The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep  
Affects me equally; nor can I like  
This uncouth dream, of evil sprang, I fear;



Yet evil whence? in thee can harbour none,  
Created pure. But know that in the soul  
Are many lesser faculties, that serve  
Reason as chief; among these Fancy next  
Her office holds; of all external things,  
Which the five watchful senses represent,  
She forms imaginations, aery shapes,  
Which Reason, joining or disjoining, frames  
All what we affirm or what deny, and call  
Our knowledge or opinion; then retires  
Into her private cell when Nature rests.  
Oft in her absence mimic Fancy wakes  
To imitate her; but, misjoining shapes,  
Wild work produces oft, and most in dreams,  
Ill matching words and deeds long past or late.  
Some such resemblances, methinks, I find  
Of our last evening's talk in this thy dream,  
But with addition strange; yet be not sad:  
Evil into the mind of god or man  
May come and go, so unapproved, and leave  
No spot or blame behind; which gives me hope  
That what in sleep thou didst abhor to dream,  
Waking thou never wilt consent to do.  
Be not dishearten'd, then, nor cloud those looks,  
That wont to be more cheerful and serene  
Than when fair Morning first smiles on the world;  
And let us to our fresh employments rise  
Among the groves, the fountains, and the flowers,  
That open now their choicest bosom'd smells,  
Reserved from night, and kept for thee in store."

So cheer'd he his fair spouse, and she was cheer'd,  
But silently a gentle tear let fall  
From either eye, and wiped them with her hair;  
Two other precious drops that ready stood,  
Each in their crystal sluice, he, ere they fell,  
Kiss'd as the gracious signs of sweet remorse  
And pious awe, that fear'd to have offended.

So all was clear'd, and to the field they haste.  
But first, from under shady arborous roof  
Soon as they forth were come to open sight

Of day-spring, and the sun, who, scarce up risen,  
With wheels yet hovering o'er the ocean brim, 142  
Shot parallel to the Earth his dewy ray,  
Discovering in wide landskip all the east  
Of Paradise and Eden's happy plains,  
Lowly they bow'd adoring, and began  
Their orisons, each morning duly paid  
In various style; for neither various style  
Nor holy rapture wanted they to praise  
Their Maker, in fit strains pronounced or sung  
Unmeditated, such prompt eloquence  
Flow'd from their lips, in prose or numerous verse, 150  
More tuneable than needed lute or harp  
To add more sweetness: and they thus began;  
"These are thy glorious works, Parent of good,  
Almighty! thine this universal frame,  
Thus wondrous fair: thyself how wondrous then!  
Unspeakable! who sitt'st above these Heavens  
To us invisible, or dimly seen  
In these thy lowest works; yet these declare  
Thy goodness beyond thought, and power divine.  
Speak, ye who best can tell, ye Sons of Light, 160  
Angels, for ye behold him, and with songs  
And choral symphonies, day without night,  
Circle his throne rejoicing, ye in Heaven;  
On Earth join, all ye creatures, to extol  
Him first, him last, him midst, and without end.  
Fairest of stars, last in the train of night,  
If better thou belong not to the dawn,  
Sure pledge of day, that crown'st the smiling Morn  
With thy bright circlet, praise him in thy sphere  
While day arises, that sweet hour of prime. 170  
Thou Sun, of this great world both eye and soul,  
Acknowledge him thy greater; sound his praise  
In thy eternal course, both when thou climb'st,  
And when high noon hast gain'd, and when thou fall'st.  
Moon, that now meet'st the orient sun, now fliest,  
With the fix'd stars, fix'd in their orb that flies,  
And ye five other wandering Fires, that move  
In mystic dance not without song, resound

His praise who out of darkness call'd up light.  
 Air, and ye Elements, the eldest birth  
 Of Nature's womb, that in quaternion run  
 Perpetual circle, multiform, and mix  
 And nourish all things, let your ceaseless change  
 Vary to our great Maker still new praise.  
 Ye Mists and Exhalations, that now rise  
 From hill or steaming lake, dusky or gray,  
 Till the sun paint your fleecy skirts with gold,  
 In honour to the world's great Author rise ;  
 Whether to deck with clouds the uncolour'd sky,  
 Or wet the thirsty earth with falling showers,  
 Rising or falling still advance his praise.  
 His praise, ye Winds, that from four quarters blow,  
 Breathe soft or loud ; and wave your tops, ye Pines,  
 With every plant, in sign of worship wave.  
 Fountains, and ye that warble, as ye flow,  
 Melodious murmurs, warbling tune his praise.  
 Join voices, all ye living Souls ; ye Birds,  
 That singing up to Heaven gate ascend,  
 Bear on your wings and in your notes his praise.  
 Ye that in waters glide, and ye that walk  
 The earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep,  
 Witness if I be silent, morn or even,  
 To hill or valley, fountain, or fresh shade,  
 Made vocal by my song, and taught his praise.  
 Hail, universal Lord ! be bounteous still  
 To give us only good ; and if the night  
 Have gather'd aught of evil, or conceal'd,  
 Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark."

So pray'd they innocent, and to their thoughts  
 Firm peace recover'd soon, and wonted calm.  
 On to their morning's rural work they haste,  
 Among sweet dews and flowers ; where any row  
 Of fruit-trees over-woody reach'd too far  
 Their pamper'd boughs, and needed hands to check  
 Fruitless embraces : or they led the vine  
 To wed her elm ; she, spoused, about him twines  
 Her marriageable arms, and with her brings  
 Her dower, the adopted clusters, to adorn

His barren leaves. Them thus employ'd beheld  
With pity Heaven's high King, and to him call'd  
Raphael, the sociable Spirit, that deign'd  
To travel with Tobias, and secured  
His marriage with the seven-times-wedded maid.

"Raphael," said he, "thou hear'st what stir on Earth  
Satan, from Hell scaped through the darksome gulf,  
Hath raised in Paradise, and how disturb'd  
This night the human pair; how he designs  
In them at once to ruin all mankind.  
Go, therefore, half this day, as friend with friend,  
Converse with Adam, in what bower or shade  
Thou find'st him from the heat of noon retired  
To respite his day-labour with repast  
Or with repose; and such discourse bring on  
As may advise him of his happy state,  
Happiness in his power left free to will,  
Left to his own free will, his will though free  
Yet mutable; whence warn him to beware  
He swerve not, too secure. Tell him withal  
His danger, and from whom; what enemy,  
Late full'n himself from Heaven, is plotting now  
The fall of others from like state of bliss;  
By violence? no, for that shall be withstood;  
But by deceit and lies. This let him know,  
Lest wilfully transgressing he pretend  
Surprisal, unadmonish'd, unforewarn'd."

So spake the Eternal Father, and fulfill'd  
All justice; nor delay'd the winged Saint  
After his charge received; but from among  
Thousand celestial Ardours, where he stood  
Veil'd with his gorgeous wings, up springing light,  
Flew through the midst of Heaven; the angelic quires,  
On each hand parting, to his speed gave way  
Through all the empyreal road, till, at the gate  
Of Heaven arrived, the gate self-open'd wide,  
On golden hinges turning, as by work  
Divine the sovran Architect had framed.  
From hence, no cloud or, to obstruct his sight,  
Star interposed, however small he sees,

Not unconform to other shining globes,  
Earth, and the Garden of God, with cedars crown'd 260  
Above all hills. As when by night the glass  
Of Galileo, less assured, observes  
Imagined lands and regions in the moon;  
Or pilot from amidst the Cyclades  
Delos or Samos first appearing kens  
A cloudy spot. Down thither prone in flight  
He speeds, and through the vast ethereal sky  
Sails between worlds and worlds, with steady wing  
Now on the polar winds; then with quick fan  
Winnows the buxom air, till, within soar 270  
Of towering eagles, to all the fowls he seems  
A phoenix, gazed by all, as that sole bird,  
When, to enshrine his reliques in the Sun's  
Bright temple, to Egyptian Thebes he flies.  
At once on the eastern cliff of Paradise  
He lights, and to his proper shape returns,  
A Seraph wing'd. Six wings he wore, to shade  
His lineaments divine: the pair that clad  
Each shoulder broad came mantling o'er his breast  
With regal ornament; the middle pair 280  
Girt like a starry zone his waist, and round  
Skirted his loins and thighs with downy gold  
And colours dipt in heaven; the third his feet  
Shadow'd from either heel with feather'd mail,  
Sky-tinctured grain. Like Maia's son he stood,  
And shook his plumes, that heavenly fragrance fill'd  
The circuit wide. Straight knew him all the bands  
Of Angels under watch; and to his state  
And to his message high in honour rise;  
For on some message high they guess'd him bound. 290  
Their glittering tents he pass'd, and now is come  
Into the blissful field, through groves of myrrh,  
And flowering odours, cassia, nard, and balm,  
A wilderness of sweets; for Nature here  
Wantoned as in her prime, and play'd at will  
Her virgin fancies, pouring forth more sweet,  
Wild above rule or art, enormous bliss.  
Him, through the spicy forest onward come,

Adam discern'd, as in the door he sat  
Of his cool bower, while now the mounted sun  
Shot down direct his fervid rays, to warm  
Earth's inmost womb, more warmth than Adam needs;  
And Eve within, due at her hour, prepared  
For dinner savoury fruits, of taste to please  
True appetite, and not disrelish thirst  
Of nectarous draughts between, from milky stream,  
Berry or grape: to whom thus Adam call'd:

"Haste hither, Eve, and, worth thy sight, behold  
Eastward among those trees what glorious shape  
Comes this way moving; seems another morn  
Risen on mid-noon; some great behest from Heaven  
To us perhaps he brings, and will vouchsafe  
This day to be our guest. But go with speed,  
And what thy stores contain bring forth, and pour  
Abundance, fit to honour and receive  
Our heavenly stranger; well we may afford  
Our givers their own gifts, and large bestow  
From large bestow'd, where Nature multiplies  
Her fertile growth, and by disburdening grows  
More fruitful; which instructs us not to spare."

To whom thus Eve: "Adam, Earth's hallow'd mould,  
Of God inspired, small store will serve where store,  
All seasons, ripe for use hangs on the stalk;  
Save what by frugal storing firmness gains  
To nourish, and superfluous moist consumes.  
But I will haste, and from each bough and brake,  
Each plant and juiciest gourd, will pluck such choice  
To entertain our Angel guest, as he  
Beholding shall confess that here on Earth  
God hath dispensed his bounties as in Heaven."

So saying, with dispatchful looks in haste  
She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent,  
What choice to choose for delicacy best,  
What order, so contrived as not to mix  
Tastes, not well join'd, inelegant, but bring  
Taste after taste upheld with kindest change:  
Bestirs her then, and from each tender stalk  
Whatever Earth, all-bearing mother, yields

In India East or West, or middle shore  
 In Pontus or the Punic coast, or where  
 Alcinoüs reign'd, fruit of all kinds, in coat  
 Rough or smooth-rind, or bearded husk, or shell,  
 She gathers, tribute large, and on the board  
 Heaps with unsparing hand. For drink the grape  
 She crushes, inoffensive must, and meaths  
 From many a berry, and from sweet kernels press'd  
 She tempers dulcet creams; nor these to hold  
 Wants her fit vessels pure; then strews the ground  
 With rose and odours from the shrub unfum'd.

340

Meanwhile our primitive great Sire, to meet  
 His godlike guest, walks forth, without more train  
 Accompanied than with his own complete  
 Perfections; in himself was all his state,  
 More solemn than the tedious pomp that waits  
 On princes, when their rich retinue long  
 Of horses led, and grooms besmear'd with gold,  
 Dazzles the crowd, and sets them all agape.  
 Nearer his presence, Adam, though not awed,  
 Yet with submissive approach and reverence meek,  
 As to a superior nature, bowing low,  
 Thus said: "Native of Heaven (for other place  
 None can than Heaven such glorious shape contain),  
 Since, by descending from the Thrones above,  
 Those happy places thou hast deign'd a while  
 To want, and honour these, vouchsafe with us,  
 Two only, who yet by sovran gift possess  
 This spacious ground, in yonder shady bower  
 To rest, and what the Garden choicest bears  
 To sit and taste, till this meridian heat  
 Be over, and the sun more cool decline."

350

360

Whom thus the angelic Virtue answer'd mild:  
 "Adam, I therefore came; nor art thou such  
 Created, or such place hast here to dwell,  
 As may not oft invite, though Spirits of Heaven,  
 To visit thee; lead on, then, where thy bower  
 O'ershades; for these mid-hours, till evening rise,  
 I have at will." So to the sylvan lodge  
 They came, that like Pomona's arbour smiled,

370

With flowerets deck'd and fragrant smells; but Eve,  
Undeck'd save with herself, more lovely fair  
Than wood-nymph, or the fairest goddess feign'd  
Of three that in Mount Ida naked strove,  
Stood to entertain her guest from Heaven; no veil  
She needed, virtue-proof; no thought infirm  
Alter'd her check. On whom the Angel "Hail!"  
Bestow'd, the holy salutation used  
Long after to blest Mary, second Eve:

"Hail! Mother of Mankind, whose fruitful womb  
Shall fill the world more numerous with thy sons  
Than with these various fruits the trees of God  
Have heap'd this table!" Raised of grassy turf  
Their table was, and mossy seats had round,  
And on her ample square from side to side  
All autumn piled, though spring and autumn here  
Danced hand in hand. A while discourse they hold;  
No fear lest dinner cool; when thus began  
Our Author: "Heavenly stranger, please to taste  
These bounties, which our Nourisher, from whom  
All perfect good, unmeasured out, descends,  
To us for food and for delight hath caused  
The Earth to yield: unsavoury food, perhaps,  
To spiritual natures; only this I know,  
That one celestial Father gives to all."

To whom the Angel: "Therefore, what he gives  
(Whose praise be ever sung) to Man, in part  
Spiritual, may of purest Spirits be found  
No ingrateful food: and food alike those pure  
Intelligential substances require  
As doth your rational; and both contain  
Within them every lower faculty  
Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch, taste,  
Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate,  
And corporeal to incorporeal turn.  
For know, whatever was created needs  
To be sustain'd and fed; of elements  
The grosser feeds the purer: earth the sea;  
Earth and the sea feed air; the air those fires  
Ethereal, and, as lowest, first the moon;



Ethereal, as we; or may at choice  
 Here or in heavenly Paradises dwell,  
 If ye be found obedient, and retain  
 Unalterably firm his love entire,  
 Whose progeny you are. Meanwhile enjoy  
 Your fill what happiness this happy state  
 Can comprehend, incapable of more."

500

To whom the Patriarch of Mankind replied:  
 "O favourable Spirit, propitious guest,  
 Well hast thou taught the way that might direct  
 Our knowledge, and the scale of Nature set  
 From centre to circumference, whereon,  
 In contemplation of created things,  
 By steps we may ascend to God. But say,  
 What meant that caution joined, *If ye be found*  
*Obedient?* Can we want obedience, then,  
 To him, or possibly his love desert,  
 Who form'd us from the dust, and placed us here  
 Full to the utmost measure of what bliss  
 Human desires can seek or apprehend?"

510

To whom the Angel: "Son of Heaven and Earth,  
 Attend! That thou art happy, owe to God;  
 That thou continuest such, owe to thyself,  
 That is, to thy obedience; therein stand:  
 This was that caution given thee; be advised.  
 God made thee perfect, not immutable;  
 And good he made thee, but to persevere  
 He left it in thy power, ordain'd thy will  
 By nature free, not over-ruled by fate  
 Inextricable, or strict necessity.  
 Our voluntary service he requires,  
 Not our necessitated; such with him  
 Finds no acceptance, nor can find; for how  
 Can hearts not free be tried whether they serve  
 Willing or no, who will but what they must  
 By destiny, and can no other choose?  
 Myself, and all the angelic host, that stand  
 In sight of God enthroned, our happy state  
 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds;  
 On other surety none: freely we serve,

520

530

Because we freely love, as in our will  
To love or not; in this we stand or fall.  
And some are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n,  
And so from Heaven to deepest Hell: O fall  
From what high state of bliss into what woe!"

540

To whom our great Progenitor: "Thy words  
Attentive, and with more delighted ear,  
Divine instructor, I have heard, than when  
Cherubic songs by night from neighbouring hills  
Aërial music send; nor knew I not  
To be, both will and deed, created free.  
Yet that we never shall forget to love  
Our Maker, and obey him whose command  
Single is yet so just, my constant thoughts  
Assured me, and still assure; though what thou tell'st  
Hath pass'd in Heaven some doubt within me move,  
But more desire to hear, if thou consent,  
The full relation, which must needs be strange,  
Worthy of sacred silence to be heard.  
And we have yet large day, for scarce the sun  
Hath finish'd half his journey, and scarce begins  
His other half in the great zone of heaven."

550

560

Thus Adam made request; and Raphael,  
After short pause assenting, thus began:  
"High matter thou enjoin'st me, O prime of men,  
Sad task and hard; for how shall I relate  
To human sense the invisible exploits  
Of warring Spirits? how, without remorse,  
The ruin of so many, glorious once  
And perfect while they stood? how, last, unfold  
The secrets of another world, perhaps  
Not lawful to reveal? Yet for thy good  
This is dispensed, and what surmounts the reach  
Of human sense I shall delineate so,  
By likening spiritual to corporal forms,  
As may express them best: though what if Earth  
Be but the shadow of Heaven, and things therein  
Each to other like, more than on Earth is thought!

570

"As yet this world was not, and Chaos wild  
Reign'd where these Heavens now roll, where Earth now rests

Upon her centre poised; when on a day  
 (For time, though in eternity, applied  
 To motion, measures all things durable  
 By present, past, and future), on such day  
 As Heaven's great year brings forth, the empyreal host  
 Of Angels, by imperial summons call'd,  
 Innumerable before the Almighty's throne  
 Forthwith from all the ends of Heaven appear'd  
 Under their Hierarchs in orders bright:  
 Ten thousand thousand ensigns high advanced,  
 Standards and gonfalons, 'twixt van and rear,  
 Stream in the air, and for distinction serve  
 Of Hierarchies, of orders, and degrees;  
 Or in their glittering tissues bear emblaz'd  
 Holy memorials, acts of zeal and love  
 Recorded eminent. Thus when in orbs  
 Of circuit inexpressible they stood,  
 Orb within orb, the Father Infinite,  
 By whom in bliss embosom'd sat the Son,  
 Amidst, as from a flaming mount, whose top  
 Brightness had made invisible, thus spake:

"Hear, all ye Angels, progeny of light,  
 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,  
 Hear my decree, which unrevoked shall stand!  
 This day I have begot whom I declare  
 My only Son, and on this holy hill  
 Him have anointed, whom ye now behold  
 At my right hand; your head I him appoint,  
 And by myself have sworn, to him shall bow  
 All knees in Heaven, and shall confess him Lord.  
 Under his great vicegerent reign abide  
 United as one individual soul,  
 For ever happy. Him who disobeys  
 Me disobeys, breaks union, and that day,  
 Cast out from God and blessed vision, falls  
 Into utter darkness deep ingulf'd, his place  
 Ordain'd without redemption, without end."

"So spake the Omnipotent, and with his words  
 All seem'd well pleased; all seem'd, but were not all.  
 That day, as other solemn days, they spent

In song and dance about the sacred hill;  
Mystical dance, which yonder starry sphere  
Of planets and of fix'd in all her wheels  
Resembles nearest, mazes intricate,  
Eccentric, intervolved, yet regular  
Then most when most irregular they seem;  
And in their motions harmony divine  
So smooths her charming tones that God's own ear  
Listens delighted. Evening now approach'd  
(For we have also our evening and our morn,  
We ours for change delectable, not need),  
Forthwith from dance to sweet repast they turn  
Desirous: all in circles as they stood,  
Tables are set, and on a sudden piled  
With Angels' food, and rubied nectar flows  
In pearl, in diamond, and massy gold,  
Fruit of delicious vines, the growth of Heaven.  
On flowers reposed, and with fresh flowerets crown'd,  
They eat, they drink, and in communion sweet  
Quaff immortality and joy, secure  
Of surfeit where full measure only bounds  
Excess, before the all-bounteous King, who shower'd  
With copious hand, rejoicing in their joy.  
Now when ambrosial night, with clouds exhaled  
From that high mount of God whence light and shade  
Spring both, the face of brightest Heaven had changed  
To grateful twilight (for night comes not there  
In darker veil), and roseate dews disposed  
All but the unsleeping eyes of God to rest,  
Wide over all the plain, and wider far  
Than all this globous Earth in plain outspread  
(Such are the courts of God), the angelic throng,  
Dispersed in bands and files, their camp extend  
By living streams among the trees of life,  
Pavilions numberless and sudden rear'd,  
Celestial tabernacles, where they slept  
Fann'd with cool winds; save those who, in their course,  
Melodious hymns about the sovran throne  
Alternate all night long. But not so waked  
Satan, so call him now; his former name

Is heard no more in Heaven. He, of the first,  
If not the first Archangel, great in power, 66a  
In favour, and pre-eminence, yet fraught  
With envy against the Son of God, that day  
Honour'd by his great Father, and proclaim'd  
Messiah, King anointed, could not bear  
Through pride that sight, and thought himself impair'd.  
Deep malice thence conceiving and disdain,  
Soon as midnight brought on the dusky hour  
Friendliest to sleep and silence, he resolved  
With all his legions to dislodge, and leave  
Unworshipp'd, unbey'd, the throne supreme, 67a  
Contemptuous; and, his next subordinate  
Awakening, thus to him in secret spake:

"Sleep'st thou, companion dear? what sleep can close  
Thy eyelids? and remember'st what decree,  
Of yesterday, so late hath pass'd the lips  
Of Heaven's Almighty. Thou to me thy thoughts  
Wast wont, I mine to thee was wont, to impart;  
Both waking we were one; how then can now  
Thy sleep dissent? New laws thou seest imposed:  
New laws from him who reigns new minds may raise 68a  
In us who serve, new counsels, to debate  
What doubtful may ensue: more in this place  
To utter is not safe. Assemble thou  
Of all those myriads which we lead the chief;  
Tell them that by command, ere yet dim night  
Her shadowy cloud withdraws, I am to haste,  
And all who under me their banners wave,  
Homeward with flying march where we possess  
The quarters of the North, there to prepare  
Fit entertainment to receive our King, 69a  
The great Messiah, and his new commands,  
Who speedily through all the Hierarchies  
Intends to pass triumphant, and give laws."

"So spake the false Archangel, and infused  
Bad influence into the unwary breast  
Of his associate. He together calls,  
Or several one by one, the regent powers,  
Under him regent; tells, as he was taught,

That, the Most High commanding, now ere night,  
Now ere dim night had disencumber'd Heaven,  
The great Hierarchal standard was to move;  
Tells the suggested cause, and casts between  
Ambiguous words and jealousies, to sound  
Or taint integrity. But all obey'd  
The wonted signal, and superior voice  
Of their great Potentate; for great indeed  
His name, and high was his degree in Heaven:  
His countenance, as the morning star that guides  
The starry flock, allured them, and with lies  
Drew after him the third part of Heaven's host.  
Meanwhile, the Eternal eye, whose sight discerns  
Abstrusest thoughts, from forth his holy mount,  
And from within the golden lamps that burn  
Nightly before him, saw without their light  
Rebellion rising; saw in whom, how spread  
Among the Sons of Morn, what multitudes  
Were banded to oppose his high decree;  
And, smiling, to his only Son thus said:

"Son, thou in whom my glory I behold  
In full resplendence, Heir of all my might,  
Nearly it now concerns us to be sure  
Of our omnipotence, and with what arms  
We mean to hold what anciently we claim  
Of deity or empire: such a foe  
Is rising, who intends to erect his throne  
Equal to ours, throughout the spacious North;  
Nor so content, hath in his thought to try  
In battle what our power is or our right.  
Let us advise, and to this hazard draw  
With speed what force is left, and all employ  
In our defence, lest unawares we lose  
This our high place, our sanctuary, our hill."

"To whom the Son, with calm aspect and clear,  
Lightning divine, ineffable, serene,  
Made answer: 'Mighty Father, thou thy foes  
Justly hast in derision, and secure  
Laugh'st at their vain designs and tumults vain,  
Matter to me of glory, whom their hate

Illustrates, when they see all regal power  
Given me to quell their pride, and in event  
Know whether I be dextrous to subdue  
Thy rebels, or be found the worst in Heaven.'

740

"So spake the Son; but Satan with his powers  
Far was advanced on winged speed, an host  
Innumerable as the stars of night,  
Or stars of morning, dew-drops, which the sun  
Impearls on every leaf and every flower.  
Regions they pass'd, the mighty regencies  
Of Seraphim and Potentates and Thrones  
In their triple degrees, regions to which  
All thy dominion, Adam, is no more  
Than what this Garden is to all the earth  
And all the sea, from one entire globose  
Stretch'd into longitude; which having pass'd,  
At length into the limits of the North  
They came, and Satan to his royal seat  
High on a hill, far blazing, as a mount  
Raised on a mount, with pyramids and towers  
From diamond quarries hewn, and rocks of gold,  
The palace of great Lucifer (so call  
That structure in the dialect of men  
Interpreted), which not long after he,  
Affecting all equality with God,  
In imitation of that mount whereon  
Messiah was declared in sight of Heaven,  
The Mountain of the Congregation call'd;  
For thither he assembled all his train,  
Pretending so commanded to consult  
About the great reception of their King,  
Thither to come; and with calumnious art  
Of counterfeited truth thus held their ears:

750

760

770

"Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,  
If these magnific titles yet remain  
Not merely titular, since by decree  
Another now hath to himself engross'd  
All power, and us eclipsed under the name  
Of King anointed; for whom all this haste  
Of midnight march, and hurried meeting here,

This only to consult, how we may best,  
With what may be devised of honours new,  
Receive him coming to receive from us  
Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile!  
Too much to one! but double how endured,  
To one and to his image now proclaim'd?  
But what if better counsels might erect  
Our minds, and teach us to cast off this yoke!  
Will ye submit your necks, and choose to bend  
The supple knee? Ye will not, if I trust  
To know ye right, or if ye know yourselves  
Natives and Sons of Heaven possess'd before  
By none, and if not equal all, yet free,  
Equally free; for orders and degrees  
Jar not with liberty, but well consist.  
Who can in reason, then, or right, assume  
Monarchy over such as live by right  
His equals, if in power and splendour less,  
In freedom equal? or can introduce  
Law and edict on us, who without law  
Err not? much less for this to be our Lord,  
And look for adoration, to the abuse  
Of those imperial titles which assert  
Our being ordain'd to govern, not to serve!

"Thus far his bold discourse without control  
Had audience, when among the Seraphim  
Abdiel, than whom none with more zeal adored  
The Deity, and divine commands obey'd,  
Stood up, and in a flame of zeal severe  
The current of his fury thus opposed:

"O argument blasphemous, false, and proud!  
Words which no ear ever to hear in Heaven  
Expected, least of all from thee, ingrate,  
In place thyself so high above thy peers!  
Canst thou with impious obloquy condemn  
The just decree of God, pronounced and sworn,  
That to his only Son, by right endued  
With regal sceptre, every soul in Heaven  
Shall bend the knee, and in that honour due  
Confess him rightful King? Unjust, thou say'st,



Flatly unjust, to bind with laws the free,  
 And equal over equals to let reign, 820  
 One over all with unsucceeded power.  
 Shalt thou give law to God? shalt thou dispute  
 With Him the points of liberty, who made  
 Thee what thou art, and form'd the powers of Heaven  
 Such as he pleased, and circumscribed their being?  
 Yet, by experience taught, we know how good,  
 And of our good and of our dignity  
 How provident he is, how far from thought  
 To make us less; bent rather to exalt  
 Our happy state, under one head more near 830  
 United. But to grant it thee unjust  
 That equal over equals monarch reign:  
 Thyself, though great and glorious, dost thou count,  
 Or all angelic nature joined in one,  
 Equal to him, begotten Son? by whom,  
 As by his Word, the mighty Father made  
 All things, even thee, and all the Spirits of Heaven  
 By him created in their bright degrees,  
 Crown'd them with glory, and to their glory named 840  
 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,  
 Essential Powers; nor by his reign obscured,  
 But more illustrious made; since he, the head,  
 One of our number thus reduced becomes;  
 His laws our laws; all honour to him done  
 Returns our own. Cease, then, this impious rage,  
 And tempt not these; but hasten to appease  
 The incensed Father and the incensed Son  
 While pardon may be found, in time besought.  
 "So spake the fervent Angel; but his zeal  
 None seconded, as out of season judged, 850  
 Or singular and rash; whereat rejoiced  
 The Apostate, and more haughty thus replied:  
 "'That we were form'd then say'st thou? and the work  
 Of secondary hands, by task transferr'd  
 From Father to his Son? Strange point and new!  
 Doctrine which we would know whence learn'd: who saw  
 When this creation was? Remember'st thou  
 Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being?

We know no time when we were not as now ;  
Know none before us, self-begot, self-raised  
By our own quickening power, when fatal course  
Had circled his full orb, the birth mature  
Of this our native Heaven, Ethereal Sons.  
Our puissance is our own ; our own right hand  
Shall teach us highest deeds, by proof to try  
Who is our equal : then thou shalt behold  
Whether by supplication we intend  
Address, and to begirt the Almighty throne  
Beseeching or besieging. This report,  
These tidings, carry to the anointed King ;  
And fly, ere evil intercept thy flight.'

860

870

"He said ; and, as the sound of waters deep,  
Hoarse murmur echoed to his words applause  
Through the infinite host ; nor less for that  
The flaming Seraph, fearless, though alone,  
Encompass'd round with foes, thus answer'd bold :

"O alienate from God, O Spirit accurst,  
Forsaken of all good ! I see thy fall  
Determined, and thy hapless crew involved  
In this perfidious fraud, contagion spread  
Both of thy crime and punishment. Henceforth  
No more be troubled how to quit the yoke  
Of God's Messiah ; those indulgent laws  
Will not be now vouchsafed ; other decrees  
Against thee are gone forth without recall ;  
That golden sceptre which thou didst reject  
Is now an iron rod to bruise and break  
Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise ;  
Yet not for thy advice or threats I fly  
These wicked tents devoted, lest the wrath  
Impendent, raging into sudden flame,  
Distinguish not : for soon expect to feel  
His thunder on thy head, devouring fire.  
Then who created thee lamenting learn,  
When who can uncreate thee thou shalt know.'

880

890

"So spake the Seraph Abdiel, faithful found ;  
Among the faithless, faithful only he ;  
Among innumerable false, unmoved,

Unshaken, unseduced, unterrified,  
His loyalty he kept, his love, his zeal;  
Nor number nor example with him wrought  
To swerve from truth, or change his constant mind,  
Though single. From amidst them forth he pass'd,  
Long way through hostile scorn, which he sustain'd  
Superior, nor of violence fear'd aught;  
And with retorted scorn his back he turn'd  
On those proud towers, to swift destruction doom'd."

900

## BOOK VI.

## THE ARGUMENT.

Raphael continues to relate how Michael and Gabriel were sent forth to battle against Satan and his Angels. The first fight described : Satan and his Powers retire under night ; he calls a council ; invents devilish engines, which, in the second day's fight, put Michael and his Angels to some disorder ; but they at length, pulling up mountains, overwhelmed both the force and machines of Satan. Yet, the tumult not so ending, God, on the third day, sends Messiah his Son, for whom he had reserved the glory of that victory. He, in the power of his Father, coming to the place, and causing all his legions to stand still on either side, with his chariot and thunder driving into the midst of his enemies, pursues them, unable to resist, towards the wall of Heaven ; which opening, they leap down with horror and confusion into the place of punishment prepared for them in the deep. Messiah returns with triumph to his Father.

"ALL night the dreadless Angel, unpursued,  
Through Heaven's wide champain held his way, till Morn,  
Waked by the circling Hours, with rosy hand  
Unbarr'd the gates of light. There is a cave  
Within the mount of God, fast by his throne,  
Where light and darkness in perpetual round  
Lodge and dislodge by turns, which makes through Heaven  
Grateful vicissitude, like day and night ;  
Light issues forth, and at the other door

Obsequious darkness enters, till her hour  
To veil the Heaven, though darkness there might well  
Seem twilight here. And now went forth the Morn  
Such as in highest Heaven, array'd in gold  
Empyrean; from before her vanish'd Night,  
Shot through with orient beams; when all the plain  
Cover'd with thick embattled squadrons bright,  
Chariots, and flaming arms, and fiery steeds,  
Reflecting blaze on blaze, first met his view:  
War he perceived, war in procinct, and found  
Already known what he for news had thought  
To have reported; gladly then he mix'd  
Among those friendly powers, who him received  
With joy and acclamations loud, that one,  
That of so many myriads fall'n yet one,  
Return'd not lost. On to the sacred hill  
They led him high applauded, and present  
Before the seat supreme; from whence a voice,  
From midst a golden cloud, thus mild was heard:

"Servant of God, well done! Well hast thou fought  
The better fight, who single hast maintain'd  
Against revolted multitudes the cause  
Of truth, in word mightier than they in arms;  
And for the testimony of truth hast borne  
Universal reproach, far worse to bear  
Than violence; for this was all thy care,  
To stand approved in sight of God, though worlds  
Judged thee perverse. The easier conquest now  
Remains thee, aided by this host of friends,  
Back on thy foes more glorious to return  
Than scorn'd thou didst depart, and to subdue  
By force who reason for their law refuse,  
Right reason for their law, and for their King  
Messiah, who by right of merit reigns.  
Go, Michael, of celestial armies prince,  
And thou, in military prowess next,  
Gabriel; lead forth to battle these my sons  
Invincible; lead forth my armed Saints,  
By thousands and by millions ranged for fight,  
Equal in number to that godless crew

Rebellious; them with fire and hostile arms  
Fearless assault, and, to the brow of Heaven  
Pursuing, drive them out from God and bliss,  
Into their place of punishment, the gulf  
Of Tartarus, which ready opens wide  
His fiery chaos to receive their fall.'

"So spake the Sovran Voice, and clouds began  
To darken all the hill, and smoke to roll  
In dusky wreaths reluctant flames, the sign  
Of wrath awaked; nor with less dread the loud  
Ethereal trumpet from on high gan blow:  
At which command the powers militant  
That stood for Heaven, in mighty quadrate join'd  
Of union irresistible, moved on  
In silence their bright legions, to the sound  
Of instrumental harmony, that breathed  
Heroic ardour to adventurous deeds  
Under their godlike leaders, in the cause  
Of God and his Messiah. On they move,  
Indissolubly firm; nor obvious hill,  
Nor straitening vale, nor wood, nor stream, divides  
Their perfect ranks; for high above the ground  
Their march was, and the passive air upbore  
Their nimble tread; as when the total kind  
Of birds, in orderly array, on wing  
Came summon'd over Eden to receive  
Their names of thee; so over many a tract  
Of Heaven they march'd, and many a province wide,  
Tenfold the length of this terrene. At last,  
Far in the horizon to the North, appear'd  
From skirt to skirt a fiery region, stretch'd  
In battailous aspect; and, nearer view,  
Bristled with upright beams innumerable  
Of rigid spears, and helmets thron'd, and shields  
Various, with boastful argument portray'd,  
The banded powers of Satan hasting on  
With furious expedition; for they ween'd  
That self-same day, by fight or by surprise,  
To win the mount of God, and on his throne  
To set the envier of his state, the proud

30

60

70

80

Aspirer; but their thoughts proved fond and vain  
In the mid-way. Though strange to us it seem'd  
At first that Angel should with Angel war,  
And in fierce hosting meet, who wont to meet  
So oft in festivals of joy and love  
Unanimous, as sons of one great Sire,  
Hymning the Eternal Father. But the shout  
Of battle now began, and rushing sound  
Of onset ended soon each milder thought.  
High in the midst, exalted as a god,  
The Apostate in his sun-bright chariot sat,  
Idol of majesty divine, enclosed  
With flaming Cherubim and golden shields;  
Then lighted from his gorgeous throne, for now  
Twixt host and host but narrow space was left,  
A dreadful interval, and front to front  
Presented stood in terrible array  
Of hideous length. Before the cloudy van,  
On the rough edge of battle ere it join'd,  
Satan, with vast and haughty strides advanced,  
Came towering, arm'd in adamant and gold.  
Abdiel that sight endured not, where he stood  
Among the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,  
And thus his own undaunted heart explores:

“O Heaven! that such resemblance of the Highest  
Should yet remain, where faith and realty  
Remain not: wherefore should not strength and might  
There fail where virtue fails, or weakest prove  
Where boldest, though to sight unconquerable?  
His puissance, trusting in the Almighty's aid,  
I mean to try, whose reason I have tried  
Unsound and false; nor is it aught but just  
That he who in debate of truth hath won  
Should win in arms, in both disputes alike  
Victor; though brutish that contest and foul,  
When reason hath to deal with force, yet so  
Most reason is that reason overcome.”

“So pondering, and from his armed peers  
Forth stepping opposite, half-way he met  
His daring foe, at this prevention more

Incensed, and thus securely him defied:

130

"Proud, art thou met? Thy hope was to have reach'd  
The highth of thy aspiring unopposed,  
The throne of God unguarded, and his side  
Abandon'd at the terror of thy power  
Or potent tongue. Fool! not to think how vain  
Against the Omnipotent to rise in arms;  
Who, out of smallest things, could without end  
Have raised incessant armies to defeat  
Thy folly; or with solitary hand,  
Reaching beyond all limit, at one blow,  
Unaided could have finish'd thee, and whelm'd  
Thy legions under darkness! But thou seest  
All are not of thy train; there be who faith  
Prefer, and piety to God, though then  
To thee not visible when I alone  
Seem'd in thy world erroneous to dissent  
From all: my sect thou seest; now learn too late  
How few sometimes may know, when thousands err."

140

"Whom the grand Foe, with scornful eye askance,  
Thus answer'd: 'Ill for thee, but in wish'd hour  
Of my revenge, first sought for, thou return'st  
From flight, seditious Angel, to receive  
Thy merited reward, the first assay  
Of this right hand provoked, since first that tongue,  
Inspired with contradiction, durst oppose  
A third part of the gods, in synod met  
Their deities to assert; who, while they feel  
Vigour divine within them, can allow  
Omnipotence to none. But well thou comest  
Before thy fellows, ambitious to win  
From me some plume, that thy success may shew  
Destruction to the rest. This pause between  
(Unanswer'd lest thou boast) to let thee know,  
At first I thought that liberty and Heaven  
To heavenly souls had been all one; but now  
I see that most through sloth had rather serve,  
Ministering Spirits, train'd up in feast and song:  
Such hast thou arm'd, the minstrelsy of Heaven,  
Servility with freedom to contend,

150

160

As both their deeds compared this day shall prove.' 179

"To whom in brief thus Abdiel stern replied:  
'Apostate! still thou err'st, nor end wilt find  
Of erring, from the path of truth remote.  
Unjustly thou depravest it with the name  
Of servitude, to serve whom God ordains,  
Or Nature: God and Nature bid the same,  
When he who rules is worthiest, and excels  
Them whom he governs. This is servitude,  
To serve the unwise, or him who hath rebell'd  
Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee, 180  
Thyself not free, but to thyself enthral'd;  
Yet lewdly darrest our ministering upbraid.  
Reign thou in Hell, thy kingdom; let me serve  
In Heaven God ever blest, and his divine  
Behests obey, worthiest to be obey'd;  
Yet chains in Hell, not realms, expect: meanwhile,  
From me return'd, as erst thou saidst, from flight,  
This greeting on thy impious crest receive.'

"So saying, a noble stroke he lifted high,  
Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell 190  
On the proud crest of Satan that no sight,  
Nor motion of swift thought, less could his shield,  
Such ruin intercept. Ten paces huge  
He back recoil'd; the tenth on bended knee  
His massy spear upstay'd: as if, on Earth,  
Winds under ground, or waters forcing way,  
Sidelong had push'd a mountain from his seat,  
Half sunk with all his pines. Amazement seized  
The rebel Thrones, but greater rage, to see 200  
Thus foil'd their mightiest; ours joy fill'd, and shout,  
Presage of victory, and fierce desire  
Of battle: whereat Michael bid sound  
The Archangel trumpet; through the vast of Heaven  
It sounded, and the faithful armies rung  
Hosannah to the Highest; nor stood at gaze  
The adverse legions, nor less hideous join'd  
The horrid shock. Now storming fury rose,  
And clamour such as heard in Heaven till now  
Was never; arms on armour clashing bray'd



Horrible discord, and the madding wheels  
Of brazen chariots raged; dire was the noise  
Of conflict; overhead the dismal hiss  
Of fiery darts in flaming volleys flew,  
And flying vaulted either host with fire.  
So under fiery cope together rush'd  
Both battles main, with ruinous assault  
And inextinguishable rage; all Heaven  
Resounded, and, had Earth been then, all Earth  
Had to her centre shook. What wonder? when  
Millions of fierce encountering Angels fought  
On either side, the least of whom could wield  
These elements, and arm him with the force  
Of all their regions: how much more of power  
Army against army numberless to raise  
Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb,  
Though not destroy, their happy native seat!  
Had not the Eternal King Omnipotent  
From his strong hold of Heaven high overruled  
And limited their might; though number'd such  
As each divided legion might have seem'd  
A numerous host; in strength each armed hand  
A legion; led in fight, yet leader seem'd  
Each warrior single as in chief, expert  
When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway  
Of battle, open when, and when to close  
The ridges of grim war. No thought of flight,  
None of retreat, no unbecoming deed  
That argued fear; each on himself relied,  
As only in his arm the moment lay  
Of victory. Deeds of eternal fame  
Were done, but infinite; for wide was spread  
That war, and various: sometimes on firm ground  
A standing fight; then, soaring on main wing,  
Tormented all the air; all air seem'd then  
Conflicting fire. Long time in even scale  
The battle hung; till Satan, who that day  
Prodigious power had shewn, and met in arms  
No equal, ranging through the dire attack  
Of fighting Seraphim confused, at length

210

220

230

240

Saw where the sword of Michael smote, and fell'd  
Squadrons at once: with huge two-handed sway  
Brandish'd aloft the horrid edge came down  
Wide-wasting; such destruction to withstand  
He hasted, and opposed the rocky orb  
Of tenfold adamant, his ample shield,  
A vast circumference. At his approach  
The great Archangel from his warlike toil  
Surceased, and glad, as hoping here to end  
Intestine war in Heaven, the Arch-foe subdued  
Or captive dragg'd in chains, with hostile frown  
And visage all inflamed, first thus began: 250

"'Author of evil, unknown till thy revolt,  
Unnamed in Heaven, now plenteous as thou seest  
These acts of hateful strife, hateful to all,  
Though heaviest, by just measure, on thyself  
And thy adherents: how hast thou disturb'd  
Heaven's blessed peace, and into Nature brought  
Misery, uncreated till the crime  
Of thy rebellion! how hast thou instill'd  
Thy malice into thousands, once upright 270  
And faithful, now proved false! But think not here  
To trouble holy rest; Heaven casts thee out  
From all her confines; Heaven, the seat of bliss,  
Brooks not the works of violence and war.  
Hence then, and evil go with thee along,  
Thy offspring, to the place of evil, Hell,  
Thou and thy wicked crew! there mingle broils,  
Ere this avenging sword begin thy doom,  
Or some more sudden vengeance, wing'd from God,  
Precipitate thee with augmented pain.' 280

"So spake the prince of Angels; to whom thus  
The Adversary: 'Nor think thou with wind  
Of airy threats to awe whom yet with deeds  
Thou canst not. Hast thou turn'd the least of these  
To flight, or, if to fall, but that they rise  
Unvanquish'd, easier to transact with me  
That thou shouldst hope, imperious, and with threats  
To chase me hence? Err not that so shall end  
The strife which thou call'st evil, but we style

The strife of glory; which we mean to win,  
Or turn this Heaven itself into the Hell  
Thou fablest; here however to dwell free,  
If not to reign. Meanwhile, thy utmost force  
(And join him named Almighty to thy aid)  
I fly not, but have sought thee far and nigh.

"They ended parle, and both address'd for fight  
Unspeaking; for who, though with the tongue  
Of Angels, can relate, or to what things  
Likely on Earth conspicuous, that may lift  
Human imagination to such highth  
Of godlike power? for likest gods they seem'd,  
Stood they or moved, in stature, motion, arms,  
Fit to decide the empire of great Heaven.  
Now waved their fiery swords, and in the air  
Made horrid circles; two broad suns their shields  
Blazed opposite, while expectation stood  
In horror; from each hand with speed retired,  
Where erst was thickest fight, the angelic throng,  
And left large field, unsafe within the wind  
Of such commotion: such as (to set forth  
Great things by small) if, Nature's concord broke,  
Among the constellations war were sprung,  
Two planets, rushing from aspect malign  
Of fiercest opposition, in mid sky  
Should combat, and their jarring spheres confound.  
Together both, with next to almighty arm  
Uplifted imminent, one stroke they aim'd  
That might determine, and not need repeat,  
As not of power, at once; nor odds appear'd  
In might or swift prevention. But the sword  
Of Michael from the armoury of God  
Was given him temper'd so, that neither keen  
Nor solid might resist that edge: it met  
The sword of Satan, with steep force to smite  
Descending, and in half cut sheer; nor stay'd,  
But, with swift wheel reverse, deep entering shared  
All his right side. Then Satan first knew pain,  
And writhed him to and fro convolved; so sore  
The griding sword with discontinuous wound

290

300

310

320

Pass'd through him; but the ethereal substance closed, 330  
Not long divisible, and from the gash  
A stream of nectarous humour issuing flow'd  
Sanguine, such as celestial Spirits may bleed,  
And all his armour stain'd, erewhile so bright.  
Forthwith on all sides to his aid was run  
By Angels many and strong, who interposed  
Defence, while others bore him on their shields  
Back to his chariot, where it stood retired  
From off the files of war; there they him laid  
Gnashing for anguish, and despite, and shame 340  
To find himself not matchless, and his pride  
Humbled by such rebuke, so far beneath  
His confidence to equal God in power.  
Yet soon he heal'd; for Spirits, that live throughout  
Vital in every part, not as frail Man  
In entrails, heart or head, liver or reins,  
Cannot but by annihilating die;  
Nor in their liquid texture mortal wound  
Receive, no more than can the fluid air:  
All heart they live, all head, all eye, all ear, 350  
All intellect, all sense; and as they please  
They limb themselves, and colour, shape, or size  
Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare.  
“Meanwhile, in other parts, like deeds deserved  
Memorial, where the might of Gabriel fought,  
And with fierce ensigns pierced the deep array  
Of Moloch, furious king, who him defied,  
And at his chariot wheels to drag him bound  
Threaten'd, nor from the Holy One of Heaven  
Refrain'd his tongue blasphemous; but anon, 360  
Down cloven to the waist, with shatter'd arms  
And uncouth pain fled bellowing. On each wing  
Uriel and Raphael his vaunting foe,  
Though huge and in a rock of diamond arm'd,  
Vanquish'd Adramelech and Asmadai,  
Two potent Thrones, that to be less than gods  
Disdain'd, but meaner thoughts learn'd in their flight,  
Mangled with gastly wounds through plate and mail.  
Nor stood unmindful Abdiel to annoy

The atheist crew, but with redoubled blow  
Ariel, and Arioch, and the violence  
Of Ramiel, scorch'd and blasted, overthrew.  
I might relate of thousands, and their names  
Eternize here on Earth; but those elect  
Angels, contented with their fame in Heaven,  
Seek not the praise of men: the other sort,  
In might though wondrous and in acts of war,  
Nor of renown less eager, yet by doom  
Cancell'd from Heaven and sacred memory,  
Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell.  
For strength from truth divided, and from just,  
Illaudable, nought merits but dispraise  
And ignominy, yet to glory aspires,  
Vain-glorious, and through infamy seeks fame:  
Therefore eternal silence be their doom.

370

380

"And now, their mightiest quell'd, the battle swerved,  
With many an inroad gored; deformed rout  
Enter'd, and foul disorder; all the ground  
With shiver'd armour strown, and on a heap  
Chariot and charioteer lay overturn'd,  
And fiery foaming steeds; what stood, recoil'd  
O'er-wearied, through the faint Satanic host,  
Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surprised,  
Then first with fear surprised and sense of pain,  
Fled ignominious, to such evil brought  
By sin of disobedience; till that hour  
Not liable to fear, or flight, or pain.  
Far otherwise the inviolable Saints  
In cubic phalanx firm advanced entire,  
Invulnerable, impenetrably arm'd;  
Such high advantages their innocence  
Gave them above their foes, not to have sinn'd,  
Not to have disobey'd; in fight they stood  
Unwearied, unobnoxious to be pain'd  
By wound, though from their place by violence moved.

390

400

"Now Night her course began, and, over Heaven  
Inducing darkness, grateful truce imposed,  
And silence on the odious din of war;  
Under her cloudy covert both retired,

Victor and vanquish'd. On the foughten field  
Michael and his Angels prevalent  
Encamping placed in guard their watches round,  
Cherubic waving fires: on the other part,  
Satan with his rebellious disappear'd,  
Far in the dark dislodged, and, void of rest,  
His potentates to council call'd by night,  
And in the midst thus undismay'd began:

“O now in danger tried, now known in arms  
Not to be overpower'd, companions dear,  
Found worthy not of liberty alone,  
Too mean pretence, but, what we more affect,  
Honour, dominion, glory, and renown;  
Who have sustain'd one day in doubtful fight  
(And if one day, why not eternal days?)  
What Heaven's Lord had powerfullest to send  
Against us from about his throne, and judged  
Sufficient to subdue us to his will,  
But proves not so: then fallible, it seems,  
Of future we may deem him, though till now  
Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly arm'd,  
Some disadvantage we endured, and pain  
Till now not known, but, known, as soon condemn'd;  
Since now we find this our empyreal form  
Incapable of mortal injury,  
Imperishable, and, though pierced with wound,  
Soon closing, and by native vigour heal'd.  
Of evil then so small as easy think  
The remedy: perhaps more valid arms,  
Weapons more violent, when next we meet,  
May serve to better us and worse our foes,  
Or equal what between us made the odds,  
In nature none: if other hidden cause  
Left them superior, while we can preserve  
Unhurt our minds, and understanding sound,  
Due search and consultation will disclose.’

“He sat; and in the assembly next upstood  
Nisroch, of Principalities the prime;  
As one he stood escaped from cruel fight,  
Sore toil'd, his riven arms to havoc hewn,

And, cloudy in aspect, thus answering spake:

150

“Deliverer from new Lords, leader to free  
Enjoyment of our right as gods! yet hard  
For gods, and too unequal work, we find  
Against unequal arms to fight in pain,  
Against unpain'd, impassive; from which evil  
Ruin must needs ensue; for what avails  
Valour or strength, though matchless, quell'd with pain,  
Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hands  
Of mightiest? Sense of pleasure we may well  
Spare out of life perhaps, and not repine,  
But live content, which is the calmest life;  
But pain is perfect misery, the worst  
Of evils, and, excessive, overturns  
All patience. He who therefore can invent  
With what more forcible we may offend  
Our yet unwounded enemies, or arm  
Ourselves with like defence, to me deserves  
No less than for deliverance what we owe.”

450

“Whereto with look composed Satan replied:

“Not uninvented that, which thou aright  
Believest so main to our success, I bring.  
Which of us who beholds the bright surface  
Of this ethereous mould whereon we stand,  
This continent of spacious Heaven, adorn'd  
With plant, fruit, flower ambrosial, gems and gold,  
Whose eye so superficially surveys  
These things, as not to mind from whence they grow  
Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,  
Of spiritous and fiery spume, till touch'd  
With Heaven's ray, and temper'd, they shoot forth  
So beauteous, opening to the ambient light?  
These in their dark nativity the deep  
Shall yield us, pregnant with infernal flame;  
Which, into hollow engines long and round  
Thick-ramm'd, at the other bore with touch of fire  
Dilated and infuriate, shall send forth  
From far, with thundering noise, among our foes  
Such implements of mischief as shall dash  
To pieces and o'erwhelm whatever stands

470

480

Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarm'd  
The Thunderer of his only dreaded bolt.

Nor long shall be our labour ; yet ere dawn  
Effect shall end our wish. Meanwhile revive ;  
Abandon fear ; to strength and counsel join'd  
Think nothing hard, much less to be despair'd.

"He ended ; and his words their drooping cheer  
Enlighten'd, and their languish'd hope revived.  
The invention all admired, and each how he  
To be the inventor miss'd ; so easy it seem'd  
Once found, which yet unfound most would have thought

Impossible. Yet haply of thy race,  
In future days, if malice should abound,  
Some one intent on mischief, or inspired  
With devilish machination, might devise  
Like instrument to plague the sons of men  
For sin, on war and mutual slaughter bent.  
Forthwith from council to the work they flew ;  
None arguing stood ; innumerable hands  
Were ready ; in a moment up they turn'd  
Wide the celestial soil, and saw beneath  
The originals of Nature in their crude  
Conception ; sulphurous and nitrous foam  
They found, they mingled, and with subtle art,  
Concocted and adusted, they reduced  
To blackest grain, and into store convey'd.  
Part hidden veins digg'd up (nor hath this Earth  
Entrails unlike) of mineral and stone,  
Whereof to found their engines and their balls  
Of missive ruin ; part incentive reed  
Provide, pernicious with one touch to fire.  
So all ere day-spring, under conscious night,  
Secret they finish'd, and in order set,  
With silent circumspection, unespied.

"Now when fair Morn orient in Heaven appear'd,  
Up rose the victor Angels, and to arms  
The matin trumpet sung ; in arms they stood  
Of golden panoply, refulgent host,  
Soon banded ; others from the dawning hills  
Look'd round, and scouts each coast light-armed scour,



Each quarter, to descry the distant foe,  
Where lodged, or whither fled, or if for fight,  
In motion or in halt. Him soon they met  
Under spread ensigns moving nigh, in slow  
But firm battalion ; back with speediest sail,  
Zophiel, of Cherubim the swiftest wing,  
Came flying, and in mid air aloud thus cried :

“Arm, warriors, arm for fight ! The foe at hand,  
Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit  
This day ; fear not his flight ; so thick a cloud  
He comes, and settled in his face I see  
Sad resolution and secure. Let each  
His adamant coat gird well, and each  
Fit well his helm, gripe fast his orb’d shield,  
Borne even or high ; for this day will pour down,  
If I conjecture aught, no drizzling shower,  
But rattling storm of arrows barb’d with fire.”

“So warn’d he them, aware themselves, and soon  
In order, quit of all impediment ;  
Instant, without disturb, they took alarm,  
And onward move embattled : when, behold !  
Not distant far, with heavy pace the foe  
Approaching gross and huge ; in hollow cube  
Training his devilish enginry, impaled  
On every side with shadowing squadrons deep,  
To hide the fraud. At interview both stood  
A while ; but suddenly at head appear’d  
Satan, and thus was heard commanding loud :

“Vanguard, to right and left the front unfold,  
That all may see who hate us, how we seek  
Peace and composure, and with open breast  
Stand ready to receive them, if they like  
Our overture, and turn not back perverse ;  
But that I doubt : however, witness Heaven !  
Heaven, witness thou anon ! while we discharge  
Freely our part. Ye, who appointed stand,  
Do as you have in charge, and briefly touch  
What we propound, and loud that all may hear.”

“So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce  
Had ended, when to right and left the front

Divided, and to either flank retired ;  
Which to our eyes discover'd, new and strange,  
A triple-mounted row of pillars laid  
On wheels (for like to pillars most they seem'd,  
Or hollow'd bodies made of oak or fir,  
With branches lopt, in wood or mountain fell'd),  
Brass, iron, stony mould, had not their mouths  
With hideous orifice gaped on us wide,  
Portending hollow truce. At each behind  
A Seraph stood, and in his hand a reed  
Stood waving tipt with fire ; while we, suspense,  
Collected stood within our thoughts amused ;  
Not long, for sudden all at once their reeds  
Put forth, and to a narrow vent applied  
With nicest touch. Immediate in a flame,  
But soon obscured with smoke, all Heaven appear'd,  
From those deep-throated engines belch'd, whose roar  
Embowell'd with outrageous noise the air,  
And all her entrails tore, disgorging foul  
Their devilish glut, chain'd thunderbolts and hail  
Of iron globes ; which, on the victor host  
Levell'd, with such impetuous fury smote,  
That whom they hit none on their feet might stand,  
Though standing else as rocks, but down they fell  
By thousands, Angel on Archangel roll'd,  
The sooner for their arms : unarm'd, they might  
Have easily, as Spirits, evaded swift  
By quick contraction or remove ; but now  
Foul dissipation follow'd, and forced rout ;  
Nor served it to relax their serried files.  
What should they do ? If on they rush'd, repulse  
Repeated, and indecent overthrow  
Doubled, would render them yet more despised,  
And to their foes a laughter ; for in view  
Stood rank'd of Seraphim another row,  
In posture to displode their second tire  
Of thunder ; back defeated to return  
They worse abhorr'd. Satan beheld their plight,  
And to his mates thus in derision call'd :

“O friends, why come not on these victors proud?

Erewhile they fierce were coming; and when we,  
To entertain them fair with open front  
And breast (what could we more?), propounded terms  
Of composition, straight they changed their minds,  
Flew off, and into strange vagaries fell,  
As they would dance: yet for a dance they seem'd  
Somewhat extravagant and wild, perhaps  
For joy of offer'd peace. But I suppose,  
If our proposals once again were heard,  
We should compel them to a quick result.

610

"To whom thus Belial, in like gamesome mood:  
'Leader, the terms we sent were terms of weight,  
Of hard contents, and full of force urged home,  
Such as we might perceive amused them all,  
And stumbled many: who receives them right  
Had need from head to foot well understand;  
Not understood, this gift they have besides,  
They shew us when our foes walk not upright.'

620

"So they among themselves in pleasant vein  
Stood scoffing, highthen'd in their thoughts beyond  
All doubt of victory; Eternal Might  
To match with their inventions they presumed  
So easy, and of his thunder made a scorn,  
And all his host derided, while they stood  
A while in trouble: but they stood not long;  
Rage prompted them at length, and found them arms  
Against such hellish mischief fit to oppose.  
Forthwith (behold the excellence, the power,  
Which God hath in his mighty Angels placed!)  
Their arms away they threw, and to the hills  
(For Earth hath this variety from Heaven  
Of pleasure situate in hill and dale)  
Light as the lightning glimpse they ran, they flew;  
From their foundations loosening to and fro,  
They pluck'd the seated hills, with all their load,  
Rocks, waters, woods, and by the shaggy tops  
Uplifting bore them in their hands. Amaze,  
Be sure, and terror seized the rebel host,  
When coming towards them so dread they saw  
The bottom of the mountains upward turn'd;

630

640

Till on those cursed engines' triple-row  
They saw them whelm'd, and all their confidence  
Under the weight of mountains buried deep;  
Themselves invaded next, and on their heads  
Main promontories flung, which in the air  
Came shadowing, and oppress'd whole legions arm'd.  
Their armour help'd their harm, crush'd in and bruised  
Into their substance pent, which wrought them pain  
Implacable, and many a dolorous groan,  
Long struggling underneath, ere they could wind  
Out of such prison, though Spirits of purest light,  
Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.  
The rest, in imitation, to like arms  
Betook them, and the neighbouring hills uptore;  
So hills amid the air encounter'd hills,  
Hurled to and fro with jaculation dire,  
That underground they fought in dismal shade;  
Infernal noise! war seem'd a civil game  
To this uproar; horrid confusion heap'd  
Upon confusion rose. And now all Heaven  
Had gone to wrack, with ruin overspread,  
Had not the Almighty Father, where he sits  
Shrined in his sanctuary of Heaven secure,  
Consulting on the sum of things, foreseen  
This tumult, and permitted all, advised,  
That his great purpose he might so fulfil,  
To honour his anointed Son, avenged  
Upon his enemies, and to declare  
All power on him transferr'd: whence to his Son,  
The assessor of his throne, he thus began:  
    "Effulgence of my glory, Son beloved,  
Son in whose face invisible is beheld  
Visibly, what by Deity I am,  
And in whose hand what by decree I do,  
Second Omipotence! two days are pass'd,  
Two days, as we compute the days of Heaven,  
Since Michael and his powers went forth to tame  
These disobedient. Sore hath been their fight,  
As likeliest was when two such foes met arm'd;  
For to themselves I left them; and thou know'st,

650

660

670

680

Equal in their creation they were form'd,  
Save what sin hath impair'd, which yet hath wrought  
Insensibly, for I suspend their doom:  
Whence in perpetual fight they needs must last  
Endless, and no solution will be found.  
War wearied hath perform'd what war can do,  
And to disorder'd rage let loose the reins,  
With mountains, as with weapons, arm'd: which makes  
Wild work in Heaven, and dangerous to the main.  
Two days are therefore pass'd, the third is thine:  
For thee I have ordain'd it, and thus far  
Have suffer'd, that the glory may be thine  
Of ending this great war, since none but thou  
Can end it. Into thee such virtue and grace  
Immense I have transfused, that all may know  
In Heaven and Hell thy power above compare:  
And this perverse commotion govern'd thus,  
To manifest thee worthiest to be Heir  
Of all things, to be Heir and to be King  
By sacred unction, thy deserved right.  
Go, then, thou Mightiest, in thy Father's might;  
Ascend my chariot, guide the rapid wheels  
That shake Heaven's basis; bring forth all my war,  
My bow and thunder, my almighty arms  
Gird on, and sword upon thy puissant thigh;  
Pursue these sons of Darkness, drive them out  
From all Heaven's bounds into the utter deep;  
There let them learn, as likes them, to despise  
God and Messiah his anointed King.

"He said, and on his Son with rays direct  
Shone full; he all his Father full express'd  
Ineffably into his face received;  
And thus the Filial Godhead answering spake:  
"O Father, O Supreme of Heavenly Thrones,  
First, Highest, Holiest, Best, thou always seek'st  
To glorify thy Son; I always thee,  
As is most just. This I my glory account,  
My exaltation, and my whole delight,  
That thou in me well pleased declarest thy will  
Fulfill'd, which to fulfil is all my bliss.

Sceptre and power, thy giving, I assume,  
And gladlier shall resign, when in the end  
Thou shalt be all in all, and I in thee  
For ever, and in me all whom thou lovest :  
But whom thou hatest I hate, and can put on  
Thy terrors, as I put thy mildness on,  
Image of thee in all things ; and shall soon,  
Arm'd with thy might, rid Heaven of these rebell'd,  
To their prepared ill mansion driven down,  
To chains of darkness and the undying worm,  
That from thy just obedience could revolt,  
Whom to obey is happiness entire.  
Then shall thy Saints, unmix'd, and from the impure  
Far separate, circling thy holy mount,  
Unfeigned halleluiahs to thee sing,  
Hymns of high praise, and I among them chief.'

730

740

"So said, he, o'er his sceptre bowing, rose  
From the right hand of Glory where he sat ;  
And the third sacred morn began to shine,  
Dawning through Heaven. Forth rush'd with whirlwind sound  
The chariot of Paternal Deity,  
Flashing thick flames, wheel within wheel, undrawn,  
Itself instinct with spirit, but convoy'd  
By four Cherubic shapes. Four faces each  
Had wondrous ; as with stars, their bodies all  
And wings were set with eyes ; with eyes the wheels  
Of beryl, and careering fires between ;  
Over their heads a crystal firmament,  
Whereon a sapphire throne, inlaid with pure  
Amber and colours of the showery arch.  
He, in celestial panoply all arm'd  
Of radiant Urim, work divinely wrought,  
Ascended ; at his right hand Victory  
Sat eagle-wing'd ; beside him hung his bow  
And quiver with three-bolted thunder stored ;  
And from about him fierce effusion roll'd  
Of smoke, and bickering flame, and sparkles dire.  
Attended with ten thousand thousand Saints,  
He onward came ; far off his coming shone ;  
And twenty thousand (I their number heard)

750

760

Chariots of God, half on each hand, were seen.  
 He on the wings of Cherub rode sublime  
 On the crystalline sky, in sapphire throned,  
 Illustrious far and wide, but by his own  
 First seen; them unexpected joy surprised  
 When the great ensign of Messiah blazed  
 Aloft by Angels borne, his sign in Heaven;  
 Under whose conduct Michael soon reduced  
 His army, circumfused on either wing,  
 Under their Head embodied all in one.

770

Before him Power Divine his way prepared;  
 At his command the uprooted hills retired  
 Each to his place; they heard his voice, and went  
 Obsequious; Heaven his wonted face renew'd,  
 And with fresh flowerets hill and valley smiled.

780

"This saw his hapless foes, but stood obdured,  
 And to rebellious fight rallied their powers,  
 Insensate, hope conceiving from despair.  
 In heavenly Spirits could such perverseness dwell?  
 But to convince the proud what signs avail,  
 Or wonders move the obdurate to relent?  
 They, harden'd more by what might most reclaim,  
 Grieving to see his glory, at the sight  
 Took envy, and, aspiring to his highth,  
 Stood re-embattled fierce, by force or fraud  
 Weening to prosper, and at length prevail  
 Against God and Messiah, or to fall  
 In universal ruin last; and now  
 To final battle drew, disdaining flight,  
 Or faint retreat: when the great Son of God  
 To all his host on either hand thus spake:

790

"Stand still in bright array, ye Saints; here stand,  
 Ye Angels arm'd; this day from battle rest.  
 Faithful hath been your warfare, and of God  
 Accepted, fearless in his righteous cause;  
 And as ye have received, so have ye done,  
 Invincibly. But of this cursèd crew  
 The punishment to other hand belongs;  
 Vengeance is his, or whose he sole appoints:  
 Number to this day's work is not ordain'd,

800

Nor multitude ; stand only and behold  
God's indignation on these godless pour'd  
By me ; not you, but me, they have despised,  
Yet envied ; against me is all their rage,  
Because the Father, to whom in Heaven supreme  
Kingdom and power and glory appertains,  
Hath honour'd me, according to his will.  
Therefore to me their doom he hath assign'd,  
That they may have their wish, to try with me  
In battle which the stronger proves, they all,  
Or I alone against them ; since by strength  
They measure all, of other excellence  
Not emulous, nor care who them excels ;  
Nor other strife with them do I vouchsafe.'

810

820

"So spake the Son, and into terror changed  
His countenance, too severe to be beheld,  
And full of wrath bent on his enemies.  
At once the Four spread out their starry wings  
With dreadful shade contiguous, and the orbs  
Of his fierce chariot roll'd, as with the sound  
Of torrent floods, or of a numerous host.  
He on his impious foes right onward drove,  
Gloomy as night ; under his burning wheels  
The steadfast Empyrean shook throughout,  
All but the throne itself of God. Full soon  
Among them he arrived, in his right hand  
Grasping ten thousand thunders, which he sent  
Before him, such as in their souls infix'd  
Plagues ; they astonish'd all resistance lost,  
All courage ; down their idle weapons dropt ;  
O'er shields, and helms, and helmeted heads he rode  
Of Thrones and mighty Seraphim prostrate,  
That wish'd the mountains now might be again  
Thrown on them, as a shelter from his ire.  
Nor less on either side tempestuous fell  
His arrows, from the fourfold-visaged Four,  
Distinct with eyes, and from the living wheels,  
Distinct alike with multitude of eyes ;  
One spirit in them ruled, and every eye  
Glared lightning, and shot forth pernicious fire

830

840



Among the accurst, that wither'd all their strength,  
And of their wonted vigour left them drain'd,  
Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fall'n.  
Yet half his strength he put not forth, but check'd  
His thunder in mid volley; for he meant  
Not to destroy, but root them out of Heaven.  
The overthrown he raised, and, as a herd  
Of goats or timorous flock together throng'd,  
Drove them before him thunder-struck, pursued  
With terrors and with furies to the bounds  
And crystal wall of Heaven; which, opening wide,  
Roll'd inward, and a spacious gap disclosed  
Into the wasteful deep. The monstrous sight  
Strook them with horror backward, but far worse  
Urged them behind; headlong themselves they threw  
Down from the verge of Heaven; eternal wrath  
Burn'd after them to the bottomless pit.

850

860

870

"Hell heard the unsufferable noise; Hell saw  
Heaven ruining from Heaven, and would have fled  
Affrighted; but strict Fate had cast too deep  
Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound.  
Nine days they fell; confounded Chaos roar'd,  
And felt tenfold confusion in their fall  
Through his wild anarchy; so huge a rout  
Encumber'd him with ruin. Hell at last,  
Yawning, received them whole, and on them closed;  
Hell, their fit habitation, fraught with fire  
Unquenchable, the house of woe and pain.  
Disburden'd Heaven rejoiced, and soon repair'd  
Her mural breach, returning whence it roll'd.  
Sole victor, from the expulsion of his foes  
Messiah his triumphal chariot turn'd.  
To meet him all his Saints, who silent stood  
Eye-witnesses of his almighty acts,  
With jubilee advanced; and as they went,  
Shaded with branching palm, each order bright  
Sung triumph, and him sung victorious King,  
Son, Heir, and Lord, to him dominion given,  
Worthiest to reign. He, celebrated, rode  
Triumphant through mid Heaven, into the courts

880

And temple of his mighty Father throned  
On high ; who into glory him received,  
Where now he sits at the right hand of bliss.

890

"Thus, measuring things in Heaven by things on Earth,  
At thy request, and that thou may'st beware  
By what is past, to thee I have reveal'd  
What might have else to human race been hid ;  
The discord which befell, and war in Heaven  
Among the angelic powers, and the deep fall  
Of those too high aspiring, who rebell'd  
With Satan : he who envies now thy state,  
Who now is plotting how he may seduce  
Thee also from obedience, that, with him  
Bereaved of happiness, thou may'st partake  
His punishment, eternal misery ;  
Which would be all his solace and revenge,  
As a despite done against the Most High,  
Thee once to gain companion of his woe.  
But listen not to his temptations ; warn  
Thy weaker ; let it profit thee to have heard,  
By terrible example, the reward  
Of disobedience. Firm they might have stood,  
Yet fell ; remember, and fear to transgress."

900

910

## BOOK VII.

## THE ARGUMENT.

Raphael, at the request of Adam, relates how and wherefore this World was first created: that God, after the expelling of Satan and his Angels out of Heaven, declared his pleasure to create another World, and other creatures to dwell therein; sends his Son with glory, and attendance of Angels, to perform the work of creation in six days: the Angels celebrate with hymns the performance thereof, and his reascension into Heaven.

DESCEND from Heaven, Urania, by that name  
If rightly thou art call'd, whose voice divine  
Following, above the Olympian hill I soar,  
Above the flight of Pegasean wing!  
The meaning, not the name, I call; for thou  
Nor of the Muses nine, nor on the top  
Of old Olympus dwell'st; but heavenly born,  
Before the hills appear'd or fountain flow'd,  
Thou with eternal Wisdom didst converse,  
Wisdom thy sister, and with her didst play  
In presence of the Almighty Father, pleas'd  
With thy celestial song. Up led by thee,  
Into the Heaven of Heavens I have presumed,  
An earthly guest, and drawn empyreal air,  
Thy tempering: with like safety guided down,  
Return me to my native element;  
Lest from this flying steed unrein'd (as once  
Bellerophon, though from a lower clime)  
Dismounted, on the Aleian field I fall,  
Erroneous there to wander and forlorn.  
Half yet remains unsung, but narrower bound  
Within the visible diurnal sphere.  
Standing on Earth, not rapt above the pole,  
More safe I sing with mortal voice, unchanged  
To hoarse or mute, though fall'n on evil days,  
On evil days though fall'n, and evil tongues;

10

20

In darkness, and with dangers compass'd round,  
And solitude; yet not alone, while thou  
Visit'st my slumbers nightly, or when morn  
Purples the east. Still govern thou my song,  
Urania, and fit audience find, though few;  
But drive far off the barbarous dissonance  
Of Bacchus and his revellers, the race  
Of that wild rout that tore the Thracian bard  
In Rhodope, where woods and rocks had ears  
To rapture, till the savage clamour drown'd  
Both harp and voice; nor could the Muse defend  
Her son. So fail not thou who thee implores;  
For thou art heavenly, she an empty dream.

Say, Goddess, what ensued when Raphael,  
The affable Archangel, had forewarn'd  
Adam by dire example to beware  
Apostasy, by what befell in Heaven  
To those apostates, lest the like befall  
In Paradise to Adam or his race,  
Charged not to touch the interdicted Tree,  
If they transgress, and slight that sole command,  
So easily obey'd amid the choice  
Of all tastes else to please their appetite,  
Though wandering. He with his consorted Eve  
The story heard attentive, and was fill'd  
With admiration and deep muse, to hear  
Of things so high and strange, things to their thought  
So unimaginable as hate in Heaven,  
And war so near the peace of God in bliss,  
With such confusion; but the evil, soon  
Driven back, redounded as a flood on those  
From whom it sprung, impossible to mix  
With blessedness. Whence Adam soon repeal'd  
The doubts that in his heart arose; and now  
Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know  
What nearer might concern him, how this World  
Of Heaven and Earth conspicuous first began;  
When, and whereof, created; for what cause;  
What within Eden, or without, was done  
Before his memory, as one whose drouth

Yet scarce allay'd still eyes the current stream,  
Whose liquid murmur heard new thirst excites,  
Proceeded thus to ask his heavenly guest :

"Great things, and full of wonder in our ears,  
Far differing from this World, thou hast reveal'd,  
Divine interpreter ! by favour sent  
Down from the Empyrean to forewarn  
Us timely of what might else have been our loss,  
Unknown, which human knowledge could not reach ;  
For which to the infinitely Good we owe  
Immortal thanks, and his admonishment  
Receive with solemn purpose to observe  
Immutably his sovran will, the end

Of what we are. But, since thou hast vouchsafed  
Gently for our instruction to impart

Things above earthly thought, which yet concern'd  
Our knowing, as to highest Wisdom seem'd,  
Deign to descend now lower, and relate

What may no less perhaps avail us known :

How first began this heaven which we behold

Distant so high, with moving fires adorn'd

Innumerable ; and this which yields or fills

All space, the ambient air wide interfused,

Embracing round this florid Earth ; what cause

Moved the Creator, in his holy rest

Through all eternity, so late to build

In Chaos ; and the work begun how soon

Absolved ; if unforbid thou may'st unfold

What we not to explore the secrets ask

Of his eternal empire, but the more

To magnify his works the more we know.

And the great light of day yet wants to run

Much of his race, though steep ; suspense in heaven

Held by thy voice, thy potent voice he hears,

And longer will delay to hear thee tell

His generation, and the rising birth

Of Nature from the unapparent Deep ;

Or if the star of evening and the moon

Haste to thy audience, Night with her will bring

Silence, and Sleep listening to thee will watch ;

Or we can bid his absence till thy song  
End, and dismiss thee ere the morning shine."

Thus Adam his illustrious guest besought ;  
And thus the godlike Angel answered mild :

119

"This also thy request, with caution ask'd,  
Obtain; though to recount almighty works  
What words or tongue of Seraph can suffice,  
Or heart of man suffice to comprehend?  
Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve  
To glorify the Maker, and infer

Thee also happier, shall not be withheld  
Thy hearing ; such commission from above  
I have received, to answer thy desire  
Of knowledge within bounds ; beyond abstain  
To ask, nor let thine own inventions hope  
Things not reveal'd, which the invisible King,  
Only omniscient, hath suppress'd in night,  
To none communicable in Earth or Heaven :  
Enough is left besides to search and know.  
But knowledge is as food, and needs no less  
Her temperance over appetite, to know  
In measure what the mind may well contain ;  
Oppresses else with surfeit, and soon turns  
Wisdom to folly, as nourishment to wind.

120

121

"Know then that after Lucifer from Heaven  
(So call him, brighter once amidst the host  
Of Angels than that star the stars among)  
Fell with his flaming legions through the Deep  
Into his place, and the great Son return'd  
Victorious with his Saints, the omnipotent  
Eternal Father from his throne beheld  
Their multitude, and to his Son thus spake :

"At least our envious foe hath failed, who thought  
All like himself rebellious ; by whose aid  
This inaccessible high strength, the seat  
Of Deity supreme, us dispossess'd,  
He trusted to have seized, and into fraud  
Drew many whom their place knows here no more :  
Yet far the greater part have kept, I see,  
Their station ; Heaven, yet populous, retains

122

Number sufficient to possess her realms  
Though wide, and this high temple to frequent  
With ministeries due and solemn rites.  
But lest his heart exalt him in the harm  
Already done, to have dispeopled Heaven, 150  
My damage fondly deem'd, I can repair  
That detriment, if such it be to lose  
Self-lost, and in a moment will create  
Another world, out of one man a race  
Of men innumerable, there to dwell,  
Not here, till, by degrees of merit raised,  
They open to themselves at length the way  
Up hither, under long obedience tried,  
And Earth be changed to Heaven, and Heaven to Earth, 160  
One kingdom, joy and union without end.  
Meanwhile inhabit lax, ye Powers of Heaven ;  
And thou, my Word, begotten Son, by thee  
This I perform ; speak thou, and be it done !  
My overshadowing Spirit and might with thee  
I send along ; ride forth, and bid the Deep  
Within appointed bounds be Heaven and Earth ;  
Boundless the Deep, because I am who fill  
Infinitude ; nor vacuous the space,  
Though I uncircumscribed myself retire, 170  
And put not forth my goodness, which is free  
To act or not : Necessity and Chance  
Approach not me, and what I will is Fate.'

"So spake the Almighty, and to what he spake  
His Word, the Filial Godhead, gave effect.  
Immediate are the acts of God, more swift  
Than time or motion, but to human ears  
Cannot without process of speech be told,  
So told as earthly notion can receive.  
Great triumph and rejoicing was in Heaven,  
When such was heard declared the Almighty's will ; 180  
Glory they sung to the Most High, good will  
To future men, and in their dwellings peace ;  
Glory to Him whose just avenging ire  
Had driven out the ungodly from his sight  
And the habitations of the just ; to Him

Glory and praise whose wisdom had ordain'd  
Good out of evil to create; instead  
Of Spirits malign, a better race to bring  
Into their vacant room, and thence diffuse  
His good to worlds and ages infinite.

190

"So sang the Hierarchies. Meanwhile the Son  
On his great expedition now appear'd,  
Girt with omnipotence, with radiance crown'd  
Of majesty divine, sapience and love  
Immense; and all his Father in him shone.  
About his chariot numberless were pour'd  
Cherub and Seraph, Potentates and Thrones,  
And Virtues, winged Spirits, and chariots wing'd  
From the armoury of God, where stand of old  
Myriads, between two brazen mountains lodged  
Against a solemn day, harness'd at hand,  
Celestial equipage; and now came forth  
Spontaneous, for within them spirit lived,  
Attendant on their Lord. Heaven open'd wide  
Her ever-during gates, harmonious sound  
On golden hinges moving, to let forth  
The King of Glory, in his powerful Word  
And Spirit coming to create new worlds.

200

On heavenly ground they stood, and from the shore  
They view'd the vast immeasurable Abyss,  
Outrageous as a sea, dark, wasteful, wild,  
Up from the bottom turn'd by furious winds  
And surging waves, as mountains, to assault  
Heaven's highth, and with the centre mix the pole.

210

"Silence, ye troubled waves, and, thou Deep, peace!"  
Said then the omnific Word: 'your discord end!'  
Nor stay'd; but, on the wings of Cherubim  
Uplifted, in paternal glory rode  
Far into Chaos and the World unborn;  
For Chaos heard his voice. Him all his train  
Follow'd in bright procession, to behold  
Creation, and the wonders of his might.  
Then stay'd the fervid wheels and in his hand  
He took the golden compasses, prepared  
In God's eternal store, to circumscribe

220



This Universe, and all created things.  
One foot he centred, and the other turn'd  
Round through the vast profundity obscure,  
And said, 'Thus far extend, thus far thy bounds;  
230 This be thy just circumference, O World!'  
Thus God the Heaven created, thus the Earth,  
Matter unform'd and void. Darkness profound  
Cover'd the Abyss; but on the watery calm  
His brooding wings the Spirit of God outspread,  
And vital virtue infused, and vital warmth,  
Throughout the fluid mass, but downward purged  
The black, tartareous, cold, infernal dregs,  
Adverse to life; then founded, then conglobed  
Like things to like, the rest to several place'  
240 Disparted, and between spun out the air,  
And Earth, self-balanced, on her centre hung.

"Let there be light!" said God; and forthwith light  
Ethereal, first of things, quintessence pure,  
Sprung from the Deep, and from her native east  
To journey through the aery gloom began,  
Sphered in a radiant cloud, for yet the sun  
Was not; she in a cloudy tabernacle  
Sojourn'd the while. God saw the light was good;  
And light from darkness by the hemisphere  
250 Divided: light the Day, and darkness Night,  
He named. Thus was the first day even and morn;  
Nor pass'd uncelebrated, nor unsung  
By the celestial quires, when orient light  
Exhaling first from darkness they beheld,  
Birth-day of Heaven and Earth; with joy and shout  
The hollow universal orb they fill'd,  
And touch'd their golden harps, and hymning praised  
God and his works; Creator him they sung,  
Both when first evening was, and when first morn.

"Again, God said, 'Let there be firmament  
Amid the waters, and let it divide  
The waters from the waters!' And God made  
The firmament, expanse of liquid, pure,  
Transparent, elemental air, diffused  
In circuit to the uttermost convex

Of this great round : partition firm and sure,  
The waters underneath from those above  
Dividing : for as Earth, so he the World  
Built on circumfluous waters calm, in wide  
Crystalline ocean, and the loud misrule  
Of Chaos far removed, lest fierce extremes  
Contiguous might distemper the whole frame :  
And Heaven he named the firmament. So even  
And morning chorus sung the second day.

270

"The Earth was form'd, but, in the womb as yet

Of waters, embryo immature involved,  
Appear'd not ; over all the face of Earth  
Main ocean flow'd, not idle, but, with warm  
Prolific humour softening all her globe,  
Fermented the great mother to conceive,  
Sate with genial moisture ; when God said,  
'Be gather'd now, ye waters under heaven,  
Into one place, and let dry land appear.'  
Immediately the mountains huge appear  
Emergent, and their broad bare backs upheave  
Into the clouds ; their tops ascend the sky.

280

So high as heaved the tumid hills, so low  
Down sunk a hollow bottom, broad and deep,  
Capacious bed of waters ; thither they  
Hasted with glad precipitance, uproll'd,  
As drops on dust conglobing from the dry ;  
Part rise in crystal wall, or ridge direct,  
For haste ; such flight the great command impress'd  
On the swift floods. As armies at the call  
Of trumpet (for of armies thou hast heard)

290

Troop to their standard, so the watery throng,  
Wave rolling after wave, where way they found :

If steep, with torrent rapture, if through plain,  
Soft-ebbing ; nor withstood them rock or hill ;

300

But they, or under ground, or circuit wide  
With serpent error wandering, found their way,  
And on the washy ooze deep channels wore ;  
Easy, ere God had bid the ground be dry,  
All but within those banks where rivers now  
Stream, and perpetual draw their humid train.

The dry land Earth, and the great receptacle  
Of congregated waters he call'd seas;  
And saw that it was good, and said, 'Let the Earth  
Put forth the verdant grass, herb yielding seed, 310  
And fruit-tree yielding fruit after her kind,  
Whose seed is in herself upon the Earth.'  
He scarce had said when the bare Earth, till then  
Desert and bare, unsightly, unadorn'd,  
Brought forth the tender grass, whose verdure clad  
Her universal face with pleasant green;  
Then herbs of every leaf, that sudden flower'd,  
Opening their various colours, and made gay  
Her bosom, smelling sweet; and, these scarce blown,  
Forth flourish'd thick the clustering vine, forth crept 320  
The swelling gourd, up stood the corny reed  
Embattled in her field: add the humble shrub,  
And bush with frizzled hair implicit: last  
Rose, as in dance, the stately trees, and spread  
Their branches hung with copious fruit, or gemm'd  
Their blossoms. With high woods the hills were crown'd,  
With tufts the valleys and each fountain side,  
With borders long the rivers; that Earth now  
Seem'd like to Heaven, a seat where gods might dwell,  
Or wander with delight, and love to haunt 330  
Her sacred shades; though God had yet not rain'd  
Upon the Earth, and man to till the ground  
None was, but from the Earth a dewy mist  
Went up and water'd all the ground, and each  
Plant of the field, which ere it was in the Earth  
God made, and every herb, before it grew  
On the green stem. God saw that it was good;  
So even and morn recorded the third day.  
"Again the Almighty spake, 'Let there be lights  
High in the expanse of heaven, to divide 340  
The day from night; and let them be for signs,  
For seasons, and for days, and circling years;  
And let them be for lights, as I ordain  
Their office in the firmament of heaven,  
To give light on the Earth;' and it was so.  
And God made two great lights, great for their use

To Man, the greater to have rule by day,  
The less by night, altern; and made the stars;  
And set them in the firmament of heaven  
To illuminate the Earth, and rule the day 350  
In their vicissitude, and rule the night,  
And light from darkness to divide. God saw,  
Surveying his great work, that it was good:  
For, of celestial bodies, first the sun  
A mighty sphere he framed, unlightsome first,  
Though of ethereal mould; then form'd the moon  
Globose, and every magnitude of stars,  
And sow'd with stars the heaven thick as a field.  
Of light by far the greater part he took,  
Transplanted from her cloudy shrine, and placed 360  
In the sun's orb, made porous to receive  
And drink the liquid light, firm to retain  
Her gather'd beams, great palace now of light.  
Hither, as to their fountain, other stars  
Repairing, in their golden urns draw light,  
And hence the morning planet gilds her horns;  
By tincture or reflection they augment  
Their small peculiar, though, from human sight  
So far remote, with diminution seen.  
First in his east the glorious lamp was seen, 370  
Regent of day, and all the horizon round  
Invested with bright rays, jocund to run  
His longitude through heaven's high road; the grey  
Dawn, and the Pleiades, before him danced,  
Shedding sweet influence. Less bright the moon,  
But opposite in levell'd west, was set,  
His mirror, with full face borrowing her light  
From him; for other light she needed none  
In that aspect, and still that distance keeps  
Till night; then in the east her turn she shines, 380  
Revolved on heaven's great axle, and her reign  
With thousand lesser lights dividual holds,  
With thousand thousand stars, that then appear'd  
Spangling the hemisphere. Then first adorn'd  
With their bright luminaries, that set and rose,  
Glad evening and glad morn crown'd the fourth day.

“And God said, ‘Let the waters generate  
Reptile with spawn abundant, living soul ;  
And let fowl fly above the Earth, with wings  
Display’d on the open firmament of heaven !’ 390  
And God created the great whales, and each  
Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously  
The waters generated by their kinds,  
And every bird of wing after his kind ;  
And saw that it was good, and bless’d them, saying,  
‘Be fruitful, multiply, and in the seas,  
And lakes, and running streams, the waters fill ;  
And let the fowl be multiplied on the Earth !’  
Forthwith the sounds and seas, each creek and bay,  
With fry innumerable swarm, and shoals 400  
Of fish that with their fins and shining scales  
Glide under the green wave in sculls that oft  
Bank the mid sea. Part, single or with mate,  
Graze the sea weed their pasture, and through groves  
Of coral stray, or, sporting with quick glance,  
Shew to the sun their waved coats dropt with gold ;  
Or, in their pearly shells at ease, attend  
Moist nutriment, or under rocks their food  
In jointed armour watch ; on smooth the seal  
And bended dolphins play ; part, huge of bulk, 410  
Wallowing unwieldy, enormous in their gait,  
Tempest the ocean. There leviathan,  
Hugest of living creatures, on the deep  
Stretch’d like a promontory, sleeps or swims,  
And seems a moving land, and at his gills  
Draws in, and at his trunk spouts out, a sea.  
Meanwhile the tepid caves, and fens, and shores,  
Their brood as numerous hatch from the egg, that soon,  
Bursting with kindly rupture, forth disclosed  
Their callow young ; but feather’d soon and fledg’d 420  
They sumn’d their pens, and, soaring the air sublime,  
With clang despised the ground, under a cloud  
In prospect. There the eagle and the stork  
On cliffs and cedar tops their eyries build.  
Part loosely wing the region ; part more wise,  
In common, ranged in figure, wedge their way,

Intelligent of seasons, and set forth  
Their aery caravan, high over seas  
Flying, and over lands, with mutual wing  
Easing their flight; so steers the prudent crane 430  
Her annual voyage, borne on winds; the air  
Floats as they pass, fanned with unnumber'd plumes.  
From branch to branch the smaller birds with song  
Solaced the woods, and spread their painted wings,  
Till even; nor then the solemn nightingale  
Ceased warbling, but all night tuned her soft lays.  
Others on silver lakes and rivers bathed  
Their downy breast; the swan, with arched neck  
Between her white wings mantling proudly, rows  
Her state with oary feet; yet oft they quit 440  
The dank, and, rising on stiff pennons, tower  
The mid aerial sky. Others on ground  
Walk'd firm: the crested cock whose clarion sounds  
The silent hours, and the other whose gay train  
Adorns him, colour'd with the florid hue  
Of rainbows and starry eyes. The waters thus  
With fish replenish'd, and the air with fowl,  
Evening and morn solemnized the fifth day.

"The sixth, and of Creation last, arose  
With evening harps and matin, when God said, 450  
'Let the Earth bring forth soul living in her kind,  
Cattle, and creeping things, and beast of the Earth,  
Each in their kind!' The Earth obey'd, and straight,  
Opening her fertile womb, teem'd at a birth  
Innumerable living creatures, perfect forms,  
Limb'd and full grown. Out of the ground up rose,  
As from his lair, the wild beast, where he wons  
In forest wild, in thicket, brake, or den;  
Among the trees in pairs they rose, they walk'd;  
The cattle in the fields and meadows green: 460  
Those rare and solitary, these in flocks  
Pasturing at once, and in broad herds upsprung.  
The grassy clods now calved; now half appear'd  
The tawny lion, pawing to get free  
His hinder parts, then springs, as broke from bonds,  
And rampant shakes his brinded mane; the ounce,

The libbard, and the tiger, as the mole  
Rising, the crumbled earth above them threw  
In hillocks; the swift stag from under ground  
Bore up his branching head; scarce from his mould 470  
Behemoth, biggest born of earth, upheaved  
His vastness; fleeced the flocks and bleating rose,  
As plants; ambiguous between sea and land,  
The river-horse and scaly crocodile.  
At once came forth whatever creeps the ground,  
Insect or worm. Those waved their limber fans  
For wings, and smallest lineaments exact  
In all the liveries deck'd of summer's pride,  
With spots of gold and purple, azure and green;  
These as a line their long dimension drew, 480  
Streaking the ground with sinuous trace: not all  
Minims of nature; some of serpent kind,  
Wondrous in length and corpulence, involved  
Their snaky folds, and added wings. First crept  
The parsimonious emmet, provident  
Of future, in small room large heart enclosed;  
Pattern of just equality perhaps  
Hereafter, joined in her popular tribes  
Of commonalty. Swarming next appear'd  
The female bee, that feeds her husband drone 490  
Deliciously, and builds her waxen cells  
With honey stored. The rest are numberless,  
And thou their natures know'st, and gavest them names,  
Needless to thee repeated; nor unknown  
The serpent, subtlest beast of all the field,  
Of huge extent sometimes, with brazen eyes  
And hairy mane terrific, though to thee  
Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.

"Now Heaven in all her glory shone, and roll'd  
Her motions, as the great First Mover's hand 500  
First wheel'd their course; Earth in her rich attire  
Consummate lovely smiled; air, water, earth,  
By fowl, fish, beast, was flown, was swum, was walk'd,  
Frequent; and of the sixth day yet remain'd.  
There wanted yet the master work, the end  
Of all yet done; a creature who, not prone

And brute as other creatures, but endued  
With sanctity of reason, might erect  
His stature, and upright with front serene  
Govern the rest, self-knowing, and from thence 510  
Magnanimous to correspond with Heaven,  
But grateful to acknowledge whence his good  
Descends ; thither with heart, and voice, and eyes,  
Directed in devotion, to adore  
And worship God supreme, who made him chief  
Of all his works. Therefore the omnipotent  
Eternal Father (for where is not he  
Present?) thus to his Son audibly spake :

“ Let us make now Man in our image, Man  
In our similitude, and let them rule 520  
Over the fish and fowl of sea and air,  
Beast of the field, and over all the Earth,  
And every creeping thing that creeps the ground ! ”  
This said, he form’d thee, Adam, thee, O Man,  
Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breathed  
The breath of life ; in his own image he  
Created thee, in the image of God  
Express, and thou becamest a living soul.  
Male he created thee, but thy consort 530  
Female, for race ; then bless’d mankind, and said,  
‘ Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the Earth ;  
Subdue it, and throughout dominion hold  
Over fish of the sea, and fowl of the air,  
And every living thing that moves on the Earth.’  
Wherever thus created, for no place  
Is yet distinct by name, thence, as thou know’st,  
He brought thee into this delicious grove,  
This garden, planted with the trees of God,  
Delectable both to behold and taste ;  
And freely all their pleasant fruit for food 540  
Gave thee : all sorts are here that all the Earth yields,  
Variety without end ; but of the Tree  
Which tasted works knowledge of good and evil  
Thou may’st not ; in the day thou eat’st, thou diest.  
Death is the penalty imposed ; beware,  
And govern well thy appetite, lest Sin



Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.

"Here finish'd he, and all that he had made  
View'd, and behold! all was entirely good.

So even and morn accomplish'd the sixth day;

550

Yet not till the Creator, from his work

Desisting, though unwearied, up return'd,

Up to the Heaven of Heavens, his high abode,

Thence to behold this new-created World,

The addition of his empire, how it shew'd

In prospect from his throne, how good, how fair,

Answering his great idea. Up he rode,

Follow'd with acclamation and the sound

Symphonious of ten thousand harps, that tuned

Angelic harmonies. The Earth, the air

560

Resounded (thou remember'st, for thou heard'st),

The Heavens and all the constellations rung,

The planets in their stations listening stood,

While the bright pomp ascended 'jubilant.

'Open, ye everlasting gates!' they sung;

'Open, ye Heavens, your living doors! let in

The great Creator, from his work return'd

Magnificent, his six days' work, a World;

Open, and henceforth oft; for God will deign

To visit oft the dwellings of just men.

570

Delighted, and with frequent intercourse

Thither will send his winged messengers

On errands of supernal grace.' So sung

The glorious train ascending. He through Heaven,

That open'd wide her blazing portals, led

To God's eternal house direct the way;

A broad and ample road, whose dust is gold,

And pavement stars, as stars to thee appear

Seen in the Galaxy, that milky way

Which nightly as a circling zone thou seest

580

Powder'd with stars. And now on Earth the seventh

Evening arose in Eden, for the sun

Was set, and twilight from the east came on,

Forerunning night; when at the holy mount

Of Heaven's high-seated top, the imperial throne

Of Godhead, fix'd for ever firm and sure,

The Filial Power arrived, and sat him down  
With his great Father ; for he also went  
Invisible, yet stay'd (such privilege  
Hath Omnipresence), and the work ordain'd,  
Author and end of all things, and, from work  
Now resting, bless'd and hallow'd the seventh day,  
As resting on that day from all his work ;  
But not in silence holy kept : the harp  
Had work and rested not ; the solemn pipe,  
And dulcimer, all organs of sweet stop,  
All sounds on fret by string or golden wire,  
Temper'd soft tunings, intermix'd with voice  
Choral or unison ; of incense clouds,  
Fuming from golden censers, hid the mount.  
Creation and the six days' acts they sung :  
'Great are thy works, Jehovah ! infinite  
Thy power ! what thought can measure thee, or tongue  
Relate thee ? greater now in thy return  
Than from the giant Angels : thee that day  
Thy thunders magnified ; but to create  
Is greater than created to destroy.  
Who can impair thee, mighty King, or bound  
Thy empire ? Easily the proud attempt  
Of Spirits apostate and their counsels vain  
Thou hast repell'd, while impiously they thought  
Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw  
The number of thy worshippers. Who seeks  
To lessen thee, against his purpose serves  
To manifest the more thy might ; his evil  
Thou usest, and from thence createst more good.  
Witness this new-made World, another Heaven  
From Heaven gate not far, founded in view  
On the clear hyaline, the glassy sea ;  
Of amplitude almost immense, with stars  
Numerous, and every star perhaps a world  
Of destined habitation ; but thou know'st  
Their seasons ; among these the seat of men,  
Earth, with her nether ocean circumfused,  
Their pleasant dwelling-place. Thrice happy men,  
And sons of men, whom God hath thus advanced,

590

600

610

620

Created in his image, there to dwell  
 And worship him, and in reward to rule  
 Over his works, on earth, in sea, or air,  
 And multiply a race of worshippers  
 Holy and just; thrice happy, if they know  
 Their happiness, and persevere upright !'

639

"So sung they, and the Empyrean rung  
 With halleluiahs. Thus was Sabbath kept.  
 And thy request think now fulfill'd, that ask'd  
 How first this World and face of things began,  
 And what before thy memory was done  
 From the beginning, that posterity,  
 Inform'd by thee, might know. If else thou seek'st  
 Aught, not surpassing human measure, say."

640

## BOOK VIII.

### THE ARGUMENT.

Adam inquires concerning celestial motions; is doubtfully answered, and exhorted to search rather things more worthy of knowledge. Adam assents, and, still desirous to detain Raphael, relates to him what he remembered since his own creation; his placing in Paradise; his talk with God concerning solitude and fit society; his first meeting and nuptials with Eve. His discourse with the Angel thereupon; who, after admonitions repeated, departs.

THE Angel ended, and in Adam's ear  
 So charming left his voice that he a while  
 Thought him still speaking, still stood fixed to hear;  
 Then, as new-waked, thus gratefully replied:  
 "What thanks sufficient, or what recompense  
 Equal, have I to render thee, divine  
 Historian, who thus largely hast allay'd  
 The thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsafed  
 This friendly condescension to relate  
 Things else by me unsearchable, now heard

20

With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,  
With glory attributed to the high  
Creator? Something yet of doubt remains,  
Which only thy solution can resolve.  
When I behold this goodly frame, this World  
Of Heaven and Earth consisting, and compute  
Their magnitudes; this Earth, a spot, a grain,  
An atom, with the firmament compared  
And all her number'd stars, that seem to roll  
Spaces incomprehensible (for such  
Their distance argues, and their swift return  
Diurnal) merely to officiate light  
Round this opacous Earth, this punctual spot,  
One day and night, in all their vast survey  
Useless besides; reasoning I oft admire  
How Nature, wise and frugal, could commit  
Such disproportions, with superfluous hand  
So many nobler bodies to create,  
Greater so manifold, to this one use,  
For aught appears, and on their orbs impose  
Such restless revolution day by day  
Repeated, while the sedentary Earth,  
That better might with far less compass move,  
Served by more noble than herself, attains  
Her end without least motion, and receives,  
As tribute, such a sunless journey brought  
Of incorporeal speed, her warmth and light:  
Speed, to describe whose swiftness number fails."

So spake our sire, and by his countenance seem'd  
Entering on studious thoughts abstruse; which Eve  
Perceiving, where she sat retired in sight,  
With lowliness majestic from her seat,  
And grace that won who saw to wish her stay,  
Rose, and went forth among her fruits and flowers,  
To visit how they prosper'd, bud and bloom,  
Her nursery; they at her coming sprung,  
And, touch'd by her fair tendance, gladlier grew.  
Yet went she not as not with such discourse  
Delighted, or not capable her ear  
Of what was high: such pleasure she reserved,

Adam relating, she sole auditress ;  
Her husband the relater she preferr'd  
Before the Angel, and of him to ask  
Chose rather ; he, she knew, would intermix  
Grateful digressions, and solve high dispute  
With conjugal caresses : from his lip  
Not words alone pleased her. Oh, when meet now  
Such pairs, in love and mutual honour join'd ?  
With goddess-like demeanour forth she went,  
Not unattended ; for on her as queen  
A pomp of winning Graces waited still,  
And from about her shot darts of desire  
Into all eyes, to wish her still in sight.  
And Raphael now to Adam's doubt proposed  
Benevolent and facile thus replied :

“To ask or search I blame thee not ; for Heaven  
Is as the Book of God before thee set,  
Wherein to read his wondrous works, and learn  
His seasons, hours, or days, or months, or years :  
This to attain, whether Heaven move or Earth  
Imports not, if thou reckon right ; the rest  
From Man or Angel the great Architect  
Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge  
His secrets, to be scann'd by them who ought  
Rather admire. Or if they list to try  
Conjecture, he his fabric of the heavens  
Hath left to their disputes, perhaps to move  
His laughter at their quaint opinions wide  
Hereafter, when they come to model Heaven,  
And calculate the stars ; how they will wield  
The mighty frame ; how build, unbuild, contrive,  
To save appearances ; how gird the sphere  
With centric and eccentric scribbled o'er,  
Cycle and epicycle, orb in orb.  
Already by thy reasoning this I guess,  
Who art to lead thy offspring, and supposest  
That bodies bright and greater should not serve  
The less not bright, nor Heaven such journeys run,  
Earth sitting still, when she alone receives  
The benefit. Consider first, that great

60

70

80

90

Or bright infers not excellence: the Earth,  
Though, in comparison of Heaven, so small,  
Nor glistening, may of solid good contain  
More plenty than the sun that barren shines,  
Whose virtue on itself works no effect,  
But in the fruitful Earth; there first received,  
His beams, unactive else, their vigour find.  
Yet not to Earth are those bright luminaries  
Officious, but to thee, Earth's habitant.  
And for the Heaven's wide circuit, let it speak  
The Maker's high magnificence, who built  
So spacious, and his line stretch'd out so far,  
That Man may know he dwells not in his own;  
An edifice too large for him to fill,  
Lodged in a small partition, and the rest  
Ordain'd for uses to his Lord best known.  
The swiftness of those circles attribute,  
Though numberless, to his omnipotence,  
That to corporeal substances could add  
Speed almost spiritual. Me thou think'st not slow,  
Who since the morning hour set out from Heaven  
Where God resides, and ere mid-day arrived  
In Eden, distance inexpressible.  
By numbers that have name. But this I urge,  
Admitting motion in the heavens, to shew  
Invalid that which thee to doubt it moved;  
Not that I so affirm, though so it seem  
To thee who hast thy dwelling here on Earth.  
God, to remove his ways from human sense,  
Placed Heaven from Earth so far, that earthly sight,  
If it presume, might err in things too high,  
And no advantage gain. What if the sun  
Be centre to the World, and other stars,  
By his attractive virtue and their own  
Incited, dance about him various rounds?  
Their wandering course, now high, now low, then hid,  
Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,  
In six thou seest; and what if seventh to these  
The planet Earth, so steadfast though she seem,  
Insensibly three different motions move?

Which else to several spheres thou must ascribe,  
Moved contrary with thwart obliquities,  
Or save the sun his labour, and that swift  
Nocturnal and diurnal rhomb supposed,  
Invisible else above all stars, the wheel  
Of day and night ; which needs not thy belief,  
If Earth, industrious of herself, fetch day,  
Travelling east, and with her part averse  
From the sun's beam meet night, her other part  
Still luminous by his ray. What if that light,  
Sent from her through the wide transpicuous air,  
To the terrestrial moon be as a star,  
Enlightening her by day, as she by night  
This Earth? reciprocal, if land be there,  
Fields and inhabitants. Her spots thou seest  
As clouds, and clouds may rain, and rain produce  
Fruits in her soften'd soil, for some to eat  
Allotted there ; and other suns, perhaps,  
With their attendant moons, thou wilt descry,  
Communicating male and female light,  
Which two great sexes animate the World,  
Stored in each orb perhaps with some that live.  
For such vast room in Nature unpossess'd  
By living soul, desert and desolate,  
Only to shine, yet scarce to contribute  
Each orb a glimpse of light, convey'd so far  
Down to this habitable, which returns  
Light back to them, is obvious to dispute.  
But whether thus these things, or whether not,  
Whether the sun, predominant in Heaven,  
Rise on the Earth, or Earth rise on the sun ;  
He from the east his flaming road begin,  
Or she from west her silent course advance  
With inoffensive pace that spinning sleeps  
On her soft axle, while she paces even,  
And bears thee soft with the smooth air along,  
Solicit not thy thoughts with matters hid :  
Leave them to God above ; him serve and fear.  
Of other creatures, as him pleases best,  
Wherever placed, let him dispose ; joy thou

140

150

160

170

In what he gives to thee, this Paradise  
And thy fair Eve; Heaven is for thee too high  
To know what passes there; be lowly wise;  
Think only what concerns thee and thy being;  
Dream not of other worlds, what creatures there  
Live, in what state, condition, or degree;  
Contented that thus far hath been reveal'd  
Not of Earth only, but of highest Heaven."

To whom thus Adam, clear'd of doubt, replied:

"How fully hast thou satisfied me, pure  
Intelligence of Heaven, Angel serene,  
And, freed from intricacies, taught to live  
The easiest way, nor with perplexing thoughts  
To interrupt the sweet of life, from which  
God hath bid dwell far off all anxious cares,  
And not molest us, unless we ourselves  
Seek them with wandering thoughts, and notions vain.  
But apt the mind or fancy is to rove  
Uncheck'd; and of her roving is no end,  
Till warn'd, or by experience taught, she learn  
That not to know at large of things remote  
From use, obscure and subtle, but to know  
That which before us lies in daily life,  
Is the prime wisdom: what is more is fume,  
Or emptiness, or fond impertinence,  
And renders us in things that most concern  
Unpractised, unprepared, and still to seek.  
Therefore from this high pitch let us descend  
A lower flight, and speak of things at hand  
Useful; whence haply mention may arise  
Of something not unseasonable to ask,  
By sufferance, and thy wonted favour, deign'd.  
Thee I have heard relating what was done  
Ere my remembrance; now hear me relate  
My story, which perhaps thou hast not heard.  
And day is yet not spent; till then thou seest  
How subtly to detain thee I devise,  
Inviting thee to hear while I relate,  
Fond, were it not in hope of thy reply.  
For while I sit with thee, I seem in Heaven;

180

190

200

210



And sweeter thy discourse is to my ear  
Than fruits of palm-tree, pleasantest to thirst  
And hunger both, from labour, at the hour  
Of sweet repast : they satiate, and soon fill,  
Though pleasant ; but thy words, with grace divine  
Imbued, bring to their sweetness no satiety."

To whom thus Raphael answer'd, heavenly meek :  
"Nor are thy lips ungraceful, Sire of Men,  
Nor tongue ineloquent ; for God on thee  
Abundantly his gifts hath also pour'd,  
Inward and outward both, his image fair :  
Speaking or mute, all comeliness and grace  
Attends thee, and each word, each motion, forms.  
Nor less think we in Heaven of thee on Earth  
Than of our fellow-servant, and inquire  
Gladly into the ways of God with Man ;  
For God, we see, hath honour'd thee, and set  
On Man his equal love. Say therefore on ;  
For I that day was absent, as befell,  
Bound on a voyage uncouth and obscure,  
Far on excursion toward the gates of Hell,  
Squared in full legion (such command we had),  
To see that none thence issued forth a spy  
Or enemy, while God was in his work ;  
Lest he, incensed at such eruption bold,  
Destruction with Creation might have mix'd :  
Not that they durst without his leave attempt ;  
But us he sends upon his high behests  
For state, as sovran King, and to inure  
Our prompt obedience. Fast we found, fast shut,  
The dismal gates, and barricadoed strong ;  
But, long ere our approaching, heard within  
Noise, other than the sound of dance or song ;  
Torment, and loud lament, and furious rage.  
Glad we return'd up to the coasts of light  
Ere Sabbath evening ; so we had in charge.  
But thy relation now ; for I attend,  
Pleased with thy words no less than thou with mine."

So spake the godlike Power, and thus our sire :  
"For Man to tell how human life began

Is hard ; for who himself beginning knew ?  
Desire with thee still longer to converse  
Induced me. As new-waked from soundest sleep,  
Soft on the flowery herb I found me laid,  
In balmy sweat, which with his beams the sun  
Soon dried, and on the reeking moisture fed.  
Straight toward Heaven my wondering eyes I turn'd,  
And gazed a while the ample sky, till raised  
By quick instinctive motion up I sprung,  
As thitherward endeavouring, and upright  
Stood on my feet. About me round I saw  
Hill, dale, and shady woods, and sunny plains,  
And liquid lapse of murmuring streams ; by these,  
Creatures that lived and moved, and walk'd or flew,  
Birds on the branches warbling ; all things smiled ;  
With fragrance and with joy my heart o'erflow'd.  
Myself I then perused, and limb by limb  
Survey'd, and sometimes went, and sometimes ran  
With supple joints, as lively vigour led ;  
But who I was, or where, or from what cause,  
Knew not. To speak I tried, and forthwith spake ;  
My tongue obey'd, and readily could name  
Whate'er I saw. 'Thou Sun,' said I, 'fair light,  
And thou enlighten'd Earth, so fresh and gay,  
Ye hills and dales, ye rivers, woods, and plains,  
And ye that live and move, fair creatures, tell,  
Tell, if ye saw, how came I thus, how here ?  
Not of myself ; by some great Maker then,  
In goodness and in power pre-eminent.  
Tell me, how may I know him, how adore,  
From whom I have that thus I move and live,  
And feel that I am happier than I know ?'  
While thus I call'd, and stray'd I knew not whither,  
From where I first drew air, and first beheld  
This happy light, when answer none return'd,  
On a green shady bank, profuse of flowers,  
Pensive I sat me down ; there gentle sleep  
First found me, and with soft oppression seized  
My drowsèd sense, untroubled, though I thought  
I then was passing to my former state

260

270

280

290

Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve:  
When suddenly stood at my head a dream,  
Whose inward apparition gently moved  
My fancy to believe I yet had being,  
And lived. One came, methought, of shape divine,  
And said, 'Thy mansion wants thee, Adam; rise,  
First Man, of men innumerable ordain'd  
First father! call'd by thee, I come thy guide  
To the garden of bliss, thy seat prepared.'  
So saying, by the hand he took me raised,  
And over fields and waters, as in air  
Smooth-sliding without step, last led me up  
A woody mountain, whose high top was plain,  
A circuit wide, enclosed, with goodliest trees  
Planted, with walks and bowers, that what I saw  
Of Earth before scarce pleasant seem'd. Each tree  
Loaden with fairest fruit, that hung to the eye  
Tempting, stirr'd in me sudden appetite  
To pluck and eat; whereat I waked, and found  
Before mine eyes all real, as the dream  
Had lively shadow'd. Here had new begun  
My wandering, had not He, who was my guide  
Up hither, from among the trees appear'd,  
Presence Divine. Rejoicing, but with awe,  
In adoration at his feet I fell  
Submiss. He rear'd me, and, 'Whom thou sought'st I am,'  
Said mildly, 'Author of all this thou seest  
Above, or round about thee, or beneath.  
This Paradise I give thee; count it thine  
To till and keep, and of the fruit to eat:  
Of every tree that in the garden grows  
Eat freely with glad heart; fear here no dearth.  
But of the Tree whose operation brings  
Knowledge of good and ill, which I have set,  
The pledge of thy obedience and thy faith,  
Amid the garden by the Tree of Life,  
Remember what I warn thee, shun to taste,  
And shun the bitter consequence: for know,  
The day thou eat'st thereof, my sole command  
Transgress'd, inevitably thou shalt die,

300

310

320

330

From that day mortal, and this happy state  
Shalt lose, expell'd from hence into a world  
Of woe and sorrow.' Sternly he pronounced  
The rigid interdiction, which resounds  
Yet dreadful in mine ear, though in my choice  
Not to incur; but soon his clear aspect  
Return'd, and gracious purpose thus renew'd :  
'Not only these fair bounds, but all the Earth  
To thee and to thy race I give; as lords  
Possess it, and all things that therein live,  
Or live in sea, or air, beast, fish and fowl.  
In sign whereof, each bird and beast behold  
After their kinds; I bring them to receive  
From thee their names, and pay thee fealty  
With low subjection; understand the same  
Of fish within their watery residence,  
Not hither summon'd, since they cannot change  
Their element to draw the thinner air.'  
As thus he spake, each bird and beast behold  
Approaching two and two; these cowering low  
With blandishment; each bird stoop'd on his wing.  
I named them as they pass'd, and understood  
Their nature; with such knowledge God endued  
My sudden apprehension. But in these  
I found not what, methought, I wanted still,  
And to the Heavenly Vision thus presumed :

"O, by what name, for thou above all these,  
Above mankind, or aught than mankind higher,  
Surpassest far my naming, how may I  
Adore thee, Author of this Universe,  
And all this good to man, for whose well-being  
So amply, and with hands so liberal,  
Thou hast provided all things? But with me  
I see not who partakes. In solitude  
What happiness? who can enjoy alone,  
Or, all enjoying, what contentment find?'  
Thus I presumptuous; and the Vision bright,  
As with a smile more brighten'd, thus replied :

"What call'st thou solitude? Is not the Earth  
With various living creatures, and the air,

Replenish'd, and all these at thy command  
To come and play before thee? Know'st thou not  
Their language and their ways? They also know,  
And reason not contemptibly; with these  
Find pastime, and bear rule; thy realm is large.  
So spake the universal Lord, and seem'd  
So ordering. I, with leave of speech implored,  
And humble deprecation, thus replied:

“Let not my words offend thee, Heavenly Power!  
My Maker, be propitious while I speak.  
Hast thou not made me here thy substitute,  
And these inferior far beneath me set?  
Among unequals what society  
Can sort, what harmony or true delight?  
Which must be mutual, in proportion due  
Given and received; but in disparity,  
The one intense, the other still remiss,  
Cannot well suit with either, but soon prove  
Tedious alike. Of fellowship I speak,  
Such as I seek, fit to participate  
All rational delight, wherein the brute  
Cannot be human consort: they rejoice  
Each with their kind, lion with lioness;  
So fitly them in pairs thou hast combined;  
Much less can bird with beast, or fish with fowl,  
So well converse, nor with the ox the ape;  
Worse then can man with beast, and least of all.”

“Whereto the Almighty answer'd, not displeased:  
‘A nice and subtle happiness, I see,  
Thou to thyself proposest, in the choice  
Of thy associates, Adam, and wilt taste  
No pleasure, though in pleasure, solitary.  
What think'st thou then of me, and this my state?  
Seem I to thee sufficiently possess'd  
Of happiness, or not? who am alone  
From all eternity; for none I know  
Second to me or like, equal much less.  
How have I then with whom to hold converse,  
Save with the creatures which I made, and those  
To me inferior, infinite descents

Beneath what other creatures are to thee?"

"He ceased; I lowly answer'd: 'To attain  
The highth and depth of thy eternal ways  
All human thoughts come short, Supreme of things!  
Thou in thyself art perfect, and in thee  
Is no deficiency found; not so is Man,  
But in degree, the cause of his desire  
By conversation with his like to help  
Or solace his defects. No need that thou  
Shouldst propagate, already infinite,  
And through all numbers absolute, though One;  
But Man by number is to manifest  
His single imperfection, and beget  
Like of his like, his image multiplied,  
In unity defective; which requires  
Collateral love, and dearest amity.

Thou, in thy secrecy although alone,  
Best with thyself accompanied, seek'st not  
Social communication; yet, so pleased,  
Canst raise thy creature to what highth thou wilt  
Of union or communion, deified;  
I, by conversing, cannot these erect  
From prone, nor in their ways complacence find.  
Thus I embolden'd spake, and freedom used  
Permissive, and acceptance found; which gain'd  
This answer from the gracious Voice Divine:

"Thus far to try thee, Adam, I was pleased,  
And find thee knowing not of beasts alone,  
Which thou hast rightly named, but of thyself,  
Expressing well the spirit within thee free,  
My image, not imparted to the brute;  
Whose fellowship therefore, unmeet for thee,  
Good reason was thou freely shouldst dislike;  
And be so minded still. I, ere thou spakest,  
Knew it not good for Man to be alone,  
And no such company as then thou saw'st  
Intended thee, for trial only brought,  
To see how thou couldst judge of fit and meet.  
What next I bring shall please thee, be assured,  
Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self,

Thy wish exactly to thy heart's desire.'

"He ended, or I heard no more; for now  
My earthly by his heavenly overpower'd,  
Which it had long stood under, strain'd to the highth  
In that celestial colloquy sublime,  
As with an object that excels the sense,  
Dazzled and spent, sunk down, and sought repair  
Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, call'd  
By Nature as in aid, and closed mine eyes.  
Mine eyes he closed, but open left the cell  
Of fancy, my internal sight; by which,  
Abstract as in a trance, methought I saw,  
Though sleeping, where I lay, and saw the Shape  
Still glorious before whom awake I stood;  
Who stooping open'd my left side, and took  
From thence a rib, with cordial spirits warm,  
And life-blood streaming fresh; wide was the wound,  
But suddenly with flesh fill'd up and heal'd.  
The rib he form'd and fashion'd with his hands;  
Under his forming hands a creature grew,  
Man-like, but different sex, so lovely fair  
That what seem'd fair in all the world seem'd now  
Mean, or in her summ'd up, in her contain'd  
And in her looks, which from that time infused  
Sweetness into my heart, unfelt before,  
And into all things from her air inspired  
The spirit of love and amorous delight.  
She disappear'd, and left me dark; I waked  
To find her, or for ever to deplore  
Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure:  
When, out of hope, behold her not far off,  
Such as I saw her in my dream, adorn'd  
With what all Earth or Heaven could bestow  
To make her amiable. On she came,  
Led by her Heavenly Maker, though unseen,  
And guided by his voice, nor uninform'd  
Of nuptial sanctity and marriage rites.  
Grace was in all her steps, Heaven in her eye,  
In every gesture dignity and love.  
I, overjoy'd, could not forbear aloud:

460

470

480

490

"This turn hath made amends ; thou hast fulfill'd  
Thy words, Creator bounteous and benign,  
Giver of all things fair, but fairest this  
Of all thy gifts I nor enviest. I now see  
Bone of my bone, flesh of my flesh, my self  
Before me ; Woman is her name, of Man  
Extracted ; for this cause he shall forgo  
Father and mother, and to his wife adhere,  
And they shall be one flesh, one heart, one soul."

"She heard me thus ; and, though divinely brought, 300  
Yet innocence and virgin modesty,  
Her virtue and the conscience of her worth,  
That would be woo'd, and not unsought be won,  
Not obvious, not obtrusive, but retired,  
The more desirable ; or, to say all,  
Nature herself, though pure of sinful thought,  
Wrought in her so, that, seeing me, she turn'd ;  
I follow'd her ; she what was honour knew,  
And with obsequious majesty approved  
My pleaded reason. To the nuptial bower 310  
I led her blushing like the Morn ; all Heaven,  
And happy constellations, on that hour  
Shed their selectest influence ; the Earth  
Gave sign of gratulation, and each hill ;  
Joyous the birds ; fresh gales and gentle airs  
Whisper'd it to the woods, and from their wings  
Flung rose, flung odours from the spicy shrub,  
Disporting, till the amorous bird of night  
Sung spousal, and bid haste the evening star  
On his hill top to light the bridal lamp. 320

"Thus I have told thee all my state, and brought  
My story to the sum of earthly bliss  
Which I enjoy, and must confess to find  
In all things else delight indeed, but such  
As, used or not, works in the mind no change,  
Nor vehement desire, these delicacies  
I mean of taste, sight, smell, herbs, fruits, and flowers,  
Walks, and the melody of birds : but here,  
Far otherwise, transported I behold,  
Transported touch ; here passion first I felt, 330  
Commotion strange, in all enjoyments else



Superior and unmoved, here only weak  
Against the charm of beauty's powerful glance.  
Or Nature fail'd in me, and left some part  
Not proof enough such object to sustain,  
Or, from my side subducting, took perhaps  
More than enough ; at least on her bestow'd  
Too much of ornament, in outward shew  
Elaborate, of inward less exact.

For well I understand in the prime end  
Of Nature her the inferior, in the mind  
And inward faculties, which most excel ;  
In outward also her resembling less  
His image who made both, and less expressing  
The character of that dominion given  
O'er other creatures. Yet when I approach  
Her loveliness, so absolute she seems  
And in herself complete, so well to know  
Her own, that what she wills to do or say  
Seems wisest, virtuousest, discreetest, best :  
All higher Knowledge in her presence falls  
Degraded ; Wisdom in discourse with her  
Loses discountenanced, and like Folly shews ;  
Authority and Reason on her wait,  
As one intended first, not after made  
Occasionally ; and to consummate all,  
Greatness of mind and nobleness their seat  
Build in her loveliest, and create an awe  
About her, as a guard angelic placed."

To whom the Angel, with contracted brow :  
"Accuse not Nature, she hath done her part ;  
Do thou but thine, and be not diffident  
Of Wisdom ; she deserts thee not, if thou  
Dismiss not her, when most thou need'st her nigh,  
By attributing overmuch to things  
Less excellent, as thou thyself perceivest.  
For what admirest thou, what transports thee so,  
An outside ? fair, no doubt, and worthy well  
Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love,  
Not thy subjection. Weigh with her thyself ;  
Then value. Oft-times nothing profits more  
Than self-esteem, grounded on just and right,

Well managed ; of that skill the more thou know'st,  
The more she will acknowledge thee her head,  
And to realities yield all her shews :  
Made so adorn for thy delight the more,  
So awful, that with honour thou may'st love  
Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least wise.  
But if the sense of touch, whereby mankind  
Is propagated, seem such dear delight  
Beyond all other, think the same vouchsafed  
To cattle and each beast ; which would not be  
To them made common and divulged, if aught  
Therein enjoy'd were worthy to subdue  
The soul of Man, or passion in him move.  
What higher in her society thou find'st  
Attractive, human, rational, love still :  
In loving thou dost well ; in passion not,  
Wherein true love consists not. Love refines  
The thoughts, and heart enlarges ; hath his seat  
In Reason, and is judicious ; is the scale  
By which to heavenly love thou may'st ascend,  
Not sunk in carnal pleasure ; for which cause  
Among the beasts no mate for thee was found."

580

590

To whom thus, half abash'd, Adam replied :  
"Neither her outside form'd so fair, nor aught  
In procreation common to all kinds  
(Though higher of the genial bed by far,  
And with mysterious reverence, I deem),  
So much delights me as those graceful acts,  
Those thousand decencies, that daily flow  
From all her words and actions, mix'd with love  
And sweet compliance, which declare unfeign'd  
Union of mind, or in us both one soul ;  
Harmony to behold in wedded pair  
More grateful than harmonious sound to the ear.  
Yet these subject not ; I to thee disclose  
What inward thence I feel, not therefore foil'd,  
Who meet with various objects, from the sense  
Variously representing ; yet, still free,  
Approve the best, and follow what I approve.  
To love thou blamest me not ; for love, thou say'st,  
Leads up to Heaven, is both the way and guide ;

600

610

Bear with me then, if lawful what I ask.  
Love not the heavenly Spirits? and how their love  
Express they? by looks only, or do they mix  
Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch?"

To whom the Angel, with a smile that glow'd  
Celestial rosy red, love's proper hue,  
Answer'd: "Let it suffice thee that thou know'st  
Us happy, and without love no happiness.  
Whatever pure thou in the body enjoy'st  
(And pure thou wert created) we enjoy  
In eminence, and obstacle find none  
Of membrane, joint, or limb, exclusive bars;  
Easier than air with air, if Spirits embrace,  
Total they mix, union of pure with pure  
Desiring; nor restrain'd conveyance need  
As flesh to mix with flesh, or soul with soul.  
But I can now no more; the parting sun  
Beyond the Earth's green Cape and verdant Isles  
Hesperian sets, my signal to depart.  
Be strong, live happy, and love; but first of all  
Him whom to love is to obey, and keep  
His great command; take heed lest passion sway  
Thy judgment to do aught which else free will  
Would not admit; thine and of all thy sons  
The weal or woe in thee is placed; beware!  
I in thy persevering shall rejoice,  
And all the Blest. Stand fast; to stand or fall,  
Free in thine own arbitrement it lies.  
Perfect within, no outward aid require;  
And all temptation to transgress repel."

So saying, he arose; whom Adam thus  
Follow'd with benediction: "Since to part,  
Go, heavenly guest, ethereal messenger,  
Sent from whose sovran goodness I adore.  
Gentle to me and affable hath been  
Thy condescension, and shall be honour'd ever  
With grateful memory; thou to Mankind  
Be good and friendly still, and oft return!"

So parted they, the Angel up to Heaven  
From the thick shade, and Adam to his bower.

## BOOK IX.

## THE ARGUMENT.

Satan, having compassed the Earth, with meditated guile returns as a mist by night into Paradise ; enters into the Serpent sleeping. Adam and Eve in the morning go forth to their labours, which Eve proposes to divide in several places, each labouring apart : Adam consents not, alleging the danger, lest that enemy, of whom they were forewarned, should attempt her found alone. Eve, loth to be thought not circumspect or firm enough, urges her going apart, the rather desirous to make trial of her strength ; Adam at last yields. The Serpent finds her alone : his subtle approach, first gazing, then speaking, with much flattery extolling Eve above all other creatures. Eve, wondering to hear the Serpent speak, asks how he attained to human speech and such understanding, not till now ; the Serpent answers, that by tasting of a certain tree in the garden he attained both to speech and reason, till then void of both. Eve requires him to bring her to that tree, and finds it to be the Tree of Knowledge forbidden. The Serpent, now grown bolder, with many wiles and arguments induces her at length to eat ; she, pleased with the taste, deliberates a while whether to impart thereof to Adam or not ; at last brings him of the fruit ; relates what persuaded her to eat thereof. Adam, at first amazed, but perceiving her lost, resolves through vehemence of love to perish with her ; and, extenuating the trespass, eats also of the fruit. The effects thereof in them both ; they seek to cover their nakedness ; then fall to variance and accusation of one another.

No more of talk where God or Angel guest  
With Man, as with his friend, familiar used  
To sit indulgent, and with him partake  
Rural repast, permitting him the while  
Venial discourse unblamed. I now must change  
Those notes to tragic ; foul distrust and breach  
Disloyal on the part of man, revolt  
And disobedience ; on the part of Heaven,  
Now alienated, distance and distaste,  
Anger and just rebukè, and judgment given,

That brought into this World a world of woe,  
Sin and her shadow Death, and Misery,  
Death's harbinger. Sad task! yet argument  
Not less but more heroic than the wrath  
Of stern Achilles on his foe pursued  
Thrice fugitive about Troy wall; or rage  
Of Turnus for Lavinia disespoused;  
Or Neptune's ire, or Juno's, that so long  
Perplex'd the Greek, and Cytherea's son:  
If answerable style I can obtain  
Of my celestial patroness, who deigns  
Her nightly visitation unimplored,  
And dictates to me slumbering, or inspires  
Easy my unpremeditated verse,  
Since first this subject for heroic song  
Pleased me, long choosing and beginning late,  
Not sedulous by nature to indite  
Wars, hitherto the only argument  
Heroic deem'd, chief mastery to dissect  
With long and tedious havoc fabled knights  
In battles feign'd (the better fortitude  
Of patience and heroic martyrdom  
Unsung), or to describe races and games,  
Or tilting furniture, imblazon'd shields,  
Impreses quaint, caparisons and steeds,  
Bases and tinsel trappings, gorgeous knights  
At joust and tournament; then marshal'd feast  
Served up in hall with sewers and seneshals:  
The skill of artifice or office mean;  
Not that which justly gives heroic name  
To person or to poem. Me, of these  
Nor skill'd nor studious, higher argument  
Remains, sufficient of itself to raise  
That name, unless an age too late, or cold  
Climate, or years, damp my intended wing  
Depress'd; and much they may, if all be mine,  
Not hers who brings it nightly to my ear.  
The sun was sunk, and after him the star  
Of Hesperus, whose office is to bring  
Twilight upon the Earth, short arbiter

20

30

40

50

'Twixt day and night, and now from end to end  
Night's hemisphere had veil'd the horizon round ;  
When Satan, who late fled before the threats  
Of Gabriel out of Eden, now improved  
In meditated fraud and malice, bent  
On Man's destruction, maugre what might hap  
Of heavier on himself, fearless return'd.  
By night he fled, and at midnight return'd  
From compassing the Earth ; cautious of day,  
Since Uriel, regent of the sun, descried  
His entrance, and forewarn'd the Cherubim  
That kept their watch. Thence full of anguish driven,  
The space of seven continued nights he rode  
With darkness ; thrice the equinoctial line  
He circled, four times cross'd the car of Night  
From pole to pole, traversing each colure ;  
On the eighth return'd, and on the coast averse  
From entrance or cherubic watch by stealth  
Found unsuspected way. There was a place,  
Now not, though sin, not time, first wrought the change, 70  
Where Tigris, at the foot of Paradise,  
Into a gulf shot under ground, till part  
Rose up a fountain by the Tree of Life.  
In with the river sunk, and with it rose,  
Satan, involved in rising mist ; then sought  
Where to lie hid. Sea he had search'd and land  
From Eden over Pontus, and the pool  
Mæotis, up beyond the river Ob ;  
Downward as far antarctic ; and in length  
West from Orontes to the ocean barr'd  
At Darien, thence to the land where flows  
Ganges and Indus. Thus the orb he roam'd  
With narrow search, and with inspection deep  
Consider'd every creature, which of all  
Most opportune might serve his wiles, and found  
The serpent subtlest beast of all the field.  
Him, after long debate, irresolute  
Of thoughts revolved, his final sentence chose  
Fit vessel, fittest imp of fraud, in whom  
To enter, and his dark suggestions hide 90

From sharpest sight ; for in the wily snake  
Whatever sleights none would suspicious mark,  
As from his wit and native subtlety  
Proceeding, which, in other beasts observed,  
Doubt might beget of diabolic power  
Active within beyond the sense of brute.  
Thus he resolved, but first from inward grief  
His bursting passion into plaints thus pour'd :  
" O Earth, how like to Heaven, if not preferr'd  
More justly, seat worthier of Gods, as built 100  
With second thoughts, reforming what was old !  
For what God, after better, worse would build ?  
Terrestrial Heaven, danced round by other Heavens  
That shine, yet bear their bright officious lamps,  
Light above light, for thee alone, as seems,  
In thee concentrating all their precious beams  
Of sacred influence ! As God in Heaven  
Is centre, yet extends to all, so thou  
Centring receivest from all those orbs ; in thee,  
Not in themselves, all their known virtue appears 110  
Productive in herb, plant, and nobler birth  
Of creatures animate with gradual life  
Of growth, sense, reason, all summ'd up in Man.  
With what delight could I have walk'd thee round,  
If I could joy in aught, sweet interchange  
Of hill and valley, rivers, woods, and plains,  
Now land, now sea, and shores with forest crown'd,  
Rocks, dens, and caves ! but I in none of these  
Find place or refuge ; and the more I see  
Pleasures about me, so much more I feel 120  
Torment within me, as from the hateful siege  
Of contraries ; all good to me becomes  
Bane, and in Heaven much worse would be my state.  
But neither here seek I, no, nor in Heaven  
To dwell, unless by mastering Heaven's Supreme ;  
Nor hope to be myself less miserable  
By what I seek, but others to make such  
As I, though thereby worse to me redound :  
For only in destroying I find ease  
To my relentless thoughts ; and, him destroy'd, 130

Or won to what may work his utter loss,  
For whom all this was made, all this will soon  
Follow, as to him link'd in weal or woe:  
In woe then, that destruction wide may range.  
To me shall be the glory sole among  
The infernal Powers, in one day to have marr'd  
What he, Almighty styled, six nights and days  
Continued making, and who knows how long  
Before had been contriving? though perhaps  
Not longer than since I in one night freed  
From servitude inglorious well nigh half  
The Angelic name, and thinner left the throng  
Of his adorers. He, to be avenged,  
And to repair his numbers thus impair'd,  
Whether such virtue spent of old now fail'd  
More Angels to create, if they at least  
Are his created, or to spite us more,  
Determined to advance into our room  
A creature form'd of earth, and him endow,  
Exalted from so base original,  
With heavenly spoils, our spoils. What he decreed  
He effected; Man he made, and for him built  
Magnificent this World, and Earth his seat,  
Him lord pronounced, and, O indignity!  
Subjected to his service angel wings,  
And flaming ministers to watch and tend  
Their earthy charge. Of these the vigilance  
I dread, and, to elude, thus wrapt in mist  
Of midnight vapour glide obscure, and pry  
In every bush and brake, where hap may find  
The serpent sleeping, in whose mazy folds  
To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.  
O foul descent! that I, who erst contended  
With Gods to sit the highest, am now constrain'd  
Into a beast, and, mix'd with bestial slime,  
This essence to incarnate and imbrute,  
That to the highth of deity aspired!  
But what will not ambition and revenge  
Descend to? Who aspires must down as low  
As high he soar'd, obnoxious first or last

140

150

160

170



To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,  
Bitter ere long back on itself recoils.  
Let it ; I reck not, so it light well aim'd,  
Since higher I fall short, on him who next  
Provokes my envy, this new favourite  
Of Heaven, this man of clay, son of despite,  
Whom, us the more to spite, his Maker raised  
From dust : spite then with spite is best repaid."

So saying, through each thicket, dank or dry,  
Like a black mist low creeping, he held on  
His midnight search, where soonest he might find  
The serpent. Him fast sleeping soon he found,  
In labyrinth of many a round self-rolled,  
His head the midst, well stored with subtle wiles :  
Not yet in horrid shade or dismal den,  
Nor nocent yet, but on the grassy herb,  
Fearless, unfear'd, he slept. In at his mouth  
The Devil enter'd, and his brutal sense,  
In heart or head, possessing soon inspired  
With act intelligential ; but his sleep  
Disturb'd not, waiting close the approach of morn.

Now, whenas sacred light began to dawn  
In Eden on the humid flowers, that breathed  
Their morning incense, when all things that breathe  
From the Earth's great altar send up silent praise  
To the Creator, and his nostrils fill  
With grateful smell, forth came the human pair,  
And join'd their vocal worship to the quire  
Of creatures wanting voice ; that done, partake  
The season, prime for sweetest scents and airs ;  
Then commune how that day they best may ply  
Their growing work ; for much their work outgrew  
The hands' dispatch of two, gardening so wide :  
And Eve first to her husband thus began :

"Adam, well may we labour still to dress  
This garden, still to tend plant, herb, and flower,  
Our pleasant task enjoin'd ; but, till more hands  
Aid us, the work under our labour grows,  
Luxurious by restraint : what we by day  
Lop overgrown, or prune, or prop, or bind,

One night or two with wanton growth derides,  
Tending to wild. Thou therefore now advise,  
Or hear what to my mind first thoughts present :  
Let us divide our labours—thou where choice  
Leads thee, or where most needs, whether to wind  
The woodbine round this arbour, or direct  
The clasping ivy where to climb ; while I,  
In yonder spring of roses intermix'd  
With myrtle, find what to redress till noon.  
For, while so near each other thus all day  
Our task we choose, what wonder if so near  
Looks intervene and smiles, or object new  
Casual discourse draw on, which intermits  
Our day's work, brought to little, though begun  
Early, and the hour of supper comes unearn'd !”

220

To whom mild answer Adam thus return'd :  
“Sole Eve, associate sole, to me beyond  
Compare above all living creatures dear !  
Well hast thou motion'd, well thy thoughts employ'd  
How we might best fulfil the work which here  
God hath assign'd us, nor of me shalt pass  
Unpraised ; for nothing lovelier can be found  
In woman than to study household good,  
And good works in her husband to promote.  
Yet not so strictly hath our Lord imposed  
Labour, as to debar us when we need  
Refreshment, whether food, or talk between,  
Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse  
Of looks and smiles ; for smiles from reason flow,  
To brute denied, and are of love the food,  
Love, not the lowest end of human life.  
For not to irksome toil, but to delight,  
He made us, and delight to reason join'd.  
These paths and bowers doubt not but our joint hands  
Will keep from wilderness with ease, as wide  
As we need walk, till younger hands ere long  
Assist us. But if much converse perhaps  
Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield ;  
For solitude sometimes is best society,  
And short retirement urges sweet return.

230

240

250

But other doubt possesses me, lest harm  
Befall thee sever'd from me; for thou know'st  
What hath been warn'd us, what malicious foe,  
Envyng our happiness, and of his own  
Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame  
By sly assault; and somewhere nigh at hand  
Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find  
His wish and best advantage, us asunder,  
Hopeless to circumvent us join'd, where each  
To other speedy aid might lend at need.  
Whether his first design be to withdraw  
Our fealty from God, or to disturb  
Conjugal love, than which perhaps no bliss  
Enjoy'd by us excites his envy more;  
Or this, or worse, leave not the faithful side  
That gave thee being, still shades thee and protects.  
The wife, where danger or dishonour lurks,  
Safest and seemliest by her husband stays,  
Who guards her, or with her the worst endures."

260

To whom the virgin majesty of Eve,  
As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,  
With sweet austere composure thus replied:

270

"Offspring of Heaven and Earth, and all Earth's lord!  
That such an enemy we have, who seeks  
Our ruin, both by thee inform'd I learn,  
And from the parting Angel overheard,  
As in a shady nook I stood behind,  
Just then return'd at shut of evening flowers.  
But that thou shouldst my firmness therefore doubt  
To God or thee, because we have a foe  
May tempt it, I expected not to hear.  
His violence thou fear'st not, being such  
As we, not capable of death or pain,  
Can either not receive, or can repel.  
His fraud is then thy fear; which plain infers  
Thy equal fear that my firm faith and love  
Can by his fraud be shaken or seduced;  
Thoughts, which how found they harbour in thy breast,  
Adam! misthought of her to thee so dear?"

280

To whom with healing words Adam replied:

290

"Daughter of God and Man, immortal Eve!  
For such thou art, from sin and blame entire;  
Not diffident of thee do I dissuade  
Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid  
The attempt itself, intended by our foe.  
For he who tempts, though in vain, at least asperses  
The tempted with dishonour foul, supposed  
Not incorruptible of faith, not proof  
Against temptation. Thou thyself with scorn  
And anger wouldst resent the offer'd wrong,  
Though ineffectual found; misdeem not then,  
If such affront I labour to avert  
From thee alone, which on us both at once  
The enemy, though bold, will hardly dare,  
Or daring, first on me the assault shall light.  
Nor thou his malice and false guile contemn;  
Subtle he needs must be, who could seduce  
Angels; nor think superfluous others' aid.  
I from the influence of thy looks receive  
Access in every virtue; in thy sight  
More wise, more watchful, stronger, if need were  
Of outward strength; while shame, thou looking on,  
Shame to be overcome or overreach'd,  
Would utmost vigour raise, and raised unite.  
Why shouldst not thou like sense within thee feel  
When I am present, and thy trial choose  
With me, best witness of thy virtue tried?"  
So spake domestic Adam in his care  
And matrimonial love; but Eve, who thought  
Less attributed to her faith sincere,  
Thus her reply with accent sweet renew'd:  
"If this be our condition thus to dwell  
In narrow circuit straiten'd by a foe,  
Subtle or violent, we not endued  
Single with like defence wherever met,  
How are we happy, still in fear of harm?  
But harm precedes not sin: only our foe  
Tempting affronts us with his foul esteem  
Of our integrity; his foul esteem  
Sticks no dishonour on our front, but turns

300

310

320

330

Foul on himself; then wherefore shunn'd or fear'd  
By us? who rather double honour gain  
From his surmise proved false, find peace within,  
Favour from Heaven, our witness, from the event.  
And what is faith, love, virtue, unassay'd  
Alone, without exterior help sustain'd?  
Let us not then suspect our happy state  
Left so imperfect by the Maker wise,  
As not secure to single or combined.  
Frail is our happiness, if this be so,  
And Eden were no Eden, thus exposed."

340

To whom thus Adam fervently replied:  
"O Woman, best are all things as the will  
Of God ordain'd them; his creating hand  
Nothing imperfect or deficient left  
Of all that he created, much less Man,  
Or aught that might his happy state secure,  
Secure from outward force: within himself  
The danger lies, yet lies within his power;  
Against his will he can receive no harm.  
But God left free the will; for what obeys  
Reason is free, and Reason he made right,  
But bid her well be ware, and still erect,  
Lest, by some fair appearing good surprised,  
She dictate false, and misinform the will  
To do what God expressly hath forbid.  
Not then mistrust, but tender love, enjoins  
That I should mind thee oft, and mind thou me.  
Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve,  
Since Reason not impossibly may meet  
Some specious object by the foe suborn'd,  
And fall into deception unaware,  
Not keeping strictest watch, as she was warn'd.  
Seek not temptation then, which to avoid  
Were better, and most likely if from me  
Thou sever not: trial will come unsought.  
Wouldst thou approve thy constancy, approve  
First thy obedience; the other who can know,  
Not seeing thee attempted, who attest?  
But if thou think trial unsought may find

350

360

370

Us both securer than thus warn'd thou seem'st,  
Go; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more;  
Go in thy native innocence, rely  
On what thou hast of virtue, summon all;  
For God towards thee hath done his part; do thine."

So spake the patriarch of mankind; but Eve  
Persisted; yet submiss, though last, replied:

"With thy permission then, and thus forewarn'd,  
Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words  
Touch'd only, that our trial, when least sought,  
May find us both perhaps far less prepared,  
The willinger I go, nor much expect  
A foe so proud will first the weaker seek;  
So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse."

380

Thus saying, from her husband's hand her hand  
Soft she withdrew, and like a wood-nymph light,  
Oread or Dryad, or of Delia's train,  
Betook her to the groves, but Delia's self  
In gait surpass'd and goddess-like deport,  
Though not as she with bow and quiver arm'd,  
But with such gardening tools as art, yet rude,  
Guiltless of fire, had form'd, or Angels brought.  
To Pales, or Pomona, thus adorn'd,  
Likest she seem'd, Pomona when she fled  
Vertumnus, or to Ceres in her prime,  
Yet virgin of Proserpina from Jove.

390

Her long with ardent look his eye pursued  
Delighted, but desiring more her stay.

Oft he to her his charge of quick return  
Repeated; she to him as oft engaged

400

To be return'd by noon amid the bower,

And all things in best order to invite

Noontide repast, or afternoon's repose.

O much deceived, much failing, hapless Eve,

Of thy presumed return! event perverse!

Thou never from that hour in Paradise

Found'st either sweet repast or sound repose;

Such ambush, hid among sweet flowers and shades,

Waited with hellish rancour imminent

To intercept thy way, or send thee back

410

Despoil'd of innocence, of faith, of bliss.

For now, and since first break of dawn, the Fiend,  
Mere serpent in appearance, forth was come,  
And on his quest, where likeliest he might find  
The only two of mankind, but in them  
The whole included race, his purposed prey.  
In bower and field he sought, where any tuft  
Of grove or garden-plot more pleasant lay,  
Their tendance or plantation for delight,  
By fountain or by shady rivulet  
He sought them both, but wish'd his hap might find  
Eve separate; he wish'd, but not with hope  
Of what so seldom chanced; when to his wish,  
Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies,  
Veil'd in a cloud of fragrance, where she stood,  
Half spied, so thick the roses bushing round  
About her glow'd, oft stooping to support  
Each flower of slender stalk, whose head, though gay  
Carnation, purple, azure, or speck'd with gold,  
Hung drooping unsustain'd: them she upstays  
Gently with myrtle band, mindless the while  
Herself, though fairest unsupported flower,  
From her best prop so far, and storm so nigh.  
Nearer he drew, and many a walk traversed  
Of stateliest covert, cedar, pine, or palm;  
Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen,  
Among thick-woven arborets, and flowers  
Imborder'd on each bank, the hand of Eve:  
Spot more delicious than those gardens feign'd  
Or of revived Adonis, or renown'd  
Alcinous, host of old Laertes' son,  
Or that, not mystic, where the sapient king  
Held dalliance with his fair Egyptian spouse.  
Much he the place admired, the person more.  
As one who, long in populous city pent,  
Where houses thick and sewers annoy the air,  
Forth issuing on a summer's morn to breathe  
Among the pleasant villages and farms  
Adjoin'd, from each thing met conceives delight,  
The smell of grain, or tedded grass, or kine,

420

430

440

450

Or dairy, each rural sight, each rural sound ;  
If chance with nymph-like step fair virgin pass,  
What pleasing seem'd, for her now pleases more,  
She most, and in her look sums all delight :  
Such pleasure took the Serpent to behold  
This flowery plat, the sweet recess of Eve  
Thus early, thus alone. Her heavenly form  
Angelic, but more soft and feminine,  
Her graceful innocence, her every air  
Of gesture or least action, overawed  
His malice, and with rapine sweet bereaved  
His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought :  
That space the Evil One abstracted stood  
From his own evil, and for the time remain'd  
Stupidly good, of enmity disarm'd,  
Of guile, of hate, of envy, of revenge.  
But the hot hell that always in him burns,  
Though in mid Heaven, soon ended his delight,  
And tortures him now more, the more he sees  
Of pleasure not for him ordain'd ; then soon  
Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts  
Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites :

"Thoughts, whither have ye led me? with what sweet  
Compulsion thus transported to forget  
What hither brought us? hate, not love, nor hope  
Of Paradise for Hell, hope here to taste  
Of pleasure, but all pleasure to destroy,  
Save what is in destroying ; other joy  
To me is lost. Then let me not let pass  
Occasion which now smiles ; behold alone  
The woman, opportune to all attempts,  
Her husband, for I view far round, not nigh,  
Whose higher intellectual more I shun,  
And strength, of courage haughty, and of limb  
Heroic built, though of terrestrial mould ;  
Foe not formidable, exempt from wound,  
I not ; so much hath Hell debased, and pain  
Enfeebled me, to what I was in Heaven.  
She fair, divinely fair, fit love for Gods,  
Not terrible, though terror be in love



And beauty, not approach'd by stronger hate,  
Hate stronger under shew of love well feign'd,  
The way which to her ruin now I tend."

So spake the Enemy of mankind, enclosed  
In serpent, inmate bad, and toward Eve  
Address'd his way, not with indented wave,  
Prone on the ground, as since, but on his rear,  
Circular base of rising folds, that tower'd  
Fold above fold, a surging maze ; his head  
Crested aloft, and carbuncle his eyes ;  
With burnish'd neck of verdant gold, erect  
Amidst his circling spires, that on the grass  
Floated redundant. Pleasing was his shape  
And lovely ; never since of serpent kind  
Lovelier ; not those that in Illyria changed  
Hermione and Cadmus, or the god  
In Epidaurus ; nor to which transform'd  
Ammonian Jove, or Capitoline, was seen,  
He with Olympias, this with her who bore  
Scipio, the highth of Rome. With tract oblique  
At first, as one who sought access but fear'd  
To interrupt, sidelong he works his way.  
As when a ship by skilful steersman wrought  
Nigh river's mouth or foreland, where the wind  
Veers oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her sail :  
So varied he, and of his tortuous train  
Curl'd many a wanton wreath in sight of Eve,  
To lure her eye ; she, busied, heard the sound  
Of rustling leaves, but minded not, as used  
To such disport before her through the field,  
From every beast, more duteous at her call,  
Than at Circean call the herd disguised.  
He, bolder now, uncall'd before her stood,  
But as in gaze admiring. Oft he bow'd  
His turret crest, and sleek enamell'd neck,  
Fawning, and lick'd the ground whereon she trod.  
His gentle dumb expression turn'd at length  
The eye of Eve to mark his play ; he, glad  
Of her attention gain'd, with serpent tongue  
Organic, or impulse of vocal air,

500

510

520

530

His fraudulent temptation thus began :

"Wonder not, sovran mistress, if perhaps  
Thou canst, who art sole wonder ; much less arm  
Thy looks, the heaven of mildness, with disdain,  
Displeased that I approach thee thus, and gaze  
Insatiate, I thus single, nor have fear'd  
Thy awful brow, more awful thus retired.  
Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair,  
Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine  
By gift, and thy celestial beauty adore,  
With ravishment beheld, there best beheld  
Where universally admired ; but here  
In this enclosure wild, these beasts among,  
Beholders rude, and shallow to discern  
Half what in thee is fair, one man except,  
Who sees thee? (and what is one?) who shouldst be seen  
A Goddess among Gods, adored and served  
By Angels numberless, thy daily train."

540

So glozed the Tempter, and his proem tuned ;  
Into the heart of Eve his words made way,  
Though at the voice much marvelling ; at length,  
Not unamazed, she thus in answer spake :

550

"What may this mean? Language of man pronounced  
By tongue of brute, and human sense express'd!  
The first at least of these I thought denied  
To beasts, whom God on their creation-day  
Created mute to all articulate sound ;  
The latter I demur, for in their looks  
Much reason, and in their actions, oft appears.  
Thee, Serpent, subtlest beast of all the field  
I knew, but not with human voice endued ;  
Redouble then this miracle, and say,  
How camest thou speakable of mute, and how  
To me so friendly grown above the rest  
Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight?  
Say, for such wonder claims attention due."

560

To whom the guileful Tempter thus replied :  
"Empress of this fair World, resplendent Eve!  
Easy to me it is to tell thee all  
What thou command'st, and right thou shouldst be obey'd."

I was at first as other beasts that graze  
The trodden herb, of abject thoughts and low,  
As was my food, nor aught but food discern'd  
Or sex, and apprehended nothing high :  
Till on a day, roving the field, I chanced  
A goodly tree far distant to behold,  
Loaden with fruit of fairest colours mix'd,  
Ruddy and gold. I nearer drew to gaze ;  
When from the boughs a savoury odour blown,  
Grateful to appetite, more pleased my sense  
Than smell of sweetest fennel, or the teats  
Of ewe or goat dropping with milk at even,  
Unluck'd of lamb or kid, that tend their play.  
To satisfy the sharp desire I had  
Of tasting those fair apples, I resolved  
Not to defer ; hunger and thirst at once,  
Powerful persuaders, quicken'd at the scent  
Of that alluring fruit, urged me so keen.  
About the mossy trunk I wound me soon ;  
For, high from ground, the branches would require  
Thy utmost reach or Adam's : round the tree  
All other beasts that saw, with like desire  
Longing and envying stood, but could not reach.  
Amid the tree now got, where plenty hung  
Tempting so nigh, to pluck and eat my fill  
I spared not ; for such pleasure till that hour  
At feed or fountain never had I found.  
Sated at length, ere long I might perceive  
Strange alteration in me, to degree  
Of reason in my inward powers, and speech  
Wanted not long, though to this shape retain'd.  
Thenceforth to speculations high or deep  
I turn'd my thoughts, and with capacious mind  
Consider'd all things visible in Heaven,  
Or Earth, or middle, all things fair and good :  
But all that fair and good in thy divine  
Semblance, and in thy beauty's heavenly ray,  
United I beheld ; no fair to thine  
Equivalent or second, which compell'd  
Me thus, though importune perhaps, to come

And gaze, and worship thee of right declared  
Sovran of creatures, universal Dame."

So talked the spirited sly Snake; and Eve,  
Yet more amazed, unwary thus replied:

"Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt  
The virtue of that fruit, in thee first proved.  
But say, where grows the tree? from hence how far?  
For many are the trees of God that grow  
In Paradise, and various, yet unknown  
To us; in such abundance lies our choice,  
As leaves a greater store of fruit untouch'd,  
Still hanging incorruptible, till men  
Grow up to their provision, and more hands  
Help to disburden Nature of her birth."

620

To whom the wily Adder, blithe and glad:  
"Empress, the way is ready, and not long;  
Beyond a row of myrtles, on a fiat,  
Fast by a fountain, one small thicket past  
Of blowing myrrh and balm: if thou accept  
My conduct, I can bring thee thither soon."

630

"Lead then," said Eve. He leading swiftly roll'd  
In tangles, and made intricate seem straight,  
To mischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy  
Brightens his crest. As when a wandering fire,  
Compact of unctuous vapour, which the night  
Condenses, and the cold environs round,  
Kindled through agitation to a flame,  
Which oft, they say, some evil spirit attends,  
Hovering and blazing with delusive light,  
Misleads the amazed night-wanderer from his way  
To bogs and mires, and oft through pond or pool,  
There swallow'd up and lost, from succour far:  
So glister'd the dire Snake, and into fraud  
Led Eve, our credulous mother, to the Tree  
Of prohibition, root of all our woe;  
Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake:

640

"Serpent, we might have spared our coming hither,  
Fruitless to me, though fruit be here to excess,  
The credit of whose virtue rest with thee;  
Wondrous indeed, if cause of such effects!

650

But of this tree we may not taste nor touch ;  
God so commanded, and left that command  
Sole daughter of his voice : the rest, we live  
Law to ourselves ; our reason is our law."

To whom the Tempter guilefully replied :  
"Indeed? Hath God then said that of the fruit  
Of all these garden trees ye shall not eat,  
Yet lords declared of all in Earth or air?"

To whom thus Eve, yet sinless : "Of the fruit  
Of each tree in the garden we may eat ;  
But of the fruit of this fair tree amidst  
The garden, God hath said, 'Ye shall not eat  
Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die.'"

660

She scarce had said, though brief, when now more bold  
The Tempter, but with shew of zeal and love  
To Man, and indignation at his wrong,  
New part puts on, and, as to passion moved,  
Fluctuates disturb'd, yet comely, and in act  
Raised, as of some great matter to begin.  
As when of old some orator renown'd  
In Athens or free Rome, where eloquence  
Flourish'd, since mute, to some great cause address'd,  
Stood in himself collected, while each part,  
Motion, each act, won audience ere the tongue,  
Sometimes in highth began, as no delay  
Of preface brooking through his zeal of right :  
So standing, moving, or to highth upgrown,  
The Tempter, all impassion'd, thus began :

670

"O sacred, wise, and wisdom-giving Plant,  
Mother of science! now I feel thy power  
Within me clear, not only to discern  
Things in their causes, but to trace the ways  
Of highest agents, deem'd however wise.

680

Queen of this Universe! do not believe  
Those rigid threats of death. Ye shall not die:  
How should ye? by the fruit? it gives you life  
To knowledge: by the threatener? look on me,  
Me who have touch'd and tasted, yet both live,  
And life more perfect have attain'd than fate  
Meant me, by venturing higher than my lot.

690

Shall that be shut to Man which to the beast  
Is open? or will God incense his ire  
For such a petty trespass, and not praise  
Rather your dauntless virtue, whom the pain  
Of death denounced, whatever thing death be,  
Deterr'd not from achieving what might lead  
To happier life, knowledge of good and evil?  
Of good, how just? of evil, if what is evil  
Be real, why not known, since easier shunn'd?  
God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be just ; 700  
Not just, not God ; not fear'd then, nor obey'd :  
Your fear itself of death removes the fear.  
Why then was this forbid? Why but to awe,  
Why but to keep ye low and ignorant,  
His worshippers? He knows that in the day  
Ye eat thereof, your eyes that seem so clear,  
Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then  
Open'd and clear'd, and ye shall be as Gods,  
Knowing both good and evil, as they know.  
That ye should be as Gods, since I as Man, 710  
Internal Man, is but proportion meet :  
I, of brute, human ; ye, of human, Gods.  
So ye shall die perhaps, by putting off  
Human, to put on Gods ; death to be wish'd,  
Though threaten'd, which no worse than this can bring !  
And what are Gods, that Man may not become  
As they, participating godlike food?  
The Gods are first, and that advantage use  
On our belief, that all from them proceeds :  
I question it ; for this fair Earth I see, 720  
Warm'd by the sun, producing every kind,  
Them nothing : if they all things, who enclosed  
Knowledge of good and evil in this tree,  
That whoso eats thereof forthwith attains  
Wisdom without their leave? and wherein lies  
The offence, that Man should thus attain to know?  
What can your knowledge hurt him, or this tree  
Impart against his will, if all be his?  
Or is it envy? and can envy dwell  
In heavenly breasts? These, these and many more 730

Causes import your need of this fair fruit.  
Goddess humane, reach then, and freely taste!"

He ended, and his words, replete with guile,  
Into her heart too easy entrance won.  
Fix'd on the fruit she gazed, which to behold  
Might tempt alone, and in her ears the sound  
Yet rung of his persuasive words, impregn'd  
With reason, to her seeming, and with truth.  
Meanwhile the hour of noon drew on, and waked  
An eager appetite, raised by the smell  
So savoury of that fruit, which with desire,  
Inclinable now grown to touch or taste,  
Solicited her longing eye; yet first,  
Pausing a while, thus to herself she mused:

749

"Great are thy virtues, doubtless, best of fruits,  
Though kept from Man, and worthy to be admired,  
Whose taste, too long forborne, at first assay  
Gave elocution to the mute, and taught  
The tongue not made for speech to speak thy praise.

759

Thy praise he also who forbids thy use  
Conceals not from us, naming thee the Tree  
Of Knowledge, knowledge both of good and evil;  
Forbids us then to taste; but his forbidding  
Commends thee more, while it infers the good  
By thee communicated, and our want;  
For good unknown sure is not had, or had,  
And yet unknown, is as not had at all.

In plain then, what forbids he but to know?  
Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise!

Such prohibitions bind not. But if death  
Bind us with after-bands, what profits then

769

Our inward freedom? In the day we eat  
Of this fair fruit, our doom is, we shall die.  
How dies the Serpent? He hath eaten and lives,  
And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns,  
Irrational till then. For us alone

Was death invented? or to us denied  
This intellectual food, for beasts reserved?

For beasts it seems; yet that one beast which first  
Hath tasted envies not, but brings with joy

779

That good befall'n him, author unsuspect,  
Friendly to Man, far from deceit or guile.  
What fear I then? rather, what know to fear  
Under this ignorance of good and evil,  
Of God or death, of law or penalty?  
Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine,  
Fair to the eye, inviting to the taste,  
Of virtue to make wise: what hinders then  
To reach, and feed at once both body and mind?"

So saying, her rash hand in evil hour  
Forth reaching to the fruit, she pluck'd, she eat.  
Earth felt the wound, and Nature from her seat,  
Sighing through all her works, gave signs of woe  
That all was lost. Back to the thicket slunk  
The guilty Serpent, and well might, for Eve,  
Intent now only on her taste, nought else  
Regarded; such delight till then, as seem'd,  
In fruit she never tasted, whether true,  
Or fancied so through expectation high  
Of knowledge; nor was Godhead from her thought.  
Greedily she ingorged without restraint,  
And knew not eating death. Sate at length,  
And highten'd as with wine, jocund and boon,  
Thus to herself she pleasingly began:

"O sovran, virtuous, precious of all trees  
In Paradise! of operation blest  
To sapience, hitherto obscured, infamed,  
And thy fair fruit let hang, as to no end  
Created! but henceforth my early care,  
Not without song, each morning, and due praise,  
Shall tend thee, and the fertile burden ease  
Of thy full branches, offer'd free to all;  
Till, dieted by thee, I grow mature  
In knowledge, as the Gods who all things know;  
Though others envy what they cannot give;  
For, had the gift been theirs, it had not here  
Thus grown. Experience, next to thee I owe,  
Best guide: not following thee, I had remain'd  
In ignorance: thou open'st Wisdom's way,  
And givest access, though secret she retire.



And I perhaps am secret; Heaven is high,  
High, and remote to see from thence distinct  
Each thing on Earth; and other care perhaps  
May have diverted from continual watch  
Our great Forbidder, safe with all his spies  
About him. But to Adam in what sort  
Shall I appear? Shall I to him make known  
As yet my change, and give him to partake  
Full happiness with me, or rather not,  
But keep the odds of knowledge in my power  
Without copartner? so to add what wants  
In female sex, the more to draw his love,  
And render me more equal, and perhaps,  
A thing not undesirable, sometime  
Superior; for, inferior, who is free?  
This may be well: but what if God have seen,  
And death ensue? then I shall be no more,  
And Adam, wedded to another Eve,  
Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct;  
A death to think! Confirm'd then I resolve,  
Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe:  
So dear I love him, that with him all deaths  
I could endure, without him live no life."

820

830

So saying, from the tree her step she turn'd,  
But first low reverence done, as to the Power  
That dwelt within, whose presence had infused  
Into the plant scintial sap, derived  
From nectar, drink of Gods. Adam the while,  
Waiting desirous her return, had wove  
Of choicest flowers a garland, to adorn  
Her tresses, and her rural labours crown,  
As reapers oft are wont their harvest queen.  
Great joy he promised to his thoughts, and new  
Solace in her return, so long delay'd;  
Yet oft his heart, divine of something ill,  
Mishap him; he the faltering measure felt,  
And forth to meet her went, the way she took  
That morn when first they parted. By the Tree  
Of Knowledge he must pass; there he her met,  
Scarce from the tree returning; in her hand

840

850

A bough of fairest fruit, that downy smiled,  
New gather'd, and ambrosial smell diffused.  
To him she hasted; in her face excuse  
Came prologue, and apology to prompt,  
Which, with bland words at will, she thus address'd:

"Hast thou not wonder'd, Adam, at my stay?  
Thee I have miss'd, and thought it long, deprived  
Thy presence, agony of love till now  
Not felt, nor shall be twice; for never more  
Mean I to try, what rash untried I sought,  
The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange  
Hath been the cause, and wonderful to hear.

860

This tree is not, as we are told, a tree  
Of danger tasted, nor to evil unknown  
Opening the way, but of divine effect  
To open eyes, and make them Gods who taste;  
And hath been tasted such. The Serpent wise,  
Or not restrain'd as we, or not obeying,  
Hath eaten of the fruit, and is become,  
Not dead, as we are threaten'd, but thenceforth  
Endued with human voice and human sense,  
Reasoning to admiration, and with me  
Persuasively hath so prevail'd, that I  
Have also tasted, and have also found  
The effects to correspond; opener mine eyes,  
Dim erst, dilated spirits, ampler heart,  
And growing up to Godhead; which for thee  
Chiefly I sought, without thee can despise.  
For bliss, as thou hast part, to me is bliss;  
Tedious, unshared with thee, and odious soon.  
Thou therefore also taste, that equal lot  
May join us, equal joy, as equal love;  
Lest, thou not tasting, different degree  
Disjoin us, and I then too late renounce  
Deity for thee, when fate will not permit."

870

880

Thus Eve with countenance blithe her story told;  
But in her cheek distemper flushing glow'd.  
On the other side, Adam, soon as he heard  
The fatal trespass done by Eve, amazed,  
Astonied stood and blank, while horror chill

890

Ran through his veins, and all his joints relax'd;  
From his slack hand the garland wreathed for Eve  
Down dropt, and all the faded roses shed.  
Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length  
First to himself he inward silence broke:

"O fairest of creation, last and best  
Of all God's works, creature in whom excell'd  
Whatever can to sight or thought be form'd,  
Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet!  
How art thou lost, how on a sudden lost,  
Defaced, deflower'd, and now to death devote!  
Rather, how hast thou yielded to transgress  
The strict forbiddance, how to violate  
The sacred fruit forbidden! Some cursed fraud  
Of enemy hath beguiled thee, yet unknown,  
And me with thee hath ruin'd; for with thee  
Certain my resolution is to die:  
How can I live without thee, how forgo  
Thy sweet converse and love so dearly join'd,  
To live again in these wild woods forlorn?  
Should God create another Eve, and I  
Another rib afford, yet loss of thee  
Would never from my heart; no, no! I feel  
The link of nature draw me: flesh of flesh,  
Bone of my bone thou art, and from thy state  
Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe."

So having said, as one from sad dismay  
Recomforted, and, after thoughts disturb'd,  
Submitting to what seem'd remediless,  
Thus in calm mood his words to Eve he turn'd:

"Bold deed thou hast presumed, advent'rous Eve,  
And peril great provoked, who thus hast dared,  
Had it been only coveting to eye  
That sacred fruit, sacred to abstinence;  
Much more to taste it, under ban to touch.  
But past who can recall, or done undo?  
Not God Omnipotent, nor Fate: yet so  
Perhaps thou shalt not die; perhaps the fact  
Is not so heinous now, foretasted fruit,  
Profaned first by the Serpent, by him first

Made common and unhallow'd ere our taste,  
Nor yet on him found deadly; he yet lives,  
Lives, as thou saidst, and gains to live, as Man,  
Higher degree of life : inducement strong  
To us, as likely, tasting, to attain  
Proportional ascent ; which cannot be  
But to be Gods, or Angels, demi-gods.  
Nor can I think that God, Creator wise,  
Though threatening, will in earnest so destroy  
Us his prime creatures, dignified so high,  
Set over all his works, which in our fall,  
For us created, needs with us must fail,  
Dependent made ; so God shall uncreate,  
Be frustrate, do, undo, and labour lose ;  
Not well conceived of God, who, though his power  
Creation could repeat, yet would be loth  
Us to abolish, lest the Adversary  
Triumph and say : ' Fickle their state whom God  
Most favours ; who can please him long ? Me first  
He ruin'd, now mankind ; whom will he next ?'  
Matter of scorn not to be given the Foe.  
However, I with thee have fix'd my lot,  
Certain to undergo like doom : if death  
Consort with thee, death is to me as life ;  
So forcible within my heart I feel  
The bond of nature draw me to my own,  
My own in thee, for what thou art is mine.  
Our state cannot be sever'd ; we are one,  
One flesh ; to lose thee were to lose myself."

So Adam, and thus Eve to him replied :  
" O glorious trial of exceeding love,  
Illustrious evidence, example high !  
Engaging me to emulate ; but, short  
Of thy perfection, how shall I attain,  
Adam ? from whose dear side I boast me sprung,  
And gladly of our union hear thee speak,  
One heart, one soul in both ; whereof good proof  
This day affords, declaring thee resolved,  
Rather than death, or aught than death more dread,  
Shall separate us, link'd in love so dear,

To undergo with me one guilt, one crime,  
If any be, of tasting this fair fruit ;  
Whose virtue (for of good still good proceeds,  
Direct, or by occasion) hath presented  
This happy trial of thy love, which else  
So eminently never had been known.  
Were it I thought death menaced would ensue  
This my attempt, I would sustain alone  
The worst, and not persuade thee, rather die  
Deserted, than oblige thee with a fact  
Pernicious to thy peace, chiefly assured  
Remarkably so late of thy so true,  
So faithful love unequal'd ; but I feel  
Far otherwise the event, not death, but life  
Augmented, open'd eyes, new hopes, new joys,  
Taste so divine, that what of sweet before  
Hath touch'd my sense flat seems to this and harsh.  
On my experience, Adam, freely taste,  
And fear of death deliver to the winds."

980

So saying, she embraced him, and for joy  
Tenderly wept, much won that he his love  
Had so ennobled, as of choice to incur  
Divine displeasure for her sake, or death.  
In recompense (for such compliance bad  
Such recompense best merits), from the bough  
She gave him of that fair enticing fruit  
With liberal hand ; he scrupled not to eat,  
Against his better knowledge, not deceived,  
But fondly overcome with female charm.  
Earth trembled from her entrails, as again  
In pangs, and Nature gave a second groan ;  
Sky lour'd, and, muttering thunder, some sad drops  
Wept at completing of the mortal sin  
Original ; while Adam took no thought,  
Eating his fill, nor Eve to iterate  
Her former trespass fear'd, the more to soothe  
Him with her loved society ; that now,  
As with new wine intoxicated both,  
They swim in mirth, and fancy that they feel  
Divinity within them breeding wings

990

1000

1010

Wherewith to scorn the Earth. But that false fruit  
Far other operation first display'd,  
Carnal desire inflaming : he on Eve  
Began to cast lascivious eyes ; she him  
As wantonly repaid ; in lust they burn,  
Till Adam thus 'gan Eve to dalliance move :

"Eve, now I see thou art exact of taste,  
And elegant, of sapience no small part ;  
Since to each meaning savour we apply,  
And palate call judicious. I the praise  
Yield thee, so well this day thou hast purvey'd.  
Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstain'd  
From this delightful fruit, nor known till now  
True relish, tasting ; if such pleasure be  
In things to us forbidden, it might be wish'd  
For this one tree had been forbidden ten.  
But come ; so well refresh'd, now let us play,  
As meet is, after such delicious fare ;  
For never did thy beauty, since the day  
I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorn'd  
With all perfections, so inflame my sense  
With ardour to enjoy thee, fairer now  
Than ever, bounty of this virtuous tree !"

1020

1030

So said he, and forbore not glance or toy  
Of amorous intent, well understood  
Of Eve, whose eye darted contagious fire.  
Her hand he seized, and to a shady bank,  
Thick overhead with verdant roof embower'd,  
He led her, nothing loth ; flowers were the couch,  
Pansies, and violets, and asphodel,  
And hyacinth, Earth's freshest, softest lap.  
There they their fill of love and love's disport  
Took largely, of their mutual guilt the seal,  
The solace of their sin, till dewy sleep  
Oppress'd them, wearied with their amorous play.

1040

Soon as the force of that fallacious fruit,  
That with exhilarating vapour bland  
About their spirits had play'd, and inmost powers  
Made err, was now exhaled, and grosser sleep,  
Bred of unkindly fumes, with conscious dreams

1050

Encumber'd, now had left them, up they rose  
As from unrest, and, each the other viewing,  
Soon found their eyes how open'd, and their minds  
How darken'd. Innocence, that as a veil  
Had shadow'd them from knowing ill, was gone;  
Just confidence, and native righteousness,  
And honour, from about them, naked left  
To guilty Shame: he cover'd, but his robe  
Uncover'd more. So rose the Danite strong,  
Herculean Samson, from the harlot-lap  
Of Philistean Delilah, and waked  
Shorn of his strength; they destitute and bare  
Of all their virtue. Silent, and in face  
Confounded, long they sat, as stricken mute;  
Till Adam, though not less than Eve abash'd,  
At length gave utterance to these words constrain'd:

“O Eve, in evil hour thou didst give ear  
To that false worm, of whomsoever taught  
To counterfeit Man's voice, true in our fall,  
False in our promised rising; since our eyes  
Open'd we find indeed, and find we know  
Both good and evil, good lost and evil got:  
Bad fruit of knowledge, if this be to know,  
Which leaves us naked thus, of honour void,  
Of innocence, of faith, of purity,  
Our wonted ornaments, now soil'd and stain'd,  
And in our faces evident the signs  
Of foul concupiscence; whence evil store,  
Even shame, the last of evils; of the first  
Be sure then. How shall I behold the face  
Henceforth of God or Angel, erst with joy  
And rapture so oft beheld? those heavenly shapes  
Will dazzle now this earthly with their blaze  
Insufferably bright. Oh, might I here  
In solitude live savage, in some glade  
Obscured, where highest woods, impenetrable  
To star or sunlight, spread their umbrage broad,  
And brown as evening! Cover me, ye pines!  
Ye cedars, with innumerable boughs  
Hide me, where I may never see them more!

1060

1070

1080

1090

But let us now, as in bad plight, devise  
What best may for the present serve to hide  
The parts of each from other that seem most  
To shame obnoxious, and unseemliest seen;  
Some tree, whose broad smooth leaves together sew'd,  
And girded on our loins, may cover round  
Those middle parts, that this new comer, Shame,  
There sit not, and reproach us as unclean."

So counsell'd he, and both together went  
Into the thickest wood; there soon they chose 1180  
The fig-tree, not that kind of fruit renown'd,  
But such as at this day, to Indians known,  
In Malabar or Decan, spreads her arms  
Branching so broad and long that in the ground  
The bended twigs take root, and daughters grow  
About the mother tree, a pillar'd shade  
High overarch'd, and echoing walks between:  
There oft the Indian herdsman, shunning heat,  
Shelters in cool, and tends his pasturing herds  
At loop-holes cut through thickest shade. Those leaves 1190  
They gather'd, broad as Amazonian targe,  
And with what skill they had together sew'd,  
To gird their waist; vain covering, if to hide  
Their guilt and dreaded shame! Oh how unlike  
To that first naked glory! Such of late  
Columbus found the American, so girt  
With feather'd cincture, naked else and wild  
Among the trees on isles and woody shores.  
Thus fenced, and, as they thought, their shame in part  
Cover'd, but not at rest or ease of mind, 1200  
They sat them down to weep; nor only tears  
Rain'd at their eyes, but high winds worse within  
Began to rise, high passions, anger, hate,  
Mistrust, suspicion, discord, and shook sore  
Their inward state of mind, calm region once  
And full of peace, now tost and turbulent:  
For Understanding ruled not, and the Will  
Heard not her lore, both in subjection now  
To sensual Appetite, who from beneath  
Usurping over sovran Reason claim'd 1210



Superior sway. From thus distemper'd breast  
Adam, estranged in look and alter'd style,  
Speech intermitted thus to Eve renew'd :

"Would thou hadst hearken'd to my words, and stay'd  
With me, as I besought thee, when that strange  
Desire of wandering, this unhappy morn,  
I know not whence possess'd thee ! we had then  
Remain'd still happy, not, as now, despoil'd  
Of all our good, shamed, naked, miserable.  
Let none henceforth seek needless cause to approve 1140  
The faith they owe ; when earnestly they seek  
Such proof, conclude, they then begin to fail."

To whom, soon moved with touch of blame, thus Eve :  
"What words have pass'd thy lips, Adam severe !  
Imputest thou that to my default, or will  
Of wandering, as thou call'st it, which who knows  
But might as ill have happen'd, thou being by,  
Or to thyself perhaps ? Hadst thou been there,  
Or here the attempt, thou couldst not have discern'd  
Fraud in the Serpent, speaking as he spake ; 1150  
No ground of enmity between us known,  
Why he should mean me ill, or seek to harm.  
Was I to have never parted from thy side ?  
As good have grown there still, a lifeless rib.  
Being as I am, why didst not thou, the head,  
Command me absolutely not to go,  
Going into such danger, as thou saidst ?  
Too facile then, thou didst not much gainsay,  
Nay, didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.  
Hadst thou been firm and fix'd in thy dissent, 1160  
Neither had I transgress'd, nor thou with me."

To whom, then first incensed, Adam replied :  
"Is this the love, is this the recompense  
Of mine to thee, ingrateful Eve, express'd  
Immutable when thou wert lost, not I,  
Who might have lived, and joy'd immortal bliss,  
Yet willingly chose rather death with thee ?  
And am I now upbraided as the cause  
Of thy transgressing ? not enough severe,  
It seems, in thy restraint ! What could I more ? 1170

I warn'd thee, I admonish'd thee, foretold  
The danger, and the lurking enemy  
That lay in wait; beyond this had been force,  
And force upon free will hath here no place.  
But confidence then bore thee on, secure  
Either to meet no danger, or to find  
Matter of glorious trial; and perhaps  
I also err'd in overmuch admiring  
What seem'd in thee so perfect, that I thought  
No evil durst attempt thee; but I rue  
That error now, which is become my crime,  
And thou the accuser. Thus it shall befall  
Him who, to worth in women overtrusting,  
Lets her will rule: restraint she will not brook;  
And, left to herself, if evil thence ensue,  
She first his weak indulgence will accuse."  
Thus they in mutual accusation spent  
The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning;  
And of their vain contest appear'd no end.

1180

## BOOK X.

## THE ARGUMENT.

Man's transgression known, the guardian Angels forsake Paradise, and return up to Heaven to approve their vigilance, and are approved; God declaring that the entrance of Satan could not be by them prevented. He sends his Son to judge the transgressors; who descends, and gives sentence accordingly; then in pity clothes them both, and reascends. Sin and Death, sitting till then at the gates of Hell, by wondrous sympathy feeling the success of Satan in this new World, and the sin by Man there committed, resolve to sit no longer confined in Hell, but to follow Satan, their sire, up to the place of Man. To make the way easier from Hell to this World to and fro, they pave a broad highway or bridge over Chaos, according to the track that Satan first made; then, preparing for Earth, they meet him, proud of his success, returning to Hell; their mutual gratulation. Satan arrives at Pandemonium; in full assembly relates, with boasting, his success

against Man; instead of applause is entertained with a general hiss by all his audience, transformed with himself also suddenly into serpents, according to his doom given in Paradise; then, deluded with a shew of the Forbidden Tree springing up before them, they greedily reaching to take of the fruit chew dust and bitter ashes. The proceedings of Sin and Death: God foretells the final victory of his Son over them, and the renewing of all things; but for the present commands his Angels to make several alterations in the heavens and elements. Adam, more and more perceiving his fallen condition, heavily bewails, rejects the condolment of Eve; she persists, and at length appeases him: then, to evade the curse likely to fall on their offspring, proposes to Adam violent ways, which he approves not, but, conceiving better hope, puts her in mind of the late promise made them, that her seed should be revenged on the Serpent, and exhorts her with him to seek peace of the offended Deity by repentance and supplication.

MEANWHILE the heinous and despicable act  
Of Satan done in Paradise, and how  
He, in the Serpent, had perverted Eve,  
Her husband she, to taste the fatal fruit,  
Was known in Heaven; for what can scape the eye  
Of God all-seeing, or deceive his heart  
Omniscient? who, in all things wise and just,  
Hinder'd not Satan to attempt the mind  
Of Man, with strength entire and free will arm'd,  
Complete to have discover'd and repuls'd 10  
Whatever wiles of foe or seeming friend.  
For still they knew, and ought to have still remember'd,  
The high injunction not to taste that fruit,  
Whoever tempted; which they not obeying  
Incurred (what could they less?) the penalty,  
And, manifold in sin, deserved to fall.

Up into Heaven from Paradise in haste  
The Angelic guards ascended, mute and sad  
For Man; for of his state by this they knew,  
Much wondering how the subtle Fiend had stolen 20  
Entrance unseen. Soon as the unwelcome news  
From Earth arrived at Heaven gate, displeased  
All were who heard; dim sadness did not spare  
That time celestial visages, yet, mix'd  
With pity, violated not their bliss.

About the new-arrived, in multitudes,  
The ethereal people ran, to hear and know  
How all befell. They towards the throne supreme  
Accountable made haste to make appear  
With righteous plea their utmost vigilance,  
And easily approved; when the Most High  
Eternal Father, from his secret cloud  
Amidst, in thunder utter'd thus his voice:

"Assembled Angels, and ye Powers return'd  
From unsuccessful charge, be not dismay'd,  
Nor troubled at these tidings from the Earth,  
Which your sincerest care could not prevent,  
Foretold so lately what would come to pass,  
When first this Tempter cross'd the gulf from Hell.  
I told ye then he should prevail and speed  
On his bad errand; Man should be seduced  
And flatter'd out of all, believing lies  
Against his Maker; no decree of mine  
Concurring to necessitate his fall,  
Or touch with lightest moment of impulse  
His free will, to her own inclining left  
In even scale. But fall'n he is; and now  
What rests, but that the mortal sentence pass  
On his transgression, death denounced that day?  
Which he presumes already vain and void,  
Because not yet inflicted, as he fear'd,  
By some immediate stroke; but soon shall find  
Forbearance no acquittance ere day end:  
Justice shall not return, as bounty, scorn'd.  
But whom send I to judge them? whom but thee,  
Vicegerent Son? to thee I have transferr'd  
All judgment, whether in Heaven, or Earth, or Hell.  
Easy it may be seen that I intend  
Mercy colleague with justice, sending thee,  
Man's friend, his Mediator, his design'd  
Both ransom and Redeemer voluntary,  
And destined Man himself to judge Man fall'n."

So spake the Father; and, unfolding bright  
Toward the right hand his glory, on the Son  
Blazed forth unclouded deity; he full

Resplendent all his Father manifest  
Express'd, and thus divinely answer'd mild:

"Father Eternal, thine is to decree,  
Mine both in Heaven and Earth to do thy will  
Supreme, that thou in me, thy Son beloved, 70  
May'st ever rest well pleased. I go to judge  
On Earth these thy transgressors; but thou know'st,  
Whoever judged, the worst on me must light,  
When time shall be; for so I undertook  
Before thee, and, not repenting, this obtain  
Of right, that I may mitigate their doom  
On me derived; yet I shall temper so  
Justice with mercy, as may illustrate most  
Them fully satisfied, and thee appease.  
Attendance none shall need, nor train, where none 80  
Are to behold the judgment but the judged,  
Those two; the third best absent is condemn'd,  
Convict by flight, and rebel to all law  
Conviction to the Serpent none belongs."

Thus saying, from his radiant seat he rose  
Of high collateral glory; Him Thrones and Powers,  
Princedom, and Dominations ministrant  
Accompanied to Heaven gate, from whence  
Eden and all the coast in prospect lay.  
Down he descended straight; the speeds of Gods 90  
Time counts not, though with swiftest minutes wing'd.

Now was the sun in western cadence low  
From noon, and gentle airs due at their hour  
To fan the Earth now waked, and usher in  
The evening cool, when he, from wrath more cool,  
Came, the mild Judge and Intercessor both,  
To sentence Man. The voice of God they heard  
Now walking in the garden, by soft winds  
Brought to their ears, while day declined; they heard,  
And from his presence hid themselves among 100  
The thickest trees, both man and wife, till God,  
Approaching, thus to Adam call'd aloud:

"Where art thou, Adam, wont with joy to meet  
My coming seen far off? I miss thee here,  
Not pleased, thus entertain'd with solitude,

Where obvious duty erewhile appear'd unsought.  
Or come I less conspicuous, or what change  
Absents thee, or what chance detains? Come forth."

He came, and with him Eve, more loth, though first  
To offend, discountenanced both, and discomposed; 110  
Love was not in their looks, either to God  
Or to each other, but apparent guilt,  
And shame, and perturbation, and despair,  
Anger, and obstinacy, and hate, and guile.  
Whence Adam, faltering long, thus answer'd brief:

"I heard thee in the garden, and of thy voice  
Afraid, being naked, hid myself." To whom  
The gracious Judge without revile replied:

"My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not fear'd,  
But still rejoiced; how is it now become 120  
So dreadful to thee? That thou art naked, who  
Hath told thee? Hast thou eaten of the tree,  
Whereof I gave thee charge thou shouldst not eat?"

To whom thus Adam, sore beset, replied:

"O Heaven! in evil strait this day I stand  
Before my Judge, either to undergo  
Myself the total crime, or to accuse  
My other self, the partner of my life;  
Whose failing, while her faith to me remains,  
I should conceal, and not expose to blame 130  
By my complaint; but strict necessity  
Subdues me, and calamitous constraint,  
Lest on my head both sin and punishment,  
However insupportable, be all  
Devolved; though should I hold my peace, yet thou  
Wouldst easily detect what I conceal.

This woman, whom thou madest to be my help,  
And gavest me as thy perfect gift, so good,  
So fit, so acceptable, so divine,  
That from her hand I could suspect no ill, 140  
And what she did, whatever in itself,  
Her doing seem'd to justify the deed;  
She gave me of the tree, and I did eat."

To whom the Sovran Presence thus replied:

"Was she thy God, that her thou didst obey

Before his voice? or was she made thy guide,  
Superior, or but equal, that to her  
Thou didst resign thy manhood, and the place  
Wherein God set thee above her, made of thee  
And for thee, whose perfection far excell'd  
Hers in all real dignity? Adorn'd  
She was indeed, and lovely, to attract  
Thy love, not thy subjection; and her gifts  
Were such as under government well seem'd,  
Unseemly to bear rule; which was thy part  
And person, hadst thou known thyself aright."

155

So having said, he thus to Eve in few:  
"Say, Woman, what is this which thou hast done?"  
To whom sad Eve, with shame nigh overwhelm'd,  
Confessing soon, yet not before her Judge  
Bold or loquacious, thus abash'd replied:  
"The Serpent me beguiled, and I did eat."

160

Which when the Lord God heard, without delay  
To judgment he proceeded on the accused  
Serpent, though brute, unable to transfer  
The guilt on him who made him instrument  
Of mischief, and polluted from the end  
Of his creation; justly then accurst,  
As vitiated in nature. More to know  
Concern'd not Man (since he no further knew),  
Nor alter'd his offence; yet God at last  
To Satan, first in sin, his doom applied,  
Though in mysterious terms, judged as then best;  
And on the Serpent thus his curse let fall:

170

"Because thou hast done this, thou art accurst  
Above all cattle, each beast of the field;  
Upon thy belly grovelling thou shalt go,  
And dust shalt eat all the days of thy life.  
Between thee and the Woman I will put  
Enmity, and between thine and her seed;  
Her seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel."

180

So spake this oracle, then verified  
When Jesus, son of Mary, second Eve,  
Saw Satan fall like lightning down from Heaven,  
Prince of the air; then, rising from his grave,

Spoil'd Principalities and Powers, triumph'd  
In open shew, and with ascension bright  
Captivity led captive through the air,  
The realm itself of Satan long usurp'd,  
Whom he shall tread at last under our feet;  
Even he who now foretold his fatal bruise,  
And to the Woman thus his sentence turn'd:

190

"Thy sorrow I will greatly multiply  
By thy conception; children thou shalt bring  
In sorrow forth; and to thy husband's will  
Thine shall submit; he over thee shall rule."

On Adam last thus judgment he pronounced:  
"Because thou hast hearken'd to the voice of thy wife,  
And eaten of the tree, concerning which  
I charged thee, saying, 'Thou shalt not eat thereof,'  
Cursed is the ground for thy sake; thou in sorrow  
Shalt eat thereof all the days of thy life;  
Thorns also and thistles it shall bring thee forth  
Unbid; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field;  
In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread,  
Till thou return unto the ground; for thou  
Out of the ground wast taken: know thy birth,  
For dust thou art, and shalt to dust return."

200

So judg'd he Man, both Judge and Saviour sent,  
And the instant stroke of death, denounced that day,  
Removed far off; then, pitying how they stood  
Before him naked to the air, that now  
Must suffer change, disdain'd not to begin  
Thenceforth the form of servant to assume;  
As when he wash'd his servants' feet, so now,  
As father of his family, he clad  
Their nakedness with skins of beasts, or slain,  
Or as the snake with youthful coat repaid;  
And thought not much to clothe his enemies.  
Nor he their outward only with the skins  
Of beasts, but inward nakedness, much more  
Opprobrious, with his robe of righteousness  
Arraying, cover'd from his Father's sight.  
To him with swift ascent he up return'd,  
Into his blissful bosom reassumed

210

220



In glory as of old; to him appeased,  
All, though all-knowing, what had pass'd with Man  
Recounted, mixing intercession sweet.

Meanwhile, ere thus was sinn'd and judg'd on Earth,  
Within the gates of Hell sat Sin and Death,  
In counterview within the gates, that now  
Stood open wide, belching outrageous flame  
Far into Chaos, since the Fiend pass'd through,  
Sin opening; who thus now to Death began:

"O Son, why sit we here each other viewing  
Idly, while Satan, our great author, thrives  
In other worlds, and happier seat provides  
For us, his offspring dear? It cannot be  
But that success attends him; if mishap,  
Ere this he had return'd, with fury driven  
By his avengers, since no place like this  
Can fit his punishment, or their revenge.

Methinks I feel new strength within me rise,  
Wings growing, and dominion given me large  
Beyond this Deep, whatever draws me on,  
Or sympathy, or some connatural force,  
Powerful at greatest distance to unite  
With secret amity things of like kind  
By secretest conveyance. Thou, my shade  
Inseparable, must with me along;

For Death from Sin no power can separate.  
But, lest the difficulty of passing back  
Stay his return perhaps over this gulf  
Impassable, impervious, let us try  
Adventurous work, yet to thy power and mine  
Not unagreeable, to found a path  
Over this main from Hell to that new World  
Where Satan now prevails; a monument  
Of merit high to all the infernal host,  
Easing their passage hence, for intercourse  
Or transmigration, as their lot shall lead.  
Nor can I miss the way, so strongly drawn  
By this new-felt attraction and instinct."

Whom thus the meagre Shadow answer'd soon:  
"Go whither fate and inclination strong

Leads thee ; I shall not lag behind, nor err  
The way, thou leading ; such a scent I draw  
Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste  
The savour of death from all things there that live.  
Nor shall I to the work thou enterpriset  
Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid."

270

So saying, with delight he snuff'd the smell  
Of mortal change on Earth. As when a flock  
Of ravenous fowl, though many a league remote,  
Against the day of battle, to a field,  
Where armies lie encamp'd, come flying, lured  
With scent of living carcasses design'd  
For death the following day in bloody fight :  
So scented the grim Feature, and upturn'd  
His nostril wide into the murky air,

280

Sagacious of his quarry from so far.  
Then both, from out Hell gates, into the waste  
Wide anarchy of Chaos damp and dark  
Flew diverse, and with power (their power was great)  
Hovering upon the waters, what they met  
Solid or slimy, as in raging sea  
Tost up and down, together crowded drove  
From each side shoaling towards the mouth of Hell ;  
As when two polar winds, blowing adverse  
Upon the Cronian sea, together drive

290

Mountains of ice, that stop the imagined way  
Beyond Petsora eastward, to the rich  
Cathaian coast. The aggregated soil  
Death with his mace petrific, cold and dry,  
As with a trident smote, and fix'd as firm  
As Delos, floating once ; the rest his look  
Bound with Gorgonian rigour not to move,  
And with asphaltic slime ; broad as the gate  
Deep to the roots of Hell the gather'd beach  
They fasten'd, and the mole immense wrought on  
Over the foaming Deep high-arch'd, a bridge  
Of length prodigious, joining to the wall  
Immovable of this now fenceless World,  
Forfeit to Death ; from hence a passage broad,  
Smooth, easy, inoffensive, down to Hell.

300

So, if great things to small may be compared,  
Xerxes, the liberty of Greece to yoke,  
From Susa, his Memnonian palace high,  
Came to the sea, and, over Hellespont  
Bridging his way, Europe with Asia join'd, 310  
And scourged with many a stroke the indignant waves.  
Now had they brought the work by wondrous art  
Pontifical, a ridge of pendent rock,  
Over the vex'd Abyss, following the track  
Of Satan, to the self-same place where he  
First lighted from his wing, and landed safe  
From out of Chaos to the outside bare  
Of this round World. With pins of adamant  
And chains they made all fast, too fast they made  
And durable; and now in little space 320  
The confines met of empyrean Heaven  
And of this World, and on the left hand Hell  
With long reach interposed; three several ways,  
In sight, to each of these three places led.  
And now their way to Earth they had descried,  
To Paradise first tending, when, behold  
Satan, in likeness of an Angel bright,  
Betwixt the Centaur and the Scorpion steering  
His zenith, while the sun in Aries rose!  
Disguised he came; but those his children dear 330  
Their parent soon discern'd, though in disguise.  
He, after Eve seduced, unminded slunk  
Into the wood fast by, and, changing shape  
To observe the sequel, saw his guileful act  
By Eve, though all unweeting, seconded  
Upon her husband, saw their shame that sought  
Vain covertures; but when he saw descend  
The Son of God to judge them, terrified  
He fled, not hoping to escape, but shun  
The present, fearing guilty what his wrath 340  
Might suddenly inflict; that past, return'd  
By night, and listening where the hapless pair  
Sat in their sad discourse and various plaint,  
Thence gather'd his own doom; which understood  
Not instant, but of future time, with joy

And tidings fraught, to Hell he now return'd,  
And at the brink of Chaos, near the foot  
Of this new wondrous pontifice, unhoped  
Met who to meet him came, his offspring dear.  
Great joy was at their meeting, and at sight  
Of that stupendous bridge his joy increased.  
Long he admiring stood, till Sin, his fair  
Enchanting daughter, thus the silence broke :

“O Parent, these are thy magnific deeds,  
Thy trophies, which thou view'st as not thine own ;  
Thou art their author and prime architect ;  
For I no sooner in my heart divined  
(My heart, which by a secret harmony  
Still moves with thine, join'd in connexion sweet)  
That thou on Earth hadst prosper'd, which thy looks  
Now also evidence, but straight I felt,  
Though distant from thee worlds between, yet felt  
That I must after thee with this thy son ;  
Such fatal consequence unites us three.  
Hell could no longer hold us in her bounds,  
Nor this unvoyageable gulf obscure  
Detain from following thy illustrious track.  
Thou hast achieved our liberty, confined  
Within Hell gates till now ; thou us empower'd  
To fortify thus far, and overlay  
With this portentous bridge the dark Abyss.  
Thine now is all this World ; thy virtue hath won  
What thy hands builded not, thy wisdom gain'd  
With odds what war hath lost, and fully avenged  
Our foil in Heaven : here thou shalt monarch reign,  
There didst not ; there let him still victor sway,  
As battle hath adjudged, from this new World  
Retiring, by his own doom alienated,  
And henceforth monarchy with thee divide  
Of all things, parted by the empyreal bounds,  
His quadrature, from thy orbicular World,  
Or try thee now more dangerous to his throne.”

Whom thus the Prince of Darkness answer'd glad :  
“Fair daughter, and thou son and grandchild both,  
High proof ye now have given to be the race

Of Satan (for I glory in the name,  
Antagonist of Heaven's Almighty King),  
Amplly have merited of me, of all  
The infernal empire, that so near Heaven's door  
Triumphal with triumphal act have met,  
Mine with this glorious work, and made one realm  
Hell and this World, one realm, one continent  
Of easy thoroughfare. Therefore, while I  
Descend through darkness, on your road with ease,  
To my associate Powers, them to acquaint  
With these successes, and with them rejoice,  
You two this way, among those numerous orbs,  
All yours, right down to Paradise descend;  
There dwell and reign in bliss; thence on the Earth  
Dominion exercise and in the air,  
Chiefly on Man, sole lord of all declared;  
Him first make sure your thrall, and lastly kill.  
My substitutes I send ye, and create  
Plenipotent on Earth, of matchless might  
Issuing from me: on your joint vigour now  
My hold of this new kingdom all depends,  
Through Sin to Death exposed by my exploit.  
If your joint power prevail, the affairs of Hell  
No detriment need fear; go, and be strong.<sup>39</sup>

So saying, he dismiss'd them; they with speed  
Their course through thickest constellations held,  
Spreading their bane; the blasted stars look'd wan,  
And planets, planet-struck, real eclipse  
Then suffer'd. The other way Satan went down  
The causeway to Hell gate; on either side  
Disparted Chaos over-built exclaim'd,  
And with rebounding surge the bars assai'd,  
That scorn'd his indignation. Through the gate,  
Wide open and unguarded, Satan pass'd,  
And all about found desolate; for those  
Appointed to sit there had left their charge,  
Flown to the upper World; the rest were all  
Far to the inland retired, about the walls  
Of Pandemonium, city and proud seat  
Of Lucifer, so by allusion call'd

Of that bright star to Satan paragon'd ;  
There kept their watch the legions, while the Grand  
In council sat, solicitous what chance  
Might intercept their Emperor sent ; so he  
Departing gave command, and they observed.  
As when the Tartar from his Russian foe,  
By Astracan, over the snowy plains  
Retires, or Bactrian Sophi, from the horns  
Of Turkish crescent, leaves all waste beyond  
The realm of Aladule, in his retreat  
To Tauris or Casbeen : so these, the late  
Heaven-banish'd host, left desert utmost Hell  
Many a dark league, reduced in careful watch  
Round their metropolis, and now expecting  
Each hour their great adventurer from the search  
Of foreign worlds. He through the midst unmark'd,  
In shew plebeian Angel militant  
Of lowest order, pass'd ; and, from the door  
Of that Plutonian hall, invisible  
Ascended his high throne, which, under state  
Of richest texture spread, at the upper end  
Was placed in regal lustre. Down a while  
He sat, and round about him saw unseen.  
At last, as from a cloud, his fulgent head  
And shape star-bright appear'd, or brighter, clad  
With what permissive glory since his fall  
Was left him, or false glitter. All-amazed  
At that so sudden blaze, the Stygian throng  
Bent their aspect, and whom they wish'd beheld,  
Their mighty Chief return'd : loud was the acclaim.  
Forth rush'd in haste the great consulting peers,  
Raised from their dark divan, and with like joy  
Congratulant approach'd him, who with hand  
Silence, and with these words attention, won :  
"Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers!  
For in possession such, not only of right,  
I call ye, and declare ye now, return'd,  
Successful beyond hope, to lead ye forth  
Triumphant out of this infernal pit  
Abominable, accurst, the house of woe,

430

440

450

460

And dungeon of our tyrant! Now possess,  
As lords, a spacious World, to our native Heaven  
Little inferior, by my adventure hard  
With peril great achieved. Long were to tell  
What I have done, what suffer'd, with what pain 470  
Voyaged the unreal, vast, unbounded Deep  
Of horrible confusion, over which  
By Sin and Death a broad way now is paved,  
To expedite your glorious march; but I  
Toil'd out my uncouth passage, forced to ride  
The untractable Abyss, plunged in the womb  
Of unoriginal Night and Chaos wild,  
That, jealous of their secrets, fiercely opposed  
My journey strange, with clamorous uproar  
Protesting Fate supreme; thence how I found 480  
The new-created World, which fame in Heaven  
Long had foretold, a fabric wonderful,  
Of absolute perfection; therein Man  
Placed in a Paradise, by our exile  
Made happy. Him by fraud I have seduced  
From his Creator, and, the more to increase  
Your wonder, with an apple! He, thereat  
Offended—worth your laughter!—hath given up  
Both his beloved Man and all his World  
To Sin and Death a prey, and so to us, 490  
Without our hazard, labour, or alarm,  
To range in, and to dwell, and over Man  
To rule, as over all he should have ruled.  
True is, me also he hath judged, or rather  
Me not, but the brute serpent, in whose shape  
Man I deceived: that which to me belongs  
Is enmity, which he will put between  
Me and mankind; I am to bruise his heel;  
His seed—when is not set—shall bruise my head:  
A world who would not purchase with a bruise, 500  
Or much more grievous pain? Ye have the account  
Of my performance; what remains, ye Gods,  
But up and enter now into full bliss?"

So having said, a while he stood, expecting  
Their universal shout and high applause

To fill his ear; when, contrary, he hears,  
On all sides, from innumerable tongues,  
A dismal universal hiss, the sound  
Of public scorn. He wonder'd, but not long  
Had leisure, wondering at himself now more;  
His visage drawn he felt to sharp and spare,  
His arms clung to his ribs, his legs entwining  
Each other, till, supplanted, down he fell  
A monstrous serpent on his belly prone,  
Reluctant, but in vain; a greater power  
Now ruled him, punish'd in the shape he sinn'd,  
According to his doom. He would have spoke,  
But hiss for hiss return'd with forked tongue  
To forked tongue; for now were all transform'd  
Alike, to serpents all, as accessories  
To his bold riot. Dreadful was the din  
Of hissing through the hall, thick swarming now  
With complicated monsters, head and tail,  
Scorpion, and asp, and amphisbæna dire,  
Cerastes horn'd, hydrus, and ellops drear,  
And dipsas (not so thick swarm'd once the soil  
Bedropt with blood of Gorgon, or the isle  
Ophiusa); but still greatest he the midst,  
Now dragon grown, larger than whom the sun  
Engender'd in the Pythian vale on slime,  
Huge Python; and his power no less he seem'd  
Above the rest still to retain. They all  
Him follow'd, issuing forth to the open field,  
Where all yet left of that revolted rout,  
Heaven-fall'n, in station stood or just array,  
Sublime with expectation when to see  
In triumph issuing forth their glorious Chief;  
They saw, but other sight instead, a crowd  
Of ugly serpents. Horror on them fell,  
And horrid sympathy; for what they saw  
They felt themselves now changing: down their arms,  
Down fell both spear and shield; down they as fast,  
And the dire hiss renew'd, and the dire form  
Catch'd by contagion, like in punishment,  
As in their crime. Thus was the applause they meant

510

520

530

540



Turn'd to exploding hiss, triumph to shame  
Cast on themselves from their own mouths. There stood  
A grove hard by, sprung up with this their change,  
His will who reigns above, to aggravate  
Their penance, laden with fair fruit, like that 550  
Which grew in Paradise, the bait of Eve  
Used by the Tempter. On that prospect strange  
Their earnest eyes they fix'd, imagining  
For one forbidden tree a multitude  
Now risen, to work them further woe or shame;  
Yet, parch'd with scalding thirst and hunger fierce,  
Though to delude them sent, could not abstain,  
But on they roll'd in heaps, and, up the trees  
Climbing, sat thicker than the snaky locks  
That curl'd Megæra. Greedily they pluck'd 560  
The fruitage fair to sight, like that which grew  
Near that bituminous lake where Sodom flamed;  
This, more delusive, not the touch, but taste  
Deceived; they, fondly thinking to allay  
Their appetite with gust, instead of fruit  
Chew'd bitter ashes; which the offended taste  
With spattering noise rejected. Oft they assay'd,  
Hunger and thirst constraining; drugg'd as oft,  
With hatefulest disrelish writhed their jaws,  
With soot and cinders fill'd; so oft they fell 570  
Into the same illusion, not as Man  
Whom they triumph'd once lapsed. Thus were they plagued  
And worn with famine long, and ceaseless hiss,  
Till their lost shape, permitted, they resumed;  
Yearly enjoin'd, some say, to undergo  
This annual humbling certain number'd days,  
To dash their pride, and joy for Man seduced.  
However, some tradition they dispersed  
Among the heathen of their purchase got,  
And fabled how the Serpent, whom they call'd 580  
Ophion, with Eurynome, the wide-  
Encroaching Eve perhaps, had first the rule  
Of high Olympus, thence by Saturn driven  
And Ops, ere yet Dictæan Jove was born.  
Meanwhile in Paradise the hellish pair

Too soon arrived; Sin there in power before,  
Once actual, now in body, and to dwell  
Habitual habitant; behind her Death,  
Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet  
On his pale horse; to whom Sin thus began:

590

"Second of Satan sprung, all-conquering Death!  
What think'st thou of our empire now, though earn'd  
With travail difficult? not better far  
Than still at Hell's dark threshold to have sat watch,  
Unnamed, undreaded, and thyself half-starved?"

Whom thus the Sin-born Monster answer'd soon:  
"To me, who with eternal famine pine,  
Alike is Hell, or Paradise, or Heaven;  
There best, where most with ravin I may meet;  
Which here, though plenteous, all too little seems  
To stuff this maw, this vast unhide-bound corpse."

600

To whom the incestuous mother thus replied:  
"Thou therefore on these herbs, and fruits, and flowers,  
Feed first; on each beast next, and fish, and fowl,  
No homely morsels; and whatever thing  
The scythe of Time mows down devour unspar'd;  
Till I, in Man residing, through the race,  
His thoughts, his looks, words, actions, all infect,  
And season him thy last and sweetest prey."

This said, they both betook them several ways,  
Both to destroy, or unimmortal make  
All kinds, and for destruction to mature  
Sooner or later; which the Almighty seeing,  
From his transcendent seat the Saints among,  
To those bright Orders utter'd thus his voice:

610

"See with what heat these dogs of Hell advance  
To waste and havoc yonder World, which I  
So fair and good created, and had still  
Kept in that state, had not the folly of Man  
Let in these wasteful furies, who impute  
Folly to me (so doth the Prince of Hell  
And his adherents), that with so much ease  
I suffer them to enter and possess  
A place so heavenly, and conniving seem  
To gratify my scornful enemies,

620

That laugh, as if, transported with some fit  
Of passion, I to them had quitted all,  
At random yielded up to their misrule;  
And know not that I call'd and drew them thither,  
My Hell-hounds, to lick up the draff and filth 630  
Which Man's polluting sin with taint hath shed  
On what was pure; till, cramm'd and gorged, nigh burst  
With suck'd and glutted offal, at one sling  
Of thy victorious arm, well-pleasing Son,  
Both Sin, and Death, and yawning Grave at last,  
Through Chaos hurl'd, obstruct the mouth of Hell  
For ever, and seal up his ravenous jaws.  
Then Heaven and Earth renew'd shall be made pure  
To sanctity that shall receive no stain:  
Till then the curse pronounced on both precedes."

630

640

He ended, and the heavenly audience loud  
Sung Halleluiah, as the sound of seas,  
Through multitude that sung: "Just are thy ways,  
Righteous are thy decrees on all thy works;  
Who can extenuate thee? Next, to the Son,  
Destined restorer of mankind, by whom  
New Heaven and Earth shall to the ages rise,  
Or down from Heaven descend." Such was their song,  
While the Creator, calling forth by name  
His mighty Angels, gave them several charge, 650  
As sorted best with present things. The sun  
Had first his precept so to move, so shine,  
As might affect the Earth with cold and heat  
Scarce tolerable, and from the north to call  
Decrepit winter, from the south to bring  
Solstitial summer's heat. To the blanc moon  
Her office they prescribed; to the other five  
Their planetary motions and aspects,  
In sextile, square, and trine, and opposite,  
Of noxious efficacy, and when to join 660  
In synod unbenign; and taught the fix'd  
Their influence malignant when to shower;  
Which of them rising with the sun, or falling,  
Should prove tempestuous. To the winds they set  
Their corners, when with bluster to confound

650

660

Sea, air, and shore ; the thunder when to roll  
With terror through the dark aerial hall.  
Some say he bid his Angels turn askance  
The poles of Earth twice ten degrees and more  
From the sun's axle ; they with labour push'd  
Oblique the centric globe : some say the sun  
Was bid turn reins from the equinoctial road  
Like distant breadth to Taurus with the seven  
Atlantic Sisters, and the Spartan Twins,  
Up to the Tropic Crab ; thence down amain  
By Leo and the Virgin and the Scales,  
As deep as Capricorn ; to bring in change  
Of seasons to each clime : else had the spring  
Perpetual smiled on Earth with vernal flowers,  
Equal in days and nights, except to those  
Beyond the polar circles ; to them day  
Had unbenighted shone, while the low sun,  
To recompense his distance, in their sight  
Had rounded still the horizon, and not known  
Or east or west ; which had forbid the snow  
From cold Estotiland, and south as far  
Beneath Magellan. At that tasted fruit  
The sun, as from Thyestean banquet, turn'd  
His course intended : else how had the World  
Inhabited, though sinless, more than now  
Avoided pinching cold and scorching heat ?  
These changes in the heavens, though slow, produced  
Like change on sea and land, sidereal blast,  
Vapour, and mist, and exhalation hot,  
Corrupt and pestilent. Now from the north  
Of Norumbega, and the Samoe'd shore,  
Bursting their brazen dungeon, arm'd with ice  
And snow and hail and stormy gust and flaw,  
Boreas and Cæcias and Argestes loud  
And Thrascias rend the woods and seas upturn ;  
With adverse blast upturns them from the south  
Notus and Afer black with thundrous clouds  
From Serralliona ; thwart of these, as fierce  
Forth rush the Levant and the Ponent winds,  
Eurus and Zephyr with their lateral noise,

670

680

690

700

Sirocco, and Libeccio. Thus began  
 Outrage from lifeless things ; but Discord first,  
 Daughter of Sin, among the irrational  
 Death introduced through fierce antipathy :  
 Beast now with beast 'gan war, and fowl with fowl,  
 And fish with fish ; to graze the herb all leaving  
 Devour'd each other ; nor stood much in awe  
 Of Man, but fled him, or with countenance grim  
 Glared on him passing. These were from without  
 The growing miseries, which Adam saw  
 Already in part, though hid in gloomiest shade,  
 To sorrow abandon'd, but worse felt within,  
 And, in a troubled sea of passion tost,  
 Thus to disburden sought with sad complaint :

710

“O miserable of happy ! is this the end  
 Of this new glorious World, and me so late  
 The glory of that glory ? who now, become  
 Accurst of blessed, hide me from the face  
 Of God, whom to behold was then my highth  
 Of happiness. Yet well, if here would end  
 The misery ; I deserved it, and would bear  
 My own deservings ; but this will not serve :  
 All that I eat or drink, or shall beget,  
 Is propagated curse. O voice, once heard  
 Delightfully, ‘Increase and multiply’ ;  
 Now death to hear ! for what can I increase  
 Or multiply, but curses on my head ?  
 Who, of all ages to succeed, but, feeling  
 The evil on him brought by me, will curse  
 My head ? ‘Ill fare our Ancestor impure !  
 For this we may thank Adam !’ but his thanks  
 Shall be the execration ; so, besides  
 Mine own that bide upon me, all from me  
 Shall with a fierce reflux on me redound,  
 On me, as on their natural centre, light  
 Heavy, though in their place. O fleeting joys  
 Of Paradise, dear bought with lasting woes !  
 Did I request thee, Maker, from my clay  
 To mould me Man ? did I solicit thee  
 From darkness to promote me, or here place

720

730

740

In this delicious garden? As my will  
Concurr'd not to my being, it were but right  
And equal to reduce me to my dust,  
Desirous to resign and render back  
All I received, unable to perform  
Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold  
The good I sought not. To the loss of that,  
Sufficient penalty, why hast thou added  
The sense of endless woes? inexplicable  
Thy justice seems. Yet, to say truth, too late  
I thus contest; then should have been refused  
Those terms whatever, when they were proposed.  
Thou didst accept them: wilt thou enjoy the good,  
Then cavil the conditions? And though God  
Made thee without thy leave, what if thy son  
Prove disobedient, and, reprov'd, retort,  
'Wherefore didst thou beget me? I sought it not.'  
Wouldst thou admit for his contempt of thee  
That proud excuse? yet him not thy election,  
But natural necessity, begot.  
God made thee of choice his own, and of his own  
To serve him; thy reward was of his grace;  
Thy punishment then justly is at his will.  
Be it so, for I submit; his doom is fair,  
That dust I am, and shall to dust return.  
O welcome hour whenever! Why delays  
His hand to execute what his decree  
Fix'd on this day? Why do I overlive?  
Why am I mock'd with death, and lengthen'd out  
To deathless pain? How gladly would I meet  
Mortality my sentence, and be earth  
Insensible! how glad would lay me down  
As in my mother's lap! There I should rest  
And sleep secure; his dreadful voice no more  
Would thunder in my ears; no fear of worse  
To me and to my offspring would torment me  
With cruel expectation. Yet one doubt  
Pursues me still, lest all I cannot die;  
Lest that pure breath of life, the spirit of Man  
Which God inspired, cannot together perish

750

760

770

780

With this corporeal clod ; then, in the grave,  
Or in some other dismal place, who knows  
But I shall die a living death ? O thought  
Horrid, if true ! Yet why ? It was but breath  
Of life that sin'd : what dies but what had life  
And sin ? the body properly hath neither.  
All of me then shall die : let this appease  
The doubt, since human reach no further knows.  
For though the Lord of all be infinite,  
Is his wrath also ? Be it, Man is not so,  
But mortal doom'd. How can he exercise  
Wrath without end on Man, whom death must end ?  
Can he make deathless death ? That were to make  
Strange contradiction ; which to God himself  
Impossible is held, as argument  
Of weakness, not of power. Will he draw out,  
For anger's sake, finite to infinite  
In punish'd Man, to satisfy his rigour  
Satisfied never ? That were to extend  
His sentence beyond dust and Nature's law ;  
By which all causes else according still  
To the reception of their matter act,  
Not to the extent of their own sphere. But say  
That death be not one stroke, as I supposed,  
Bereaving sense, but endless misery  
From this day onward, which I feel begun  
Both in me and without me, and so last  
To perpetuity—Ay me ! that fear  
Comes thundering back with dreadful revolution  
On my defenceless head ! Both Death and I  
Am found eternal, and incorporate both :  
Nor I on my part single ; in me all  
Posterity stands curs'd. Fair patrimony  
That I must leave ye, sons ! Oh, were I able  
To waste it all myself, and leave ye none !  
So disinherited, how would ye bless  
Me, now your curse ! Ah, why should all mankind,  
For one man's fault, thus guiltless be condemn'd,  
If guiltless ? But from me what can proceed  
But all corrupt, both mind and will depraved

790

800

810

820

Not to do only, but to will the same  
With me? How can they then acquitted stand  
In sight of God? Him, after all disputes,  
Forced I absolve; all my evasions vain  
And reasonings, though through mazes, lead me still 830  
But to my own conviction: first and last  
On me, me only, as the source and spring  
Of all corruption, all the blame lights due;  
So might the wrath! Fond wish! couldst thou support  
That burden, heavier than the Earth to bear;  
Than all the World much heavier, though divided  
With that bad woman? Thus, what thou desirest,  
And what thou fear'st, alike destroys all hope  
Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable  
Beyond all past example and future; 840  
To Satan only like, both crime and doom.  
O Conscience! into what abyss of fears  
And horrors hast thou driven me; out of which  
I find no way, from deep to deeper plunged!"

Thus Adam to himself lamented loud  
Through the still night, not now, as ere Man fell,  
Wholesome and cool and mild, but with black air  
Accompanied, with damps and dreadful gloom;  
Which to his evil conscience represented  
All things with double terror. On the ground 850  
Outstretch'd he lay, on the cold ground, and oft  
Cursed his creation; Death as oft accused  
Of tardy execution, since denounced  
The day of his offence. "Why comes not Death,"  
Said he, "with one thrice-acceptable stroke  
To end me? Shall Truth fail to keep her word,  
Justice divine not hasten to be just?  
But Death comes not at call; Justice divine  
Mends not her slowest pace for prayers or cries.  
O woods, O fountains, hillocks, dales, and bowers! 860  
With other echo late I taught your shades  
To answer, and resound far other song."  
Whom thus afflicted when sad Eve beheld,  
Desolate where she sat, approaching nigh,  
Soft words to his fierce passion she assay'd;



But her with stern regard he thus repell'd:

“Out of my sight, thou serpent! that name best  
Befits thee, with him leagu'd, thyself as false  
And hateful: nothing wants, but that thy shape,  
Like his, and colour serpentine, may shew  
Thy inward fraud, to warn all creatures from thee  
Henceforth; lest that too heavenly form, pretended  
To hellish falsehood, snare them. But for thee  
I had persisted happy, had not thy pride  
And wandering vanity, when least was safe,  
Rejected my forewarning, and disdain'd  
Not to be trusted, longing to be seen,  
Though by the Devil himself, him overweening  
To overreach; but, with the Serpent meeting,  
Fool'd and beguiled; by him thou, I by thee,  
To trust thee from my side, imagined wise,  
Constant, mature, proof against all assaults;  
And understood not all was but a shew,  
Rather than solid virtue, all but a rib  
Crook'd by nature, bent, as now appears,  
More to the part sinister from me drawn;  
Well if thrown out, as supernumerary  
To my just number found! Oh, why did God,  
Creator wise, that peopled highest Heaven  
With Spirits masculine, create at last  
This novelty on Earth, this fair defect  
Of Nature, and not fill the World at once  
With men, as Angels, without feminine;  
Or find some other way to generate  
Mankind? This mischief had not then befall'n,  
And more that shall befall, innumerable  
Disturbances on Earth through female snares,  
And strait conjunction with this sex. For either  
He never shall find out fit mate, but such  
As some misfortune brings him, or mistake;  
Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain,  
Through her perverseness, but shall see her gain'd  
By a far worse, or, if she love, withheld  
By parents; or his happiest choice too late  
Shall meet, already link'd and wedlock-bound

870

880

890

900

To a fell adversary, his hate or shame:  
Which infinite calamity shall cause  
To human life, and household peace confound."

He added not, and from her turn'd; but Eve,  
Not so repulsed, with tears that ceased not flowing,  
And tresses all disorder'd, at his feet  
Fell humble, and, embracing them, besought  
His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint:

"Forsake me not thus, Adam! witness Heaven

What love sincere and reverence in my heart

I bear thee, and unweeting have offended,

Unhappily deceived! Thy suppliant

I beg, and clasp thy knees; bereave me not,

Whereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,

Thy counsel in this uttermost distress,

My only strength and stay: forlorn of thee,

Whither shall I betake me, where subsist?

While yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,

Between us two let there be peace; both joining,

As join'd in injuries, one enmity

Against a foe by doom express assign'd us,

That cruel Serpent. On me exercise not

Thy hatred for this misery befall'n;

On me already lost, me than thyself

More miserable. Both have sinn'd; but thou

Against God only; I against God and thee,

And to the place of judgment will return,

There with my cries importune Heaven, that all

The sentence, from thy head removed, may light

On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe,

Me, me only, just object of His ire."

She ended weeping; and her lowly plight,

Immovable till peace obtain'd from fault

Acknowledged and deplored, in Adam wrought

Commiseration. Soon his heart relented

Towards her, his life so late and sole delight,

Now at his feet submissive in distress,

Creature so fair his reconcilment seeking,

His counsel, whom she had displeased, his aid;

As one disarm'd, his anger all he lost,

And thus with peaceful words upraised her soon:

“Unwary, and too desirous, as before  
So now, of what thou know'st not, who desirest  
The punishment all on thyself! Alas!  
Bear thine own first, ill able to sustain  
His full wrath, whose thou feel'st as yet least part,  
And my displeasure bear'st so ill. If prayers  
Could alter high decrees, I to that place  
Would speed before thee, and be louder heard,  
That on my head all might be visited,  
Thy frailty and infirmer sex forgiven,  
To me committed, and by me exposed.  
But rise; let us no more contend, nor blame  
Each other, blamed enough elsewhere, but strive  
In offices of love, how we may lighten  
Each other's burden in our share of woe;  
Since this day's death denounced, if aught I see,  
Will prove no sudden, but a slow-paced evil,  
A long day's dying, to augment our pain,  
And to our seed (O hapless seed!) derived.”

959

960

To whom thus Eve, recovering heart, replied:

“Adam, by sad experiment I know  
How little weight my words with thee can find,  
Found so erroneous, thence by just event  
Found so unfortunate; nevertheless,  
Restored by thee, vile as I am, to place  
Of new acceptance, hopeful to regain  
Thy love, the sole contentment of my heart,  
Living or dying from thee I will not hide  
What thoughts in my unquiet breast are risen,  
Tending to some relief of our extremes,  
Or end, though sharp and sad, yet tolerable,  
As in our evils, and of easier choice.  
If care of our descent perplex us most,  
Which must be born to certain woe, devour'd  
By Death at last (and miserable it is  
To be to others cause of misery,  
Our own begotten, and of our loins to bring  
Into this cursèd World a woeful race,  
That after wretched life must be at last

970

980

Food for so foul a monster), in thy power  
It lies, yet ere conception, to prevent  
The race unblest, to being yet unbegot.  
Childless thou art, childless remain; so Death  
Shall be deceived his glut, and with us two 990  
Be forced to satisfy his ravenous maw.  
But if thou judge it hard and difficult,  
Conversing, looking, loving, to abstain  
From love's due rites, nuptial embraces sweet,  
And with desire to languish without hope,  
Before the present object languishing  
With like desire, which would be misery  
And torment less than none of what we dread;  
Then, both our selves and seed at once to free  
From what we fear for both, let us make short, 1000  
Let us seek Death, or, he not found, supply  
With our own hands his office on ourselves.  
Why stand we longer shivering under fears  
That shew no end but death, and have the power,  
Of many ways to die the shortest choosing,  
Destruction with destruction to destroy?"

She ended here, or vehement despair  
Broke off the rest; so much of death her thoughts  
Had entertain'd as dyed her cheeks with pale.  
But Adam, with such counsel nothing sway'd, 1010  
To better hopes his more attentive mind  
Labouring had raised, and thus to Eve replied:

"Eve, thy contempt of life and pleasure seems  
To argue in thee something more sublime  
And excellent than what thy mind contemns;  
But self-destruction therefore sought refutes  
That excellence thought in thee, and implies,  
Not thy contempt, but anguish and regret  
For loss of life and pleasure overloved.  
Or if thou covet death, as utmost end 1020  
Of misery, so thinking to evade  
The penalty pronounced, doubt not but God  
Hath wiselier arm'd his vengeful ire than so  
To be forestall'd; much more I fear lest death  
So snatch'd will not exempt us from the pain

We are by doom to pay; rather such acts  
Of contumacy will provoke the Highest  
To make death in us live. Then let us seek  
Some safer resolution, which methinks  
I have in view, calling to mind with heed  
Part of our sentence, that thy seed shall bruise  
The Serpent's head: piteous amends! unless  
Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand foe,  
Satan, who in the serpent hath contrived  
Against us this deceit. To crush his head  
Would be revenge indeed; which will be lost  
By death brought on ourselves, or childless days  
Resolved as thou proposest; so our foe  
Shall scape his punishment ordain'd, and we  
Instead shall double ours upon our heads.  
No more be mention'd then of violence  
Against ourselves, and wilful barrenness,  
That cuts us off from hope, and savours only  
Rancour and pride, impatience and despite,  
Reluctance against God and his just yoke  
Laid on our necks. Remember with what mild  
And gracious temper he both heard and judged,  
Without wrath or reviling; we expected  
Immediate dissolution; which we thought  
Was meant by death that day; when, lo! to thee  
Pains only in child-bearing were foretold,  
And bringing forth, soon recompensed with joy,  
Fruit of thy womb; on me the curse aslope  
Glanced on the ground: with labour I must earn  
My bread; what harm? Idleness had been worse;  
My labour will sustain me; and, lest cold  
Or heat should injure us, his timely care  
Hath unbesought provided, and his hands  
Clothed us unworthy, pitying while he judged;  
How much more, if we pray him, will his ear  
Be open, and his heart to pity incline,  
And teach us further by what means to shun  
The inclement seasons, rain, ice, hail, and snow!  
Which now the sky with various face begins  
To shew us in this mountain, while the winds

1030

1040

1050

1060

Blow moist and keen, shattering the graceful locks  
Of these fair spreading trees; which bids us seek  
Some better shroud, some better warmth to cherish  
Our limbs benumb'd, ere this diurnal star  
Leave cold the night, how we his gather'd beams 1070  
Reflected may with matter sere foment,  
Or by collision of two bodies grind  
The air attrite to fire; as late the clouds,  
Justling or push'd with winds, rude in their shock,  
Tine the slant lightning, whose thwart flame driven down  
Kindles the gummy bark of fir or pine,  
And sends a comfortable heat from far,  
Which might supply the sun. Such fire to use,  
And what may else be remedy or cure  
To evils which our own misdeeds have wrought, 1080  
He will instruct us praying, and of grace  
Beseeching him; so as we need not fear  
To pass commodiously this life, sustain'd  
By him with many comforts, till we end  
In dust, our final rest and native home.  
What better can we do, than, to the place  
Repairing where he judg'd us, prostrate fall  
Before him reverent, and there confess  
Humbly our faults, and pardon beg, with tears  
Watering the ground, and with our sighs the air 1090  
Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign  
Of sorrow unfeign'd and humiliation meek?  
Undoubtedly he will relent, and turn  
From his displeasure; in whose look serene,  
When angry most he seem'd and most severe,  
What else but favour, grace, and mercy shone?"  
So spake our father penitent; nor Eve  
Felt less remorse. They, forthwith to the place  
Repairing where he judg'd them, prostrate fell  
Before him reverent, and both confess'd 1100  
Humbly their faults, and pardon begg'd, with tears  
Watering the ground, and with their sighs the air  
Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign  
Of sorrow unfeign'd and humiliation meek.

## BOOK XI.

## THE ARGUMENT.

The Son of God presents to his Father the prayers of our first parents now repenting, and intercedes for them. God accepts them, but declares that they must no longer abide in Paradise; sends Michael with a band of Cherubim to dispossess them, but first to reveal to Adam future things: Michael's coming down. Adam shews to Eve certain ominous signs; he discerns Michael's approach; goes out to meet him: the Angel denounces their departure. Eve's lamentation. Adam pleads, but submits: the Angel leads him up to a high hill; sets before him in vision what shall happen till the Flood.

Thus they, in lowliest plight, repentant stood  
Praying; for from the mercy-seat above  
Prevenient grace descending had removed  
The stony from their hearts, and made new flesh  
Regenerate grow instead, that sighs now breathed  
Unutterable, which the spirit of prayer  
Inspired, and wing'd for Heaven with speedier flight  
Than loudest oratory. Yet their port  
Not of mean suitors, nor important less  
Seem'd their petition than when the ancient pair  
In fables old, less ancient yet than these,  
Deucalion and chaste Pyrrha, to restore  
The race of mankind drown'd, before the shrine  
Of Themis stood devout. To Heaven their prayers  
Flew up, nor miss'd the way, by envious winds  
Blown vagabond or frustrate: in they pass'd  
Dimensionless through heavenly doors; then clad  
With incense, where the golden altar fumed,  
By their great Intercessor, came in sight  
Before the Father's throne. Them the glad Son  
Presenting thus to intercede began:

"See, Father, what first-fruits on Earth are sprung

From thy implanted grace in Man, these sighs  
And prayers, which in this golden censer, mix'd  
With incense, I thy priest before thee bring;  
Fruits of more pleasing savour, from thy seed  
Sown with contrition in his heart, than those  
Which, his own hand manuring, all the trees  
Of Paradise could have produced, ere fall'n  
From innocence. Now therefore bend thine ear 30  
To supplication; hear his sighs though mute:  
Unskilful with what words to pray, let me  
Interpret for him, me his advocate  
And propitiation; all his works on me,  
Good or not good, ingraft; my merit those  
Shall perfect, and for these my death shall pay.  
Accept me, and in me from these receive  
The smell of peace toward mankind: let him live  
Before thee reconciled, at least his days  
Number'd, though sad; till death, his doom (which I 40  
To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse),  
To better life shall yield him, where with me  
All my redeem'd may dwell in joy and bliss,  
Made one with me, as I with thee am one."

To whom the Father, without cloud, serene:  
"All thy request for Man, accepted Son,  
Obtain; all thy request was my decree.  
But longer in that Paradise to dwell  
The law I gave to Nature him forbids;  
Those pure immortal elements, that know 50  
No gross, no unharmonious mixture foul,  
Eject him, tainted now, and purge him off,  
As a distemper, gross, to air as gross,  
And mortal food, as may dispose him best  
For dissolution wrought by sin, that first  
Distemper'd all things, and of incorrupt  
Corrupted. I at first with two fair gifts  
Created him endow'd, with happiness  
And immortality: that fondly lost,  
This other served but to eternize woe, 60  
Till I provided death: so death becomes  
His final remedy, and after life



Tried in sharp tribulation, and refined  
By faith and faithful works, to second life,  
Waked in the renovation of the just,  
Resigns him up with Heaven and Earth renew'd.  
But let us call to Synod all the Blest  
Through Heaven's wide bounds; from them I will not hide  
My judgments, how with mankind I proceed,  
As how with peccant Angels late they saw, 70  
And in their state, though firm, stood more confirm'd."

He ended, and the Son gave signal high  
To the bright minister that watch'd. He blew  
His trumpet, heard in Oreb since perhaps  
When God descended, and perhaps once more  
To sound at general doom. The angelic blast  
Fill'd all the regions: from their blissful bowers  
Of amarantine shade, fountain or spring,  
By the waters of life, where'er they sat  
In fellowships of joy, the Sons of Light 80  
Hasted, resorting to the summons high,  
And took their seats; till from his throne supreme  
The Almighty thus pronounced his sovran will:

"O Sons, like one of us Man is become  
To know both good and evil, since his taste  
Of that defended fruit; but let him boast  
His knowledge of good lost and evil got,  
Happier had it sufficed him to have known  
Good by itself, and evil not at all.  
He sorrows now, repents, and prays contrite, 90  
My motions in him; longer than they move,  
His heart I know, how variable and vain  
Self-left. Lest therefore his now bolder hand  
Reach also of the Tree of Life, and eat,  
And live for ever, dream at least to live  
For ever, to remove him I decree,  
And send him from the garden forth, to till  
The ground whence he was taken, fitter soil.  
Michael, this my behest have thou in charge:  
Take to thee from among the Cherubim 100  
Thy choice of flaming warriors, lest the Fiend,  
Or in behalf of Man, or to invade

Vacant possession, some new trouble raise;  
Haste thee, and from the Paradise of God  
Without remorse drive out the sinful pair,  
From hallow'd ground the unholy, and denounce  
To them and to their progeny from thence  
Perpetual banishment. Yet, lest they faint  
At the sad sentence rigorously urged  
(For I behold them soften'd, and with tears  
Bewailing their excess), all terror hide.  
If patiently thy bidding they obey,  
Dismiss them not disconsolate; reveal  
To Adam what shall come in future days,  
As I shall thee enlighten; intermix  
My covenant in the Woman's seed renew'd.  
So send them forth, though sorrowing, yet in peace;  
And on the east side of the garden place,  
Where entrance up from Eden easiest climbs,  
Cherubic watch, and of a sword the flame  
Wide-waving, all approach far off to fright,  
And guard all passage to the Tree of Life;  
Lest Paradise a receptacle prove  
To Spirits foul, and all my trees their prey,  
With whose stolen fruit Man once more to delude."

He ceased, and the archangelic Power prepared  
For swift descent; with him the cohort bright  
Of watchful Cherubim. Four faces each  
Had, like a double Janus; all their shape  
Spangled with eyes more numerous than those  
Of Argus, and more wakeful than to drowse,  
Charm'd with Arcadian pipe, the pastoral reed  
Of Hermes, or his opiate rod. Meanwhile,  
To resalute the world with sacred light,  
Leucothea waked, and with fresh dews embalm'd  
The Earth; when Adam and first matron Eve  
Had ended now their orisons, and found  
Strength added from above; new hope to spring  
Out of despair; joy, but with fear yet link'd;  
Which thus to Eve his welcome words renew'd:

"Eve, easily may faith admit that all  
The good which we enjoy from Heaven descends;

But that from us aught should ascend to Heaven  
So prevalent as to concern the mind  
Of God high-blest, or to incline his will,  
Hard to belief may seem; yet this will prayer,  
Or one short sigh of human breath, upborne  
Even to the seat of God. For since I sought  
By prayer the offended Deity to appease,  
Kneel'd and before him humbled all my heart,  
Methought I saw him placable and mild,  
Bending his ear; persuasion in me grew  
That I was heard with favour; peace return'd  
Home to my breast, and to my memory  
His promise that thy seed shall bruise our Foe;  
Which, then not minded in dismay, yet now  
Assures me that the bitterness of death  
Is past, and we shall live. Whence hail to thee!  
Eve rightly call'd, Mother of all Mankind,  
Mother of all things living, since by thee  
Man is to live, and all things live for Man."

To whom thus Eve with sad demeanour meek:  
"Ill-worthy I such title should belong  
To me transgressor, who, for thee ordain'd  
A help, became thy snare; to me reproach  
Rather belongs, distrust and all dispraise.  
But infinite in pardon was my Judge,  
That I, who first brought death on all, am graced  
The source of life; next favourable thou,  
Who high thus to entitle me vouchsafest,  
Far other name deserving. But the field  
To labour calls us, now with sweat imposed,  
Though after sleepless night; for see! the Morn,  
All unconcern'd with our unrest, begins  
Her rosy progress smiling. Let us forth,  
I never from thy side henceforth to stray,  
Where'er our day's work lies, though now enjoin'd  
Laborious, till day droop; while here we dwell,  
What can be toilsome in these pleasant walks?  
Here let us live, though in fall'n state, content."

So spake, so wish'd, much-humbled Eve; but Fate  
Subscribed not. Nature first gave signs, impress'd

On bird, beast, air, air suddenly eclipsed  
After short blush of morn. Nigh in her sight  
The bird of Jove, stoop'd from his aery tour,  
Two birds of gayest plume, before him drove;  
Down from a hill the beast that reigns in woods,  
First hunter then, pursued a gentle brace,  
Goodliest of all the forest, hart and hind;  
Direct to the eastern gate was bent their flight. 190  
Adam observed, and, with his eye the chase  
Pursuing, not unmoved to Eve thus spake:

"O Eve, some further change awaits us nigh,  
Which Heaven by these mute signs in Nature shews,  
Forerunners of his purpose, or to warn  
Us haply too secure of our discharge  
From penalty, because from death released  
Some days; how long, and what till then our life,  
Who knows? or more than this, that we are dust,  
And thither must return, and be no more? 200  
Why else this double object in our sight,  
Of flight pursued in the air and o'er the ground  
One way the self-same hour? Why in the east  
Darkness ere day's mid-course, and morning-light  
More orient in yon western cloud, that draws  
O'er the blue firmament a radiant white,  
And slow descends, with something heavenly fraught?"

He err'd not; for, by this, the heavenly bands  
Down from a sky of jasper lighted now  
In Paradise, and on a hill made halt; 210  
A glorious apparition, had not doubt  
And carnal fear that day dimm'd Adam's eye.  
Not that more glorious, when the Angels met  
Jacob in Mahanaim, where he saw  
The field pavilion'd with his guardians bright;  
Nor that which on the flaming mount appear'd  
In Dothan, cover'd with a camp of fire,  
Against the Syrian king, who to surprise  
One man, assassin-like, had levied war,  
War unproclaim'd. The princely Hierarch 220  
In their bright stand there left his Powers to seize  
Possession of the garden; he alone,

To find where Adam shelter'd, took his way,  
Not unperceived of Adam ; who to Eve,  
While the great visitant approach'd, thus spake :

"Eve, now expect great tidings, which perhaps  
Of us will soon determine, or impose  
New laws to be observed ; for I descry  
From yonder blazing cloud that veils the hill  
One of the heavenly host, and by his gait 230  
None of the meanest, some great Potentate  
Or of the Thrones above, such majesty  
Invests him coming ; yet not terrible,  
That I should fear, nor sociably mild,  
As Raphael, that I should much confide,  
But solemn and sublime ; whom not to offend,  
With reverence I must meet, and thou retire."

He ended ; and the Archangel soon drew nigh,  
Not in his shape celestial, but as man  
Clad to meet man. Over his lucid arms 240  
A military vest of purple flow'd,  
Livelier than Melibœan, or the grain  
Of Sarra, worn by kings and heroes old  
In time of truce ; Iris had dipt the woof.  
His starry helm unbuckled shew'd him prime  
In manhood where youth ended ; by his side,  
As in a glistening zodiac, hung the sword,  
Satan's dire dread, and in his hand the spear.  
Adam bow'd low ; he kingly from his state  
Inclined not, but his coming thus declared :

"Adam, Heaven's high behest no preface needs :  
Sufficient that thy prayers are heard, and Death,  
Then due by sentence when thou didst transgress,  
Defeated of his seizure many days,  
Given thee of grace, wherein thou may'st repent,  
And one bad act with many deeds well done  
May'st cover. Well may then thy Lord, appeased,  
Redeem thee quite from Death's rapacious claim ;  
But longer in this Paradise to dwell  
Permits not : to remove thee I am come, 260  
And send thee from the garden forth, to till  
The ground whence thou wast taken, fitter soil."

He added not ; for Adam at the news  
Heart-strook with chilling gripe of sorrow stood,  
That all his senses bound ; Eve, who unseen  
Yet all had heard, with audible lament  
Discover'd soon the place of her retire :

“ O unexpected stroke, worse than of Death !  
Must I thus leave thee, Paradise ? thus leave  
Thee, native soil, these happy walks and shades,  
Fit haunt of Gods ? where I had hope to spend,  
Quiet though sad, the respite of that day  
That must be mortal to us both. O flowers,  
That never will in other climate grow,  
My early visitation, and my last  
At even, which I bred up with tender hand  
From the first opening bud, and gave ye names,  
Who now shall rear ye to the sun, or rank  
Your tribes, and water from the ambrosial fount ?  
Thee lastly, nuptial bower, by me adorn'd  
With what to sight or smell was sweet, from thee  
How shall I part, and whither wander down  
Into a lower world, to this obscure  
And wild ? How shall we breathe in other air  
Less pure, accustom'd to immortal fruits ? ”

Whom thus the Angel interrupted mild :  
“ Lament not, Eve, but patiently resign  
What justly thou hast lost ; nor set thy heart,  
Thus over-fond, on that which is not thine.  
Thy going is not lonely ; with thee goes  
Thy husband ; him to follow thou art bound ;  
Where he abides, think there thy native soil. ”

Adam, by this from the cold sudden damp  
Recovering, and his scatter'd spirits return'd,  
To Michael thus his humble words address'd :

“ Celestial, whether among the Thrones, or named  
Of them the highest, for such of shape may seem  
Prince above princes, gently hast thou told  
Thy message, which might else in telling wound,  
And in performing end us. What besides  
Of sorrow and dejection and despair  
Our frailty can sustain, thy tidings bring ;

Departure from this happy place, our sweet  
Recess, and only consolation left  
Familiar to our eyes ; all places else  
Inhospitable appear, and desolate,  
Nor knowing us, nor known. And, if by prayer  
Incessant I could hope to change the will  
Of him who all things can, I would not cease  
To weary him with my assiduous cries ;  
But prayer against his absolute decree  
No more avails than breath against the wind,  
Blown stifling back on him that breathes it forth ;  
Therefore to his great bidding I submit.  
This most afflicts me, that, departing hence,  
As from his face I shall be hid, deprived  
His blessed countenance. Here I could frequent,  
With worship, place by place where he vouchsafed  
Presence Divine, and to my sons relate,  
'On this mount he appear'd ; under this tree  
Stood visible ; among these pines his voice  
I heard ; here with him at this fountain talk'd.  
So many grateful altars I would rear  
Of grassy turf, and pile up every stone  
Of lustre from the brook, in memory,  
Or monument to ages, and thereon  
Offer sweet-smelling gums and fruits and flowers.  
In yonder nether world where shall I seek  
His bright appearances, or footstep trace ?  
For though I fled him angry, yet, recall'd  
To life prolong'd and promised race, I now  
Gladly behold though but his utmost skirts  
Of glory, and far off his steps adore."

To whom thus Michael, with regard benign :  
"Adam, thou know'st Heaven his, and all the Earth,  
Not this rock only ; his omnipresence fills  
Land, sea, and air, and every kind that lives,  
Fomented by his virtual power and warm'd.  
All the Earth he gave thee to possess and rule,  
No despicable gift ; surmise not then  
His presence to these narrow bounds confined  
Of Paradise or Eden. This had been

Perhaps thy capital seat, from whence had spread  
All generations, and had hither come  
From all the ends of the Earth, to celebrate  
And reverence thee their great progenitor.  
But this pre-eminence thou hast lost, brought down  
To dwell on even ground now with thy sons.  
Yet doubt not but in valley and in plain  
God is, as here, and will be found alike  
Present, and of his presence many a sign  
Still following thee, still compassing thee round  
With goodness and paternal love, his face  
Express, and of his steps the track divine.  
Which that thou may'st believe, and be confirm'd,  
Ere thou from hence depart, know I am sent  
To shew thee what shall come in future days  
To thee and to thy offspring. Good with bad  
Expect to hear, supernal grace contending  
With sinfulness of men ; thereby to learn  
True patience, and to temper joy with fear  
And pious sorrow, equally inured  
By moderation either state to bear,  
Prosperous or adverse : so shalt thou lead  
Safest thy life, and best prepared endure  
Thy mortal passage when it comes. Ascend  
This hill ; let Eve (for I have drench'd her eyes)  
Here sleep below while thou to foresight wakest,  
As once thou slept'st, while she to life was form'd."

To whom thus Adam gratefully replied :  
"Ascend ; I follow thee, safe guide, the path  
Thou lead'st me, and to the hand of Heaven submit,  
However chastening ; to the evil turn  
My obvious breast, arming to overcome  
By suffering, and earn rest from labour won,  
If so I may attain." So both ascend  
In the visions of God. It was a hill,  
Of Paradise the highest, from whose top  
The hemisphere of Earth in clearest ken  
Stretch'd out to amplest reach of prospect lay.  
Not higher that hill, nor wider looking round,  
Whereon for different cause the Tempter set



Our second Adam in the wilderness,  
To shew him all Earth's kingdoms and their glory.  
His eye might there command wherever stood  
City of old or modern fame, the seat  
Of mightiest empire, from the destined walls  
Of Cambalu, seat of Cathaian Can,  
And Samarchand by Oxus, Temir's throne,  
To Paquin of Sinaean kings, and thence  
To Agra and Labor of Great Mogul,  
Down to the golden Chersonese, or where  
The Persian in Ecbatan sat, or since  
In Hispahan, or where the Russian Ksar  
In Mosco, or the Sultan in Bizance,  
Turchestan-born; nor could his eye not ken  
The empire of Negus to his utmost port  
Ercoco, and the less maritime kings,  
Mombaza, and Quiloa, and Melind,  
And Sofala, thought Ophir, to the realm  
Of Congo, and Angola farthest south;  
Or thence from Niger flood to Atlas mount,  
The kingdoms of Almansor, Fex and Sus,  
Marocco, and Algiers, and Tremisen;  
On Europe thence, and where Rome was to sway  
The world. In spirit perhaps he also saw  
Rich Mexico the seat of Motezume,  
And Cusco in Peru, the richer seat  
Of Atabalipa, and yet unspoil'd  
Guiana, whose great city Geryon's sons  
Call El Dorado. But to nobler sights  
Michael from Adam's eyes the film removed  
Which that false fruit that promised clearer sight  
Had bred; then purged with euphrasy and rue  
The visual nerve, for he had much to see,  
And from the well of life three drops instill'd.  
So deep the power of these ingredients pierced,  
Even to the inmost seat of mental sight,  
That Adam, now enforced to close his eyes,  
Sunk down, and all his spirits became entranced;  
But him the gentle Angel by the hand  
Soon raised, and his attention thus recall'd:

390

400

410

420

"Adam, now ope thine eyes, and first behold  
The effects which thy original crime hath wrought  
In some to spring from thee, who never touch'd  
The excepted tree, nor with the Snake conspired,  
Nor sinn'd thy sin, yet from that sin derive  
Corruption to bring forth more violent deeds."

His eyes he open'd, and beheld a field,  
Part arable and tilth, whereon were sheaves 439  
New-reap'd, the other part sheep-walks and folds;  
I' the midst an altar as the landmark stood,  
Rustic, of grassy sord. Thither anon  
A sweaty reaper from his tillage brought  
First-fruits, the green ear and the yellow sheaf,  
Uncull'd, as came to hand; a shepherd next,  
More meek, came with the firstlings of his flock,  
Choicest and best; then sacrificing laid  
The inwards and their fat, with incense strew'd,  
On the cleft wood, and all due rites perform'd. 440  
His offering soon propitious fire from heaven  
Consumed with nimble glance and grateful steam;  
The other's not, for his was not sincere:  
Whereat he inly raged, and, as they talk'd,  
Smote him into the midriff with a stone  
That beat out life; he fell, and, deadly pale,  
Groan'd out his soul with gushing blood effused.  
Much at that sight was Adam in his heart  
Dismay'd, and thus in haste to the Angel cried:

"O Teacher, some great mischief hath befall'n 450  
To that meek man, who well had sacrificed:  
Is piety thus and pure devotion paid?"

To whom Michael thus, he also moved, replied:  
"These two are brethren, Adam, and to come  
Out of thy loins. The unjust the just hath slain,  
For envy that his brother's offering found  
From Heaven acceptance; but the bloody fact  
Will be avenged, and the other's faith approved  
Lose no reward, though here thou see him die,  
Rolling in dust and gore." To which our Sire:

"Alas, both for the deed and for the cause! 460  
But have I now seen Death? Is this the way

I must return to native dust? O sight  
Of terror, foul and ugly to behold!  
Horrid to think, how horrible to feel!"

To whom thus Michael: "Death thou hast seen  
In his first shape on Man; but many shapes  
Of Death, and many are the ways that lead  
To his grim cave, all dismal; yet to sense  
More terrible at the entrance than within. 470  
Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die,  
By fire, flood, famine; by intemperance more  
In meats and drinks, which on the Earth shall bring  
Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew  
Before thee shall appear, that thou may'st know  
What misery the inabstinence of Eve  
Shall bring on men." Immediately a place  
Before his eyes appear'd, sad, noisome, dark;  
A lazar-house it seem'd, wherein were laid  
Numbers of all diseased, all maladies 480  
Of gastly spasm, or racking torture, qualms  
Of heart-sick agony, all fevrous kinds,  
Convulsions, epilepsies, fierce catarrhs,  
Intestine stone and ulcer, colic pangs,  
Demoniac phrenzy, moping melancholy,  
And moon-struck madness, pining atrophy,  
Marasmus, and wide-wasting pestilence,  
Dropsies and asthmas, and joint-racking rheums.  
Dire was the tossing, deep the groans; Despair  
Tended the sick busiest from couch to couch; 490  
And over them triumphant Death his dart  
Shook, but delay'd to strike, though oft invoked  
With vows, as their chief good, and final hope.  
Sight so deform what heart of rock could long  
Dry-eyed behold? Adam could not, but wept,  
Though not of woman born: compassion quelled  
His best of man, and gave him up to tears  
A space, till firmer thoughts restrain'd excess,  
And scarce recovering words his plaint renew'd:  
"O miserable Mankind, to what fall 500  
Degraded, to what wretched state reserved!  
Better end here unborn. Why is life given

To be thus wrested from us? rather why  
Obtruded on us thus? who, if we knew  
What we receive, would either not accept  
Life offer'd, or soon beg to lay it down,  
Glad to be so dismiss'd in peace. Can thus  
The image of God in Man, created once  
So goodly and erect, though faulty since,  
To such unsightly sufferings be debased  
Under inhuman pains? Why should not Man,  
Retaining still divine similitude

510

In part, from such deformities be free,  
And for his Maker's image sake exempt?"

"Their Maker's image," answered Michael, "then  
Forsook them, when themselves they vilified  
To serve ungovern'd appetite, and took  
His image whom they served, a brutish vice,  
Inductive mainly to the sin of Eve.

520

Therefore so abject is their punishment,  
Disfiguring not God's likeness, but their own;  
Or if his likeness, by themselves defaced  
While they pervert pure Nature's healthful rules  
To loathsome sickness; worthily, since they  
God's image did not reverence in themselves."

"I yield it just," said Adam, "and submit.  
But is there yet no other way, besides  
These painful passages, how we may come  
To death, and mix with our connatural dust?"

"There is," said Michael, "if thou well observe  
The rule of *Not too much*, by temperance taught  
In what thou eat'st and drink'st, seeking from thence  
Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight,  
Till many years over thy head return.

530

So may'st thou live, till, like ripe fruit, thou drop  
Into thy mother's lap, or be with ease  
Gather'd, not harshly pluck'd, for death mature.  
This is old age; but then thou must outlive  
Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will change  
To wither'd, weak, and grey; thy senses then,  
Obtuse, all taste of pleasure must forgo  
To what thou hast; and, for the air of youth,

540

Hopeful and cheerful, in thy blood will reign  
A melancholy damp of cold and dry,  
To weigh thy spirits down, and last consume  
The balm of life." To whom our Ancestor :

"Henceforth I fly not death, nor would' prolong  
Life much, bent rather how I may be quit  
Fairest and easiest of this cumbrous charge,  
Which I must keep till my appointed day  
Of rendering up, and patiently attend  
My dissolution." Michael replied :

550

"Nor love thy life, nor hate ; but what thou livest  
Live well ; how long or short permit to Heaven.  
And now prepare thee for another sight."

He look'd, and saw a spacious plain, whereon  
Were tents of various hue ; by some were herds  
Of cattle grazing ; others, whence the sound  
Of instruments that made melodious chime  
Was heard, of harp and organ, and who moved  
Their stops and chords was seen ; his volant touch  
Instinct through all proportions, low and high,  
Fled and pursued transverse the resonant fugue.  
In other part stood one who, at the forge  
Labouring, two massy clods of iron and brass  
Had melted (whether found where casual fire  
Had wasted woods, on mountain or in vale,  
Down to the veins of Earth, thence gliding hot  
To some cave's mouth, or whether wash'd by stream  
From underground) ; the liquid ore he drain'd  
Into fit moulds prepared ; from which he form'd  
First his own tools ; then, what might else be wrought  
Fusil or graven in metal. After these,  
But on the hither side, a different sort  
From the high neighbouring hills, which was their seat,  
Down to the plain descended : by their guise  
Just men they seem'd, and all their study bent  
To worship God aright, and know his works  
Not hid ; nor those things last which might preserve  
Freedom and peace to men. They on the plain  
Long had not walk'd, when from the tents behold  
A bevy of fair women, richly gay

560

570

580

In gems and wanton dress! to the harp they sung  
Soft amorous ditties, and in dance came on.  
The men, though grave, eyed them, and let their eyes  
Rove without rein, till, in the amorous net  
Fast caught, they liked, and each his liking chose.  
And now of love they treat, till the evening star,  
Love's harbinger, appear'd; then all in heat  
They light the nuptial torch, and bid invoke  
Hymen, then first to marriage rites invoked:  
With feast and music all the tents resound.  
Such happy interview, and fair event

590

Of love and youth not lost, songs, garlands, flowers,  
And charming symphonies, attach'd the heart  
Of Adam, soon inclined to admit delight,  
The bent of Nature; which he thus express'd:

"True opener of mine eyes, prime Angel blest,  
Much better seems this vision, and more hope  
Of peaceful days portends, than those two past:  
Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse;  
Here Nature seems fulfill'd in all her ends."

600

To whom thus Michael: "Judge not what is best  
By pleasure, though to Nature seeming meet,  
Created, as thou art, to nobler end,  
Holy and pure, conformity divine.

Those tents thou saw'st so pleasant were the tents  
Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his race  
Who slew his brother: studious they appear  
Of arts that polish life, inventors rare;  
Unmindful of their Maker, though his Spirit  
Taught them; but they his gifts acknowledged none.

610

Yet they a beauteous offspring shall beget;  
For that fair female troop thou saw'st, that seem'd  
Of goddesses, so blithe, so smooth, so gay,  
Yet empty of all good wherein consists

Woman's domestic honour and chief praise;  
Bred only and completed to the taste  
Of lustful appetite, to sing, to dance,  
To dress, and trol the tongue, and roll the eye;  
To these that sober race of men, whose lives  
Religious titled them the Sons of God,

620

Shall yield up all their virtue, all their fame,  
Ignobly, to the trains and to the smiles  
Of these fair atheists, and now swim in joy  
(Erelong to swim at large) and laugh ; for which  
The world erelong a world of tears must weep."

To whom thus Adam, of short joy bereft :  
"O pity and shame, that they who to live well  
Enter'd so fair should turn aside to tread  
Paths indirect, or in the mid way faint !  
But still I see the tenor of Man's woe  
Holds on the same, from Woman to begin."

"From Man's effeminate slackness it begins,"  
Said the Angel, "who should better hold his place  
By wisdom, and superior gifts received.  
But now prepare thee for another scene."

He look'd, and saw wide territory spread  
Before him, towns, and rural works between,  
Cities of men with lofty gates and towers,  
Concourse in arms, fierce faces threatening war,  
Giants of mighty bone and bold emprise ;  
Part wield their arms, part curb the foaming steed,  
Single or in array of battle ranged,  
Both horse and foot, nor idly mustering stood.  
One way a band select from forage drives  
A herd of beeves, fair oxen and fair kine,  
From a fat meadow ground ; or fleecy flock,  
Ewes and their bleating lambs, over the plain,  
Their booty ; scarce with life the shepherds fly,  
But call in aid, which makes a bloody fray :  
With cruel tournament the squadrons join ;  
Where cattle pastured late, now scatter'd lies  
With carcasses and arms the ensanguined field  
Deserted. Others to a city strong  
Lay siege, encamp'd, by battery, scale, and mine,  
Assaulting ; others from the wall defend  
With dart and javelin, stones and sulphurous fire ;  
On each hand slaughter and gigantic deeds.  
In other part the sceptred haralds call  
To council in the city gates : anon  
Grey-headed men and grave, with warriors mix'd,

630

640

650

660

Assemble, and harangues are heard; but soon  
In factious opposition, till at last  
Of middle age one rising, eminent  
In wise deport, spake much of right and wrong,  
Of justice, of religion, truth, and peace,  
And judgment from above: him old and young  
Exploded, and had seized with violent hands,  
Had not a cloud descending snatched him thence, 670  
Unseen amid the throng. So violence  
Proceeded, and oppression, and sword-law,  
Through all the plain, and refuge none was found.  
Adam was all in tears, and to his guide  
Lamenting turn'd full sad: "Oh, what are these?  
Death's ministers, not men! who thus deal death  
Inhumanly to men, and multiply  
Ten thousandfold the sin of him who slew  
His brother; for of whom such massacre  
Make they but of their brethren, men of men? 680  
But who was that just man, whom had not Heaven  
Rescued, had in his righteousness been lost?"

To whom thus Michael: "These are the product  
Of those ill-mated marriages thou saw'st;  
Where good with bad were match'd, who of themselves  
Abhor to join, and, by imprudence mix'd,  
Produce prodigious births of body or mind.  
Such were these Giants, men of high renown;  
For in those days might only shall be admired,  
And valour and heroic virtue call'd; 690  
To overcome in battle, and subdue  
Nations, and bring home spoils with infinite  
Man-slaughter, shall be held the highest pitch  
Of human glory, and for glory done  
Of triumph, to be styled great conquerors,  
Patrons of mankind, gods, and sons of gods,  
Destroyers rightlier call'd, and plagues of men.  
Thus fame shall be achieved, renown on Earth,  
And what most merits fame in silence hid.  
But he, the seventh from thee, whom thou beheld'st 700  
The only righteous in a world perverse,  
And therefore hated, therefore so beset



With foes, for daring single to be just,  
And utter odious truth, that God would come  
To judge them with his Saints: him the Most High,  
Rapt in a balmy cloud with winged steeds,  
Did, as thou saw'st, receive, to walk with God  
High in salvation and the climes of bliss,  
Exempt from death: to shew thee what reward  
Awaits the good, the rest what punishment;  
Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold."

710

He looked, and saw the face of things quite changed;  
The brazen throat of war had ceased to roar;  
All now was turned to jollity and game,  
To luxury and riot, feast and dance,  
Marrying or prostituting, as befell,  
Rape or adultery, where passing fair  
Allured them; thence from cups to civil broils.  
At length a reverend sire among them came,  
And of their doings great dislike declared,  
And testified against their ways: he oft  
Frequented their assemblies, whereso met,  
Triumphs or festivals, and to them preach'd  
Conversion and repentance, as to souls  
In prison, under judgments imminent;  
But all in vain. Which when he saw, he ceased  
Contending, and removed his tents far off;  
Then, from the mountain hewing timber tall,  
Began to build a vessel of huge bulk,  
Measured by cubit, length, and breadth, and highth,  
Smear'd round with pitch, and in the side a door  
Contrived, and of provisions laid in large  
For man and beast: when lo! a wonder strange!  
Of every beast, and bird, and insect small,  
Came sevens and pairs, and enter'd in, as taught  
Their order; last, the sire and his three sons,  
With their four wives; and God made fast the door.  
Meanwhile the south-wind rose, and, with black wings  
Wide hovering, all the clouds together drove  
From under heaven; the hills, to their supply,  
Vapour, and exhalation dusk and moist,  
Sent up amain; and now the thicken'd sky

720

730

740

Like a dark ceiling stood : down rush'd the rain  
Impetuous, and continued till the Earth  
No more was seen. The floating vessel swum  
Uplifted, and secure with beaked prow  
Rode tilting o'er the waves ; all dwellings else  
Flood overwhelm'd, and them with all their pomp  
Deep under water roll'd ; sea cover'd sea,  
Sea without shore : and in their palaces,  
Where luxury late reign'd, sea-monsters whelp'd  
And stabled : of mankind, so numerous late,  
All left in one small bottom swum embark'd.  
How didst thou grieve then, Adam, to behold  
The end of all thy offspring, end so sad,  
Depopulation ! Thee another flood,  
Of tears and sorrow a flood, thee also drown'd,  
And sunk thee as thy sons ; till, gently rear'd  
By the Angel, on thy feet thou stood'st at last,  
Though comfortless, as when a father mourns  
His children, all in view destroy'd at once ;  
And scarce to the Angel utter'dst thus thy plaint :

"O visions ill foreseen ! Better had I  
Lived ignorant of future ! so had borne  
My part of evil only, each day's lot  
Enough to bear ; those now, that were dispensed  
The burden of many ages, on me light  
At once, by my foreknowledge gaining birth  
Abortive, to torment me, ere their being,  
With thought that they must be. Let no man seek  
Henceforth to be foretold what shall befall  
Him or his children ; evil he may be sure,  
Which neither his foreknowing can prevent,  
And he the future evil shall no less  
In apprehension than in substance feel  
Grievous to bear. But that care now is past ;  
Man is not whom to warn ; those few escaped  
Famine and anguish will at last consume,  
Wandering that watery desert. I had hope,  
When violence was ceased and war on Earth,  
All would have then gone well, peace would have crown'd  
With length of happy days the race of Man ;

But I was far deceived, for now I see  
Peace to corrupt no less than war to waste.  
How comes it thus? Unfold, Celestial Guide,  
And whether here the race of Man will end."

To whom thus Michael: "Those, whom last thou saw'st  
In triumph and luxurious wealth, are they  
First seen in acts of prowess eminent  
And great exploits, but of true virtue void; 790  
Who, having spilt much blood, and done much waste,  
Subduing nations, and achieved thereby  
Fame in the world, high titles, and rich prey,  
Shall change their course to pleasure, ease, and sloth,  
Surfeit, and lust, till wantonness and pride  
Raise out of friendship hostile deeds in peace.  
The conquer'd also, and enslaved by war,  
Shall, with their freedom lost, all virtue lose,  
And fear of God, from whom their piety feign'd  
In sharp contest of battle found no aid 800  
Against invaders; therefore, cool'd in zeal,  
Thenceforth shall practise how to live secure,  
Worldly or dissolute, on what their lords  
Shall leave them to enjoy; for the Earth shall bear  
More than enough, that temperance may be tried.  
So all shall turn degenerate, all depraved,  
Justice and temperance, truth and faith, forgot;  
One man except, the only son of light  
In a dark age, against example good,  
Against allurements, custom, and a world 810  
Offended. Fearless of reproach and scorn,  
Or violence, he of their wicked ways  
Shall them admonish, and before them set  
The paths of righteousness, how much more safe  
And full of peace, denouncing wrath to come  
On their impenitence; and shall return  
Of them derided, but of God observed  
The one just man alive; by his command  
Shall build a wondrous ark, as thou beheld'st,  
To save himself and household from amidst 820  
A world devote to universal wrack.  
No sooner he, with them of man and beast

Select for life, shall in the ark be lodged,  
And shelter'd round, but all the cataracts  
Of Heaven set open on the Earth shall pour  
Rain day and night; all fountains of the deep,  
Broke up, shall heave the ocean to usurp  
Beyond all bounds, till inundation rise  
Above the highest hills. Then shall this Mount  
Of Paradise by might of waves be moved  
Out of his place, push'd by the horned flood,  
With all his verdure spoil'd, and trees adrift,  
Down the great river to the opening gulf,  
And there take root, an island salt and bare,  
The haunt of seals, and orcs, and sea-mews' clang:  
To teach thee that God attributes to place  
No sanctity, if none be thither brought  
By men who there frequent or therein dwell.  
And now what further shall ensue behold."

830

He look'd, and saw the ark hull on the flood,  
Which now abated; for the clouds were fled,  
Driven by a keen north-wind, that, blowing dry,  
Wrinkled the face of deluge, as decay'd;  
And the clear sun on his wide watery glass  
Gazed hot, and of the fresh wave largely drew,  
As after thirst; which made their flowing shrink  
From standing lake to tripping ebb, that stole  
With soft foot towards the deep, who now had stopt  
His sluices, as the heaven his windows shut.  
The ark no more now floats, but seems on ground,  
Fast on the top of some high mountain fix'd.  
And now the tops of hills as rocks appear;  
With clamour thence the rapid currents drive  
Towards the retreating sea their furious tide.  
Forthwith from out the ark a raven flies,  
And after him, the surer messenger,  
A dove, sent forth once and again to spy  
Green tree or ground whereon his foot may light;  
The second time returning, in his bill  
An olive leaf he brings, pacific sign.  
Anon dry ground appears, and from his ark  
The ancient sire descends, with all his train;

840

850

860

Then, with uplifted hands and eyes devout,  
Grateful to Heaven, over his head beholds  
A dewy cloud, and in the cloud a bow  
Conspicuous with three listed colours gay,  
Betokening peace from God, and covenant new.  
Whereat the heart of Adam, erst so sad,  
Greatly rejoiced, and thus his joy broke forth :

“O thou, who future things canst represent  
As present, Heavenly Instructor, I revive  
At this last sight, assured that Man shall live,  
With all the creatures, and their seed preserve.  
Far less I now lament for one whole world  
Of wicked sons destroy'd, than I rejoice  
For one man found so perfect and so just,  
That God vouchsafes to raise another world  
From him, and all his anger to forget.  
But say, what mean those colour'd streaks in Heaven,  
Distended as the brow of God appeased?  
Or serve they as a flowery verge to bind  
The fluid skirts of that same watery cloud,  
Lest it again dissolve and shower the Earth?”

To whom the Archangel: “Dextrously thou aim'st.  
So willingly doth God remit his ire,  
Though late repenting him of Man depraved ;  
Grieved at his heart, when looking down he saw  
The whole Earth fill'd with violence, and all flesh  
Corrupting each their way ; yet, those removed,  
Such grace shall one just man find in his sight,  
That he relents, not to blot out mankind,  
And makes a covenant never to destroy  
The Earth again by flood, nor let the sea  
Surpass his bounds, nor rain to drown the world  
With man therein or beast ; but, when he brings  
Over the Earth a cloud, will therein set  
His triple-colour'd bow, whereon to look  
And call to mind his covenant. Day and night,  
Seed-time and harvest, heat and hoary frost,  
Shall hold their course, till fire purge all things new,  
Both Heaven and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell.”

## BOOK XII.

## THE ARGUMENT.

The Angel Michael continues, from the Flood, to relate what shall succeed; then, in the mention of Abraham, comes by degrees to explain who that Seed of the Woman shall be which was promised Adam and Eve in the Fall; his incarnation, death, resurrection, and ascension; the state of the Church till his second coming. Adam, greatly satisfied and comforted by these relations and promises, descends the hill with Michael; wakens Eve, who all this while had slept, but with gentle dreams composed to quietness of mind and submission. Michael in either hand leads them out of Paradise, the fiery sword waving behind them, and the Cherubim taking their stations to guard the place.

AS one who in his journey bates at noon,  
Though bent on speed, so here the Archangel paused  
Betwixt the world destroy'd and world restored,  
If Adam aught perhaps might interpose;  
Then, with transition sweet, new speech resumes:

"Thus thou hast seen one world begin and end,  
And Man as from a second stock proceed.  
Much thou hast yet to see; but I perceive  
Thy mortal sight to fail; objects divine  
Must needs impair and weary human sense:  
Henceforth what is to come I will relate;  
Thou therefore give due audience, and attend.

"This second source of men, while yet but few,  
And while the dread of judgment past remains  
Fresh in their minds, fearing the Deity,  
With some regard to what is just and right  
Shall lead their lives, and multiply apace,  
Labouring the soil, and reaping plenteous crop,  
Corn, wine, and oil; and, from the herd or flock  
Oft sacrificing bullock, lamb, or kid,  
With large wine-offerings pour'd, and sacred feast,  
Shall spend their days in joy unblamed, and dwell

Long time in peace, by families and tribes,  
Under paternal rule; till one shall rise,  
Of proud, ambitious heart, who, not content  
With fair equality, fraternal state,  
Will arrogate dominion undeserved  
Over his brethren, and quite dispossess  
Concord and law of Nature from the Earth;  
Hunting (and men, not beasts, shall be his game) 30  
With war and hostile snare such as refuse  
Subjection to his empire tyrannous.  
A mighty hunter thence he shall be styled  
Before the Lord, as in despite of Heaven,  
Or from Heaven claiming second sovranity;  
And from rebellion shall derive his name,  
Though of rebellion others he accuse.  
He with a crew whom like ambition joins  
With him or under him to tyrannize,  
Marching from Eden towards the west, shall find 40  
The plain, wherein a black bituminous gurge  
Boils out from under ground, the mouth of Hell.  
Of brick, and of that stuff, they cast to build  
A city and tower, whose top may reach to Heaven;  
And get themselves a name, lest far dispersed  
In foreign lands their memory be lost,  
Regardless whether good or evil fame.  
But God, who oft descends to visit men  
Unseen, and through their habitations walks  
To mark their doings, them beholding soon, 50  
Comes down to see their city, ere the tower  
Obstruct Heaven towers, and in derision sets  
Upon their tongues a various spirit, to rase  
Quite out their native language, and, instead,  
To sow a jangling noise of words unknown.  
Forthwith a hideous gabble rises loud  
Among the builders; each to other calls,  
Not understood, till hoarse, and all in rage,  
As mock'd they storm. Great laughter was in Heaven,  
And looking down, to see the hubbub strange 60  
And hear the din; thus was the building left  
Ridiculous, and the work Confusion named."

Whereto thus Adam, fatherly displeased :

"O execrable son, so to aspire  
Above his brethren, to himself assuming  
Authority usurp'd, from God not given !  
He gave us only over beast, fish, fowl,  
Dominion absolute ; that right we hold  
By his donation ; but man over men  
He made not lord ; such title to himself  
Reserving, human left from human free.  
But this usurper his encroachment proud  
Stays not on Man ; to God his tower intends  
Siege and defiance. Wretched man ! what food  
Will he convey up thither, to sustain  
Himself and his rash army, where thin air  
Above the clouds will pine his entrails gross,  
And famish him of breath, if not of bread ?"

To whom thus Michael : "Justly thou abhorr'st  
That son, who on the quiet state of men  
Such trouble brought, affecting to subdue  
Rational liberty ; yet know withal,  
Since thy original lapse, true liberty  
Is lost, which always with right reason dwells  
Twinn'd, and from her hath no dividual being.  
Reason in Man obscured, or not obey'd,  
Immediately inordinate desires  
And upstart passions catch the government  
From reason, and to servitude reduce  
Man, till then free. Therefore, since he permits  
Within himself unworthy powers to reign  
Over free reason, God, in judgment just,  
Subjects him from without to violent lords,  
Who oft as undeservedly enthrall  
His outward freedom : tyranny must be,  
Though to the tyrant thereby no excuse.  
Yet sometimes nations will decline so low  
From virtue, which is reason, that no wrong,  
But justice, and some fatal curse annex'd,  
Deprives them of their outward liberty,  
Their inward lost : witness the irreverent son  
Of him who built the ark, who, for the shame



Done to his father, heard this heavy curse,  
*Servant of servants*, on his vicious race.  
Thus will this latter, as the former world,  
Still tend from bad to worse, till God at last,  
Wearied with their iniquities, withdraw  
His presence from among them, and avert  
His holy eyes; resolving from thenceforth  
To leave them to their own polluted ways,  
And one peculiar nation to select  
From all the rest, of whom to be invoked,  
A nation from one faithful man to spring.  
Him on this side Euphrates yet residing,  
Bred up in idol-worship—Oh, that men  
(Canst thou believe?) should be so stupid grown,  
While yet the patriarch lived who scaped the Flood,  
As to forsake the living God, and fall  
To worship their own work in wood and stone  
For gods!—yet him God the Most High vouchsafes  
To call by vision from his father's house,  
His kindred, and false gods, into a land  
Which he will shew him, and from him will raise  
A mighty nation, and upon him shower  
His benediction so, that in his seed  
All nations shall be blest. He straight obeys;  
Not knowing to what land, yet firm believes.  
I see him, but thou canst not, with what faith  
He leaves his gods, his friends, and native soil,  
Ur of Chaldaea, passing now the ford  
To Haran; after him a cumbrous train  
Of herds and flocks, and numerous servitude,  
Not wandering poor, but trusting all his wealth  
With God, who call'd him, in a land unknown.  
Canaan he now attains; I see his tents  
Pitched about Sechem, and the neighbouring plain  
Of Moreh; there by promise he receives  
Gift to his progeny of all that land,  
From Hamath northward to the Desert south  
(Things by their names I call, though yet unnamed),  
From Hermon east to the great western sea;  
Mount Hermon, yonder sea, each place behold

110

120

130

140

In prospect, as I point them : on the shore,  
Mount Carmel ; here, the double-founted stream,  
Jordan, true limit eastward ; but his sons  
Shall dwell to Senir, that long ridge of hills.  
This ponder, that all nations of the Earth  
Shall in his seed be blessed. By that seed  
Is meant thy great Deliverer, who shall bruise  
The Serpent's head ; whereof to thee anon  
Plainlier shall be reveal'd. This patriarch blest,  
Whom *faithful Abraham* due time shall call,  
A son, and of his son a grandchild, leaves,  
Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown.  
The grandchild, with twelve sons increased, departs  
From Canaan to a land hereafter call'd  
Egypt, divided by the river Nile ;  
See where it flows, disgorging at seven mouths  
Into the sea. To sojourn in that land  
He comes, invited by a younger son  
In time of dearth, a son whose worthy deeds  
Raise him to be the second in that realm  
Of Pharaoh. There he dies, and leaves his race  
Growing into a nation, and now grown  
Suspected to a sequent king, who seeks  
To stop their overgrowth, as innatate guests  
Too numerous ; whence of guests he makes them slaves  
Inhospitably, and kills their infant males :  
Till, by two brethren (those two brethren call  
Moses and Aaron) sent from God to claim  
His people from enthrallment, they return  
With glory and spoil back to their promised land.  
But first the lawless tyrant, who denies  
To know their God, or message to regard,  
Must be compell'd by signs and judgments dire :  
To blood unshed the rivers must be turn'd ;  
Frogs, lice, and flies must all his palace fill  
With loathed intrusion, and fill all the land ;  
His cattle must of rot and murrain die ;  
Botches and blains must all his flesh emboss,  
And all his people ; thunder mix'd with hail,  
Hail mix'd with fire, must rend the Egyptian sky,

150

160

170

180

And wheel on the earth, devouring where it rolls;  
What it devours not, herb, or fruit, or grain,  
A darksome cloud of locusts swarming down  
Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green;  
Darkness must overshadow all his bounds,  
Palpable darkness, and blot out three days;  
Last, with one midnight stroke, all the first-born  
Of Egypt must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds 190  
The river-dragon tamed at length submits  
To let his sojourners depart, and oft  
Humbles his stubborn heart, but still as ice  
More harden'd after thaw; till, in his rage  
Pursuing whom he late dismiss'd, the sea  
Swallows him with his host, but them lets pass,  
As on dry land between two crystal walls,  
Awed by the rod of Moses so to stand  
Divided, till his rescued gain their shore:  
Such wondrous power God to his Saint will lend, 200  
Though present in his Angel, who shall go  
Before them in a cloud, and pillar of fire,  
By day a cloud, by night a pillar of fire,  
To guide them in their journey, and remove  
Behind them, while the obdurate king pursues.  
All night he will pursue, but his approach  
Darkness defends between till morning watch;  
Then through the fiery pillar and the cloud  
God looking forth will trouble all his host,  
And craze their chariot wheels: when by command 210  
Moses once more his potent rod extends  
Over the sea; the sea his rod obeys;  
On their embattled ranks the waves return,  
And overwhelm their war. The race elect  
Safe towards Canaan from the shore advance  
Through the wild Desert, not the readiest way;  
Lest, entering on the Canaanite alarm'd,  
War terrify them inexpert, and fear  
Return them back to Egypt, choosing rather  
Inglorious life with servitude; for life 220  
To noble and ignoble is more sweet  
Untrain'd in arms, where rashness leads not on.

This also shall they gain by their delay  
In the wide wilderness: there they shall found  
Their government, and their great Senate choose  
Through the twelve tribes, to rule by laws ordain'd.  
God from the mount of Sinai, whose grey top  
Shall tremble, he descending, will himself  
In thunder, lightning, and loud trumpet's sound,  
Ordain them laws; part, such as appertain  
To civil justice; part, religious rites  
Of sacrifice, informing them by types  
And shadows, of that destined Seed to bruise  
The Serpent, by what means he shall achieve  
Mankind's deliverance. But the voice of God  
To mortal ear is dreadful; they beseech  
That Moses might report to them his will,  
And terror cease; he grants what they besought,  
Instructed that to God is no access  
Without Mediator, whose high office now  
Moses in figure bears, to introduce  
One greater, of whose day he shall foretell,  
And all the Prophets in their age the times  
Of great Messiah shall sing. Thus laws and rites  
Establish'd, such delight hath God in men  
Obedient to his will, that he vouchsafes  
Among them to set up his tabernacle,  
The Holy One with mortal men to dwell.  
By his prescript a sanctuary is framed  
Of cedar, overlaid with gold; therein  
An ark, and in the ark his testimony  
The records of his covenant; over these  
A mercy-seat of gold, between the wings  
Of two bright Cherubim; before him burn  
Seven lamps, as in a zodiac representing  
The heavenly fires. Over the tent a cloud  
Shall rest by day, a fiery gleam by night,  
Save when they journey; and at length they come,  
Conducted by his Angel, to the land  
Promised to Abraham and his seed. The rest  
Were long to tell: how many battles fought;  
How many kings destroy'd, and kingdoms won;

230

240

250

260

Or how the sun shall in mid heaven stand still  
A day entire, and night's due course adjourn,  
Man's voice commanding, 'Sun, in Gibeon stand,  
And thou, Moon, in the vale of Aialon,  
Till Israel overcome!' so call the third  
From Abraham, son of Isaac, and from him  
His whole descent, who thus shall Canaan win."

Here Adam interposed: "O sent from Heaven,  
Enlightener of my darkness, gracious things  
Thou hast reveal'd, those chiefly which concern  
Just Abraham and his seed. Now first I find  
Mine eyes true opening, and my heart much eased,  
Erewhile perplex'd with thoughts what would become  
Of me and all mankind; but now I see  
His day, in whom all nations shall be blest,  
Favour unmerited by me, who sought  
Forbidden knowledge by forbidden means.  
This yet I apprehend not, why to those  
Among whom God will deign to dwell on Earth  
So many and so various laws are given:  
So many laws argue so many sins  
Among them; how can God with such reside?"

To whom thus Michael: "Doubt not but that sin  
Will reign among them, as of thee begot;  
And therefore was law given them, to evince  
Their natural pravity, by stirring up  
Sin against law to fight; that, when they see  
Law can discover sin, but not remove,  
Save by those shadowy expiations weak,  
The blood of bulls and goats, they may conclude  
Some blood more precious must be paid for Man,  
Just for unjust, that in such righteousness,  
To them by faith imputed, they may find  
Justification towards God, and peace  
Of conscience, which the law by ceremonies  
Cannot appease, nor man the moral part  
Perform, and not performing cannot live.  
So law appears imperfect, and but given  
With purpose to resign them, in full time,  
Up to a better covenant, disciplined

From shadowy types to truth, from flesh to spirit,  
From imposition of strict laws to free  
Acceptance of large grace, from servile fear  
To filial, works of law to works of faith.  
And therefore shall not Moses, though of God  
Highly beloved, being but the minister  
Of law, his people into Canaan lead;  
But Joshua, whom the Gentiles Jesus call,  
His name and office bearing, who shall quell  
The adversary Serpent, and bring back  
Through the world's wilderness long-wander'd Man  
Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.  
Meanwhile they, in their earthly Canaan placed,  
Long time shall dwell and prosper, but when sins  
National interrupt their public peace,  
Provoking God to raise them enemies,  
From whom as oft he saves them penitent,  
By Judges first, then under Kings; of whom  
The second, both for piety renown'd  
And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive  
Irrevocable, that his regal throne  
For ever shall endure. The like shall sing  
All Prophecy: That of the royal stock  
Of David (so I name this king) shall rise  
A Son, the Woman's Seed to thee foretold,  
Foretold to Abraham, as in whom shall trust  
All nations, and to kings foretold, of kings  
The last, for of his reign shall be no end.  
But first a long succession must ensue;  
And his next son, for wealth and wisdom famed,  
The clouded ark of God, till then in tents  
Wandering, shall in a glorious temple enshrine.  
Such follow him as shall be register'd  
Part good, part bad; of bad the longer scroll;  
Whose foul idolatries and other faults,  
Heap'd to the popular sum, will so incense  
God, as to leave them, and expose their land,  
Their city, his temple, and his holy ark,  
With all his sacred things, a scorn and prey  
To that proud city, whose high walls thou saw'st

310

320

330

340

Left in confusion, Babylon thence call'd.  
There in captivity he lets them dwell  
The space of seventy years; then brings them back,  
Remembering mercy, and his covenant sworn  
To David, stablish'd as the days of Heaven.  
Return'd from Babylon by leave of kings,  
Their lords, whom God disposed, the house of God  
The first re-edify, and for a while  
In mean estate live moderate, till, grown  
In wealth and multitude, factious they grow.  
But first among the priests dissension springs,  
Men who attend the altar, and should most  
Endeavour peace; their strife pollution brings  
Upon the temple itself; at last they seize  
The sceptre, and regard not David's sons;  
Then lose it to a stranger, that the true  
Anointed King Messiah might be born  
Barr'd of his right. Yet at his birth a star,  
Unseen before in Heaven, proclaims him come,  
And guides the eastern sages, who inquire  
His place, to offer incense, myrrh, and gold:  
His place of birth a solemn Angel tells  
To simple shepherds, keeping watch by night;  
They gladly thither haste, and by a quire  
Of squadron'd Angels hear his carol sung.  
A Virgin is his mother, but his Sire,  
The Power of the Most High. He shall ascend  
The throne hereditary, and bound his reign  
With Earth's wide bounds, his glory with the Heavens."  
He ceased, discerning Adam with such joy  
Surcharged as had, like grief, been dew'd in tears,  
Without the vent of words; which these he breathed:  
"O prophet of glad tidings, finisher  
Of utmost hope! now clear I understand  
What oft my steadiest thoughts have search'd in vain;  
Why our great Expectation should be call'd  
The Seed of Woman. Virgin Mother, hail!  
High in the love of Heaven, yet from my loins  
Thou shalt proceed, and from thy womb the Son  
Of God Most High; so God with Man unites.

Needs must the Serpent now his capital bruise  
Expect with mortal pain: say where and when  
Their fight, what stroke shall bruise the Victor's heel."

To whom thus Michael: "Dream not of their fight  
As of a duel, or the local wounds

Of head or heel. Not therefore joins the Son  
Manhood to Godhead, with more strength to foil  
Thy enemy; nor so is overcome

Satan, whose fall from Heaven, a deadlier bruise,  
Disabled not to give thee thy death's wound;

Which he who comes thy Saviour shall recure,  
Not by destroying Satan, but his works

In thee and in thy seed. Nor can this be,  
But by fulfilling that which thou didst want,

Obedience to the law of God, imposed  
On penalty of death, and suffering death,

The penalty to thy transgression due,  
And due to theirs which out of thine will grow:

So only can high justice rest appaid.

The law of God exact he shall fulfil

Both by obedience and by love, though love

Alone fulfil the law; thy punishment

He shall endure, by coming in the flesh

To a reproachful life and cursèd death,

Proclaiming life to all who shall believe

In his redemption, and that his obedience

Imputed becomes theirs by faith, his merits

To save them, not their own, though legal, works.

For this he shall live hated, be blasphemed,

Seized on by force, judged, and to death condemn'd,

A shameful and accurst, nail'd to the cross

By his own nation, slain for bringing life;

But to the cross he nails thy enemies,

The law that is against thee, and the sins

Of all mankind, with him there crucified,

Never to hurt them more who rightly trust

In this his satisfaction. So he dies,

But soon revives; Death over him no power

Shall long usurp; ere the third dawning light

Return, the stars of morn shall see him rise



Out of his grave, fresh as the dawning light,  
Thy ransom paid, which Man from Death redeems,  
His death for Man, as many as offer'd life  
Neglect not, and the benefit embrace  
By faith not void of works. This godlike act  
Annuls thy doom, the death thou shouldst have died,  
In sin for ever lost from life; this act  
Shall bruise the head of Satan, crush his strength, 430  
Defeating Sin and Death, his two main arms,  
And fix far deeper in his head their stings  
Than temporal death shall bruise the Victor's heel,  
Or theirs whom he redeems, a death like sleep,  
A gentle wafting to immortal life.  
Nor after resurrection shall he stay  
Longer on Earth than certain times to appear  
To his disciples, men who in his life  
Still follow'd him; to them shall leave in charge  
To teach all nations what of him they learn'd 440  
And his salvation, them who shall believe  
Baptizing in the profuent stream, the sign  
Of washing them from guilt of sin to life  
Pure, and in mind prepared, if so befall,  
For death, like that which the Redeemer died.  
All nations they shall teach; for from that day  
Not only to the sons of Abraham's loins  
Salvation shall be preach'd, but to the sons  
Of Abraham's faith wherever through the world;  
So in his seed all nations shall be blest. 450  
Then to the Heaven of Heavens he shall ascend  
With victory, triumphing through the air  
Over his foes and thine; there shall surprise  
The Serpent, Prince of air, and drag in chains  
Through all his realm, and there confounded leave;  
Then enter into glory, and resume  
His seat at God's right hand, exalted high  
Above all names in Heaven; and thence shall come,  
When this world's dissolution shall be ripe,  
With glory and power, to judge both quick and dead; 460  
To judge the unfaithful dead, but to reward  
His faithful, and receive them into bliss,

Whether in Heaven or Earth; for then the Earth  
Shall all be Paradise, far happier place  
Than this of Eden, and far happier days."

So spake the Archangel Michael; then paused,  
As at the world's great period; and our Sire,  
Replete with joy and wonder, thus replied:

"O goodness infinite, goodness immense!  
That all this good of evil shall produce,  
And evil turn to good; more wonderful  
Than that which by creation first brought forth  
Light out of darkness! Full of doubt I stand,  
Whether I should repent me now of sin  
By me done and occasion'd, or rejoice  
Much more, that much more good thereof shall spring;  
To God more glory, more good will to men  
From God, and over wrath grace shall abound.  
But say, if our Deliverer up to Heaven  
Must reascend, what will betide the few  
His faithful, left among the unfaithful herd,  
The enemies of truth? Who then shall guide  
His people, who defend? Will they not deal  
Worse with his followers than with him they dealt?"

"Be sure they will," said the Angel; "but from Heaven  
He to his own a Comforter will send,  
The promise of the Father, who shall dwell,  
His Spirit, within them, and the law of faith,  
Working through love, upon their hearts shall write,  
To guide them in all truth, and also arm  
With spiritual armour, able to resist  
Satan's assaults, and quench his fiery darts,  
What man can do against them, not afraid,  
Though to the death; against such cruelties  
With inward consolations recompensed,  
And oft supported so as shall amaze  
Their proudest persecutors. For the Spirit,  
Pour'd first on his Apostles, whom he sends  
To evangelize the nations, then on all  
Baptized, shall them with wondrous gifts endue  
To speak all tongues, and do all miracles,  
As did their Lord before them. Thus they win

Great numbers of each nation to receive  
With joy the tidings brought from Heaven: at length  
Their ministry perform'd, and race well run,  
Their doctrine and their story written left,  
They die; but in their room, as they forewarn,  
Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous wolves,  
Who all the sacred mysteries of Heaven  
To their own vile advantages shall turn  
Of lucre and ambition, and the truth  
With superstitions and traditions taint,  
Left only in those written records pure,  
Though not but by the Spirit understood.  
Then shall they seek to avail themselves of names,  
Places, and titles, and with these to join  
Secular power, though feigning still to act  
By spiritual; to themselves appropriating  
The Spirit of God, promised alike and given  
To all believers; and, from that pretence,  
Spiritual laws by carnal power shall force  
On every conscience, laws which none shall find  
Left them enroll'd, or what the Spirit within  
Shall on the heart engrave. What will they then,  
But force the Spirit of Grace itself, and bind  
His consort, Liberty? what but unbuild  
His living temples, built by faith to stand,  
Their own faith, not another's? for, on Earth,  
Who against faith and conscience can be heard  
Infallible? Yet many will presume:  
Whence heavy persecution shall arise  
On all who in the worship persevere  
Of Spirit and Truth; the rest, far greater part,  
Will deem in outward rites and specious forms  
Religion satisfied; Truth shall retire  
Bestuck with slanderous darts, and works of faith  
Rarely be found. So shall the world go on,  
To good malignant, to bad men benign,  
Under her own weight groaning till the day  
Appear of respiration to the just  
And vengeance to the wicked, at return  
Of Him so lately promised to thy aid,

510

520

530

540

The Woman's Seed, obscurely then foretold,  
Now amplier known thy Saviour and thy Lord;  
Last in the clouds from Heaven to be reveal'd  
In glory of the Father, to dissolve  
Satan with his perverted world; then raise  
From the conflagrant mass, purged and refined,  
New Heavens, new Earth, ages of endless date,  
Founded in righteousness and peace and love,  
To bring forth fruits, joy and eternal bliss."

550

He ended; and thus Adam last replied:  
"How soon hath thy prediction, Seer blest,  
Measured this transient world, the race of time,  
Till time stand fix'd! Beyond is all abyss,  
Eternity, whose end no eye can reach.  
Greatly instructed I shall hence depart,  
Greatly in peace of thought, and have my fill  
Of knowledge, what this vessel can contain;  
Beyond which was my folly to aspire.  
Henceforth I learn that to obey is best,  
And love with fear the only God, to walk  
As in his presence, ever to observe  
His providence, and on him sole depend,  
Merciful over all his works, with good  
Still overcoming evil, and by small  
Accomplishing great things, by things deem'd weak  
Subverting worldly strong, and worldly wise  
By simply meek; that suffering for truth's sake  
Is fortitude to highest victory,  
And, to the faithful, death the gate of life;  
Taught this by his example whom I now  
Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blest."

560

570

To whom thus also the Angel last replied:  
"This having learn'd, thou hast attain'd the sum  
Of wisdom; hope no higher, though all the stars  
Thou knew'st by name, and all the ethereal powers,  
All secrets of the deep, all Nature's works,  
Or works of God in heaven, air, earth, or sea,  
And all the riches of this world enjoy'dst,  
And all the rule, one empire. Only add  
Deeds to thy knowledge answerable; add faith,

580

Add virtue, patience, temperance; add love,  
By name to come called charity, the soul  
Of all the rest: then wilt thou not be loth  
To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess  
A Paradise within thee, happier far.  
Let us descend now therefore from this top  
Of speculation; for the hour precise  
Exacts our parting hence; and see! the guards,  
By me encamp'd on yonder hill, expect  
Their motion, at whose front a flaming sword,  
In signal of remove, waves fiercely round.  
We may no longer stay: go, waken Eve;  
Her also I with gentle dreams have calm'd,  
Portending good, and all her spirits composed  
To meek submission: thou at season fit  
Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard;  
Chiefly what may concern her faith to know,  
The great deliverance by her seed to come  
(For by the Woman's Seed) on all mankind;  
That ye may live, which will be many days,  
Both in one faith unanimous; though sad  
With cause for evils past, yet much more cheer'd  
With meditation on the happy end."

590

600

He ended, and they both descend the hill.  
Descended, Adam to the bower where Eve  
Lay sleeping ran before, but found her waked;  
And thus with words not sad she him received:  
"Whence thou return'st, and whither went'st, I know; 610  
For God is also in sleep, and dreams advise,  
Which he hath sent propitious, some great good  
Presaging, since with sorrow and heart's distress  
Wearied I fell asleep. But now lead on;  
In me is no delay; with thee to go  
Is to stay here; without thee here to stay  
Is to go hence unwilling; thou to me  
Art all things under Heaven, all places thou,  
Who for my wilful crime art banish'd hence.  
This further consolation yet secure  
I carry hence: though all by me is lost,  
Such favour I unworthy am vouchsafed,

620

By me the Promised Seed shall all restore."

So spake our mother Eve, and Adam heard  
Well pleased, but answer'd not; for now too nigh  
The Archangel stood, and from the other hill  
To their fix'd station, all in bright array,  
The Cherubim descended; on the ground  
Gliding meteorous, as evening mist  
Risen from a river o'er the marish glides,  
And gathers ground fast at the labourer's heel  
Homeward returning. High in front advanced,  
The brandish'd sword of God before them blazed,  
Fierce as a comet; which with torrid heat,  
And vapour as the Libyan air adust,  
Began to parch that temperate clime; whereat  
In either hand the hastening angel caught  
Our lingering parents, and to the eastern gate  
Led them direct, and down the cliff as fast  
To the subjected plain; then disappear'd.  
They, looking back, all the eastern side beheld  
Of Paradise, so late their happy seat,  
Waved over by that flaming brand; the gate  
With dreadful faces throng'd and fiery arms.  
Some natural tears they dropp'd, but wiped them soon;  
The world was all before them, where to choose  
Their place of rest, and Providence their guide.  
They, hand in hand, with wandering steps and slow,  
Through Eden took their solitary way.

630

640

## PARADISE REGAINED.

### BOOK I.

I, WHO erewhile the happy Garden sung  
By one man's disobedience lost, now sing  
Recover'd Paradise to all mankind,  
By one man's firm obedience fully tried  
Through all temptation, and the Tempter foil'd  
In all his wiles, defeated and repuls'd,  
And Eden raised in the waste Wilderness.

Thou Spirit, who led'st this glorious Eremit  
Into the desert, his victorious field  
Against the spiritual foe, and brought'st him thence  
By proof the undoubted Son of God, inspire, 10  
As thou art wont, my prompted song, else mute,  
And bear through highth or depth of Nature's bounds,  
With prosperous wing full summ'd, to tell of deeds  
Above heroic, though in secret done,  
And unrecorded left through many an age:  
Worthy to have not remain'd so long unsung.

Now had the great Proclaimer, with a voice  
More awful than the sound of trumpet, cried  
Repentance, and Heaven's kingdom nigh at hand 20  
To all baptized. To his great baptism flock'd  
With awe the regions round, and with them came  
From Nazareth the son of Joseph deem'd  
To the flood Jordan, came as then obscure,  
Unmark'd, unknown. But him the Baptist soon  
Descried, divinely warn'd, and witness bore  
As to his worthier, and would have resign'd

To him his heavenly office, nor was long  
His witness unconfirm'd: on him baptized  
Heaven open'd, and in likeness of a dove  
The Spirit descended, while the Father's voice  
From Heaven pronounced him his beloved Son.  
That heard the Adversary, who, roving still  
About the world, at that assembly famed  
Would not be last, and, with the voice divine  
Nigh thunder-struck, the exalted man, to whom  
Such high attest was given, a while survey'd  
With wonder; then with envy fraught and rage  
Flies to his place, nor rests, but in mid air  
To council summons all his mighty peers,  
Within thick clouds and dark tenfold involved,  
A gloomy consistory; and them amidst,  
With looks agast and sad, he thus bespake:

"O ancient Powers of Air and this wide World  
(For much more willingly I mention Air,  
This our old conquest, than remember Hell,  
Our hated habitation), well ye know  
How many ages, as the years of men,  
This Universe we have possess'd, and ruled  
In manner at our will the affairs of Earth,  
Since Adam and his facile consort Eve  
Lost Paradise, deceived by me, though since  
With dread attending when that fatal wound  
Shall be inflicted by the seed of Eve  
Upon my head. Long the decrees of Heaven  
Delay, for longest time to him is short;  
And now too soon for us the circling hours  
This dreaded time have compass'd, wherein we  
Must bide the stroke of that long-threaten'd wound  
(At least, if so we can, and by the head  
Broken be not intended all our power  
To be infringed, our freedom and our being  
In this fair empire won of Earth and Air)—  
For this ill news I bring: The Woman's Seed,  
Destined to this, is late of woman born.  
His birth to our just fear gave no small cause;  
But his growth now to youth's full flower, displaying



All virtue, grace and wisdom to achieve  
Things highest, greatest, multiplies my fear.  
Before him a great Prophet, to proclaim  
His coming, is sent harbinger, who all:  
Invites, and in the consecrated stream  
Pretends to wash off sin, and fit them so  
Purified to receive him pure, or rather  
To do him honour as their King. All come,  
And he himself among them was baptized—  
Not thence to be more pure, but to receive  
The testimony of Heaven, that who he is  
Thenceforth the nations may not doubt. I saw  
The Prophet do him reverence; on him, rising  
Out of the water, Heaven above the clouds  
Unfold her crystal doors; thence on his head  
A perfect dove descend, whate'er it meant;  
And out of Heaven the sovran voice I heard,  
'This is my Son beloved,—in him am pleased.'  
His mother then is mortal, but his Sire  
He who obtains the monarchy of Heaven;  
And what will he not do to advance his Son?  
His first-begot we know, and sore have felt,  
When his fierce thunder drove us to the Deep;  
Who this is we must learn, for Man he seems  
In all his lineaments, though in his face  
The glimpses of his Father's glory shine.  
Ye see our danger on the utmost edge  
Of hazard, which admits no long debate,  
But must with something sudden be opposed,  
Not force, but well-couch'd fraud, well-woven snares,  
Ere in the head of nations he appear,  
Their king, their leader, and supreme on Earth.  
I, when no other durst, sole undertook  
The dismal expedition to find out  
And ruin Adam, and the exploit perform'd  
Successfully: a calmer voyage now  
Will waft me; and the way found prosperous once  
Induces best to hope of like success."

He ended, and his words impression left  
Of much amazement to the infernal crew,

70

80

90

100

Distracted and surprised with deep dismay  
At these sad tidings. But no time was then  
For long indulgence to their fears or grief:  
110 Unanimous they all commit the care  
And management of this main enterprise  
To him, their great Dictator, whose attempt  
At first against mankind so well had thrived  
In Adam's overthrow, and led their march  
From Hell's deep-vaulted den to dwell in light,  
Regents, and potentates, and kings, yea gods,  
Of many a pleasant realm and province wide.  
So to the coast of Jordan he directs  
His easy steps, girded with snaky wiles,  
120 Where he might likeliest find this new-declared,  
This man of men, attested Son of God,  
Temptation and all guile on him to try,  
So to subvert whom he suspected raised  
To end his reign on Earth so long enjoy'd:  
But contrary unweeting he fulfill'd  
The purposed counsel, pre-ordain'd and fix'd,  
Of the Most High, who, in full frequency bright  
Of Angels, thus to Gabriel smiling spake:  
"Gabriel, this day by proof thou shalt behold,  
130 Thou and all Angels conversant on Earth  
With man or men's affairs, how I begin  
To verify that solemn message late,  
On which I sent thee to the Virgin pure  
In Galilee, that she should bear a son,  
Great in renown, and call'd the Son of God.  
Then told'st her, doubting how these things could be  
To her a virgin, that on her should come  
The Holy Ghost, and the Power of the Highest  
O'ershadow her. This man, born and now upgrown,  
140 To shew him worthy of his birth divine  
And high prediction, henceforth I expose  
To Satan; let him tempt, and now assay  
His utmost subtlety, because he boasts  
And vaunts of his great cunning to the throng  
Of his apostasy. He might have learnt  
Less overweening, since he fail'd in Job,

Whose constant perseverance overcame  
Whate'er his cruel malice could invent.  
He now shall know I can produce a man,  
Of female seed, far abler to resist  
All his solicitations, and at length  
All his vast force, and drive him back to Hell,  
Winning by conquest what the first man lost  
By fallacy surprised. But first I mean  
To exercise him in the Wilderness;  
There he shall first lay down the rudiments  
Of his great warfare, ere I send him forth  
To conquer Sin and Death, the two grand foes,  
By humiliation and strong sufferance:  
His weakness shall o'ercome Satanic strength,  
And all the world, and mass of sinful flesh;  
That all the Angels and ethereal Powers,  
They now, and men hereafter, may discern  
From what consummate virtue I have chose  
This perfect man, by merit call'd my Son,  
To earn salvation for the sons of men."

So spake the Eternal Father, and all Heaven  
Admiring stood a space; then into hymns  
Burst forth, and in celestial measures moved,  
Circling the throne and singing, while the hand  
Sung with the voice, and this the argument:

"Victory and triumph to the Son of God,  
Now entering his great duel, not of arms,  
But to vanquish by wisdom hellish wiles!  
The Father knows the Son; therefore secure  
Ventures his filial virtue, though untried,  
Against whate'er may tempt, whate'er seduce,  
Allure, or terrify, or undermine.  
Be frustrate, all ye stratagems of Hell,  
And, devilish machinations, come to nought!"

So they in Heaven their odes and vigils tuned.  
Meanwhile the Son of God, who yet some days  
Lodged in Bethabara, where John baptized,  
Musing and much revolving in his breast  
How best the mighty work he might begin  
Of Saviour to mankind, and which way first

Publish his godlike office now mature,  
One day forth walk'd alone, the Spirit leading,  
And his deep thoughts, the better to converse  
With solitude, till, far from track of men,  
Thought following thought, and step by step led on,  
He enter'd now the bordering Desert wild,  
And, with dark shades and rocks environ'd round,  
His holy meditations thus pursued:

"O what a multitude of thoughts at once  
Awaken'd in me swarm, while I consider  
What from within I feel myself, and hear  
What from without comes often to my ears,  
Ill sorting with my present state compar'd!  
When I was yet a child, no childish play  
To me was pleasing; all my mind was set  
Serious to learn and know, and thence to do,  
What might be public good: myself I thought  
Born to that end, born to promote all truth,  
All righteous things. Therefore, above my years,  
The Law of God I read, and found it sweet;  
Made it my whole delight, and in it grew  
To such perfection that, ere yet my age  
Had measured twice six years, at our great Feast  
I went into the Temple, there to hear  
The teachers of our Law, and to propose  
What might improve my knowledge or their own,  
And was admired by all. Yet this not all  
To which my spirit aspired. Victorious deeds  
Flamed in my heart, heroic acts; one while  
To rescue Israel from the Roman yoke;  
Then to subdue and quell o'er all the earth  
Brute violence and proud tyrannic power,  
Till truth were freed, and equity restored:  
Yet held it more humane, more heavenly, first  
By winning words to conquer willing hearts,  
And make persuasion do the work of fear;  
At least to try, and teach the erring soul,  
Not wilfully misdoing, but unaware  
Misled; the stubborn only to subdue.  
These growing thoughts my mother soon perceiving,

190

200

210

220

By words at times cast forth, inly rejoiced,  
And said to me apart, 'High are thy thoughts,  
O Son! but nourish them, and let them soar 230  
To what highth sacred virtue and true worth  
Can raise them, though above example high;  
By matchless deeds express thy matchless Sire.  
For know, thou art no son of mortal man;  
Though men esteem thee low of parentage,  
Thy Father is the Eternal King, who rules  
All Heaven and Earth, Angels and sons of men.  
A messenger from God foretold thy birth  
Conceived in me a virgin; he foretold 240  
Thou should'st be great, and sit on David's throne  
And of thy kingdom there should be no end.  
At thy nativity a glorious quire  
Of Angels in the fields of Bethlehem sung  
To shepherds, watching at their folds by night,  
And told them the Messiah now was born,  
Where they might see him; and to thee they came,  
Directed to the manger where thou lay'st;  
For in the inn was left no better room.  
A star, not seen before, in heaven appearing, 250  
Guided the wise men thither from the East,  
To honour thee with incense, myrrh, and gold;  
By whose bright course led on they found the place,  
Affirming it thy star, new-graven in heaven,  
By which they knew thee King of Israel born.  
Just Simeon and prophetic Anna, warn'd  
By vision, found thee in the Temple, and spake,  
Before the altar and the vested priest,  
Like things of thee to all that present stood.  
This having heard, straight I again revolved 260  
The Law and Prophets, searching what was writ  
Concerning the Messiah, to our scribes  
Known partly, and soon found of whom they spake  
I am; this chiefly, that my way must lie  
Through many a hard assay, even to the death,  
Ere I the promised kingdom can attain,  
Or work redemption for mankind, whose sins'  
Full weight must be transferr'd upon my head.

Yet, neither thus dishearten'd, or dismay'd,  
The time prefix'd I waited; when behold  
The Baptist (of whose birth I oft had heard,  
Not knew by sight) now come, who was to come  
Before Messiah, and his way prepare!  
I, as all others, to his baptism came,  
Which I believed was from above; but he  
Straight knew me, and with loudest voice proclaim'd  
Me him (for it was shewn him so from Heaven),  
Me him whose harbinger he was; and first  
Refused on me his baptism to confer,  
As much his greater, and was hardly won.  
But, as I rose out of the laving stream,  
Heaven open'd her eternal doors, from whence  
The Spirit descended on me like a dove;  
And last, the sum of all, my Father's voice,  
Audibly heard from Heaven, pronounced me his,  
Me his beloved Son, in whom alone  
He was well pleased: by which I knew the time  
Now full, that I no more should live obscure,  
But openly begin, as best becomes  
The authority which I derived from Heaven.  
And now by some strong motion I am led  
Into this wilderness; to what intent  
I learn not yet; perhaps I need not know;  
For what concerns my knowledge God reveals."

So spake our Morning Star, then in his rise,  
And looking round on every side beheld  
A pathless desert, dusk with horrid shades.  
The way he came not having mark'd, return  
Was difficult, by human steps untrod;  
And he still on was led, but with such thoughts  
Accompanied of things past and to come  
Lodged in his breast as well might recommend  
Such solitude before choicest society.

Full forty days he pass'd—whether on hill  
Sometimes, anon in shady vale, each night  
Under the covert of some ancient oak  
Or cedar to defend him from the dew,  
Or harbour'd in one cave, is not reveal'd;

Nor tasted human food, nor hunger felt,  
 Till those days ended; hunger'd then at last  
 Among wild beasts. They at his sight grew mild,  
 Nor sleeping him nor waking harm'd; his walk  
 The fiery serpent fled and noxious worm;  
 The lion and fierce tiger glared aloof.  
 But now an aged man in rural weeds,  
 Following, as seem'd, the quest of some stray ewe,  
 Or wither'd sticks to gather, which might serve  
 Against a winter's day, when winds blow keen,  
 To warm him wet return'd from field at eve,  
 He saw approach; who first with curious eye  
 Perused him, then with words thus utter'd spake: 310

"Sir, what ill chance hath brought thee to this place,  
 So far from path or road of men, who pass  
 In troop or caravan? for single none  
 Durst ever, who return'd, and dropt not here  
 His carcase, pined with hunger and with drouth.  
 I ask the rather, and the more admire,  
 For that to me thou seem'st the man whom late  
 Our new baptizing Prophet at the ford  
 Of Jordan honour'd so, and call'd thee Son  
 Of God. I saw and heard, for we sometimes  
 Who dwell this wild, constrain'd by want, come forth 320  
 To town or village nigh (nighest is far),  
 Where aught we hear, and curious are to hear,  
 What happens new; fame also finds us out."

To whom the Son of God: "Who brought me hither  
 Will bring me hence; no other guide I seek."

"By miracle he may," replied the swain;  
 "What other way I see not; for we here  
 Live on tough roots and stubs, to thirst inured  
 More than the camel, and to drink go far,  
 Men to much misery and hardship born. 330  
 But, if thou be the Son of God, command  
 That out of these hard stones be made thee bread;  
 So shalt thou save thyself, and us relieve  
 With food, whereof we wretched seldom taste."

He ended, and the Son of God replied:  
 "Think'st thou such force in bread? Is it not written

(For I discern thee other than thou seem'st),  
Man lives not by bread only, but each word  
Proceeding from the mouth of God, who fed  
Our fathers here with manna? In the Mount  
Moses was forty days, nor eat nor drank;  
And forty days Elijah without food  
Wander'd this barren waste; the same I now.  
Why dost thou then suggest to me distrust,  
Knowing who I am, as I know who thou art?"

330

Whom thus answer'd the Arch-Fiend, now undisguised:

"Tis true, I am that Spirit unfortunate  
Who, leagued with millions more in rash revolt,  
Kept not my happy station, but was driven  
With them from bliss to the bottomless Deep,  
Yet to that hideous place not so confined  
By rigour unconniving but that oft,  
Leaving my dolorous prison, I enjoy  
Large liberty to round this globe of Earth,  
Or range in the Air; nor from the Heaven of Heavens  
Hath he excluded my resort sometimes.

360

I came among the Sons of God when he  
Gave up into my hands Uzzean Job,  
To prove him, and illustrate his high worth;  
And when to all his Angels he proposed  
To draw the proud king Ahab into fraud,  
That he might fall in Ramoth, they demurring,  
I undertook that office, and the tongues  
Of all his flattering prophets glibb'd with lies  
To his destruction, as I had in charge:  
For what he bids I do. Though I have lost  
Much lustre of my native brightness, lost  
To be beloved of God, I have not lost  
To love, at least contemplate and admire,  
What I see excellent in good, or fair,  
Or virtuous; I should so have lost all sense.  
What can be then less in me than desire  
To see thee and approach thee, whom I know  
Declared the Son of God, to hear attent  
Thy wisdom, and behold thy godlike deeds?  
Men generally think me much a foe

370

380



Nor tasted human food, nor hunger felt,  
Till those days ended; hunger'd then at last  
Among wild beasts. They at his sight grew mild,  
Nor sleeping him nor waking harm'd; his walk  
The fiery serpent fled and noxious worm;  
The lion and fierce tiger glared aloof.  
But now an aged man in rural weeds,  
Following, as seem'd, the quest of some stray ewe,  
Or wither'd sticks to gather, which might serve  
Against a winter's day, when winds blow keen,  
To warm him wet return'd from field at eve,  
He saw approach; who first with curious eye  
Perused him, then with words thus utter'd spake: 310

"Sir, what ill chance hath brought thee to this place,  
So far from path or road of men, who pass  
In troop or caravan? for single none  
Durst ever, who return'd, and dropt not here  
His carcase, pined with hunger and with drouth.  
I ask the rather, and the more admire,  
For that to me thou seem'st the man whom late  
Our new baptizing Prophet at the ford  
Of Jordan honour'd so, and call'd thee Son  
Of God. I saw and heard, for we sometimes 320  
Who dwell this wild, constrain'd by want, come forth  
To town or village nigh (nighest is far),  
Where aught we hear, and curious are to hear,  
What happens new; fame also finds us out."

To whom the Son of God: "Who brought me hither  
Will bring me hence; no other guide I seek."

"By miracle he may," replied the swain;  
"What other way I see not; for we here  
Live on tough roots and stubs, to thirst inured  
More than the camel, and to drink go far,  
Men to much misery and hardship born. 330  
But, if thou be the Son of God, command  
That out of these hard stones be made thee bread;  
So shalt thou save thyself, and us relieve  
With food, whereof we wretched seldom taste."

He ended, and the Son of God replied:  
"Think'st thou such force in bread? Is it not written

(For I discern thee other than thou seem'st),  
Man lives not by bread only, but each word  
Proceeding from the mouth of God, who fed 350  
Our fathers here with manna? In the Mount  
Moses was forty days, nor eat nor drank;  
And forty days Elijah without food  
Wander'd this barren waste; the same I now.  
Why dost thou then suggest to me distrust,  
Knowing who I am, as I know who thou art?"

Whom thus answer'd the Arch-Fiend, now undisguised:

"Tis true, I am that Spirit unfortunate  
Who, leagued with millions more in rash revolt,  
Kept not my happy station, but was driven 360  
With them from bliss to the bottomless Deep,  
Yet to that hideous place not so confined  
By rigour unconniving but that oft,  
Leaving my dolorous prison, I enjoy  
Large liberty to round this globe of Earth,  
Or range in the Air; nor from the Heaven of Heavens  
Hath he excluded my resort sometimes.  
I came among the Sons of God when he  
Gave up into my hands Uzzean Job,  
To prove him, and illustrate his high worth; 370  
And when to all his Angels he proposed  
To draw the proud king Ahab into fraud,  
That he might fall in Ramoth, they demurring,  
I undertook that office, and the tongues  
Of all his flattering prophets glibb'd with lies  
To his destruction, as I had in charge:  
For what he bids I do. Though I have lost  
Much lustre of my native brightness, lost  
To be beloved of God, I have not lost  
To love, at least contemplate and admire, 380  
What I see excellent in good, or fair,  
Or virtuous; I should so have lost all sense.  
What can be then less in me than desire  
To see thee and approach thee, whom I know  
Declared the Son of God, to hear attent  
Thy wisdom, and behold thy godlike deeds?  
Men generally think me much a foe

To all mankind. Why should I? they to me  
Never did wrong or violence. By them  
I lost not what I lost; rather by them  
I gain'd what I have gain'd, and with them dwell  
Copartner in these regions of the World,  
If not disposer, lend them oft my aid,  
Oft my advice by presages and signs,  
And answers, oracles, portents, and dreams,  
Whereby they may direct their future life.  
Envy, they say, excites me, thus to gain  
Companions of my misery and woe!  
At first it may be; but, long since with woe  
Nearer acquainted, now I feel by proof  
That fellowship in pain divides not smart,  
Nor lightens aught each man's peculiar load;  
Small consolation then were Man adjoin'd.  
This wounds me most (what can it less?) that Man,  
Man fall'n, shall be restored, I never more."

399

400

To whom our Saviour sternly thus replied:  
"Deservedly thou grieve'st, composed of lies  
From the beginning, and in lies wilt end,  
Who boast'st release from Hell, and leave to come  
Into the Heaven of Heavens. Thou comest indeed,  
As a poor miserable captive thrall  
Comes to the place where he before had sat  
Among the prime in splendour, now deposed,  
Ejected, emptied, gazed, unpitied, shunn'd,  
A spectacle of ruin or of scorn  
To all the host of Heaven. The happy place  
Imparts to thee no happiness, no joy—  
Rather inflames thy torment, representing  
Lost bliss, to thee no more communicable;  
So never more in Hell than when in Heaven.  
But thou art serviceable to Heaven's King!  
Wilt thou impute to obedience what thy fear  
Extorts, or pleasure to do ill excites?  
What but thy malice moved thee to misdeem  
Of righteous Job, then cruelly to afflict him  
With all inflictions? but his patience won.  
The other service was thy chosen task,

410

420

To be a liar in four hundred mouths ;  
For lying is thy sustenance, thy food.  
Yet thou pretend'st to truth ! all oracles 430  
By thee are given, and what confess'd more true  
Among the nations ? That hath been thy craft,  
By mixing somewhat true to vent more lies.  
But what have been thy answers ? what but dark,  
Ambiguous, and with double sense deluding,  
Which they who ask'd have seldom understood,  
And, not well understood, as good not known ?  
Who ever, by consulting at thy shrine,  
Return'd the wiser, or the more instruct  
To fly or follow what concerned him most, 440  
And run not sooner to his fatal snare ?  
For God hath justly given the nations up  
To thy delusions ; justly, since they fell  
Idolatrous. But, when his purpose is  
Among them to declare his providence,  
To thee not known, whence hast thou then thy truth,  
But from him, or his Angels president  
In every province, who, themselves disdaining  
To approach thy temples, give thee in command  
What to the smallest tittle thou shalt say 450  
To thy adorers ? Thou with trembling fear,  
Or like a fawning parasite, obey'st ;  
Then to thyself ascribest the truth foretold.  
But this thy glory shall be soon retrench'd ;  
No more shalt thou by oracling abuse  
The Gentiles ; henceforth oracles are ceased,  
And thou no more with pomp and sacrifice  
Shall be inquired at Delphos or elsewhere,  
At least in vain, for they shall find thee mute.  
God hath now sent his living Oracle 460  
Into the world to teach his final will,  
And sends his Spirit of truth henceforth to dwell  
In pious hearts, an inward oracle  
To all truth requisite for men to know."

So spake our Saviour ; but the subtle Fiend,  
Though inly stung with anger and disdain,  
Dissembled, and this answer smooth return'd :

"Sharply thou hast insisted on rebuke,  
And urged me hard with doings, which not will  
But misery hath wrested from me. Where 470  
Easily canst thou find one miserable,  
And not enforced oft-times to part from truth,  
If it may stand him more in stead to lie,  
Say and unsay, feign, flatter, or abjure?  
But thou art placed above me; thou art Lord;  
From thee I can and must submit endure  
Check or reproof, and glad to scape so quit.  
Hard are the ways of truth, and rough to walk,  
Smooth on the tongue discoursed, pleasing to the ear,  
And tunable as sylvan pipe or song; 480  
What wonder then if I delight to hear  
Her dictates from thy mouth? most men admire  
Virtue who follow not her lore. Permit me  
To hear thee when I come (since no man comes),  
And talk at least, though I despair to attain.  
Thy Father, who is holy, wise, and pure,  
Suffers the hypocrite or atheous priest  
To tread his sacred courts, and minister  
About his altar, handling holy things,  
Praying or vowing, and vouchsafed his voice 490  
To Balaam reprobate, a prophet yet  
Inspired: disdain not such access to me."

To whom our Saviour, with unalter'd brow:  
"Thy coming hither, though I know thy scope,  
I bid not, or forbid. Do as thou find'st  
Permission from above; thou canst not more."

He added not; and Satan, bowing low  
His gray dissimulation, disappear'd,  
Into thin air diffused: for now began  
Night with her sullen wing to double-shade 500  
The desert; fowls in their clay nests were couch'd;  
And now wild beasts came forth the woods to roam.

## BOOK II .

MEANWHILE the new-baptized, who yet remain'd  
At Jordan with the Baptist, and had seen  
Him whom they heard so late expressly call'd  
Jesus Messiah, Son of God declared,  
And on that high authority had believed,  
And with him talk'd, and with him lodged, I mean  
Andrew and Simon, famous after known,  
With others, though in Holy Writ not named,  
Now missing him, their joy so lately found,  
So lately found and so abruptly gone,  
Began to doubt, and doubted many days,  
And, as the days increased, increased their doubt.  
Sometimes they thought he might be only shewn,  
And for a time caught up to God, as once  
Moses was in the Mount and missing long,  
And the great Thisbite, who on fiery wheels  
Rode up to Heaven, yet once again to come.  
Therefore, as those young prophets then with care  
Sought lost Elijah, so in each place these  
Nigh to Bethabara; in Jericho  
The city of palms, Ænon, and Salem old,  
Machærus, and each town or city wall'd  
On this side the broad lake Genezaret,  
Or in Peræa; but return'd in vain.  
Then on the bank of Jordan, by a creek,  
Where winds with reeds and osiers whispering play,  
Plain fishermen (no greater men them call),  
Close in a cottage low together got,  
Their unexpected loss and complaints outbreathed:  
"Alas, from what high hope to what relapse  
Unlook'd-for are we fall'n! Our eyes beheld  
Messiah certainly now come, so long  
Expected of our fathers; we have heard  
His words, his wisdom full of grace and truth.  
Now, now, for sure, deliverance is at hand;

The kingdom shall to Israel be restored:  
Thus we rejoiced, but soon our joy is turn'd  
Into perplexity and new amaze.  
For whither is he gone? what accident  
Hath rapt him from us? will he now retire 40  
After appearance, and again prolong  
Our expectation? God of Israel,  
Send thy Messiah forth; the time is come.  
Behold the kings of the earth, how they oppress  
Thy Chosen, to what highth their power unjust  
They have exalted, and behind them cast  
All fear of thee; arise, and vindicate  
Thy glory; free thy people from their yoke!  
But let us wait; thus far he hath perform'd,  
Sent his Anointed, and to us reveal'd him, 50  
By his great Prophet pointed at and shewn  
In public, and with him we have conversed.  
Let us be glad of this, and all our fears  
Lay on his providence; he will not fail,  
Nor will withdraw him now, nor will recall,  
Mock us with his blest sight, then snatch him hence:  
Soon we shall see our hope, our joy, return."

Thus they out of their complaints new hope resume  
To find whom at the first they found unsought.  
But to his mother Mary, when she saw 60  
Others return'd from baptism, not her Son,  
Nor left at Jordan, tidings of him none,  
Within her breast though calm, her breast though pure,  
Motherly cares and fears got head, and raised  
Some troubled thoughts, which she in sighs thus clad:  
"Oh, what avails me now that honour high,  
To have conceived of God, or that salute,  
'Hail, highly favour'd, among women blest!'  
While I to sorrows am no less advanced,  
And fears as eminent above the lot 70  
Of other women, by the birth I bore:  
In such a season born, when scarce a shed  
Could be obtain'd to shelter him or me  
From the bleak air? A stable was our warmth,  
A manger his; yet soon enforced to fly

Thence into Egypt, till the murderous king  
 Were dead, who sought his life, and missing fill'd  
 With infant blood the streets of Bethlehem.  
 From Egypt home return'd, in Nazareth  
 Hath been our dwelling many years; his life 80  
 Private, unactive, calm, contemplative,  
 Little suspicious to any king. But now,  
 Full grown to man, acknowledged, as I hear,  
 By John the Baptist, and in public shewn,  
 Son own'd from Heaven by his Father's voice,  
 I look'd for some great change. To honour? no;  
 But trouble, as old Simeon plain foretold,  
 That to the fall and rising he should be  
 Of many in Israel, and to a sign 90  
 Spoken against, that through my very soul  
 A sword shall pierce. This is my favour'd lot,  
 My exaltation to afflictions high!  
 Afflicted I may be, it seems, and blest!  
 I will not argue that, nor will repine.  
 But where delays he now? Some great intent  
 Conceals him. When twelve years he scarce had seen,  
 I lost him, but so found as well I saw  
 He could not lose himself, but went about  
 His Father's business. What he meant I mused,  
 Since understand; much more his absence now 100  
 Thus long to some great purpose he obscures.  
 But I to wait with patience am inured;  
 My heart hath been a storehouse long of things  
 And sayings laid up, portending strange events."

Thus Mary, pondering oft, and oft to mind  
 Recalling what remarkably had pass'd  
 Since first her salutation heard, with thoughts  
 Meekly composed awaited the fulfilling:  
 The while her Son, tracing the desert wild,  
 Sole, but with holiest meditations fed, 110  
 Into himself descended, and at once  
 All his great work to come before him set,  
 How to begin, how to accomplish best  
 His end of being on Earth, and mission high.  
 For Satan, with sly preface to return,



Had left him vacant, and with speed was gone  
Up to the middle region of thick air,  
Where all his Potentates in council sat.  
There, without sign of boast, or sign of joy,  
Solicitous and blank, he thus began:

120

"Princes, Heaven's ancient Sons, Ethereal Thrones,  
Demonian Spirits now, from the element  
Each of his reign allotted, rightlier call'd,  
Powers of Fire, Air, Water, and Earth beneath  
(So may we hold our place and these mild seats  
Without new trouble!), such an enemy  
Is risen to invade us, who no less  
Threatens than our expulsion down to Hell.

I, as I undertook, and with the vote  
Consenting in full frequency was empower'd,  
Have found him, view'd him, tasted him; but find  
Far other labour to be undergone

130

Than when I dealt with Adam, first of men,  
Though Adam by his wife's allurements fell  
However to this Man inferior far,  
If he be Man by mother's side at least,  
With more than human gifts from Heaven adorn'd,  
Perfections absolute, graces divine,  
And amplitude of mind to greatest deeds.

Therefore I am return'd, lest confidence  
Of my success with Eve in Paradise  
Deceive ye to persuasion over-sure

140

Of like succeeding here. I summon all  
Rather to be in readiness with hand  
Or counsel to assist, lest I, who erst  
Thought none my equal, now be overmatch'd."

So spake the old Serpent doubting, and from all  
With clamour was assured their utmost aid  
At his command; when from amidst them rose  
Belial, the dissolutes Spirit that fell,  
The sensualest, and after Asmodai

150

The fleshliest Incubus, and thus advised:

"Set women in his eye and in his walk,  
Among daughters of men the fairest found.  
Many are in each region passing fair

As the noon sky, more like to goddesses  
Than mortal creatures, graceful and discreet,  
Expert in amorous arts, enchanting tongues  
Persuasive, virgin majesty with mild  
And sweet allay'd, yet terrible to approach,  
Skill'd to retire, and in retiring draw  
Hearts after them tangled in amorous nets.  
Such object hath the power to soften and tame  
Severest temper, smooth the rugged'st brow,  
Enerve, and with voluptuous hope dissolve,  
Draw out with credulous desire, and lead  
At will the manliest, resolute'st breast,  
As the magnetic hardest iron draws.  
Women, when nothing else, beguiled the heart  
Of wisest Solomon, and made him build,  
And made him bow, to the gods of his wives."

160

170

To whom quick answer Satan thus return'd:  
"Belial, in much uneven scale thou weigh'st  
All others by thyself. Because of old  
Thou thyself doat'st on womankind, admiring  
Their shape, their colour, and attractive grace,  
None are, thou think'st, but taken with such toys.  
Before the Flood thou with thy lusty crew,  
False-titled Sons of God, roaming the Earth,  
Cast wanton eyes on the daughters of men,  
And coupled with them, and begot a race.  
Have we not seen, or by relation heard,  
In courts and regal chambers how thou lurk'st,  
In wood or grove, by mossy fountain side,  
In valley or green meadow, to waylay  
Some beauty rare, Callisto, Clymene,  
Daphne, or Semele, Antiopa,  
Or Amymone, Syrinx, many more,  
Too long, then lay'st thy scapes on names adored,  
Apollo, Neptune, Jupiter, or Pan,  
Satyr, or Faun, or Silvan? But these haunts  
Delight not all. Among the sons of men  
How many have with a smile made small account  
Of beauty and her lures, easily scorn'd  
All her assaults, on worthier things intent!

180

190

Remember that Pellean conqueror,  
A youth, how all the beauties of the East  
He slightly view'd, and slightly overpass'd;  
How he surnamed of Africa dismiss'd  
In his prime youth the fair Iberian maid. 200  
For Solomon, he lived at ease, and full  
Of honour, wealth, high fare, aim'd not beyond  
Higher design than to enjoy his state;  
Thence to the bait of women lay exposed.  
But he whom we attempt is wiser far  
Than Solomon, of more exalted mind,  
Made and set wholly on the accomplishment  
Of greatest things. What woman will you find,  
Though of this age the wonder and the fame,  
On whom his leisure will vouchsafe an eye  
Of fond desire? Or should she, confident, 210  
As sitting queen adored on Beauty's throne,  
Descend with all her winning charms begirt  
To enamour, as the zone of Venus once  
Wrought that effect on Jove, so fables tell;  
How would one look from his majestic brow,  
Seated as on the top of Virtue's hill,  
Discountenance her despised, and put to rout  
All her array, her female pride deject,  
Or turn to reverent awe! For Beauty stands 220  
In the admiration only of weak minds  
Led captive; cease to admire, and all her plumes  
Fall flat, and shrink into a trivial toy,  
At every sudden slighting quite abash'd.  
Therefore with manlier objects we must try  
His constancy, with such as have more shew  
Of worth, of honour, glory, and popular praise;  
Rocks whereon greatest men have ofttest wreck'd;  
Or that which only seems to satisfy  
Lawful desires of nature, not beyond. 230  
And now I know he hungers, where no food  
Is to be found, in the wide Wilderness:  
The rest commit to me; I shall let pass  
No advantage, and his strength as oft assay."  
He ceased, and heard their grant in loud acclaim;

Then forthwith to him takes a chosen band  
Of Spirits likest to himself in guile,  
To be at hand and at his beck appear,  
If cause were to unfold some active scene  
Of various persons, each to know his part; 240  
Then to the desert takes with these his flight,  
Where still from shade to shade the Son of God  
After forty days' fasting had remain'd,  
Now hungering first, and to himself thus said:  
"Where will this end? Four times ten days I have pass'd  
Wandering this woody maze, and human food  
Not tasted, nor had appetite. That fast  
To virtue I impute not, or count part  
Of what I suffer here. If nature need not,  
Or God support nature without repast 250  
Though needing, what praise is it to endure?  
But now I feel I hunger; which declares  
Nature hath need of what she asks. Yet God  
Can satisfy that need some other way,  
Though hunger still remain. So it remain  
Without this body's wasting, I content me,  
And from the sting of famine fear no harm;  
Nor mind it, fed with better thoughts, that feed  
Me hungering more to do my Father's will."

It was the hour of night, when thus the Son  
Communed in silent walk, then laid him down 260  
Under the hospitable covert nigh  
Of trees thick interwoven. There he slept,  
And dream'd, as appetite is wont to dream,  
Of meats and drinks, nature's refreshment sweet.  
Him thought he by the brook of Cherith stood,  
And saw the ravens with their horny beaks  
Food to Elijah bringing even and morn,  
Though ravenous, taught to abstain from what they brought;  
He saw the Prophet also how he fled 270  
Into the desert, and how there he slept  
Under a juniper, then how, awaked,  
He found his supper on the coals prepared,  
And by the Angel was bid rise and eat,  
And eat the second time after repose,

The strength whereof sufficed him forty days:  
Sometimes that with Elijah he partook,  
Or as a guest with Daniel at his pulse.  
Thus wore out night; and now the herald lark  
Left his ground-nest, high towering to descry  
The Morn's approach, and greet her with his song.  
As lightly from his grassy couch up rose  
Our Saviour, and found all was but a dream;  
Fasting he went to sleep, and fasting waked.  
Up to a hill anon his steps he reard,  
From whose high top to ken the prospect round,  
If cottage were in view, sheep-cote, or herd;  
But cottage, herd, or sheep-cote, none he saw,  
Only in a bottom saw a pleasant grove,  
With chant of tuneful birds resounding loud.  
Thither he bent his way, determined there  
To rest at noon, and enter'd soon the shade  
High-roof'd, and walks beneath, and alleys brown,  
That open'd in the midst a woody scene;  
Nature's own work it seem'd (Nature taught Art),  
And to a superstitious eye the haunt  
Of wood-gods and wood-nymphs. He view'd it round;  
When suddenly a man before him stood,  
Not rustic as before, but seemlier clad,  
As one in city or court or palace bred,  
And with fair speech these words to him address'd:

"With granted leave officious I return,  
But much more wonder that the Son of God  
In this wild solitude so long should bide  
Of all things destitute, and well I know  
Not without hunger. Others of some note,  
As story tells, have trod this wilderness:  
The fugitive bond-woman, with her son,  
Outcast Nebaioth, yet found here relief  
By a providing Angel; all the race  
Of Israel here had famish'd, had not God  
Rain'd from heaven manna; and that Prophet bold,  
Native of Thebez, wandering here, was fed  
Twice by a voice inviting him to eat.  
Of thee these forty days none hath regard,

Forty and more deserted here indeed."

To whom thus Jesus: "What concludest thou hence?  
They all had need; I, as thou seest, have none."

"How hast thou hunger then?" Satan replied.

"Tell me, if food were now before thee set,  
Would'st thou not eat?" "Thereafter as I like  
The giver," answer'd Jesus. "Why should that  
Cause thy refusal?" said the subtle Fiend.

"Hast thou not right to all created things?

Owe not all creatures by just right to thee  
Duty and service, nor to stay till bid,  
But tender all their power? Nor mention I

Meats by the law unclean, or offer'd first

To idols, those young Daniel could refuse;

Nor proffer'd by an enemy, though who

Would scruple that, with want oppress'd? Behold,

Nature ashamed, or, better to express,

Troubled, that thou shouldst hunger, hath purvey'd

From all the elements her choicest store,

To treat thee as befits, and as her Lord

With honour. Only deign to sit and eat."

He spake no dream; for, as his words had end,

Our Saviour, lifting up his eyes, beheld,

In ample space under the broadest shade,

A table richly spread in regal mode,

With dishes piled and meats of noblest sort

And savour, beasts of chase, or fowl of game,

In pastry built, or from the spit, or boil'd,

Gris-amber-steam'd; all fish from sea or shore,

Freshet or purling brook, of shell or fin,

And exquisitest name, for which was drain'd

Pontus, and Lucrine bay, and Afric coast.

Alas! how simple, to these cates compared,

Was that crude apple that diverted Eve!

And at a stately sideboard, by the wine,

That fragrant smell diffused, in order stood

Tall stripling youths rich-clad, of fairer hue

Than Ganymed or Hylas; distant more,

Under the trees now tripp'd, now solemn stood,

Nymphs of Diana's train, and Naiades

With fruits and flowers from Amalthea's horn,  
And ladies of the Hesperides, that seem'd  
Fairer than feign'd of old, or fabled since  
Of faery damsels met in forest wide  
By knights of Logres, or of Lyones,  
Lancelot, or Pelleas, or Pellenore.  
And all the while harmonious airs were heard  
Of chiming strings or charming pipes, and winds  
Of gentlest gale Arabian odours fann'd  
From their soft wings, and Flora's earliest smells.  
Such was the splendour; and the Tempter now  
His invitation earnestly renew'd:

360

"What doubts the Son of God to sit and eat?  
These are not fruits forbidden; no interdict  
Defends the touching of these viands pure;  
Their taste no knowledge works, at least of evil,  
But life preserves, destroys life's enemy,  
Hunger, with sweet restorative delight.  
All these are Spirits of air, and woods, and springs,  
Thy gentle ministers, who come to pay  
Thee homage, and acknowledge thee their Lord.  
What doubt'st thou, Son of God? Sit down and eat."

370

To whom thus Jesus temperately replied:  
"Said'st thou not that to all things I had right?  
And who withholds my power that right to use?  
Shall I receive by gift what of my own,  
When and where likes me best, I can command?  
I can at will, doubt not, as soon as thou,  
Command a table in this wilderness,  
And call swift flights of Angels ministrant,  
Array'd in glory, on my cup to attend:  
Why shouldst thou then obtrude this diligence  
In vain, where no acceptance it can find?  
And with my hunger what hast thou to do?  
Thy pompous delicacies I condemn,  
And count thy specious gifts no gifts, but guiles."

380

390

To whom thus answer'd Satan, malecontent:  
"That I have also power to give thou seest;  
If of that power I bring thee voluntary  
What I might have bestow'd on whom I pleased,

And rather opportunely in this place  
Chose to impart to thy apparent need,  
Why shouldst thou not accept it? But I see  
What I can do or offer is suspect.  
Of these things others quickly will dispose,  
Whose pains have earn'd the far-fet spoil." With that  
Both table and provision vanish'd quite,  
With sound of harpies' wings and talons heard ;  
Only the importune Tempter still remain'd,  
And with these words his temptation pursued :

"By hunger, that each other creature tames,  
Thou art not to be harm'd, therefore not moved ;  
Thy temperance, invincible besides,  
For no allurements yields to appetite ;  
And all thy heart is set on high designs,  
High actions. But wherewith to be achieved?  
Great acts require great means of enterprise ;  
Thou art unknown, unfriended, low of birth,  
A carpenter thy father known, thyself  
Bred up in poverty and straits at home,  
Lost in a desert here and hunger-bit.  
Which way, or from what hope, dost thou aspire  
To greatness? whence authority derivest?  
What followers, what retinue canst thou gain,  
Or at thy heels the dizzy multitude,  
Longer than thou canst feed them on thy cost?  
Money brings honour, friends, conquest, and realms.  
What raised Antipater the Edomite,  
And his son Herod placed on Judah's throne  
(Thy throne), but gold, that got him puissant friends?  
Therefore, if at great things thou wouldst arrive,  
Get riches first, get wealth, and treasure heap ;  
Not difficult, if thou hearken to me.  
Riches are mine, fortune is in my hand ;  
They whom I favour thrive in wealth amain,  
While virtue, valour, wisdom, sit in want."

To whom thus Jesus patiently replied :  
"Yet wealth without these three is impotent  
To gain dominion, or to keep it gain'd.  
Witness those ancient empires of the earth,



In highth of all their flowing wealth dissolved ;  
But men endued with these have oft attain'd  
In lowest poverty to highest deeds ;  
Gideon, and Jephtha, and the shepherd lad  
Whose offspring on the throne of Judah sat  
So many ages, and shall yet regain  
That seat, and reign in Israel without end.  
Among the Heathen (for throughout the world  
To me is not unknown what hath been done  
Worthy of memorial) canst thou not remember  
Quintius, Fabricius, Curius, Regulus ?  
For I esteem those names of men so poor,  
Who could do mighty things, and could contemn  
Riches, though offer'd from the hand of kings.  
And what in me seems wanting but that I  
May also in this poverty as soon  
Accomplish what they did, perhaps and more ?  
Extol not riches then, the toil of fools,  
The wise man's cumbrance, if not snare ; more apt  
To slacken virtue and abate her edge  
Than prompt her to do aught may merit praise.  
What if with like aversion I reject  
Riches and realms ! Yet not for that a crown,  
Golden in shew, is but a wreath of thorns,  
Brings dangers, troubles, cares, and sleepless nights,  
To him who wears the regal diadem,  
When on his shoulders each man's burden lies ;  
For therein stands the office of a king,  
His honour, virtue, merit, and chief praise,  
That for the public all this weight he bears.  
Yet he who reigns within himself, and rules  
Passions, desires, and fears, is more a king ;  
Which every wise and virtuous man attains :  
And who attains not, ill aspires to rule  
Cities of men, or headstrong multitudes,  
Subject himself to anarchy within,  
Or lawless passions in him, which he serves.  
But to guide nations in the way of truth  
By saving doctrine, and from error lead  
To know, and, knowing, worship God aright,

419

450

460

470

Is yet more kingly. This attracts the soul,  
Governs the inner man, the nobler part ;  
That other o'er the body only reigns,  
And oft by force, which to a generous mind  
So reigning can be no sincere delight.  
Besides, to give a kingdom hath been thought  
Greater and nobler done, and to lay down  
Far more magnanimous, than to assume.  
Riches are needless then, both for themselves,  
And for thy reason why they should be sought,  
To gain a sceptre, ofttest better miss'd."

420

## BOOK III.

So spake the Son of God ; and Satan stood  
A while as mute, confounded what to say,  
What to reply, confuted and convinced  
Of his weak arguing and fallacious drift ;  
At length, collecting all his serpent wiles,  
With soothing words renew'd, him thus accosts :  
"I see thou know'st what is of use to know,  
What best to say canst say, to do canst do ;  
Thy actions to thy words accord ; thy words  
To thy large heart give utterance due ; thy heart  
Contains of good, wise, just, the perfect shape.  
Should kings and nations from thy mouth consult,  
Thy counsel would be as the oracle  
Urim and Thummim, those oraculous gems  
On Aaron's breast, or tongue of Seers old  
Infallible ; or, wert thou sought to deeds  
That might require the array of war, thy skill  
Of conduct would be such that all the world  
Could not sustain thy prowess, or subsist  
In battle, though against thy few in arms.  
These godlike virtues wherefore dost thou hide?  
Affecting private life, or more obscure  
In savage wilderness, wherefore deprive

10

20

All Earth her wonder at thy acts, thyself  
The fame and glory, glory the reward  
That sole excites to high attempts the flame  
Of most erected spirits, most temper'd pure  
Ethereal, who all pleasures else despise,  
All treasures and all gain esteem as dross,  
And dignities and powers, all but the highest?  
Thy years are ripe, and over-ripe. The son  
Of Macedonian Philip had ere these  
Won Asia, and the throne of Cyrus held  
At his dispose; young Scipio had brought down  
The Carthaginian pride; young Pompey quell'd  
The Pontic king, and in triumph had rode.  
Yet years, and to ripe years judgment mature,  
Quench not the thirst of glory, but augment.  
Great Julius, whom now all the world admires,  
The more he grew in years, the more inflamed  
With glory, wept that he had lived so long  
Inglorious. But thou yet, art not too late."

30

40

To whom our Saviour calmly thus replied:  
"Thou neither dost persuade me to seek wealth  
For empire's sake, nor empire to affect  
For glory's sake, by all thy argument.  
For what is glory but the blaze of fame,  
The people's praise, if always praise unmix'd?  
And what the people but a herd confused,  
A miscellaneous rabble, who extol  
Things vulgar, and, well weigh'd, scarce worth the praise?  
They praise and they admire they know not what,  
And know not whom, but as one leads the other;  
And what delight to be by such extoll'd,  
To live upon their tongues, and be their talk,  
Of whom to be dispraised were no small praise?  
His lot who dares be singularly good.  
The intelligent among them and the wise  
Are few, and glory scarce of few is raised.  
This is true glory and renown, when God,  
Looking on the Earth, with approbation marks  
The just man, and divulges him through Heaven  
To all his Angels, who with true applause

50

60

Recount his praises. Thus he did to Job,  
When, to extend his fame through Heaven and Earth,  
As thou to thy reproach may'st well remember,  
He ask'd thee, 'Hast thou seen my servant Job?'  
Famous he was in Heaven; on Earth less known,  
Where glory is false glory, attributed  
To things not glorious, men not worthy of fame. 70  
They err who count it glorious to subdue  
By conquest far and wide, to overrun  
Large countries, and in field great battles win,  
Great cities by assault. What do these worthies  
But rob and spoil, burn, slaughter, and enslave  
Peaceable nations, neighbouring or remote,  
Made captive, yet deserving freedom more  
Than those their conquerors, who leave behind  
Nothing but ruin wheresoe'er they rove,  
And all the flourishing works of peace destroy; 80  
Then swell with pride, and must be titled Gods,  
Great Benefactors of mankind, Deliverers,  
Worshipp'd with temple, priest, and sacrifice?  
One is the son of Jove, of Mars the other;  
Till conqueror Death discover them scarce men,  
Rolling in brutish vices, and deform'd,  
Violent or shameful death their due reward.  
But, if there be in glory aught of good,  
It may by means far different be attain'd,  
Without ambition, war, or violence; 90  
By deeds of peace, by wisdom eminent,  
By patience, temperance. I mention still  
Him whom thy wrongs, with saintly patience borne,  
Made famous in a land and times obscure;  
Who names not now with honour patient Job?  
Poor Socrates (who next more memorable?),  
By what he taught and suffer'd for so doing,  
For truth's sake suffering death unjust, lives now  
Equal in fame to proudest conquerors.  
Yet if for fame and glory aught be done, 100  
Aught suffer'd, if young African for fame  
His wasted country freed from Punic rage,  
The deed becomes unpraised, the man at least,

And loses, though but verbal, his reward.  
Shall I seek glory then as vain men seek,  
Oft not deserved? I seek not mine, but His  
Who sent me, and thereby witness whence I am."

To whom the Tempter, murmuring, thus replied:  
"Think not so slight of glory, therein least  
Resembling thy great Father. He seeks glory,  
And for his glory all things made, all things  
Orders and governs; nor content in Heaven,  
By all his Angels glorified, requires  
Glory from men, from all men, good or bad,  
Wise or unwise, no difference, no exemption.  
Above all sacrifice, or hallow'd gift,  
Glory he requires, and glory he receives  
Promiscuous from all nations, Jew, or Greek,  
Or Barbarous, nor exception hath declared;  
From us, his foes pronounced, glory he exacts."

To whom our Saviour fervently replied:  
"And reason; since his word all things produced,  
Though chiefly not for glory as prime end,  
But to shew forth his goodness, and impart  
His good communicable to every soul  
Freely; of whom what could he less expect  
Than glory and benediction, that is, thanks,  
The slightest, easiest, readiest recompense  
From them who could return him nothing else,  
And, not returning that, would likeliest render  
Contempt instead, dishonour, obloquy?  
Hard recompense, unsuitable return  
For so much good, so much beneficence!  
But why should man seek glory, who of his own  
Hath nothing, and to whom nothing belongs  
But condemnation, ignominy, and shame?  
Who for so many benefits received  
Turn'd recreant to God, ingrate and false,  
And so of all true good himself despoil'd;  
Yet, sacrilegious, to himself would take  
That which to God alone of right belongs;  
Yet so much bounty is in God, such grace,  
That who advance his glory, not their own,

Them he himself to glory will advance."

So spake the Son of God; and here again  
Satan had not to answer, but stood struck  
With guilt of his own sin; for he himself,  
Insatiable of glory, had lost all;  
Yet of another plea bethought him soon:

"Of glory, as thou wilt," said he, "so deem;

130

Worth or not worth the seeking, let it pass.  
But to a kingdom thou art born, ordain'd  
To sit upon thy father David's throne,  
By mother's side thy father, though thy right  
Be now in powerful hands, that will not part  
Easily from possession won with arms.

Judæa now and all the Promised Land,  
Reduced a province under Roman yoke,  
Obeys Tiberius, nor is always ruled  
With temperate sway: oft have they violated  
The Temple, oft the Law, with foul affronts,  
Abominations rather, as did once

140

Antiochus. And think'st thou to regain  
Thy right by sitting still, or thus retiring?  
So did not Machabeus. He indeed

Retired unto the Desert, but with arms;  
And o'er a mighty king so oft prevail'd  
That by strong hand his family obtain'd,  
Though priests, the crown, and David's throne usurp'd,  
With Modin and her suburbs once content.

170

If kingdom move thee not, let move thee zeal  
And duty; zeal and duty are not slow,  
But on occasion's forelock watchful wait:

They themselves rather are occasion best—  
Zeal of thy Father's house, duty to free  
Thy country from her heathen servitude.

So shalt thou best fulfil, best verify  
The Prophets old, who sung thy endless reign,  
The happier reign the sooner it begins.

Reign then; what canst thou better do the while?"

180

To whom our Saviour answer thus return'd:

"All things are best fulfill'd in their due time;  
And time there is for all things, Truth hath said.

If of my reign prophetic Writ hath told  
That it shall never end, so, when begin  
The Father in his purpose hath decreed ;  
He in whose hand all times and seasons roll.  
What if he hath decreed that I shall first  
Be tried in humble state, and things adverse,  
By tribulations, injuries, insults,  
Contempts, and scorns, and snares, and violence,  
Suffering, abstaining, quietly expecting  
Without distrust or doubt, that he may know  
What I can suffer, how obey? Who best  
Can suffer best can do, best reign who first  
Well hath obey'd ; just trial ere I merit  
My exaltation without change or end.  
But what concerns it thee when I begin  
My everlasting kingdom? Why art thou  
Solicitous? What moves thy inquisition?  
Know'st thou not that my rising is thy fall,  
And my promotion will be thy destruction?"

To whom the Tempter, inly rack'd, replied:  
"Let that come when it comes. All hope is lost  
Of my reception into grace; what worse?  
For where no hope is left is left no fear.  
If there be worse, the expectation more  
Of worse torments me than the feeling can.  
I would be at the worst; worst is my port,  
My harbour, and my ultimate repose,  
The end I would attain, my final good.  
My error was my error, and my crime  
My crime; whatever, for itself condemn'd,  
And will alike be punish'd, whether thou  
Reign or reign not; though to that gentle brow  
Willingly I could fly, and hope thy reign,  
From that placid aspect and meek regard,  
Rather than aggravate my evil state,  
Would stand between me and thy Father's ire  
(Whose ire I dread more than the fire of Hell)  
A shelter and a kind of shading cool  
Interposition, as a summer's cloud.  
If I then to the worst that can be haste,

Why move thy feet so slow to what is best,  
Happiest, both to thyself and all the world,  
That thou, who worthiest art, shouldst be their king?  
Perhaps thou linger'st in deep thoughts detain'd  
Of the enterprise so hazardous and high;  
No wonder; for, though in thee be united  
What of perfection can in man be found,  
Or human nature can receive, consider  
Thy life hath yet been private, most part spent  
At home, scarce view'd the Galilean towns,  
And once a year Jerusalem, few days'  
Short sojourn; and what thence couldst thou observe?  
The world thou hast not seen, much less her glory,  
Empires, and monarchs, and their radiant courts,  
Best school of best experience, quickest insight  
In all things that to greatest actions lead.  
The wisest, unexperienced, will be ever  
Timorous and loth, with novice modesty  
(As he who, seeking asses, found a kingdom)  
Irresolute, unhardy, unadvent'rous.  
But I will bring thee where thou soon shalt quit  
Those rudiments, and see before thine eyes  
The monarchies of the Earth, their pomp and state,  
Sufficient introduction to inform  
Thee, of thyself so apt, in regal arts,  
And regal mysteries; that thou may'st know  
How best their opposition to withstand."

With that (such power was given him then), he took  
The Son of God up to a mountain high.  
It was a mountain at whose verdant feet  
A spacious plain outstretch'd in circuit wide  
Lay pleasant; from his side two rivers flow'd,  
The one winding, the other straight, and left between  
Fair champain, with less rivers intervein'd,  
Then meeting join'd their tribute to the sea.  
Fertile of corn the glebe, of oil, and wine;  
With herds the pastures throng'd, with flocks the hills;  
Huge cities and high-tower'd, that well might seem  
The seats of mightiest monarchs; and so large  
The prospect was that here and there was room



For barren desert, fountainless and dry.  
To this high mountain top the Tempter brought  
Our Saviour, and new train of words began:

"Well have we speeded, and o'er hill and dale,  
Forest, and field, and flood, temples and towers,  
Cut shorter many a league. Here thou behold'st

Assyria, and her empire's ancient bounds,

270

Araxes and the Caspian lake; thence on

As far as Indus east, Euphrates west,

And oft beyond; to south the Persian bay,

And, inaccessible, the Arabian drouth:

Here, Nineveh, of length within her wall

Several days' journey, built by Ninus old,

Of that first golden monarchy the seat,

And seat of Salmanassar, whose success

Israel in long captivity still mourns;

There Babylon, the wonder of all tongues,

280

As ancient, but rebuilt by him who twice

Judah and all thy father David's house

Led captive, and Jerusalem laid waste,

Till Cyrus set them free; Persepolis

His city, there thou seest, and Bactra there;

Ecbatana her structure vast there shews,

And Hecatompylos her hundred gates;

There Susa by Choaspes, amber stream,

The drink of none but kings; of later fame

Built by Emathian or by Parthian hands,

290

The great Seleucia, Nisibis, and there

Artaxata, Terebon, Ctesiphon,

Turning with easy eye, thou may'st behold.

All these the Parthian, now some ages past

By great Arsaces led, who founded first

That empire, under his dominion holds,

From the luxurious kings of Antioch won.

And just in time thou comest to have a view

Of his great power; for now the Parthian king

In Ctesiphon hath gather'd all his host

300

Against the Scythian, whose incursions wild

Have wasted Sogdiana; to her aid

He marches now in haste. See, though from far,

His thousands, in what martial equipage  
They issue forth, steel bows and shafts their arms,  
Of equal dread in flight or in pursuit,  
All horsemen, in which fight they most excel;  
See how in warlike muster they appear,  
In rhombs, and wedges, and half-moons, and wings."

He look'd, and saw what numbers numberless

310

The city gates outpour'd, light-armed troops  
In coats of mail and military pride.  
In mail their horses clad, yet fleet and strong,  
Prancing their riders bore, the flower and choice  
Of many provinces from bound to bound,  
From Arachosia, from Candaor east,  
And Margiana, to the Hyrcanian cliffs  
Of Caucasus, and dark Iberian dales;  
From Atropatia, and the neighbouring plains  
Of Adiabene, Media, and the south  
Of Susiana, to Balsara's haven.

320

He saw them in their forms of battle ranged,  
How quick they wheel'd, and flying behind them shot  
Sharp sleet of arrowy showers against the face  
Of their pursuers, and overcame by flight;  
The field all iron cast a gleaming brown.  
Nor wanted clouds of foot, nor, on each horn,  
Cuirassiers all in steel for standing fight,  
Chariots, or elephants indorsed with towers  
Of archers; nor of labouring pioneers

330

A multitude, with spades and axes arm'd,  
To lay hills plain, fell woods, or valleys fill,  
Or where plain was raise hill, or overlay  
With bridges rivers proud, as with a yoke:  
Mules after these, camels and dromedaries,  
And waggons fraught with utensils of war.  
Such forces met not, nor so wide a camp,  
When Agrican with all his northern powers  
Besieged Albracca, as romances tell,  
The city of Gallaphrone, from thence to win  
The fairest of her sex, Angelica,  
His daughter, sought by many prowest knights,  
Both Paynim and the peers of Charlemain.

340

Such and so numerous was their chivalry;  
At sight whereof the Fiend yet more presumed,  
And to our Saviour thus his words renew'd:

"That thou may'st know I seek not to engage  
Thy virtue, and not every way secure  
On no slight grounds thy safety, hear and mark  
To what end I have brought thee hither, and shewn 350  
All this fair sight. Thy kingdom, though foretold  
By Prophet or by Angel, unless thou  
Endeavour, as thy father David did,  
Thou never shalt obtain: prediction still  
In all things, and all men, supposes means;  
Without means used, what it predicts revokes.  
But say thou wert possess'd of David's throne  
By free consent of all, none opposite,  
Samaritan or Jew; how couldst thou hope  
Long to enjoy it quiet and secure 360  
Between two such enclosing enemies,  
Roman and Parthian? Therefore one of these  
Thou must make sure thy own: the Parthian first,  
By my advice, as nearer, and of late  
Found able by invasion to annoy  
Thy country, and captive lead away her kings,  
Antigonus and old Hyrcanus bound,  
Maugre the Roman. It shall be my task  
To render thee the Parthian at dispose,  
Choose which thou wilt, by conquest or by league. 370  
By him thou shalt regain, without him not,  
That which alone can truly reinstall thee  
In David's royal seat, his true successor,  
Deliverance of thy brethren, those Ten Tribes  
Whose offspring in his territory yet serve  
In Habor, and among the Medes dispersed:  
Ten sons of Jacob, two of Joseph, lost  
Thus long from Israel, serving, as of old  
Their fathers in the land of Egypt served,  
This offer sets before thee to deliver. 380  
These if from servitude thou shalt restore  
To their inheritance, then, nor till then,  
Thou on the throne of David in full glory,

From Egypt to Euphrates and beyond,  
Shalt reign, and Rome or Cæsar not need fear."

To whom our Saviour answer'd thus, unmoved:

"Much ostentation vain of fleshly arm  
And fragile arms, much instrument of war,  
Long in preparing, soon to nothing brought,  
Before mine eyes thou hast set, and in my ear  
Vented much policy, and projects deep  
Of enemies, of aids, battles, and leagues,  
Plausible to the world, to me worth nought.  
Means I must use, thou say'st; prediction else  
Will unpredict, and fail me of the throne:  
My time, I told thee (and that time for thee  
Were better farthest off), is not yet come.

390

When that comes, think not thou to find me slack  
On my part aught endeavouring, or to need  
Thy politic maxims, or that cumbersome  
Luggage of war there shewn me, argument  
Of human weakness rather than of strength.  
My brethren, as thou call'st them, those Ten Tribes,  
I must deliver, if I mean to reign

400

David's true heir, and his full sceptre sway  
To just extent over all Israel's sons;  
But whence to thee this zeal? Where was it then  
For Israel, or for David, or his throne,  
When thou stood'st up his tempter to the pride  
Of numbering Israel, which cost the lives  
Of threescore and ten thousand Israelites  
By three days' pestilence? Such was thy zeal  
To Israel then, the same that now to me.

410

As for those captive tribes, themselves were they  
Who wrought their own captivity, fell off  
From God to worship calves, the deities  
Of Egypt, Baal next and Ashtaroth,  
And all the idolatries of heathen round,  
Besides their other worse than heathenish crimes;  
Nor in the land of their captivity  
Humbled themselves, or penitent besought  
The God of their forefathers, but so died  
Impenitent, and left a race behind

420

Like to themselves, distinguishable scarce  
 From Gentiles; but by circumcision vain,  
 And God with idols in their worship join'd.  
 Should I of these the liberty regard,  
 Who freed, as to their ancient patrimony,  
 Unhumbled, unrepentant, unreform'd,  
 Headlong would follow, and to their gods perhaps  
 Of Bethel and of Dan? No; let them serve  
 Their enemies, who serve idols with God.  
 Yet he at length, time to himself best known,  
 Remembering Abraham, by some wondrous call  
 May bring them back, repentant and sincere,  
 And at their passing cleave the Assyrian flood,  
 While to their native land with joy they haste,  
 As the Red Sea and Jordan once he cleft,  
 When to the Promised Land their fathers pass'd.  
 To his due time and providence I leave them."

430

440

So spake Israel's true King, and to the Fiend  
 Made answer meet, that made void all his wiles.  
 So fares it when with truth falsehood contends.

## BOOK IV.

PERPLEX'D and troubled at his bad success  
 The Tempter stood, nor had what to reply,  
 Discover'd in his fraud, thrown from his hope  
 So oft, and the persuasive rhetoric  
 That sleek'd his tongue, and won so much on Eve,  
 So little here, nay lost. But Eve was Eve;  
 This far his over-match, who, self-deceived  
 And rash, beforehand had no better weigh'd  
 The strength he was to cope with, or his own.  
 But, as a man who had been matchless held  
 In cunning, over-reach'd where least he thought,  
 To salve his credit, and for very spite,  
 Still will be tempting him who foils him still,  
 And never cease, though to his shame the more;

70

Or as a swarm of flies in vintage time,  
About the wine-press where sweet must is pour'd,  
Beat off, returns as oft with humming sound;  
Or surging waves against a solid rock,  
Though all to shivers dash'd, the assault renew,  
(Vain battery!) and in froth or bubbles end,  
So Satan, whom repulse upon repulse  
Met ever, and to shameful silence brought,  
Yet gives not o'er, though desperate of success,  
And his vain importunity pursues.  
He brought our Saviour to the western side  
Of that high mountain, whence he might behold  
Another plain, long, but in breadth not wide,  
Wash'd by the southern sea, and on the north  
To equal length back'd with a ridge of hills  
That screen'd the fruits of the earth and seats of men  
From cold Septentrion blasts; thence in the midst  
Divided by a river, of whose banks  
On each side an imperial city stood,  
With towers and temples proudly elevate  
On seven small hills, with palaces adorn'd,  
Porches and theatres, baths, aqueducts,  
Statues and trophies, and triumphal arcs,  
Gardens and groves, presented to his eyes  
Above the highth of mountains interposed:  
By what strange parallax, or optic skill  
Of vision, multiplied through air, or glass  
Of telescope, were curious to inquire.  
And now the Tempter thus his silence broke:

"The city which thou seest no other deem  
Than great and glorious Rome, Queen of the Earth,  
So far renown'd, and with the spoils enrich'd  
Of nations. There the Capitol thou seest,  
Above the rest lifting his stately head  
On the Tarpeian rock, her citadel  
Impregnable; and there Mount Palatine,  
The imperial palace, compass huge, and high  
The structure, skill of noblest architects,  
With gilded battlements, conspicuous far,  
Turrets, and terraces, and glittering spires.

Many a fair edifice besides, more like  
Houses of gods (so well I have disposed  
My aery microscope), thou may'st behold,  
Outside and inside both, pillars and roofs  
Carved work, the hand of famed artificers  
In cedar, marble, ivory, or gold. 60  
Thence to the gates cast round thine eye, and see  
What conflux issuing forth, or entering in:  
Prætors, proconsuls to their provinces  
Hasting, or on return, in robes of state;  
Lictors and rods, the ensigns of their power;  
Legions and cohorts, turms of horse and wings;  
Or embassies from regions far remote,  
In various habits, on the Appian road,  
Or on the Æmilian, some from farthest south,  
Syene, and where the shadow both way falls, 70  
Meroë, Nilotic isle, and more to west  
The realm of Bocchus to the Blackmoor sea;  
From the Asian kings (and Parthian among these),  
From India and the Golden Chersonese,  
And utmost Indian isle Taprobane,  
Dusk faces with white silken turbants wreathed;  
From Gallia, Gades, and the British west;  
Germans, and Scythians, and Sarmatians north  
Beyond Danubius to the Tauric pool.  
All nations now to Rome obedience pay, 80  
To Rome's great Emperor, whose wide domain,  
In ample territory, wealth and power,  
Civility of manners, arts and arms,  
And long renown, thou justly may'st prefer  
Before the Parthian. These two thrones except,  
The rest are barbarous, and scarce worth the sight,  
Shared among petty kings too far removed;  
These having shewn thee, I have shewn thee all  
The kingdoms of the world, and all their glory.  
This Emperor hath no son, and now is old, 90  
Old and lascivious, and from Rome retired  
To Caprea, an island small but strong  
On the Campanian shore, with purpose there  
His horrid lusts in private to enjoy;

Committing to a wicked favourite  
All public cares, and yet of him suspicious;  
Hated of all, and hating. With what ease,  
Endued with regal virtues as thou art,  
Appearing, and beginning noble deeds,  
Might'st thou expel this monster from his throne,  
Now made a sty, and in his place ascending  
A victor people free from servile yoke!  
And with my help thou may'st; to me the power  
Is given, and by that right I give it thee.  
Aim therefore at no less than all the world;  
Aim at the highest; without the highest attain'd,  
Will be for thee no sitting, or not long,  
On David's throne, be prophesied what will."

200

To whom the Son of God, unmoved, replied:  
"Nor doth this grandeur and majestic shew  
Of luxury, though call'd magnificence,  
More than of arms before, allure mine eye,  
Much less my mind; though thou should'st add to tell  
Their sumptuous gluttonies, and gorgeous feasts  
On citron tables or Atlantic stone  
(For I have also heard, perhaps have read),  
Their wines of Setia, Cales, and Falerne,  
Chios and Crete, and how they quaff in gold,  
Crystal, and myrrhine cups, emboss'd with gems  
And studs of pearl, to me should'st tell, who thirst  
And hunger still. Then embassies thou shew'st  
From nations far and nigh. What honour that,  
But tedious waste of time, to sit and hear  
So many hollow compliments and lies,  
Outlandish flatteries? Then proceed'st to talk  
Of the Emperor, how easily subdued,  
How gloriously. I shall, thou say'st, expel  
A brutish monster: what if I withal  
Expel a Devil who first made him such?  
Let his tormentor Conscience find him out;  
For him I was not sent, nor yet to free  
That people, victor once, now vile and base,  
Deservedly made vassal; who, once just,  
Frugal, and mild, and temperate, conquer'd well,

210

220

230



But govern ill the nations under yoke,  
Peeling their provinces, exhausted all  
By lust and rapine; first ambitious grown  
Of triumph, that insulting vanity;  
Then cruel, by their sports to blood inured  
Of fighting beasts, and men to beasts exposed; 140  
Luxurious by their wealth, and greedier still,  
And from the daily scene effeminate.  
What wise and valiant man would seek to free  
These thus degenerate, by themselves enslaved,  
Or could of inward slaves make outward free?  
Know, therefore, when my season comes to sit  
On David's throne, it shall be like a tree  
Spreading and overshadowing all the earth,  
Or as a stone that shall to pieces dash  
All monarchies besides throughout the world; 150  
And of my kingdom there shall be no end.  
Means there shall be to this; but what the means  
Is not for thee to know, nor me to tell."

To whom the Tempter, impudent, replied:  
"I see all offers made by me how slight  
Thou valuest, because offer'd, and reject'st.  
Nothing will please the difficult and nice,  
Or nothing more than still to contradict.  
On the other side know also thou that I  
On what I offer set as high esteem, 160  
Nor what I part with mean to give for nought.  
All these, which in a moment thou behold'st,  
The kingdoms of the world, to thee I give;  
For, given to me, I give to whom I please,  
No trifle; yet with this reserve, not else,  
On this condition, if thou wilt fall down,  
And worship me as thy superior lord,  
Easily done, and hold them all of me;  
For what can less so great a gift deserve?"

Whom thus our Saviour answer'd with disdain: 170  
"I never liked thy talk, thy offers less;  
Now both abhor, since thou hast dared to utter  
The abominable terms, impious condition.  
But I endure the time, till which expired

Thou hast permission on me. It is written,  
The first of all commandments, 'Thou shalt worship  
The Lord thy God, and only him shalt serve';  
And darest thou to the Son of God propound  
To worship thee, accurst, now more accurst  
For this attempt, bolder than that on Eve,  
And more blasphemous? which expect to rue.  
The kingdoms of the world to thee were given!  
Permitted rather, and by thee usurp'd;  
Other donation none thou canst produce.  
If given, by whom but by the King of kings,  
God over all supreme? If given to thee,  
By thee how fairly is the Giver now  
Repaid! But gratitude in thee is lost  
Long since. Wert thou so void of fear or shame  
As offer them to me, the Son of God,  
To me my own, on such abhorred pact,  
That I fall down and worship thee as God?  
Get thee behind me! Plain thou now appear'st  
That Evil One, Satan for ever damn'd."

To whom the Fiend with fear abash'd replied:  
"Be not so sore offended, Son of God,  
Though Sons of God both Angels are and Men,  
If I, to try whether in higher sort  
Than these thou bear'st that title, have proposed  
What both from Men and Angels I receive,  
Tetrarchs of Fire, Air, Flood, and on the Earth  
Nations besides from all the quarter'd winds,  
God of this world invoked, and world beneath.  
Who then thou art, whose coming is foretold  
To me most fatal, me it most concerns.  
The trial hath indamaged thee no way,  
Rather more honour left and more esteem;  
Me nought advantaged, missing what I aim'd.  
Therefore let pass, as they are transitory,  
The kingdoms of this world; I shall no more  
Advise thee; gain them as thou canst, or not.  
And thou thyself seem'st otherwise inclined  
Than to a worldly crown, addicted more  
To contemplation and profound dispute;

As by that early action may be judged,  
When, slipping from thy mother's eye, thou went'st  
Alone into the Temple, there wast found  
Among the gravest Rabbis disputant  
On points and questions fitting Moses' chair,  
Teaching, not taught. The childhood shews the man, 220  
As morning shews the day. Be famous then  
By wisdom; as thy empire must extend,  
So let extend thy mind o'er all the world  
In knowledge; all things in it comprehend.  
All knowledge is not couch'd in Moses' law,  
The Pentateuch, or what the Prophets wrote;  
The Gentiles also know, and write, and teach  
To admiration, led by Nature's light;  
And with the Gentiles much thou must converse,  
Ruling them by persuasion, as thou mean'st; 230  
Without their learning, how wilt thou with them,  
Or they with thee, hold conversation meet?  
How wilt thou reason with them, how refute  
Their idolisms, traditions, paradoxes?  
Error by his own arms is best evinced.  
Look once more, ere we leave this specular mount,  
Westward, much nearer by south-west; behold  
Where on the Ægean shore a city stands,  
Built nobly, pure the air and light the soil,  
Athens, the eye of Greece, mother of arts 240  
And eloquence, native to famous wits  
Or hospitable, in her sweet recess,  
City or suburban, studious walks and shades.  
See there the olive grove of Academe,  
Plato's retirement, where the Attic bird  
Trills her thick-warbled notes the summer long;  
There flowery hill Hymettus with the sound  
Of bees' industrious murmur oft invites  
To studious musing; there Ilissus rolls  
His whispering stream. Within the walls then view 250  
The schools of ancient sages, his who bred  
Great Alexander to subdue the world,  
Lyceum there; and painted Stoa next.  
There thou shalt hear and learn the secret power

Of harmony, in tones and numbers hit  
By voice or hand, and various-measured verse,  
Æolian charms and Dorian lyric odes,  
And his who gave them breath, but higher sung,  
Blind Melesigenes, thence Homer called,  
Whose poem Phœbus challenged for his own. 26a  
Thence what the lofty grave Tragedians taught  
In chorus or iambic, teachers best  
Of moral prudence, with delight received  
In brief sententious precepts, while they treat  
Of fate, and chance, and change in human life,  
High actions and high passions best describing.  
Thence to the famous Orators repair,  
Those ancient whose resistless eloquence  
Wielded at will that fierce democracy,  
Shook the Arsenal, and fulmined over Greece 27a  
To Macedon and Artaxerxes' throne.  
To sage Philosophy next lend thine ear,  
From heaven descended to the low-roof'd house  
Of Socrates, see there his tenement,  
Whom, well inspired, the oracle pronounced  
Wisest of men; from whose mouth issued forth  
Mellifluous streams, that water'd all the schools  
Of Academics old and new, with those  
Surnamed Peripatetics, and the sect  
Epicurean, and the Stoic severe. 28a  
These here revolve, or, as thou likest, at home,  
Till time mature thee to a kingdom's weight;  
These rules will render thee a king complete  
Within thyself, much more with empire join'd."

To whom our Saviour sagely thus replied:  
"Think not but that I know these things; or think  
I know them not, not therefore am I short  
Of knowing what I ought. He who receives  
Light from above, from the fountain of light,  
No other doctrine needs, though granted true;  
But these are false, or little else but dreams,  
Conjectures, fancies, built on nothing firm.  
The first and wisest of them all profess'd  
To know this only, that he nothing knew;

The next to fabling fell and smooth conceits;  
A third sort doubted all things, though plain sense;  
Others in virtue placed felicity,  
But virtue join'd with riches and long life;  
In corporal pleasure he, and careless ease;  
The Stoic last in philosophic pride,  
By him called virtue; and his virtuous man,  
Wise, perfect in himself, and all possessing  
Equal to God, oft shames not to prefer,  
As fearing God nor man, contemning all  
Wealth, pleasure, pain or torment, death and life,  
Which, when he lists, he leaves, or boasts he can;  
For all his tedious talk is but vain boast,  
Or subtle shifts conviction to evade.  
Alas! what can they teach, and not mislead,  
Ignorant of themselves, of God much more,  
And how the World began, and how Man fell,  
Degraded by himself, on grace depending?  
Much of the Soul they talk, but all awry;  
And in themselves seek virtue; and to themselves  
All glory arrogate, to God give none;  
Rather accuse him under usual names,  
Fortune and Fate, as one regardless quite  
Of mortal things. Who therefore seeks in these  
True wisdom finds her not, or, by delusion  
Far worse, her false resemblance only meets,  
An empty cloud. However, many books,  
Wise men have said, are wearisome; who reads  
Incessantly, and to his reading brings not  
A spirit and judgment equal or superior,  
(And what he brings what needs he elsewhere seek?)  
Uncertain and unsettled still remains,  
Deep versed in books and shallow in himself,  
Crude or intoxicate, collecting toys  
And trifles for choice matters, worth a sponge,  
As children gathering pebbles on the shore.  
Or if I would delight my private hours  
With music or with poem, where so soon  
As in our native language can I find  
That solace? All our Law and Story strew'd

300

310

320

330

With hymns, our Psalms with artful terms inscribed,  
Our Hebrew songs and harps in Babylon,  
That pleased so well our victors' ear, declare  
That rather Greece from us these arts derived,  
Ill imitated while they loudest sing  
The vices of their deities, and their own,  
In fable, hymn, or song, so personating  
Their gods ridiculous, and themselves past shame.  
Remove their swelling epithets, thick laid  
As varnish on a harlot's cheek, the rest,  
Thin sown with aught of profit or delight,  
Will far be found unworthy to compare  
With Sion's songs, to all true tastes excelling,  
Where God is praised aright and godlike men,  
The Holiest of Holies and his Saints  
(Such are from God inspired, not such from thee);  
Unless where moral virtue is express'd  
By light of Nature, not in all quite lost.  
Their Orators thou then extoll'st as those  
The top of eloquence, statists indeed,  
And lovers of their country, as may seem;  
But herein to our Prophets far beneath,  
As men divinely taught, and better teaching  
The solid rules of civil government,  
In their majestic, unaffected style,  
Than all the oratory of Greece and Rome.  
In them is plainest taught, and easiest learnt,  
What makes a nation happy, and keeps it so,  
What ruins kingdoms, and lays cities flat;  
These only, with our Law, best form a king."

So spake the Son of God; but Satan, now  
Quite at a loss, for all his darts were spent,  
Thus to our Saviour with stern brow replied:

"Since neither wealth nor honour, arms nor arts,  
Kingdom nor empire, pleases thee, nor aught  
By me proposed in life contemplative  
Or active, tended on by glory or fame,  
What dost thou in this world? The Wilderness  
For thee is fittest place: I found thee there,  
And thither will return thee. Yet remember

What I foretell thee; soon thou shalt have cause  
 To wish thou never hadst rejected thus  
 Nicely or cautiously my offer'd aid,  
 Which would have set thee in short time with ease  
 On David's throne, or throne of all the world,  
 Now at full age, fulness of time, thy season, 380  
 When prophecies of thee are best fulfill'd.  
 Now, contrary, if I read aught in heaven,  
 Or heaven write aught of fate, by what the stars  
 Voluminous, or single characters  
 In their conjunction met, give me to spell,  
 Sorrows and labours, opposition, hate,  
 Attends thee; scorns, reproaches, injuries,  
 Violence and stripes, and lastly cruel death.  
 A kingdom they portend thee, but what kingdom,  
 Real or allegoric, I discern not; 390  
 Nor when: eternal sure, as without end,  
 Without beginning: for no date prefix'd  
 Directs me in the starry rubric set."

So saying, he took (for still he knew his power  
 Not yet expired) and to the Wilderness  
 Brought back the Son of God, and left him there,  
 Feigning to disappear. Darkness now rose,  
 As daylight sunk, and brought in frowning Night,  
 Her shadowy offspring, unsubstantial both,  
 Privation mere of light and absent day. 400  
 Our Saviour, meek and with untroubled mind  
 After his airy jaunt, though hurried sore,  
 Hungry and cold betook him to his rest,  
 Wherever, under some concourse of shades,  
 Whose branching arms thick intertwined might shield  
 From dews and damps of night his shelter'd head;  
 But, shelter'd, slept in vain; for at his head  
 The Tempter watch'd, and soon with ugly dreams  
 Disturb'd his sleep. And either tropic now  
 Can thunder, and both ends of heaven; the clouds 410  
 From many a horrid rift abortive pour'd  
 Pierce rain with lightning mix'd, water with fire  
 In ruin reconciled; nor slept the winds  
 Within their stony caves, but rush'd abroad

From the four hinges of the world, and fell  
On the vex'd Wilderness, whose tallest pines,  
Though rooted deep as high, and sturdiest oaks  
Bow'd their stiff necks, loaden with stormy blasts,  
Or torn up sheer. Ill wast thou shrouded then,  
O patient Son of God, yet only stood'st  
Unshaken! Nor yet staid the terror there:  
Infernal ghosts and hellish furies round  
Environ'd thee; some howl'd, some yell'd, some shriek'd,  
Some bent at thee their fiery darts, while thou  
Sat'st unappall'd in calm and sinless peace.  
Thus pass'd the night so foul, till Morning fair  
Came forth with pilgrim steps, in amice gray,  
Who with her radiant finger still'd the roar  
Of thunder, chased the clouds, and laid the winds,  
And grisly spectres, which the Fiend had raised  
To tempt the Son of God with terrors dire.  
And now the sun with more effectual beams  
Had cheer'd the face of earth, and dried the wet  
From drooping plant, or drooping tree; the birds,  
Who all things now behold more fresh and green,  
After a night of storm so ruinous,  
Clear'd up their choicest notes in bush and spray,  
To gratulate the sweet return of morn.  
Nor yet amidst this joy and brightest morn  
Was absent, after all his mischief done,  
The Prince of Darkness; glad would also seem  
Of this fair change, and to our Saviour came;  
Yet with no new device (they all were spent),  
Rather by this his last affront resolved,  
Desperate of better course, to vent his rage  
And mad despite to be so oft repell'd.  
Him walking on a sunny hill he found,  
Back'd on the north and west by a thick wood;  
Out of the wood he starts in wonted shape,  
And in a careless mood thus to him said:  
"Fair morning yet betides thee, Son of God,  
After a dismal night. I heard the wrack,  
As earth and sky would mingle; but myself  
Was distant; and these flaws, though mortals fear them.



As dangerous to the pillar'd frame of Heaven,  
Or to the Earth's dark basis underneath,  
Are to the main as inconsiderable  
And harmless, if not wholesome, as a sneeze  
To man's less universe, and soon are gone.  
Yet, as being oft-times noxious where they light 460  
On man, beast, plant, wasteful and turbulent,  
Like turbulencies in the affairs of men,  
Over whose heads they roar, and seem to point,  
They oft fore-signify and threaten ill.  
This tempest at this desert most was bent;  
Of men at thee, for only thou here dwell'st.  
Did I not tell thee, if thou didst reject  
The perfect season offer'd with my aid  
To win thy destined seat, but wilt prolong  
All to the push of fate, pursue thy way 470  
Of gaining David's throne no man knows when,  
For both the when and how is nowhere told?  
Thou shalt be what thou art ordain'd, no doubt;  
For Angels have proclaim'd it, but concealing  
The time and means: each act is rightliest done  
Not when it must, but when it may be best.  
If thou observe not this, be sure to find  
What I foretold thee, many a hard assay  
Of dangers, and adversities, and pains,  
Ere thou of Israel's sceptre get fast hold; 480  
Whereof this ominous night that closed thee round,  
So many terrors, voices, prodigies,  
May warn thee, as a sure foregoing sign."

So talked he, while the Son of God went on  
And staid not, but in brief him answer'd thus:  
"Me worse than wet thou find'st not; other harm  
Those terrors which thou speak'st of did me none.  
I never fear'd they could, though noising loud  
And threatening nigh: what they can do as signs  
Betokening or ill-boding I contemn 490  
As false portents, not sent from God, but thee;  
Who, knowing I shall reign past thy preventing,  
Obtrudest thy offer'd aid, that I accepting  
At least might seem to hold all power of thee,

Ambitious Spirit! and would'st be thought my God;  
And storm'st refused, thinking to terrify  
Me to thy will! Desist, thou art discern'd,  
And toil'st in vain, nor me in vain molest."

To whom the Fiend now swoln with rage replied:

"Then hear, O Son of David, virgin-born,  
For Son of God to me is yet in doubt,  
Of the Messiah I have heard foretold  
By all the Prophets; of thy birth, at length  
Announced by Gabriel, with the first I knew,  
And of the angelic song in Bethlehem field,  
On thy birth-night, that sung thee Saviour born.  
From that time seldom have I ceased to eye

Thy infancy, thy childhood, and thy youth,  
Thy manhood last, though yet in private bred;  
Till at the ford of Jordan, whither all  
Flock'd to the Baptist, I among the rest,  
Though not to be baptized, by voice from Heaven  
Heard thee pronounced the Son of God beloved.  
Thenceforth I thought thee worth my nearer view  
And narrower scrutiny, that I might learn  
In what degree or meaning thou art called  
The Son of God, which bears no single sense.  
The Son of God I also am, or was;  
And if I was, I am; relation stands:  
All men are Sons of God; yet thee I thought  
In some respect far higher so declared.  
Therefore I watch'd thy footsteps from that hour,  
And follow'd thee still on to this waste wild,  
Where by all best conjectures I collect  
Thou art to be my fatal enemy.  
Good reason then if I beforehand seek  
To understand my adversary, who  
And what he is; his wisdom, power, intent;  
By parle or composition, truce or league  
To win him, or win from him what I can.  
And opportunity I here have had  
To try thee, sift thee, and confess have found thee  
Proof against all temptation, as a rock  
Of adamant, and as a centre, firm

300

310

320

330

To the utmost of mere man both wise and good,  
 Not more; for honours, riches, kingdoms, glory,  
 Have been before condemn'd, and may again.  
 Therefore, to know what more thou art than man,  
 Worth naming Son of God by voice from Heaven,  
 Another method I must now begin."

540

So saying, he caught him up, and without wing  
 Of hippogrif bore through the air sublime  
 Over the wilderness and o'er the plain,  
 Till underneath them fair Jerusalem,  
 The Holy City, lifted high her towers,  
 And higher yet the glorious Temple rear'd  
 Her pile, far off appearing like a mount  
 Of alabaster, topt with golden spires:

There on the highest pinnacle he set  
 The Son of God, and added thus in scorn:

550

"There stand, if thou wilt stand; to stand upright  
 Will ask thee skill. I to thy Father's house  
 Have brought thee, and highest placed: highest is best.  
 Now shew thy progeny; if not to stand,  
 Cast thyself down; safely, if Son of God;  
 For it is written, 'He will give command  
 Concerning thee to his Angels; in their hands  
 They shall uplift thee, lest at any time  
 Thou chance to dash thy foot against a stone.'"

To whom thus Jesus: "Also it is written,  
 'Tempt not the Lord thy God.'" He said, and stood;  
 But Satan, smitten with amazement, fell.

560

As when Earth's son, Antæus (to compare  
 Small things with greatest), in Irassa strove  
 With Jove's Alcides, and oft foil'd still rose,  
 Receiving from his mother Earth new strength,  
 Fresh from his fall, and fiercer grapple join'd,  
 Throttled at length in the air expired and fell,  
 So after many a foil the Tempter proud,  
 Renewing fresh assaults, amidst his pride  
 Fell whence he stood to see his victor fall;  
 And as that Theban monster that proposed  
 Her riddle, and him who solved it not devour'd,  
 That once found out and solved, for grief and spite

570

Cast herself headlong from the Ismenian steep,  
So strook with dread and anguish fell the Fiend,  
And to his crew, that sat consulting, brought  
Joyless triumphals of his hoped success;  
Ruin, and desperation, and dismay,  
Who durst so proudly tempt the Son of God.  
So Satan fell, and straight a fiery globe  
Of Angels on full sail of wing flew nigh,  
Who on their plummy vans received Him soft  
From his uneasy station, and upbore  
As on a floating couch through the blithe air;  
Then in a flowery valley set him down  
On a green bank, and set before him spread  
A table of celestial food, divine  
Ambrosial fruits fetch'd from the Tree of Life,  
And from the Fount of Life ambrosial drink,  
That soon refresh'd him wearied, and repair'd  
What hunger, if aught hunger had impair'd,  
Or thirst; and as he fed Angelic quires  
Sung heavenly anthems of his victory  
Over temptation and the Tempter proud:

580

590

"True Image of the Father, whether throned  
In the bosom of bliss, and light of light  
Conceiving, or remote from Heaven, enshrined  
In fleshly tabernacle and human form,  
Wandering the Wilderness, whatever place,  
Habit, or state, or motion, still expressing  
The Son of God, with Godlike force endued  
Against the attempter of thy Father's throne  
And thief of Paradise! Him long of old  
Thou didst debase, and down from Heaven cast  
With all his army; now thou hast avenged  
Supplanted Adam, and, by vanquishing  
Temptation, hast regain'd lost Paradise,  
And frustrated the conquest fraudulent.  
He never more henceforth will dare set foot  
In Paradise to tempt; his snares are broke.  
For, though that seat of earthly bliss be fail'd,  
A fairer Paradise is founded now  
For Adam and his chosen sons, whom thou

600

610

A Saviour art come down to reinstall;  
Where they shall dwell secure, when time shall be,  
Of tempter and temptation without fear.  
But thou, Infernal Serpent! shalt not long  
Rule in the clouds. Like an autumnal star  
Or lightning thou shalt fall from Heaven, trod down 620  
Under his feet. For proof, ere this thou feel'st  
Thy wound, yet not thy last and deadliest wound,  
By this repulse received, and hold'st in Hell  
No triumph; in all her gates Abaddon rues  
Thy bold attempt. Hereafter learn with awe  
To dread the Son of God. He all unarm'd  
Shall chase thee with the terror of his voice  
From thy demoniac holds, possession foul,  
Thee and thy legions; yelling they shall fly,  
And beg to hide them in a herd of swine, 630  
Lest he command them down into the Deep,  
Bound, and to torment sent before their time.  
Hail, Son of the Most High, heir of both Worlds,  
Queller of Satan! On thy glorious work  
Now enter, and begin to save Mankind."

Thus they the Son of God, our Saviour meek,  
Sung victor, and from heavenly feast refresh'd  
Brought on his way with joy. He unobserved  
Home to his mother's house private return'd.

## SAMSON AGONISTES.

### OF THAT SORT OF DRAMATIC POEM WHICH IS CALLED TRAGEDY.

TRAGEDY, as it was anciently composed, hath been ever held the gravest, moralest, and most profitable of all other poems: therefore said by Aristotle to be of power, by raising pity and fear, or terror, to purge the mind of those and such-like passions; that is, to temper and reduce them to just measure with a kind of delight, stirred up by reading or seeing those passions well imitated. Nor is Nature wanting in her own effects to make good his assertion; for so in physic things of melancholic hue and quality are used against melancholy, sour against sour, salt to remove salt humours. Hence philosophers and other gravest writers, as Cicero, Plutarch, and others, frequently cite out of tragic poets, both to adorn and illustrate their discourse. The Apostle Paul himself thought it not unworthy to insert a verse of Euripides into the text of Holy Scripture, 1 Cor. xv. 33; and Paræus, commenting on the Revelation, divides the whole book as a tragedy, into acts, distinguished each by a Chorus of heavenly harpings and song between. Heretofore men in highest dignity have laboured not a little to be thought able to compose a tragedy. Of that honour Dionysius the elder was no less ambitious than before of his attaining to the tyranny. Augustus Cæsar also had begun his *Ajax*, but unable to please his own judgment with what he had begun, left it unfinished. Seneca, the philosopher, is by some thought the author of those tragedies (at least the best of them) that go under that name. Gregory Nazianzen, a Father of the Church, thought it not unbecoming the sanctity of his person to write a tragedy, which he entitled *Christ Suffering*. This is mentioned to vindicate Tragedy from the small esteem, or rather infamy, which in the account of many it undergoes at this day, with other common interludes; happening through the poet's error of intermixing comic stuff with tragic sadness and gravity; or introducing trivial and vulgar persons: which by all judicious hath been counted absurd, and brought in without discretion, corruptly to gratify the people. And though ancient Tragedy use no Prologue, yet using sometimes, in case of self-defence, or explana-

tion, that which Martial calls an Epistle; in behalf of this tragedy, coming forth after the ancient manner, much different from what among us passes for best, thus much beforehand may be epistled: that Chorus is here introduced after the Greek manner, not ancient only but modern, and still in use among the Italians. In the modelling therefore of this poem, with good reason, the Ancients and Italians are rather followed, as of much more authority and fame. The measure of verse used in the Chorus is of all sorts, called by the Greeks *Monostrophic*, or rather *Apotelemyenon*, without regard had to Strophe, Antistrophe, or Epode, which were a kind of stanzas framed only for the music, then used with the Chorus that sung; not essential to the poem, and therefore not material; or, being divided into stanzas or pauses, they may be called *Allæstrophe*. Division into act and scene, referring chiefly to the stage (to which this work never was intended), is here omitted.

It suffices if the whole drama be found not produced beyond the fifth act. Of the style and uniformity, and that commonly called the plot, whether intricate or explicit, which is nothing indeed but such economy, or disposition of the fable, as may stand best with verisimilitude and decorum; they only will best judge who are not unacquainted with Æschylus, Sophocles, and Euripides, the three tragic poets unequalled yet by any, and the best rule to all who endeavour to write Tragedy. The circumscription of time, wherein the whole drama begins and ends, is, according to ancient rule, and best example, within the space of twenty-four hours.

## THE ARGUMENT.

SAMSON, made captive, blind, and now in the prison at Gaza, there to labour as in a common workhouse, on a festival day, in the general cessation from labour, comes forth into the open air, to a place high, somewhat retired, there to sit a while and bemoan his condition. Where he happens at length to be visited by certain friends and equals of his tribe, which make the Chorus, who seek to comfort him what they can; then by his old father, Manoah, who endeavours the like, and withal tells him his purpose to procure his liberty by ransom; lastly, that this feast was proclaimed by the Philistines as a day of thanksgiving for their deliverance from the hands of Samson, which yet more troubles him. Manoah then departs to prosecute his endeavour with the Philistian lords for Samson's redemption; who in the meanwhile is visited by other persons; and lastly by a public officer to require his coming to the feast before the lords and

people, to play or shew his strength in their presence. He at first refuses, dismissing the public officer with absolute denial to come; at length persuaded inwardly that this was from God, he yields to go along with him, who came now the second time with great threatenings to fetch him. The Chorus yet remaining on the place, Manoa returns full of joyful hope to procure ere long his son's deliverance; in the midst of which discourse an Ebrew comes in haste, confusedly at first, and afterward more distinctly, relating the catastrophe, what Samson had done to the Philistines, and by accident to himself; wherewith the tragedy ends.

## THE PERSONS.

SAMSON.

MANOA, the father of Samson.

DALILA, his wife.

HARAPHA of Gath.

Public officer.

Messenger.

Chorus of Danites.

*The Scene, before the Prison in Gaza.*

*Samson.* A little onward lend thy guiding hand  
To these dark steps, a little further on;  
For yonder bank hath choice of sun or shade;  
There I am wont to sit, when any chance  
Relieves me from my task of servile toil,  
Daily in the common prison else enjoin'd me,  
Where I, a prisoner chain'd, scarce freely draw  
The air imprison'd also, close and damp,  
Unwholesome draught. But here I feel amends,  
The breath of heaven fresh-blowing, pure and sweet,  
With day-spring born; here leave me to respire.  
This day a solemn feast the people hold  
To Dagon their sea-idol, and forbid  
Laborious works, unwillingly this rest  
Their superstition yields me; hence, with leave  
Retiring from the popular noise, I seek



This unfrequented place to find some ease;  
Ease to the body some, none to the mind  
From restless thoughts, that, like a deadly swarm  
Of hornets arm'd, no sooner found alone,  
But rush upon me thronging, and present  
Times past, what once I was, and what am now.  
Oh wherefore was my birth from Heaven foretold  
Twice by an Angel, who at last in sight  
Of both my parents all in flames ascended  
From off the altar, where an offering burn'd,  
As in a fiery column charioting  
His godlike presence, and from some great act  
Or benefit reveal'd to Abraham's race?  
Why was my breeding order'd and prescribed  
As of a person separate to God,  
Design'd for great exploits, if I must die  
Betray'd, captived, and both my eyes put out,  
Made of my enemies the scorn and gaze,  
To grind in brazen fetters under task  
With this heaven-gifted strength? O glorious strength,  
Put to the labour of a beast, debased  
Lower than bond-slave! Promise was that I  
Should Israel from Philistian yoke deliver:  
Ask for this great deliverer now, and find him  
Eyeless in Gaza at the mill with slaves,  
Himself in bonds under Philistian yoke.  
Yet stay, let me not rashly call in doubt  
Divine prediction: what if all foretold  
Had been fulfill'd but through mine own default,  
Whom have I to complain of but myself?  
Who this high gift of strength committed to me,  
In what part lodged, how easily bereft me,  
Under the seal of silence could not keep,  
But weakly to a woman must reveal it,  
O'ercome with importunity and tears.  
O impotence of mind in body strong!  
But what is strength without a double share  
Of wisdom? vast, unwieldy, burdensome,  
Proudly secure, yet liable to fall  
By weakest subtleties; not made to rule,

20

30

40

50

But to subserve where wisdom bears command.  
God, when he gave me strength, to shew withal  
How slight the gift was, hung it in my hair.  
But peace! I must not quarrel with the will  
Of highest dispensation, which herein  
Haply had ends above my reach to know:  
Suffices that to me strength is my bane,  
And proves the source of all my miseries,  
So many, and so huge, that each apart  
Would ask a life to wail; but, chief of all,  
O loss of sight, of thee I most complain!  
Blind among enemies! Oh worse than chains,  
Dungeon, or beggary, or decrepit age!  
Light, the prime work of God, to me is extinct,  
And all her various objects of delight  
Annul'd, which might in part my grief have eased,  
Inferior to the vilest now become  
Of man or worm; the vilest here excel me:  
They creep, yet see; I, dark in light, exposed  
To daily fraud, contempt, abuse, and wrong,  
Within doors, or without, still as a fool,  
In power of others, never in my own;  
Scarce half I seem to live, dead more than half.  
Oh dark, dark, dark, amid the blaze of noon,  
Irrecoverably dark, total eclipse  
Without all hope of day!  
O first-created beam, and thou great Word,  
"Let there be light, and light was over all,"  
Why am I thus bereaved thy prime decree?  
The Sun to me is dark  
And silent as the Moon,  
When she deserts the night,  
Hid in her vacant interlunar cave.  
Since light so necessary is to life,  
And almost life itself, if it be true  
That light is in the soul,  
She all in every part; why was the sight  
To such a tender ball as the eye confined,  
So obvious and so easy to be quench'd?  
And not, as feeling, through all parts diffused,

That she might look at will through every pore?  
 Then had I not been thus exiled from light,  
 As in the land of darkness yet in light,  
 To live a life half dead, a living death,  
 And buried; but, Oh yet more miserable!  
 Myself my sepulchre, a moving grave;  
 Buried, yet not exempt  
 By privilege of death and burial  
 From worst of other evils, pains, and wrongs;  
 But made hereby obnoxious more  
 To all the miseries of life,  
 Life in captivity  
 Among inhuman foes.

100

- But who are these? for with joint pace I hear  
 The tread of many feet steering this way;  
 Perhaps my enemies, who come to stare  
 At my affliction, and perhaps to insult,  
 Their daily practice to afflict me more.

110

*Chorus.* This, this is he; softly a while;  
 Let us not break in upon him.  
 O change beyond report, thought, or belief!  
 See how he lies at random, carelessly diffused,  
 With languish'd head unpropt,  
 As one past hope, abandon'd,  
 And by himself given over;  
 In slavish habit, ill-fitted weeds  
 O'er-worn and soil'd.

120

Or do my eyes misrepresent? Can this be he,  
 That heroic, that renown'd,  
 Irresistible Samson? whom unarm'd  
 No strength of man, or fiercest wild beast could withstand;  
 Who tore the lion as the lion tears the kid;  
 Ran on embattled armies clad in iron,  
 And, weaponless himself,  
 Made arms ridiculous, useless the forgery  
 Of brazen shield and spear, the hammer'd cuirass,  
 Chalybean-temper'd steel, and frock of mail  
 Adamantean proof:  
 But safest he who stood aloof,  
 When insupportably his foot advanced,

130

In scorn of their proud arms and warlike tools,  
 Spurn'd them to death by troops. The bold Ascalonite  
 Fled from his lion ramp, old warriors turn'd  
 Their plated backs under his heel,  
 Or grovelling soild their crested helmets in the dust. 140  
 Then with what trivial weapon came to hand,  
 The jaw of a dead ass, his sword of bone,  
 A thousand foreskins fell, the flower of Palestine,  
 In Ramath-lechi, famous to this day:  
 Then by main force pull'd up, and on his shoulders bore,  
 The gates of Azza, post and massy bar,  
 Up to the hill by Hebron, seat of giants old,  
 No journey of a sabbath-day, and loaded so;  
 Like whom the Gentiles feign to bear up Heaven. 150  
 Which shall I first bewail,  
 Thy bondage or lost sight,  
 Prison within prison  
 Inseparably dark?  
 Thou art become (O worst imprisonment!)  
 The dungeon of thyself; thy soul  
 (Which men enjoying sight oft without cause complain)  
 Imprison'd now indeed  
 In real darkness of the body dwells,  
 Shut up from outward light 160  
 To incorporate with gloomy night;  
 For inward light, alas!  
 Puts forth no visual beam.  
 O mirror of our fickle state,  
 Since man on earth unparallel'd!  
 The rarer thy example stands,  
 By how much from the top of wondrous glory,  
 Strongest of mortal men,  
 To lowest pitch of abject fortune thou art fallen.  
 For him I reckon not in high estate 170  
 Whom long descent of birth  
 Or the sphere of fortune raises;  
 But thee, whose strength, while virtue was her mate,  
 Might have subdued the Earth,  
 Universally crown'd with highest praises.

*Sams.* I hear the sound of words; their sense the air

Dissolves unjointed ere it reach my ear.

*Chor.* He speaks; let us draw nigh. Matchless in might,  
The glory late of Israel, now the grief!  
We come, thy friends and neighbours not unknown, 180  
From Eshtaol and Zora's fruitful vale,  
To visit or bewail thee; or, if better,  
Counsel or consolation we may bring,  
Salve to thy sores; apt words have power to swage  
The tumours of a troubled mind,  
And are as balm to fester'd wounds.

*Sams.* Your coming, friends, revives me; for I learn  
Now of my own experience, not by talk,  
How counterfeit a coin they are who "friends"  
Bear in their superscription (of the most 190  
I would be understood). In prosperous days  
They swarm, but in adverse withdraw their head,  
Not to be found, though sought. Ye see, O friends,  
How many evils have enclosed me round;  
Yet that which was the worst now least afflicts me,  
Blindness; for had I sight, confused with shame,  
How could I once look up, or heave the head,  
Who like a foolish pilot have shipwreck'd  
My vessel trusted to me from above, 200  
Gloriously rigg'd, and for a word, a tear,  
Fool! have divulged the secret gift of God  
To a deceitful woman? Tell me, friends,  
Am I not sung and proverb'd for a fool  
In every street? Do they not say, "How well  
Are come upon him his deserts"? Yet why?  
Immeasurable strength they might behold  
In me; of wisdom nothing more than mean:  
This with the other should, at least, have pair'd;  
These two, proportion'd ill, drove me transverse.

*Chor.* Tax not divine disposal; wisest men  
Have err'd, and by bad women been deceived;  
And shall again, pretend they ne'er so wise.  
Deject not then so overmuch thyself,  
Who hast of sorrow thy full load besides;  
Yet, truth to say, I oft have heard men wonder  
Why thou should'st wed Philistian women rather 210

Than of thine own tribe fairer, or as fair,  
At least of thy own nation, and as noble.

*Sams.* The first I saw at Timna, and she pleased  
Me, not my parents, that I sought to wed  
The daughter of an infidel: they knew not  
That what I motion'd was of God; I knew  
From intimate impulse, and therefore urged  
The marriage on, that by occasion hence  
I might begin Israel's deliverance,  
The work to which I was divinely call'd.  
She proving false, the next I took to wife  
(O that I never had! fond wish too late!)

Was in the vale of Sorec, Dalila,  
That specious monster, my accomplish'd snare.  
I thought it lawful from my former act,  
And the same end, still watching to oppress  
Israel's oppressors. Of what now I suffer  
She was not the prime cause, but I myself,  
Who, vanquish'd with a peal of words, (O weakness!)

Gave up my fort of silence to a woman.  
*Chor.* In seeking just occasion to provoke  
The Philistine, thy country's enemy,  
Thou never wast remiss, I bear thee witness:  
Yet Israel still serves with all his sons.

*Sams.* That fault I take not on me, but transfer  
On Israel's governors and heads of tribes,  
Who, seeing those great acts which God had done  
Singly by me against their conquerors,  
Acknowledged not, or not at all consider'd,  
Deliverance offer'd: I, on the other side,  
Used no ambition to commend my deeds;  
The deeds themselves, though mute, spoke loud the doer.  
But they persisted deaf, and would not seem  
To count them things worth notice, till at length  
Their lords, the Philistines, with gather'd powers,  
Enter'd Judea seeking me, who then  
Safe to the rock of Etham was retired,  
Not flying, but forecasting in what place  
To set upon them, what advantaged best.  
Meanwhile the men of Judah, to prevent

The harass of their land, beset me round:  
 I willingly on some conditions came  
 Into their hands, and they as gladly yield me  
 To the uncircumcised a welcome prey,  
 Bound with two cords; but cords to me were threads  
 Touch'd with the flame: on their whole host I flew  
 Unarm'd, and with a trivial weapon fell'd  
 Their choicest youth; they only lived who fled.  
 Had Judah that day join'd, or one whole tribe,  
 They had by this possess'd the towers of Gath,  
 And lorded over them whom now they serve.  
 But what more oft in nations grown corrupt,  
 And by their vices brought to servitude,  
 Than to love bondage more than liberty,  
 Bondage with ease than strenuous liberty;  
 And to despise, or envy, or suspect  
 Whom God hath of his special favour raised  
 As their deliverer? If he aught begin,  
 How frequent to desert him, and at last  
 To heap ingratitude on worthiest deeds!

266

270

*Chor.* Thy words to my remembrance bring  
 How Succoth and the fort of Penueh  
 Their great deliverer contemn'd,  
 The matchless Gideon, in pursuit  
 Of Madian and her vanquish'd kings:  
 And how ingrateful Ephraim  
 Had dealt with Jephtha, who by argument,  
 Not worse than by his shield and spear,  
 Defended Israel from the Ammonite,  
 Had not his prowess quell'd their pride  
 In that sore battle when so many died  
 Without reprieve, adjudged to death  
 For want of well pronouncing *Shibboleth*.

280

*Sams.* Of such examples add me to the roll;  
 Me easily indeed mine may neglect,  
 But God's proposed deliverance not so.

290

*Chor.* Just are the ways of God,  
 And justifiable to men;  
 Unless there be who think not God at all:  
 If any be, they walk obscure;

For of such doctrine never was there school,  
But the heart of the fool,  
And no man therein doctor but himself.

Yet more there be who doubt his ways not just,  
As to his own edicts found contradicting;  
Then give the reins to wandering thought,  
Regardless of his glory's diminution;  
Till, by their own perplexities involved,  
They ravel more, still less resolved,  
But never find self-satisfying solution.

As if they would confine the interminable,  
And tie him to his own prescript,  
Who made our laws to bind us, not himself,  
And hath full right to exempt  
Whomso it pleases him by choice  
From national obstruction, without taint  
Of sin, or legal debt;  
For with his own laws he can best dispense.

He would not else, who never wanted means,  
Nor in respect of the enemy just cause  
To set his people free,  
Have prompted this heroic Nazarite,  
Against his vow of strictest purity,  
To seek in marriage that fallacious bride,  
Unclean, unchaste.

Down, Reason, then; at least, vain reasonings down;  
Though Reason here aver  
That moral verdict quits her of unclean:  
Unchaste was subsequent; her stain, not his.

But see! here comes thy reverend sire,  
With careful step, locks white as down,  
Old Manoa: advise  
Forthwith how thou ought'st to receive him.

*Sams.* Ay me! another inward grief, awaked  
With mention of that name, renews the assault.

*Manoa.* Brethren and men of Dan, for such ye seem  
Though in this uncouth place; if old respect,  
As I suppose, towards your once gloried friend,  
My son, now captive, hither hath inform'd  
Your younger feet, while mine, cast back with age,



Came lagging after, say if he be here.

*Chor.* As signal now in low dejected state  
As erst in highest, behold him where he lies.

*Man.* O miserable change! Is this the man,  
That invincible Samson, far renown'd,  
The dread of Israel's foes, who with a strength  
Equivalent to Angels' walk'd their streets,  
None offering fight; who, single combatant,  
Duell'd their armies rank'd in proud array,  
Himself an army, now unequal match

340

To save himself against a coward arm'd  
At one spear's length? O ever-failing trust  
In mortal strength! and, oh, what not in man  
Deceivable and vain! Nay, what thing good  
Pray'd for, but often proves our woe, our bane?  
I pray'd for children, and thought barrenness  
In wedlock a reproach; I gain'd a son,  
And such a son as all men hail'd me happy:  
Who would be now a father in my stead?

350

Oh wherefore did God grant me my request,  
And as a blessing with such pomp adorn'd?  
Why are his gifts desirable, to tempt  
Our earnest prayers, then, given with solemn hand  
As graces, draw a scorpion's tail behind?

360

For this did the Angel twice descend? for this  
Ordain'd thy nurture 'holy, as of a plant  
Select and sacred? glorious for a while,  
The miracle of men: then in an hour

Ensnared, assaulted, overcome, led bound,  
Thy foes' derision, captive, poor and blind,  
Into a dungeon thrust, to work with slaves!  
Alas! methinks whom God hath chosen once  
To worthiest deeds, if he through frailty err,  
He should not so o'erwhelm, and as a thrall  
Subject him to so foul indignities,  
Be it but for honour's sake of former deeds.

370

*Sams.* Appoint not heavenly disposition, father.  
Nothing of all these evils hath befall'n me  
But justly; I myself have brought them on,  
Sole author I, sole cause: if aught seem vile,

As vile hath been my folly, who have profaned  
The mystery of God, given me under pledge  
Of vow, and have betray'd it to a woman,  
A Canaanite, my faithless enemy.  
This well I knew, nor was at all surprised,  
But warn'd by oft experience. Did not she  
Of Timna first betray me, and reveal  
The secret wrested from me in her highth  
Of nuptial love profess'd, carrying it straight  
To them who had corrupted her, my spies,  
And rivals? In this other was there found  
More faith? who also in her prime of love,  
Spousal embraces, vitiated with gold,  
Though offer'd only, by the scent conceived,  
Her spurious first-born, Treason against me.  
Thrice she assay'd, with flattering prayers and sighs,  
And amorous reproaches, to win from me  
My capital secret, in what part my strength  
Lay stored, in what part summ'd, that she might know;  
Thrice I deluded her, and turn'd to sport  
Her importunity, each time perceiving  
How openly and with what impudence  
She purposed to betray me, and (which was worse  
Than undissembled hate) with what contempt  
She sought to make me traitor to myself.  
Yet the fourth time, when mustering all her wiles,  
With blandish'd parleys, feminine assaults,  
Tongue-batteries, she surceased not day nor night  
To storm me over-watch'd and wearied out,  
At times when men seek most repose and rest,  
I yielded, and unlock'd her all my heart,  
Who with a grain of manhood well resolved  
Might easily have shook off all her snares;  
But foul effeminacy held me yoked  
Her bond-slave. O indignity, O blot  
To honour and religion! servile mind  
Rewarded well with servile punishment!  
The base degree to which I now am fall'n,  
These rags, this grinding, is not yet so base  
As was my former servitude, ignoble,

380

390

400

410

Unmanly, ignominious, infamous,  
True slavery, and that blindness worse than this,  
That saw not how degenerately I served.

*Man.* I cannot praise thy marriage choices, son,  
Rather approved them not; but thou didst plead  
Divine impulsion prompting how thou might'st  
Find some occasion to infest our foes.

420

I state not that; this I am sure, our foes  
Found soon occasion thereby to make thee  
Their captive, and their triumph; thou the sooner  
Temptation found'st, or over-potent charms,  
To violate the sacred trust of silence

Deposited within thee; which to have kept  
Tacit was in thy power. True; and thou bear'st

430

Enough, and more, the burden of that fault;  
Bitterly hast thou paid, and still art paying  
That rigid score. A worse thing yet remains;  
This day the Philistines a popular feast  
Here celebrate in Gaza, and proclaim  
Great pomp, and sacrifice, and praises loud,  
To Dagon, as their god who hath deliver'd  
Thee, Samson, bound and blind, into their hands,  
Them out of thine, who slew'st them many a slain.  
So Dagon shall be magnified, and God,  
Besides whom is no god, compared with idols,  
Disglorified, blasphemed, and had in scorn  
By the idolatrous rout amidst their wine;  
Which to have come to pass by means of thee,  
Samson, of all thy sufferings think the heaviest,  
Of all reproach the most with shame that ever  
Could have befall'n thee and thy father's house.

440

*Sams.* Father, I do acknowledge and confess  
That I this honour, I this pomp have brought  
To Dagon, and advanced his praises high  
Among the heathen round; to God have brought  
Dishonour, obloquy, and oped the mouths  
Of idolists and atheists; have brought scandal  
To Israel, diffidence of God, and doubt  
In feeble hearts, propense enough before  
To waver, or fall off and join with idols:

450

Which is my chief affliction, shame and sorrow,  
The anguish of my soul, that suffers not  
Mine eye to harbour sleep, or thoughts to rest.  
This only hope relieves me, that the strife 460  
With me hath end: all the contest is now  
'Twixt God and Dagon. Dagon hath presumed,  
Me overthrown, to enter lists with God,  
His deity comparing and preferring  
Before the God of Abraham. He, be sure,  
Will not connive, or linger, thus provoked,  
But will arise, and his great name assert:  
Dagon must stoop, and shall ere long receive  
Such a discomfit as shall quite despoil him  
Of all these boasted trophies won on me, 470  
And with confusion blank his worshippers.

*Man.* With cause this hope relieves thee, and these words  
I as a prophecy receive; for God,  
Nothing more certain, will not long defer  
To vindicate the glory of his name  
Against all competition, nor will long  
Endure it doubtful whether God be Lord,  
Or Dagon. But for thee what shall be done?  
Thou must not in the mean while here forgot  
Lie in this miserable loathsome plight 480  
Neglected. I already have made way  
To some Philistian lords, with whom to treat  
About thy ransom: well they may by this  
Have satisfied their utmost of revenge,  
By pains and slaveries, worse than death, inflicted  
On thee, who now no more canst do them harm.

*Sams.* Spare that proposal, father, spare the trouble  
Of that solicitation; let me here,  
As I deserve, pay on my punishment,  
And expiate, if possible, my crime, 490  
Shameful garrulity. To have reveal'd  
Secrets of men, the secrets of a friend,  
How heinous had the fact been, how deserving  
Contempt and scorn of all, to be excluded  
All friendship, and avoided as a blab,  
The mark of fool set on his front! But I

God's counsel have not kept, his holy secret  
 Presumptuously have publish'd, impiously,  
 Weakly at least, and shamefully: a sin  
 That Gentiles in their parables condemn  
 To their Abyss and horrid pains confined.

500

*Man.* Be penitent, and for thy fault contrite,  
 But act not in thy own affliction, son;  
 Repent the sin; but if the punishment  
 Thou canst avoid, self-preservation bids;  
 Or the execution leave to high disposal,  
 And let another hand, not thine, exact  
 Thy penal forfeit from thyself. Perhaps  
 God will relent, and quit thee all his debt;  
 Who ever more approves and more accepts  
 (Best pleased with humble and filial submission)  
 Him who imploring mercy sues for life  
 Than who self-rigorous chooses death as due;  
 Which argues over-just, and self-displeased  
 For self-offence, more than for God offended.  
 Reject not then what offer'd means who knows  
 But God hath set before us to return thee  
 Home to thy country and his sacred house,  
 Where thou may'st bring thy offerings, to avert  
 His further ire, with prayers and vows renew'd.

510

520

*Sams.* His pardon I implore; but as for life,  
 To what end should I seek it? When in strength  
 All mortals I excell'd, and great in hopes,  
 With youthful courage, and magnanimous thoughts  
 Of birth from Heaven foretold and high exploits,  
 Full of divine instinct, after some proof  
 Of acts indeed heroic, far beyond  
 The sons of Anak, famous now and blazed,  
 Fearless of danger, like a petty god  
 I walk'd about, admired of all and dreaded  
 On hostile ground, none daring my affront:  
 Then swell'd with pride into the snare I fell  
 Of fair fallacious looks, venereal trains,  
 Soften'd with pleasure and voluptuous life,  
 At length to lay my head and hallow'd pledge  
 Of all my strength in the lascivious lap

530

Of a deceitful concubine, who shore me,  
Like a tame wether, all my precious fleece,  
Then turn'd me out ridiculous, despoil'd,  
Shaven, and disarm'd among my enemies.

340

*Chor.* Desire of wine and all delicious drinks,  
Which many a famous warrior overturns,  
Thou could'st repress; nor did the dancing ruby,  
Sparkling out-pour'd, the flavour, or the smell,  
Or taste that cheers the heart of gods and men,  
Allure thee from the cool crystalline stream.

*Sams.* Wherever fountain or fresh current flow'd  
Against the eastern ray, translucent, pure  
With touch ethereal of Heaven's fiery rod,  
I drank, from the clear milky juice allaying  
Thirst, and refresh'd; nor envied them the grape  
Whose heads that turbulent liquor fills with fumes.

350

*Chor.* O madness, to think use of strongest wines  
And strongest drinks our chief support of health,  
When God with these forbidden made choice to rear  
His mighty champion, strong above compare,  
Whose drink was only from the liquid brook!

*Sams.* But what avail'd this temperance, not complete  
Against another object more enticing?

360

What boots it at one gate to make defence,  
And at another to let in the foe,  
Effeminately vanquish'd? by which means,  
Now blind, dishearten'd, shamed, dishonour'd, quell'd,  
To what can I be useful, wherein serve  
My nation, and the work from Heaven imposed?  
But to sit idle on the household hearth,  
A burdensome drone; to visitants a gaze,  
Or pitied object; these redundant locks,  
Robustious to no purpose, clustering down,  
Vain monument of strength; till length of years  
And sedentary numbness craze my limbs  
To a contemptible old age obscure.

370

Here rather let me drudge and earn my bread,  
Till vermin or the draff of servile food  
Consume me, and oft-invoked death  
Hasten the welcome end of all my pains.

*Man.* Wilt thou then serve the Philistines with that gift  
Which was expressly given thee to annoy them?  
Better at home lie bed-rid, not only idle,  
Inglorious, unemploy'd, with age outworn. 580  
But God, who caused a fountain at thy prayer  
From the dry ground to spring, thy thirst to allay  
After the brunt of battle, can as easy  
Cause light again within thy eyes to spring,  
Wherewith to serve him better than thou hast.  
And I persuade me so: why else this strength  
Miraculous yet remaining in those locks?  
His might continues in thee not for nought,  
Nor shall his wondrous gifts be frustrate thus.

*Sams.* All otherwise to me my thoughts portend,  
That these dark orbs no more shall treat with light, 590  
Nor the other light of life continue long,  
But yield to double darkness nigh at hand:  
So much I feel my genial spirits droop,  
My hopes all flat; Nature within me seems  
In all her functions weary of herself;  
My race of glory run, and race of shame,  
And I shall shortly be with them that rest.

*Man.* Believe not these suggestions, which proceed  
From anguish of the mind, and humours black 600  
That mingle with thy fancy. I however  
Must not omit a father's timely care  
To prosecute the means of thy deliverance  
By ransom, or how else: meanwhile be calm,  
And healing words from these thy friends admit.

*Sams.* O that torment should not be confined  
To the body's wounds and sores,  
With maladies innumerable  
In heart, head, breast, and reins;  
But must secret passage find 610  
To the inmost mind,  
There exercise all his fierce accidents,  
And on her purest spirits prey,  
As on entrails, joints, and limbs,  
With answerable pains, but more intense,  
Though void of corporal sense!

My griefs not only pain me  
As a lingering disease,  
But, finding no redress, ferment and rage;  
Nor less than wounds immedicable  
Rankle, and fester, and gangrene,  
To black mortification.  
Thoughts my tormentors, arm'd with deadly stings,  
Mangle my apprehensive tenderest parts,  
Exasperate, exulcerate, and raise  
Dire inflammation, which no cooling herb  
Or med'cinal liquor can assuage,  
Nor breath of vernal air from snowy Alp.  
Sleep hath forsook and given me o'er  
To death's benumbing opium as my only cure:  
Thence faintings, swoonings of despair,  
And sense of Heaven's desertion.

I was his nursling once and choice delight,  
His destined from the womb,  
Promised by heavenly message twice descending.  
Under his special eye  
Abstemious I grew up and thrived amain;  
He led me on to mightiest deeds,  
Above the nerve of mortal arm,  
Against the uncircumcised, our enemies:  
But now hath cast me off as never known,  
And to those cruel enemies,  
Whom I by his appointment had provoked,  
Left me all helpless, with the irreparable loss  
Of sight, reserved alive to be repeated  
The subject of their cruelty or scorn.  
Nor am I in the list of them that hope;  
Hopeless are all my evils, all remediless:  
This one prayer yet remains, might I be heard,  
No long petition, speedy death,  
The close of all my miseries and the balm.

*Chor.* Many are the sayings of the wise,  
In ancient and in modern books enroll'd,  
Extolling patience as the truest fortitude,  
And to the bearing well of all calamities,  
All chances incident to man's frail life,



Consolatories writ  
With studied argument, and much persuasion sought,  
Lenient of grief and anxious thought;  
But with the afflicted in his pangs their sound 660  
Little prevails, or rather seems a tune  
Harsh, and of dissonant mood from his complaint;  
Unless he feel within  
Some source of consolation from above,  
Secret refreshings that repair his strength  
And fainting spirits uphold.

God of our fathers! what is Man,  
That thou towards him with hand so various  
(Or might I say contrarious?)  
Temper'st thy providence through his short course, 670  
Not evenly, as thou rulest  
The angelic orders, and inferior creatures mute,  
Irrational and brute?  
Nor do I name of men the common rout,  
That wandering loose about  
Grow up and perish as the summer fly,  
Heads without name, no more remember'd;  
But such as thou hast solemnly elected,  
With gifts and graces eminently adorn'd,  
To some great work, thy glory, 680  
And people's safety, which in part they effect:  
Yet toward these, thus dignified, thou oft,  
Amidst their highth of noon,  
Changest thy countenance and thy hand, with no regard  
Of highest favours past  
From thee on them, or them to thee of service.

Nor only dost degrade them, or remit  
To life obscured, which were a fair dismissal,  
But throw'st them lower than thou didst exalt them high,  
Unseemly falls in human eye, 690  
Too grievous for the trespass or omission;  
Oft leavest them to the hostile sword  
Of heathen and profane, their carcasses  
To dogs and fowls a prey, or else captived,  
Or to the unjust tribunals, under change of times,  
And condemnation of the ingrateful multitude.

If these they scape, perhaps in poverty  
 With sickness and disease thou bow'st them down,  
 Painful diseases and deform'd,  
 In crude old age;  
 Though not disordinate, yet causeless suffering  
 The punishment of dissolute days; in fine,  
 Just or unjust alike seem miserable,  
 For oft alike both come to evil end.

700

So deal not with this once thy glorious champion,  
 The image of thy strength, and mighty minister.  
 What do I beg? how hast thou dealt already!  
 Behold him in this state calamitous, and turn  
 His labours, for thou canst, to peaceful end.

But who is this? what thing of sea or land?

710

Female of sex it seems,  
 That so bedeck'd, ornate, and gay,  
 Comes this way sailing  
 Like a stately ship  
 Of Tarsus, bound for the isles  
 Of Javan or Gadire,  
 With all her bravery on, and tackle trim,  
 Sails fill'd, and streamers waving,  
 Courted by all the winds that hold them play;  
 An amber scent of odorous perfume  
 Her harbinger, a damsel train behind;  
 Some rich Philistian matron she may seem;  
 And now, at nearer view, no other certain  
 Than Dalila thy wife.

720

*Sams.* My wife! my traitress! let her not come near me.

*Chor.* Yet on she moves; now stands and eyes thee fix'd,  
 About to have spoke; but now, with head declined,  
 Like a fair flower surcharged with dew, she weeps,  
 And words address'd seem into tears dissolved,  
 Wetting the borders of her silken veil:  
 But now again she makes address to speak.

730

*Dal.* With doubtful feet and wavering resolution  
 I came, still dreading thy displeasure, Samson,  
 Which to have merited, without excuse,  
 I cannot but acknowledge; yet if tears  
 May expiate (though the fact more evil drew

In the perverse event than I foresaw),  
My penance hath not slacken'd, though my pardon  
No way assured. But conjugal affection,  
Prevailing over fear and timorous doubt,  
Hath led me on, desirous to behold  
Once more thy face, and know of thy estate,  
If aught in my ability may serve  
To lighten what thou suffer'st, and appease  
Thy mind with what amends is in my power,  
Though late, yet in some part to recompense  
My rash but more unfortunate misdeed.

740

*Sams.* Out, out, hyænal these are thy wonted arts,  
And arts of every woman false like thee,  
To break all faith, all vows, deceive, betray;  
Then, as repentant, to submit, beseech,  
And reconciliation move with feign'd remorse,  
Confess, and promise wonders in her change,  
Not truly penitent, but chief to try  
Her husband, how far urged his patience bears,  
His virtue or weakness which way to assail:  
Then with more cautious and instructed skill  
Again transgresses, and again submits;  
That wisest and best men, full oft beguiled,  
With goodness principled not to reject  
The penitent, but ever to forgive,  
Are drawn to wear out miserable days,  
Entangled with a poisonous bosom snake,  
If not by quick destruction soon cut off,  
As I by thee, to ages an example.

750

760

*Dal.* Yet hear me, Samson; not that I endeavour  
To lessen or extenuate my offence,  
But that on the other side if it be weigh'd  
By itself, with aggravations not surcharged,  
Or else with just allowance counterpoised,  
I may, if possible, thy pardon find  
The easier towards me, or thy hatred less.  
First granting, as I do, it was a weakness  
In me, but incident to all our sex,  
Curiosity, inquisitive, importune  
Of secrets, then with like infirmity

770

To publish them, both common female faults:  
Was it not weakness also to make known  
For importunity, that is for nought,  
Wherein consisted all thy strength and safety? 750  
To what I did thou shew'dst me first the way.  
But I to enemies reveal'd, and should not.  
Nor should'st thou have trusted that to woman's frailty:  
Ere I to thee, thou to thyself wast cruel.  
Let weakness then with weakness come to parle,  
So near related, or the same of kind;  
Thine forgive mine, that men may censure thine  
The gentler, if severely thou exact not  
More strength from me than in thyself was found.  
And what if love, which thou interpret'st hate, 790  
The jealousy of love, powerful of sway  
In human hearts, nor less in mine towards thee,  
Caused what I did? I saw thee mutable  
Of fancy; fear'd lest one day thou would'st leave me  
As her at Timna; sought by all means therefore  
How to endear, and hold thee to me firmest:  
No better way I saw than by importuning  
To learn thy secrets, get into my power  
Thy key of strength and safety. Thou wilt say  
'Why then reveal'd?' I was assured by those 800  
Who tempted me, that nothing was design'd  
Against thee but safe custody and hold:  
That made for me; I knew that liberty  
Would draw thee forth to perilous enterprises,  
While I at home sat full of cares and fears,  
Wailing thy absence in my widow'd bed;  
Here I should still enjoy thee day and night,  
Mine and love's prisoner, not the Philistines',  
Whole to myself, unhazarded abroad,  
Fearless at home of partners in my love. 810  
These reasons in love's law have pass'd for good,  
Though fond and reasonless to some perhaps;  
And love hath oft, well meaning, wrought much woe,  
Yet always pity or pardon hath obtain'd.  
Be not unlike all others, not austere  
As thou art strong, inflexible as steel.

If thou in strength all mortals dost exceed,  
In uncompassionate anger do not so.

*Sams.* How cunningly the sorceress displays  
Her own transgressions, to upbraid me mine!  
That malice, not repentance, brought thee hither  
By this appears: I gave, thou say'st, the example,  
I led the way: bitter reproach, but true;  
I to myself was false ere thou to me.  
Such pardon therefore as I give my folly  
Take to thy wicked deed; which when thou seest  
Impartial, self-severe, inexorable,  
Thou wilt renounce thy seeking, and much rather  
Confess it feign'd. Weakness is thy excuse,  
And I believe it; weakness to resist  
Philistian gold: if weakness may excuse,  
What murderer, what traitor, parricide,  
Incestuous, sacrilegious, but may plead it?  
All wickedness is weakness: that plea therefore  
With God or man will gain thee no remission.  
But love constrain'd thee! Call it furious rage  
To satisfy thy lust: love seeks to have love;  
My love how could'st thou hope, who took'st the way  
To raise in me inexpiable hate,  
Knowing, as needs I must, by thee betray'd?  
In vain thou strivest to cover shame with shame,  
Or by evasions thy crime uncover'st more.

*Dal.* Since thou determinest weakness for no plea  
In man or woman, though to thy own condemning,  
Hear what assaults I had, what snares besides,  
What sieges girt me round, ere I consented;  
Which might have awed the best-resolved of men,  
The constantest, to have yielded without blame.  
It was not gold, as to my charge thou lay'st,  
That wrought with me: thou know'st the magistrates  
And princes of my country came in person,  
Solicited, commanded, threaten'd, urged,  
Adjured by all the bonds of civil duty  
And of religion; press'd how just it was,  
How honourable, how glorious, to entrap  
A common enemy, who had destroy'd

Such numbers of our nation: and the priest  
 Was not behind, but ever at my ear,  
 Preaching how meritorious with the gods  
 It would be to ensnare an irreligious  
 Dishonourer of Dagon. What had I  
 To oppose against such powerful arguments?  
 Only my love of thee held long debate,  
 And combated in silence all these reasons  
 With hard contest. At length, that grounded maxim,  
 So rife and celebrated in the mouths  
 Of wisest men, that to the public good  
 Private respects must yield, with grave authority  
 Took full possession of me and prevail'd;  
 Virtue, as I thought, truth, duty, so enjoining.

26a

27a

*Sams.* I thought where all thy circling wiles would end,  
 In feign'd religion, smooth hypocrisy!  
 But had thy love, still odiously pretended,  
 Been, as it ought, sincere, it would have taught thee  
 Far other reasonings, brought forth other deeds.  
 I before all the daughters of my tribe  
 And of my nation chose thee from among  
 My enemies, loved thee, as too well thou knew'st,  
 Too well; unbosom'd all my secrets to thee,  
 Not out of levity, but overpower'd  
 By thy request, who could deny thee nothing;  
 Yet now am judg'd an enemy. Why then  
 Didst thou at first receive me for thy husband,  
 Then, as since then, thy country's foe profess'd?  
 Being once a wife, for me thou wast to leave  
 Parents and country; nor was I their subject,  
 Nor under their protection, but my own;  
 Thou mine, not theirs. If aught against my life  
 Thy country sought of thee, it sought unjustly,  
 Against the law of nature, law of nations;  
 No more thy country, but an impious crew  
 Of men conspiring to uphold their state  
 By worse than hostile deeds, violating the ends  
 For which our country is a name so dear;  
 Not therefore to be obey'd. But zeal moved thee!  
 To please thy gods thou didst it! gods unable

28a

29a

To acquit themselves and prosecute their foes  
 But by ungodly deeds, the contradiction  
 Of their own deity, gods cannot be;  
 Less therefore to be pleased, obey'd, or fear'd.  
 These false pretexs and varnish'd colours failing,  
 Bare in thy guilt, how foul must thou appear!

900

*Dal.* In argument with men a woman ever  
 Goes by the worse, whatever be her cause.

*Sams.* For want of words, no doubt, or lack of breath;  
 Witness when I was worried with thy peals.

*Dal.* I was a fool, too rash, and quite mistaken  
 In what I thought would have succeeded best.

Let me obtain forgiveness of thee, Samson;  
 Afford me place to shew what recompense  
 Towards thee I intend for what I have misdane,  
 Misguided; only what remains past cure  
 Bear not too sensibly, nor still insist  
 To afflict thyself in vain. Though sight be lost,  
 Life yet hath many solaces, enjoy'd

910

Where other senses want not their delights,  
 At home in leisure and domestic ease,  
 Exempt from many a care and chance to which  
 Eyesight exposes daily men abroad.

I to the lords will intercede, not doubting  
 Their favourable ear, that I may fetch thee  
 From forth this loathsome prison-house, to abide  
 With me, where my redoubled love and care,  
 With nursing diligence, to me glad office,  
 May ever tend about thee to old age,  
 With all things grateful cheer'd, and so supplied,  
 That what by me thou hast lost thou least shalt miss.

920

*Sams.* No, no; of my condition take no care;  
 It fits not; thou and I long since are twain;  
 Nor think me so unwary or accurst  
 To bring my feet again into the snare

930

Where once I have been caught. I know thy trains,  
 Though dearly to my cost, thy gins, and toils;  
 Thy fair enchanted cup, and warbling charms  
 No more on me have power, their force is null'd;  
 So much of adder's wisdom I have learn'd

To fence my ear against thy sorceries.  
If in my flower of youth and strength, when all men  
Loved, honour'd, fear'd me, thou alone could hate me,  
Thy husband, slight me, sell me, and forgo me; 940  
How would'st thou use me now, blind, and thereby  
Deceivable, in most things as a child  
Helpless, thence easily contemn'd, and scorn'd,  
And last neglected! How would'st thou insult,  
When I must live uxorious to thy will  
In perfect thralldom! how again betray me,  
Bearing my words and doings to the lords  
To gloss upon, and censuring frown or smile!  
This jail I count the house of liberty  
To thine, whose doors my feet shall never enter. 950

*Dal.* Let me approach at least, and touch thy hand.

*Sams.* Not for thy life, lest fierce remembrance wake  
My sudden rage to tear thee joint by joint.  
At distance I forgive thee, go with that;  
Bewail thy falsehood, and the pious works  
It hath brought forth to make thee memorable  
Among illustrious women, faithful wives:  
Cherish thy hasten'd widowhood with the gold  
Of matrimonial treason: so farewell.

*Dal.* I see thou art implacable, more deaf 960  
To prayers than winds and seas; yet winds to seas  
Are reconciled at length, and sea to shore:  
Thy anger, unappeasable, still rages,  
Eternal tempest never to be calm'd.  
Why do I humble thus myself, and, suing  
For peace, reap nothing but repulse and hate,  
Bid go with evil omen, and the brand  
Of infamy upon my name denounced?  
To mix with thy concerns I desist  
Henceforth, nor too much disapprove my own. 970  
Fame, if not double-faced, is double-mouth'd,  
And with contrary blast proclaims most deeds;  
On both his wings, one black, the other white,  
Bears greatest names in his wild aery flight.  
My name, perhaps, among the circumcised  
In Dan, in Judah, and the bordering tribes,



To all posterity may stand defamed,  
 With malediction mention'd, and the blot  
 Of falsehood most unconjugal traduced.  
 But in my country, where I most desire,  
 In Ecron, Gaza, Asdod, and in Gath,  
 I shall be named among the famousest  
 Of women, sung at solemn festivals,  
 Living and dead recorded, who, to save  
 Her country from a fierce destroyer, chose  
 Above the faith of wedlock bands; my tomb  
 With odours visited and annual flowers;  
 Not less renown'd than in Mount Ephraim  
 Jael, who with inhospitable guile  
 Smote Sisera sleeping, through the temples nail'd.  
 Nor shall I count it heinous to enjoy  
 The public marks of honour and reward  
 Confer'd upon me for the piety  
 Which to my country I was judged to have shewn.  
 At this whoever envies or repines,  
 I leave him to his lot, and like my own.

*Chor.* She's gone, a manifest serpent by her sting  
 Discover'd in the end, till now conceal'd.

*Sam.* So let her go: God sent her to debase me,  
 And aggravate my folly, who committed  
 To such a viper his most sacred trust  
 Of secrecy, my safety, and my life.

*Chor.* Yet beauty, though injurious, hath strange power,  
 After offence returning, to regain  
 Love once possess'd, nor can be easily  
 Repulsed, without much inward passion felt,  
 And secret sting of amorous remorse.

*Sam.* Love quarrels oft in pleasing concord end,  
 Not wedlock treachery endangering life.

*Chor.* It is not virtue, wisdom, valour, wit,  
 Strength, comeliness of shape, or amplest merit,  
 That woman's love can win, or long inherit;  
 But what it is, hard is to say,  
 Harder to hit,  
 Which way soever men refer it;  
 Much like thy riddle, Samson, in one day

Or seven, though one should musing sit.

If any of these, or all, the Timnian bride  
Had not so soon preferr'd

Thy paranymp, worthless to thee compared,  
Successor in thy bed,

Nor both so loosely disallied

Their nuptials, nor this last so treacherously  
Had shorn the fatal harvest of thy head.

Is it for that such outward ornament

Was lavish'd on their sex, that inward gifts  
Were left for haste unfinish'd, judgment scant,

Capacity not raised to apprehend

Or value what is best

In choice, but ofttest to affect the wrong?

Or was too much of self-love mix'd,

Of constancy no root infix'd,

That either they love nothing, or not long?

Whate'er it be, to wisest men and best

Seeming at first all heavenly under virgin veil,  
Soft, modest, meek, demure,

Once join'd, the contrary she proves, a thorn

Intestine, far within defensive arms

A cleaving mischief, in his way to virtue

Adverse and turbulent; or by her charms

Draws him awry, enslaved

With dotage, and his sense depraved

To folly and shameful deeds, which ruin ends.

What pilot so expert but needs must wreck,

Embark'd with such a steers-mate at the helm?

Favour'd of Heaven who finds

One virtuous, rarely found,

That in domestic good combines!

Happy that house! his way to peace is smooth:

But virtue which breaks through all opposition,

And all temptation can remove,

Most shines and most is acceptable above.

Therefore God's universal law

Gave to the man despotic power

Over his female in due awe,

Nor from that right to part an hour,

Smile she or lour:

So shall he least confusion draw

On his whole life, not sway'd

By female usurpation, nor dismay'd.

1060

But had we best retire? I see a storm.

*Sams.* Fair days have oft contracted wind and rain.

*Chor.* But this another kind of tempest brings.

*Sams.* Be less abstruse, my riddling days are past.

*Chor.* Look now for no enchanting voice, nor fear

The bait of honey'd words; a rougher tongue

Draws hitherward; I know him by his stride,

The giant Harapha of Gath, his look

Haughty, as is his pile high-built and proud.

Comes he in peace? What wind hath blown him hither

1070

I less conjecture than when first I saw

The sumptuous Dalila floating this way:

His habit carries peace, his brow defiance.

*Sams.* Or peace or not, alike to me he comes.

*Chor.* His fraught we soon shall know, he now arrives.

*Harapha.* I come not, Samson, to condole thy chance,

As these perhaps, yet wish it had not been,

Though for no friendly intent. I am of Gath;

Men call me Harapha, of stock renown'd

As Og, or Anak, and the Emims old

1080

That Kiriathaim held: thou know'st me now,

If thou at all art known. Much I have heard

Of thy prodigious might and feats perform'd,

Incredible to me, in this displeased,

That I was never present on the place

Of those encounters, where we might have tried

Each other's force in camp or listed field;

And now am come to see of whom such noise

Hath walk'd about, and each limb to survey,

If thy appearance answer loud report.

1090

*Sams.* The way to know were not to see, but taste.

*Har.* Dost thou already single me? I thought

Gyves and the mill had tamed thee. O that fortune

Had brought me to the field where thou art famed

To have wrought such wonders with an ass's jaw!

I should have forced thee soon wish other arms,

Or left thy carcase where the ass lay thrown:  
 So had the glory of prowess been recover'd  
 To Palestine, won by a Philistine  
 From the unforeskinn'd race, of whom thou bear'st  
 The highest name for valiant acts; that honour,  
 Certain to have won by mortal duel from thee,  
 I lose, prevented by thy eyes put out.

1100

*Sams.* Boast not of what thou would'st have done, but do  
 What then thou would'st; thou seest it in thy hand.

*Har.* To combat with a blind man I disdain,  
 And thou hast need much washing to be touch'd.

*Sams.* Such usage as your honourable lords  
 Afford me, assassinated and betray'd;  
 Who durst not with their whole united powers  
 In fight withstand me single and unarm'd,  
 Nor in the house with chamber ambushes  
 Close-banded durst attack me, no, not sleeping,  
 Till they had hired a woman with their gold,  
 Breaking her marriage faith, to circumvent me.  
 Therefore, without feign'd shifts, let be assign'd  
 Some narrow place enclosed, where sight may give thee,  
 Or rather flight, no great advantage on me;  
 Then put on all thy gorgeous arms, thy helmet  
 And brigandine of brass, thy broad habergeon,  
 Vant-brace and greaves and gauntlet; add thy spear,  
 A weaver's beam, and seven-times-folded shield;  
 I only with an oaken staff will meet thee,  
 And raise such outcries on thy clatter'd iron,  
 Which long shall not withhold me from thy head,  
 That in a little time, while breath remains thee,  
 Thou oft shalt wish thyself at Gath, to boast  
 Again in safety what thou would'st have done  
 To Samson, but shalt never see Gath more.

1110

1120

*Har.* Thou durst not thus disparage glorious arms  
 Which greatest heroes have in battle worn,  
 Their ornament and safety, had not spells  
 And black enchantments, some magician's art,  
 Arm'd thee or charm'd thee strong, which thou from Heaven  
 Feign'dst at thy birth was given thee in thy hair,  
 Where strength can least abide, though all thy hairs

1130

Were bristles ranged like those that ridge the back  
Of chafed wild boars or ruffled porcupines.

*Sams.* I know no spells, use no forbidden arts;  
My trust is in the living God, who gave me,  
At my nativity this strength, diffused  
No less through all my sinews, joints, and bones,  
Than thine, while I preserved these locks unshorn,  
The pledge of my unviolated vow.  
For proof hereof, if Dagon be thy god,  
Go to his temple, invoke his aid  
With solemnest devotion, spread before him  
How highly it concerns his glory now  
To frustrate and dissolve these magic spells,  
Which I to be the power of Israel's God  
Avow, and challenge Dagon to the test,  
Offering to combat thee, his champion bold,  
With the utmost of his godhead seconded:  
Then thou shalt see, or rather to thy sorrow  
Soon feel, whose God is strongest, thine or mine.

1140

1150

*Har.* Presume not on thy God, whate'er he be;  
Thee he regards not, owns not, hath cut off  
Quite from his people, and deliver'd up  
Into thy enemies' hand; permitted them  
To put out both thine eyes, and fetter'd send thee  
Into the common prison, there to grind  
Among the slaves and asses, thy comrades,  
As good for nothing else, no better service  
With those thy boisterous locks, no worthy match  
For valour to assail, nor by the sword  
Of noble warrior, so to stain his honour,  
But by the barber's razor best subdued.

1160

*Sams.* All these indignities, for such they are  
From thine, these evils I deserve and more,  
Acknowledge them from God inflicted on me  
Justly, yet despair not of his final pardon  
Whose ear is ever open, and his eye  
Gracious to re-admit the suppliant;  
In confidence whereof I once again  
Defy thee to the trial of mortal fight,  
By combat to decide whose god is God,

1170

Thine, or whom I with Israel's sons adore.

*Har.* Fair honour that thou dost thy God, in trusting  
He will accept thee to defend his cause,  
A murderer, a revolter, and a robber!

1180

*Sams.* Tongue-doughty giant, how dost thou prove me these?

*Har.* Is not thy nation subject to our lords?  
Their magistrates confess'd it when they took thee  
As a league-breaker, and deliver'd bound  
Into our hands : for hadst thou not committed  
Notorious murder on those thirty men  
At Ascalon, who never did thee harm,  
Then, like a robber, stripp'dst them of their robes?  
The Philistines, when thou hadst broke the league,  
Went up with armed powers thee only seeking,  
To others did no violence nor spoil.

1190

*Sams.* Among the daughters of the Philistines  
I chose a wife, which argued me no foe,  
And in your city held my nuptial feast;  
But your ill-meaning politician lords,  
Under pretence of bridal friends and guests,  
Appointed to await me thirty spies,  
Who, threatening cruel death, constrain'd the bride  
To wring from me and tell to them my secret,  
That solved the riddle which I had proposed.  
When I perceived all set on enmity,  
As on my enemies, wherever chanced,  
I used hostility, and took their spoil,  
To pay my underminers in their coin.  
My nation was subjected to your lords!  
It was the force of conquest : force with force  
Is well ejected when the conquer'd can.

1200

But I, a private person, whom my country  
As a league-breaker gave up bound, presumed  
Single rebellion, and did hostile acts!  
I was no private, but a person raised  
With strength sufficient and command from Heaven  
To free my country : if their servile minds  
Me, their deliverer sent, would not receive,  
But to their masters gave me up for nought,  
The unworthier they ; whence to this day they serve.

1210

I was to do my part from Heaven assign'd,  
 And had perform'd it if my known offence  
 Had not disabled me, not all your force.  
 These shifts refuted, answer thy appellant,  
 Though by his blindness maim'd for high attempts,  
 Who now defies thee thrice to single fight,  
 As a petty enterprise of small enforce.

1220

*Har.* With thee, a man condemn'd, a slave enroll'd,  
 Due by the law to capital punishment?  
 To fight with thee no man of arms will deign.

*Sams.* Canest thou for this, vain boaster, to survey me,  
 To descant on my strength, and give thy verdict?  
 Come nearer, part not hence so slight inform'd;  
 But take good heed my hand survey not thee.

1230

*Har.* O Baal-zebub! can my ears unused  
 Hear these dishonours, and not render death?

*Sams.* No man withholds thee; nothing from thy hand  
 Fear I incurable; bring up thy van;  
 My heels are fetter'd, but my fist is free.

*Har.* This insolence other kind of answer fits.

*Sams.* Go, baffled coward, lest I run upon thee,  
 Though in these chains, bulk without spirit vast,  
 And with one buffet lay thy structure low,  
 Or swing thee in the air, then dash thee down,  
 To the hazard of thy brains and shatter'd sides.

1240

*Har.* By Astaroth, ere long thou shalt lament  
 These braveries in irons loaden on thee.

*Chor.* His giantship is gone somewhat crest-fall'n,  
 Stalking with less unconscionable strides,  
 And lower looks, but in a sultry chafe.

*Sams.* I dread him not, nor all his giant brood,  
 Though fame divulge him father of five sons,  
 All of gigantic size, Goliath chief.

*Chor.* He will directly to the lords, I fear,  
 And with malicious counsel stir them up  
 Some way or other yet further to afflict thee.

1250

*Sams.* He must allege some cause, and offer'd fight  
 Will not dare mention, lest a question rise  
 Whether he durst accept the offer or not;  
 And that he durst not plain enough appear'd.

Much more affliction than already felt  
They cannot well impose, nor I sustain,  
If they intend advantage of my labours,  
The work of many hands, which earns my keeping,  
With no small profit daily to my owners.  
But come what will, my deadliest foe will prove  
My speediest friend, by death to rid me hence ;  
The worst that he can give, to me the best.  
Yet so it may fall out, because their end  
Is hate, not help to me, it may with mine  
Draw their own ruin who attempt the deed.

1260

*Chor.* Oh, how comely it is, and how reviving  
To the spirits of just men long oppress'd,  
When God into the hands of their deliverer  
Puts invincible might

1270

To quell the mighty of the earth, the oppressor,  
The brute and boisterous force of violent men,  
Hardy and industrious to support  
Tyrannic power, but raging to pursue  
The righteous, and all such as honour truth !  
He all their ammunition

And feats of war defeats,  
With plain heroic magnitude of mind  
And celestial vigour arm'd ;  
Their armouries and magazines contemns,  
Renders them useless, while  
With winged expedition

1280

Swift as the lightning glance he executes  
His errand on the wicked, who surprised  
Lose their defence, distracted and amazed.

But patience is more oft the exercise  
Of saints, the trial of their fortitude,  
Making them each his own deliverer,  
And victor over all

1290

That tyranny or fortune can inflict.  
Either of these is in thy lot,  
Samson, with might endued  
Above the sons of men ; but sight bereaved  
May chance to number thee with those  
Whom patience finally must crown.



This Idol's day hath been to thee no day of rest,  
 Labouring thy mind  
 More than the working day thy hands ;  
 And yet perhaps more trouble is behind,  
 For I descry this way  
 Some other tending ; in his hand  
 A sceptre or quaint staff he bears,  
 Comes on amain, speed in his look.  
 By his habit I discern him now  
 A public officer, and now at hand :  
 His message will be short and voluble.

*Off.* Ebrews, the prisoner Samson here I seek.

*Chor.* His manacles remark him ; there he sits.

*Off.* Samson, to thee our lords thus bid me say :

This day to Dagon is a solemn feast,  
 With sacrifices, triumph, pomp, and games ;  
 Thy strength they know surpassing human rate,  
 And now some public proof thereof require  
 To honour this great feast, and great assembly.  
 Rise therefore with all speed and come along,  
 Where I will see thee hearten'd and fresh clad,  
 To appear as fits before the illustrious lords.

*Sams.* Thou know'st I am an Ebrew ; therefore tell them  
 Our law forbids at their religious rites  
 My presence : for that cause I cannot come.

*Off.* This answer, be assured, will not content them.

*Sams.* Have they not sword-players, and every sort  
 Of gymnastic artists, wrestlers, riders, runners,  
 Jugglers and dancers, antics, mummers, mimics,  
 But they must pick me out, with shackles tired,  
 And over-labour'd at their public mill,  
 To make them sport with blind activity ?  
 Do they not seek occasion of new quarrels  
 On my refusal to distress me more,  
 Or make a game of my calamities ?  
 Return the way thou camest ; I will not come.

*Off.* Regard thyself ; this will offend them highly.

*Sams.* Myself ! my conscience, and internal peace.  
 Can they think me so broken, so debased  
 With corporal servitude, that my mind ever

Will condescend to such absurd commands?  
 Although their drudge, to be their fool or jester,  
 And in my midst of sorrow and heart-grief  
 To shew them feats, and play before their god,  
 The worst of all indignities, yet on me  
 Join'd with extreme contempt! I will not come.

1340

*Off.* My message was imposed on me with speed,  
 Brooks no delay: is this thy resolution?

*Sams.* So take it with what speed thy message needs.

*Off.* I am sorry what this stoutness will produce.

*Sams.* Perhaps thou shalt have cause to sorrow indeed.

*Chor.* Consider, Samson; matters now are strain'd  
 Up to the highth, whether to hold or break:

He's gone, and who knows how he may report

1350

Thy words by adding fuel to the flame?

Expect another message, more imperious,

More lordly thundering than thou well wilt bear.

*Sams.* Shall I abuse this consecrated gift

Of strength, again returning with my hair

After my great transgression, so requite

Favour renew'd, and add a greater sin

By prostituting holy things to idols,

A Nazarite, in place abominable,

Vaunting my strength in honour to their Dagon?

1360

Besides, how vile, contemptible, ridiculous,

What act more execrably unclean, profane?

*Chor.* Yet with this strength thou servest the Philistines,  
 Idolatrous, uncircumcised, unclean.

*Sams.* Not in their idol-worship, but by labour

Honest and lawful to deserve my food

Of those who have me in their civil power.

*Chor.* Where the heart joins not, outward acts defile not.

*Sams.* Where outward force constrains, the sentence holds:

But who constrains me to the temple of Dagon,

1370

Not dragging? The Philistian lords command:

Commands are no constraints. If I obey them,

I do it freely, venturing to displease

God for the fear of man, and man prefer,

Set God behind; which in his jealousy

Shall never, unrepented, find forgiveness.

Yet that he may dispense with me, or thee,  
Present in temples at idolatrous rites  
For some important cause, thou need'st not doubt.

*Chor.* How thou wilt here come off surmounts my reach. 1380

*Sams.* Be of good courage; I begin to feel  
Some rousing motions in me, which dispose  
To something extraordinary my thoughts.  
I with this messenger will go along,  
Nothing to do, be sure, that may dishonour  
Our law, or stain my vow of Nazarite.  
If there be aught of presage in the mind,  
This day will be remarkable in my life  
By some great act, or of my days the last.

*Chor.* In time thou hast resolved; the man returns. 1390

*Off.* Samson, this second message from our lords  
To thee I am bid say: Art thou our slave,  
Our captive, at the public mill our drudge,  
And darest thou at our sending and command  
Dispute thy coming? Come without delay;  
Or we shall find such engines to assail  
And hamper thee, as thou shalt come of force,  
Though thou wert firmler fasten'd than a rock.

*Sams.* I could be well content to try their art,  
Which to no few of them would prove pernicious;  
Yet, knowing their advantages too many,  
Because they shall not trail me through their streets  
Like a wild beast, I am content to go:  
Masters' commands come with a power resistless  
To such as owe them absolute subjection;  
And for a life who will not change his purpose?  
(So mutable are all the ways of men!)  
Yet this be sure, in nothing to comply  
Scandalous or forbidden in our law.

1400

*Off.* I praise thy resolution. Doff these links:  
By this compliance thou wilt win the lords  
To favour, and perhaps to set thee free.

1410

*Sams.* Brethren, farewell: your company along  
I will not wish, lest it perhaps offend them  
To see me girt with friends; and how the sight  
Of me as of a common enemy,

So dreaded once, may now exasperate them,  
 I know not. Lords are lordliest in their wine;  
 And the well-feasted priest then soonest fired  
 With zeal, if aught religion seem concern'd;  
 No less the people on their holy-days  
 Impetuous, insolent, unquenchable.  
 Happen what may, of me expect to hear  
 Nothing dishonourable, impure, unworthy  
 Our God, our law, my nation, or myself;  
 The last of me or no I cannot warrant.

1420

*Chor.* Go, and the Holy One

Of Israel be thy guide  
 To what may serve his glory best, and spread his name  
 Great among the heathen round;  
 Send thee the Angel of thy birth, to stand  
 Fast by thy side, who from thy father's field  
 Rode up in flames after his message told  
 Of thy conception, and be now a shield  
 Of fire; that Spirit that first rush'd on thee  
 In the camp of Dan,  
 Be efficacious in thee now at need!  
 For never was from Heaven imparted  
 Measure of strength so great to mortal seed,  
 As in thy wondrous actions hath been seen.  
 But wherefore comes old Manoa in such haste  
 With youthful steps? Much livelier than erewhile  
 He seems: supposing here to find his son,  
 Or of him bringing to us some glad news?

1430

1440

*Man.* Peace with you, brethren! My inducement hither  
 Was not at present here to find my son,  
 By order of the lords new-parted hence  
 To come and play before them at their feast.  
 I heard all as I came, the city rings,  
 And numbers thither flock; I had no will,  
 Lest I should see him forced to things unseemly.  
 But that which moved my coming now was chiefly  
 To give ye part with me what hope I have  
 With good success to work his liberty.

1450

*Chor.* That hope would much rejoice us to partake  
 With thee: say, reverend sire; we thirst to hear.

*Man.* I have attempted, one by one, the lords,  
 Either at home, or through the high street passing,  
 With supplication prone and father's tears,  
 To accept of ransom for my son, their prisoner.  
 Some much averse I found, and wondrous harsh,  
 Contemptuous, proud, set on revenge and spite;  
 That part most revered Dagon and his priests:  
 Others more moderate seeming, but their aim  
 Private reward, for which both God and State  
 They easily would set to sale: a third  
 More generous far and civil, who confess'd  
 They had enough revenged, having reduced  
 Their foe to misery beneath their fears;  
 The rest was magnanimity to remit,  
 If some convenient ransom were proposed.  
 What noise or shout was that? It tore the sky.

1460

1470

*Chor.* Doubtless the people shouting to behold  
 Their once great dread, captive and blind before them,  
 Or at some proof of strength before them shewn.

*Man.* His ransom, if my whole inheritance  
 May compass it, shall willingly be paid  
 And number'd down: much rather I shall choose  
 To live the poorest in my tribe, than richest,  
 And he in that calamitous prison left.  
 No, I am fix'd not to part hence without him.  
 For his redemption all my patrimony,  
 If need be, I am ready to forgo  
 And quit: not wanting him, I shall want nothing.

1480

*Chor.* Fathers are wont to lay up for their sons,  
 Thou for thy son art bent to lay out all;  
 Sons wont to nurse their parents in old age,  
 Thou in old age carest how to nurse thy son,  
 Made older than thy age through eye-sight lost.

*Man.* It shall be my delight to tend his eyes,  
 And view him sitting in his house, ennobled  
 With all those high exploits by him achieved,  
 And on his shoulders waving down those locks  
 That of a nation arm'd the strength contain'd.  
 And I persuade me God had not permitted  
 His strength again to grow up with his hair,

1490

Garrison'd round about him like a camp  
 Of faithful soldiery, were not his purpose  
 To use him further yet in some great service,  
 Not to sit idle with so great a gift  
 Useless, and thence ridiculous, about him.  
 And, since his strength with eye-sight was not lost,  
 God will restore him eye-sight to his strength.

1500

*Chor.* Thy hopes are not ill-founded, nor seem vain,  
 Of his delivery, and thy joy thereon  
 Conceived, agreeable to a father's love;  
 In both which we, as next, participate.

*Man.* I know your friendly minds, and—Oh, what noise!  
 Mercy of Heaven! what hideous noise was that?  
 Horribly loud, unlike the former shout.

1510

*Chor.* Noise call you it, or universal groan,  
 As if the whole inhabitation perish'd?  
 Blood, death, and deathful deeds, are in that noise,  
 Ruin, destruction at the utmost point.

*Man.* Of ruin indeed methought I heard the noise:  
 Oh! it continues; they have slain my son.

*Chor.* Thy son is rather slaying them: that outcry  
 From slaughter of one foe could not ascend.

*Man.* Some dismal accident it needs must be;  
 What shall we do, stay here, or run and see?

1520

*Chor.* Best keep together here, lest, running thither,  
 We unawares run into danger's mouth.  
 This evil on the Philistines is fall'n:

From whom could else a general cry be heard?

The sufferers then will scarce molest us here;

From other hands we need not much to fear.

What if, his eye-sight (for to Israel's God

Nothing is hard) by miracle restored,

He now be dealing dole among his foes,

And over heaps of slaughter'd walk his way?

1530

*Man.* That were a joy presumptuous to be thought.

*Chor.* Yet God hath wrought things as incredible  
 For his people of old; what hinders now?

*Man.* He can, I know, but doubt to think he will;  
 Yet hope would fain subscribe, and tempts belief.  
 A little stay will bring some notice hither.

*Chor.* Of good or bad so great, of bad the sooner;  
For evil news rides post, while good news baits.  
And to our wish I see one hither speeding,  
An Ebrew, as I guess, and of our tribe.

1540

*Messenger.* Oh, whither shall I run, or which way fly  
The sight of this so horrid spectacle,  
Which erst my eyes beheld, and yet behold?  
For dire imagination still pursues me.  
But providence or instinct of nature seems,  
Or reason, though disturb'd and scarce consulted,  
To have guided me aright, I know not how,  
To thee first, reverend Manoa, and to these  
My countrymen, whom here I knew remaining,  
As at some distance from the place of horror,  
So in the sad event too much concern'd.

1550

*Man.* The accident was loud, and here before thee  
With rueful cry; yet what it was we hear not:  
No preface needs, thou seest we long to know.

*Mess.* It would burst forth; but I recover breath,  
And sense distract, to know well what I utter.

*Man.* Tell us the sum, the circumstance defer.

*Mess.* Gaza yet stands, but all her sons are fall'n,  
All in a moment overwhelm'd and fall'n.

*Man.* Sad! but thou know'st to Israelites not saddest  
The desolation of a hostile city.

1561

*Mess.* Feed on that first; there may in grief be surfeit.

*Man.* Relate by whom.

*Mess.* By Samson.

*Man.* That still lessens  
The sorrow, and converts it nigh to joy.

*Mess.* Ah! Manoa, I refrain, too suddenly  
To utter what will come at last too soon;  
Lest evil tidings, with too rude irruption  
Hitting thy aged ear, should pierce too deep.

*Man.* Suspense in news is torture, speak them out.

*Mess.* Then take the worst in brief: Samson is dead.

*Man.* The worst indeed! Oh, all my hope's defeated  
To free him hence! but Death who sets all free  
Hath paid his ransom now and full discharge.  
What windy joy this day had I conceived,

1571

Hopeful of his delivery, which now proves  
 Abortive as the first-born bloom of spring  
 Nipt with the lagging rear of winter's frost !  
 Yet, ere I give the reins to grief, say first,  
 How died he? death to life is crown or shame.  
 All by him fell, thou say'st: by whom fell he?  
 What glorious hand gave Samson his death's wound?

1580

*Mess.* Unwounded of his enemies he fell.

*Man.* Wearied with slaughter then, or how? explain.

*Mess.* By his own hands.

*Man.* Self-violence? What cause  
 Brought him so soon at variance with himself  
 Among his foes?

*Mess.* Inevitable cause,  
 At once both to destroy and be destroy'd ;  
 The edifice, where all were met to see him,  
 Upon their heads and on his own he pull'd.

*Man.* O lastly over-strong against thyself !  
 A dreadful way thou took'st to thy revenge.  
 More than enough we know ; but while things yet  
 Are in confusion, give us, if thou canst,  
 Eye-witness of what first or last was done,  
 Relation more particular and distinct.

1590

*Mess.* Occasions drew me early to this city ;  
 And, as the gates I enter'd with sun-rise,  
 The morning trumpets festival proclaim'd  
 Through each high street. Little I had despatch'd,  
 When all abroad was rumour'd that this day  
 Samson should be brought forth, to shew the people  
 Proof of his mighty strength in feats and games ;  
 I sorrow'd at his captive state, but minded  
 Not to be absent at that spectacle.  
 The building was a spacious theatre,  
 Half round, on two main pillars vaulted high,  
 With seats where all the lords, and each degree  
 Of sort, might sit in order to behold ;  
 The other side was open, where the throng  
 On banks and scaffolds under sky might stand ;  
 I among these aloof obscurely stood.  
 The feast and noon grew high, and sacrifice

1600

1610



Had fill'd their hearts with mirth, high cheer, and wine,  
When to their sports they turn'd. Immediately  
Was Samson as a public servant brought,  
In their state livery clad : before him pipes  
And timbrels ; on each side went armed guards ;  
Both horse and foot before him and behind,  
Archers, and slingers, cataphracts, and spears.  
At sight of him the people with a shout  
Rifted the air, clamouring their god with praise,  
Who had made their dreadful enemy their thrall.  
He, patient but undaunted, where they led him,  
Came to the place ; and what was set before him,  
Which without help of eye might be assay'd,  
To heave, pull, draw, or break, he still perform'd,  
All with incredible, stupendious force,  
None daring to appear antagonist.  
At length for intermission sake they led him  
Between the pillars ; he his guide requested  
(For so from such as nearer stood we heard),  
As over-tired, to let him lean a while  
With both his arms on those two massy pillars  
That to the arched roof gave main support.  
He unsuspecting led him ; which when Samson  
Felt in his arms, with head a while inclined,  
And eyes fast fix'd, he stood, as one who pray'd,  
Or some great matter in his mind revolved ;  
At last, with head erect, thus cried aloud :  
"Hitherto, Lords, what your commands imposed  
I have perform'd, as reason was, obeying,  
Not without wonder or delight beheld ;  
Now, of my own accord, such other trial  
I mean to shew you of my strength, yet greater,  
As with amaze shall strike all who behold."  
This utter'd, straining all his nerves, he bow'd ;  
As with the force of winds and waters pent  
When mountains tremble, those two massy pillars  
With horrible convulsion to and fro  
He tugg'd, he shook, till down they came, and drew  
The whole roof after them with burst of thunder  
Upon the heads of all who sat beneath,

1620

1630

1640

1650

Lords, ladies, captains, counsellors, or priests,  
Their choice nobility and flower, not only  
Of this, but each Philistian city round,  
Met from all parts to solemnize this feast.  
Samson, with these immix'd, inevitably  
Pul'd down the same destruction on himself;  
The vulgar only scaped, who stood without.

*Chor.* O dearly-bought revenge, yet glorious!  
Living or dying thou hast fulfill'd  
The work for which thou wast foretold  
To Israel, and now liest victorious  
Among thy slain self-kill'd;  
Not willingly, but tangled in the fold  
Of dire Necessity, whose law in death conjoin'd  
Thee with thy slaughter'd foes, in number more  
Than all thy life had slain before.

*Semichor.* While their hearts were jocund and sublime,  
Drunk with idolatry, drunk with wine,  
And fat regorged of bulls and goats,  
Chanting their idol, and preferring  
Before our living Dread, who dwells  
In Silo his bright sanctuary,  
Among them he a spirit of phrenzy sent,  
Who hurt their minds,  
And urged them on with mad desire  
To call in haste for their destroyer;  
They, only set on sport and play,  
Unweetingly importuned  
Their own destruction to come speedy upon them.  
So fond are mortal men,  
Fall'n into wrath divine,  
As their own ruin on themselves to invite,  
Insensate left, or to sense reprobate,  
And with blindness internal struck.

*Semichor.* But he, though blind of sight,  
Despised, and thought extinguish'd quite,  
With inward eyes illuminated,  
His fiery virtue roused  
From under ashes into sudden flame,  
And as an evening dragon came,

1660

1670

1680

1690

Assailant on the perched roosts  
 And nests in order ranged  
 Of tame villatic fowl; but as an eagle  
 His cloudless thunder bolted on their heads.  
 So virtue, given for lost,  
 Depress'd and overthrown, as seemed,  
 Like that self-begotten bird  
 In the Arabian woods embost,  
 That no second knows nor third,  
 And lay erewhile a holocaust,  
 From out her ashy womb now teen'd,  
 Revives, reffourishes, then vigorous most  
 When most unactive deem'd;  
 And, though her body die, her fame survives,  
 A secular bird, ages of lives.

1700

*Man.* Come, come; no time for lamentation now,  
 Nor much more cause: Samson hath quit himself  
 Like Samson, and heroically hath finish'd  
 A life heroic, on his enemies  
 Fully revenged; hath left them years of mourning,  
 And lamentation to the sons of Caphtor  
 Through all Philistian bounds; to Israel  
 Honour hath left and freedom, let but them  
 Find courage to lay hold on this occasion;  
 To himself and father's house eternal fame;  
 And, which is best and happiest yet, all this  
 With God not parted from him, as was fear'd,  
 But favouring and assisting to the end.  
 Nothing is here for tears, nothing to wail  
 Or knock the breast; no weakness, no contempt,  
 Dispraise, or blame; nothing but well and fair,  
 And what may quiet us in a death so noble.  
 Let us go find the body where it lies  
 Soak'd in his enemies' blood, and from the stream  
 With lavers pure and cleansing herbs wash off  
 The clotted gore. I, with what speed the while  
 (Gaza is not in plight to say us nay),  
 Will send for all my kindred, all my friends,  
 To fetch him hence, and solemnly attend,  
 With silent obsequy and funeral train,

1710

1720

1730

Home to his father's house. There will I build him  
A monument, and plant it round with shade  
Of laurel ever green, and branching palm,  
With all his trophies hung, and acts enroll'd  
In copious legend, or sweet lyric song.  
Thither shall all the valiant youth resort,  
And from his memory inflame their breasts  
To matchless valour and adventures high ;  
The virgins also shall on feastful days  
Visit his tomb with flowers, only bewailing  
His lot unfortunate in nuptial choice,  
From whence captivity and loss of eyes.

2740

*Chor.* All is best, though we oft doubt  
What the unsearchable dispose  
Of highest wisdom brings about,  
And ever best found in the close.  
Oft he seems to hide his face,  
But unexpectedly returns,  
And to his faithful champion hath in place  
Bore witness gloriously ; whence Gaza mourns,  
And all that band them to resist  
His uncontrollable intent.  
His servants he, with new acquist  
Of true experience from this great event,  
With peace and consolation hath dismiss'd,  
And calm of mind, all passion spent.

2750

## LATIN POEMS.

## [DE AUCTORE TESTIMONIA]

*Hæc quæ sequuntur de Authore testimonia, tametsi ipse intelligebat non tam de se quam supra se esse dicta, eo quod præclaro ingenio viri, nec non amici, ita fere solent laudare ut omnia suis potius virtutibus quam veritati congruentia nimis cupide affingant, noluit tamen horum egregiam in se voluntatem non esse notam, cum alii presertim ut id faceret magnopere suaderent. Dum enim nimis laudis invidiam totis ab se viribus amolitur, sibi quod plus æquo est non attributum esse maxime, iudicium interim hominum cordatorum atque illustrium quin summo sibi honori ducat negare non potest.*

JOANNES BAPTISTA MANSUS, MARCHIO VILLENSIS, NEAPOLITANUS  
AD JOANNEM MILTONIUM ANGLUM.

Ut mens, forma, decor, facies, mos, si pietas sic,  
Non Anglus, verum hercle Angelus ipse, fores.

AD JOANNEM MILTONEM ANGLUM, TRIPlici POESEOS LAURÊ  
CORONANDUM, GRÆCÂ NIMIRUM, LATINÂ, ATQUE HETRUSCÂ,  
EPIGRAMMA JOANNIS SALSILLI ROMANI.

Cede, Meles; cedat depressâ Mincius urnâ;  
Sebetus Tassum desinat usque loqui;  
At Thamesis victor cunctis ferat altior undas;  
Nam per te, Milto, par tribus unus erit.

AD JOANNEM MILTONUM.

Græcia Maconidem, jactet sibi Roma Maronem;  
Anglia Miltonum jactat utrique parem. SELVAGGI.

AL SIGNOR GIO. MILTONI, NOBILE INGLESE.

ODE.

Ergimi all' Etra o Clio,  
Perchè di stelle intreccierò corona !  
Non più del biondo Dio  
La fronde eterna in Pindo, e in Elicon :  
Diensi a merto maggior maggiori i fregi,  
A celeste virtù celesti pregi.

Non può del Tempo edace  
Rimaner preda eterno alto valore ;  
Non può l' obbligo rapace  
Furar dalle memorie eccelso onore.  
Su l' arco di mia cetra un dardo forte  
Virtù m' adatti, e ferirò la Morte.

10

Dell' Ocean profondo  
Cinta dagli ampi gorghi Anglia risiede  
Separata dal mondo,  
Però che il suo valor l' umano eccede :  
Questa feconda sa produrre Eroi,  
Ch' hanno a ragion del sovrumano tra noi.

Alla virtù sbandita  
Danno ne i petti lor fido ricetta,  
Quella gli è sol gradita,  
Perchè in lei san trovar gioia e diletto ;  
Ridillo tu, Giovanni, e mostra in tanto,  
Con tua vera virtù, vero il mio canto.

20

Lungi dal patrio lido  
Spinse Zeusi l' industrie ardente brama ;  
Ch' udio d' Elena il grido  
Con aurea tromba rimbombar la fama,  
E per poterla effigiare al paro  
Dalle più belle Idee trasse il più raro.

30

Così l' ape ingegnosa  
Trae con industria il suo liquor pregiato  
Dal giglio e dalla rosa,  
E quanti vaghi fiori ornano il prato ;  
Formano un dolce suon diverse corde,  
Fan varie voci melodia concorde.

Di bella gloria amante  
Milton, dal Ciel natio, per varie parti,  
Le peregrine piante  
Volgesti a ricercar scienze ed arti ;  
Del Gallo regnator vedesti i Regni,  
E dell' Italia ancor gl' Eroi più degni.

40

Fabro quasi divino,  
Sol virtù rintracciando, il tuo pensiero  
Vide in ogni confino  
Chi di nobil valor calca il sentiero ;  
L' ottimo dal miglior dopo scegliea  
Per fabbricar d' ogni virtù l' Idea.

Quanti nacquero in Flora,  
O in lei del parlar Tosco appreser l' arte,  
La cui memoria onora  
Il mondo fatta eterna in dotte carte,  
Volesti ricercar per tuo tesoro,  
E parlasti con lor nell' opre loro.

50

Nell' altera Babelle  
Per te il parlar confuse Giove in vano,  
Che per varie favelle  
Di se stessa trofeo cadde su'l piano :  
Ch' ode, oltr' all' Anglia, il suo più degno idioma  
Spagna, Francia, Toscana, e Grecia, e Roma.

60

I più profondi arcani  
Ch' occulta la Natura, e in cielo e in terra,  
Ch' a Ingegni sovrumani  
Tropo avara talor gli chiude, e serra,  
Chiaramente conosci, e giungi al fine  
Della moral virtude al gran confine.

Non batta il Tempo l' ale,  
Fermisi immoto, e in un ferminsi gl' anni,  
Che di virtù immortale  
Scorron di troppo ingiuriosi ai danni ;  
Che s' opre degne di poema e storia  
Furon già, l' hai presenti alla memoria.

70

Dammi tua dolce Cetra,  
 Se vuoi ch'io dica del tuo dolce canto,  
 Ch'inalzandoti all'Etra  
 Di farti uomo celeste ottiene il vanto;  
 Il Tamigi il dirà che gl'è concesso  
 Per te, suo cigno, pareggiar Permesso.  
 Io, che in riva dell'Arno  
 Tento spiegar tuo merto alto e preclaro,  
 So che fatico indarno  
 E ad ammirar, non a lodarlo imparo;  
 Freno dunque la lingua, e ascolto il core,  
 Che ti prende a lodar con lo stupore.

80

Del Sig. ANTONIO FRANCINI,  
 Gentiluomo Fiorentino.

## JOANNI MILTONI, LONDINENSI,

Juveni patriâ, virtutibus, eximio :

Viro qui multa peregrinatione, studio cuncta, orbis terrarum loca perspexit, ut, novus Ulysses, omnia ubique ab omnibus apprehenderet :

Polyglotto, in cujus ore linguae jam deperditae sic reviviscunt ut idiomata omnia sint in ejus laudibus infacunda ; et jure ea percallet ut admirationes et plausus populorum ab propria sapientiâ excitatos intelligat :

Illi, cujus animi dotes corporisque sensus ad admirationem commovent; et per ipsam motum cuique auferunt ; cujus opera ad plausus hortantur, sed venustate vocem laudatoribus adimunt :

Cui in Memoriâ totus orbis ; in Intellectu sapientia ; in Voluntate ardor gloriae ; in Ore eloquentia ; harmonicos caelestium sphaerarum sonitus Astronomiâ duce audienti ; characteres mirabilium Naturae per quos Dei magnitudo describitur magistrâ Philosophiâ legenti ; antiquitatum latebras, vetustatis excidia, eruditionis ambages, comite assiduâ Autorum lectione,  
 exquirenti, restauranti, percurrenti,  
 at cur nitor in arduum ?

Illi in cujus virtutibus evulgandis ora Famæ non sufficiant, nec hominum stupor in laudandis satis est, Reverentiæ et Amoris ergo hoc ejus meritis debitum admirationis tributum offert

CAROLUS DATUS, Patricius Florentinus,  
 Tanto homini servus, tantæ virtutis amator.



Di bella gloria amante  
Milton, dal Ciel natio, per varie parti,  
Le peregrine piante  
Volgesti a ricercar scienze ed arti ;  
Del Gallo regnator vedesti i Regni,  
E dell' Italia ancor gl' Eroi più degni.

40

Fabro quasi divino,  
Sol virtù rintracciando, il tuo pensiero  
Vide in ogni confino  
Chi di nobil valor calca il sentiero ;  
L' ottimo dal miglior dopo scegliea  
Per fabbricar d' ogni virtù l' Idea.

Quanti nacquero in Flora,  
O in lei del parlar Tosco appreser l' arte,  
La cui memoria onora  
Il mondo fatta eterna in dotte carte,  
Volesti ricercar per tuo tesoro,  
E parlasti con lor nell' opre loro.

50

Nell' altera Babelle  
Per te il parlar confuse Giove in vano,  
Che per varie favelle  
Di se stessa trofeo cadde su'l piano :  
Ch' ode, oltr' all' Anglia, il suo più degno idioma  
Spagna, Francia, Toscana, e Grecia, e Roma.

60

I più profondi arcani  
Ch' occulta la Natura, e in cielo e in terra,  
Ch' a Ingegni sovrumani  
Tropo avara talor gli chiude, e serra,  
Chiaramente conosci, e giungi al fine  
Della moral virtude al gran confine.

Non batta il Tempo l' ale,  
Fermisi immoto, e in un ferminsi gl' anni,  
Che di virtù immortale  
Scorron di troppo ingiuriosi ai danni ;  
Che s' opre degne di poema e storia  
Furon già, l' hai presenti alla memoria.

70

Dammi tua dolce Cetra,  
Se vuoi ch'io dica del tuo dolce canto,  
Ch'inalzandoti all'Etra  
Di farti uomo celeste ottiene il vanto;  
Il Tamigi il dirà che gl'è concesso  
Per te, suo cigno, pareggiar Permesso.  
Io, che in riva dell'Arno  
Tento spiegar tuo merto alto e preclaro,  
So che fatico indarno  
E ad ammirar, non a lodarlo imparo;  
Freno dunque la lingua, e ascolto il core,  
Che ti prende a lodar con lo stupore.

86

Del Sig. ANTONIO FRANCINI,  
Gentiluomo Fiorentino.

JOANNI MILTONI, LONDINENSI,

Juveni patriâ, virtutibus, eximio:

Viro qui multa peregrinatione, studio cuncta, orbis terrarum loca perspexit, ut, novus Ulysses, omnia ubique ab omnibus apprehenderet:

Polyglotto, in cujus ore linguæ jam deperditæ sic reviviscunt ut idiomata omnia sint in ejus laudibus infacunda; et jure ea percallet ut admirationes et plausus populorum ab propriâ sapientiâ excitatos intelligat:

Illi, cujus animi dotes corporisque sensus ad admirationem commovent, et per ipsam motum cuique auferunt; cujus opera ad plausus hortantur, sed venustate vocem laudatoribus adimunt:

Cui in Memoriam totus orbis; in Intellectu sapientia; in Voluntate ardor gloriæ; in Ore eloquentia; harmonicis celestium sphaerarum sonitus Astronomiam duce audienti; characteres mirabilium Naturæ per quos Dei magnitudo describitur magistrâ Philosophiâ legenti; antiquitatum latebras, vetustatis excidia, eruditionis ambages, comite assiduâ Autorum lectione,

exquirenti, restauranti, percurrenti,  
at cur nitor in arduum?

Illi in cujus virtutibus evulgandis ora Famæ non sufficiant, nec hominum stupor in laudandis satis est, Reverentiæ et Amoris ergo hoc ejus meritis debitum admirationis tributum offert

CAROLUS DATUS, Patricius Florentinus,  
Tanto homini servus, tante virtutis amator.

## ELEGIARUM LIBER

## ELEGIA PRIMA

## AD CAROLUM DIODATUM

TANDEM, chare, tuæ mihi pervenere tabellæ,  
 Pertulit et voces nuncia charta tuas;  
 Pertulit occiduâ Devæ Cestrensis ab orâ  
 Vergivium prono quâ petit amne salum.  
 Multùm, crede, juvat terras aluisse remotas  
 Pectus amans nostri, tamque fidele caput,  
 Quoddam mihi lepidum tellus longinqua sodalem  
 Debet, at unde brevi reddere jussa velit.  
 Me tenet urbs reflua quam Thamesis alluit undâ,  
 Meque nec invitum patria dulcis habet. 10  
 Jam nec arundiferum mihi cura revisere Camum,  
 Nec dudum vetiti me laris angit amor.  
 Nuda nec arva placent, umbrasque negantia molles;  
 Quàm male Phœbicolis convenit ille locus!  
 Nec duri libet usque minas perferre Magistri,  
 Cæteraque ingenio non subeunda meo.  
 Si sit hoc exilium, patrios adisse penates,  
 Et vacuum curis otia grata sequi,  
 Non ego vel profugi nomen sortemve recuso,  
 Lætus et exilii conditione fruor. 20  
 O utinam vates nunquam graviora tulisset  
 Ille Tomitano flebilis exul agro;  
 Non tunc Ionio quicquam cessisset Homero,  
 Neve foret victo laus tibi prima, Maro.  
 Tempora nam licet hic placidis dare libera Musis,  
 Et totum rapiunt me, mea vita, libri.  
 Excipit hinc fessum sinuosi pompa theatri,  
 Et vocat ad plausus garrula scena suos.  
 Seu catus auditur senior, seu prodigus hæres,  
 Seu procus, aut posita casside miles adest, 30  
 Sive decennali fœcundus lite patronus  
 Detonat inculto barbara verba foro;  
 Sæpe vaser gnato succurrit servus amanti,  
 Et nasum rigidi fallit ubique patris;

Sæpe novos illic virgo mirata calores  
 Quid sit amor nescit, dum quoque nescit amat :  
 Sive cruentatum furiosa Tragœdia sceptrum  
 Quassat, et effusis crinibus ora rotat ;  
 Et dolet, et specto, juvat et spectasse dolendo ;  
 Interdum et lacrymis dulcis amaror inest :  
 Seu puer infelix indelibata reliquit  
 Gaudia, et abrupto flendus amore cadit ;  
 Seu ferus e tenebris iterat Styga criminis ultor,  
 Conscia funereo pectora torre movens ;  
 Seu mœret Pelopeia domus, seu nobilis Ili,  
 Aut luit incestos aula Creontis avos.  
 Sed neque sub tecto semper nec in urbe latemus,  
 Irrita nec nobis tempora veris eunt.  
 Nos quoque lucus habet vicinâ consitus ulmo,  
 Atque suburbani nobilis umbra loci.  
 Sæpius hic, blandas spirantia sidera flammæ,  
 Virgineos videas præterisse choros.  
 Ah quoties dignæ stupui miracula formæ  
 Quæ posset senium vel reparare Jovis !  
 Ah quoties vidi superantia lumina gemmas,  
 Atque faces quotquot volvit uterque polus ;  
 Collaque bis vivi Pelopis quæ brachia vincant,  
 Quæque fluit puro nectare tincta via,  
 Et decus eximium frontis, tremulosque capillos,  
 Aurea quæ fallax retia tendit Amor ;  
 Pellacesque genas, ad quas hyacinthina sordet  
 Purpura, et ipse tui floris, Adoni, rubor !  
 Cedite laudatæ toties Heroides olim,  
 Et quæcunque vagum cepit amica Jovem ;  
 Cedite Achæmeniaë turritâ fronte puellæ,  
 Et quot Susa colunt, Memnoniamque Ninon ;  
 Vos etiam Danaë fascès submittite Nymphæ,  
 Et vos Iliacæ, Romulæque nurus ;  
 Nec Pompeianas Tarpeia Musa columnas  
 Jactet, et Ausoniis plena theatra stolis.  
 Gloria virginibus debetur prima Britannis ;  
 Extera sat tibi sit fœmina posse sequi.  
 Tuque urbs Dardaniis, Londinum, structa colonis,  
 Turrigerum latè conspicienda caput,

40

50

60

70

Tu nimium felix intra tua mœnia claudis  
 Quicquid formosi pendulus orbis habet.  
 Non tibi tot cœlo scintillant astra sereno,  
 Endymioneæ turba ministra deæ,  
 Quot tibi conspicuæ formæque auroque puellæ  
 Per medias radiant turba videnda vias.  
 Creditur huc geminis venisse invecta columbis  
 Alma pharetrigero milite cincta Venus,  
 Huic Cnidon, et riguas Simoentis flumine valles,  
 Huic Paphon, et roseam posthabitura Cypron.  
 Ast ego, dum pueri sinit indulgentia cæci,  
 Mœnia quàm subito linq̃uere fausta paro ;  
 Et vitare procul malefidæ infamia Circes  
 Atria, divini Molyos usus ope.  
 Stat quoque juncosas Cami remeare paludes,  
 Atque iterum raucæ murmur adire Scholæ.  
 Interea fidi parvum cape munus amici,  
 Paucaque in alternos verba coacta modos.

80

90

## ELEGIA SECUNDA

*Anno ætatis 17*

IN OBITUM PRÆCONIS ACADEMICI CANTABRIGIENSIS

TE, qui conspicuus baculo fulgente solebas  
 Palladium toties ore ciere gregem,  
 Ultima præconum præconem te quoque sæva  
 Mors rapit, officio nec favet ipsa suo.  
 Candidiora licet fuerint tibi tempora plumis  
 Sub quibus accipimus delituisse Jovem,  
 O dignus tamen Hæmonio juvenescere succo,  
 Dignus in Æsonios vivere posse dies,  
 Dignus quem Stygiis medicâ revocaret ab undis  
 Arte Coronides, sæpe rogante deâ.  
 Tu si jussus eras acies accire togatas,  
 Et celer a Phœbo nuntius ire tuo,  
 Talis in Iliacâ stabat Cyllenius aulâ  
 Alipes, æthereâ missus ab arce Patris

10

Talis et Eurybates ante ora furentis Achillei  
 Rettulit Atridae iussa severa ducis.  
 Magna sepulchrorum regina, satelles Averni,  
 Sæva nimis Musis, Palladi sæva nimis,  
 Quin illos rapias qui pondus inutile terre?  
 Turba quidem est telis ista petenda tuis.  
 Vestibus hunc igitur pullis, Academia, luge,  
 Et madeant lacrymis nigra feretra tuis.  
 Fundat et ipsa modos querebunda Elegeia tristes,  
 Personet et totis naenia inæsta scholis.

ELEGIA TERTIA

*Anno ætatis 17*

IN OBITUM PRÆSULIS WINTONIENSIS

MÆSTUS eram, et tacitus, nullo comitante, sedebam,  
 Hærebantque animo tristia plura meo :  
 Protinus en subiit funestæ cladis imago  
 Fecit in Angliaco quam Libitina solo ;  
 Dum procerum ingressa est splendentes marmore turres  
 Dira sepulchrali Mors metuenda face,  
 Pulsavitque auro gravidos et jaspide muros,  
 Nec metuit satrapum sternere falce greges.  
 Tunc memini clarique ducis, fratrisque verendi,  
 Intempestivis ossa cremata rogis ;  
 Et memini Heroum quos vidit ad æthera raptos,  
 Flevit et amissos Belgia tota duces.  
 At te præcipuè luxi, dignissime Præsul,  
 Wintoniæque olim gloria magna tuæ ;  
 Delicui fletu, et tristi sic ore querebar :  
 'Mors fera, Tartareo diva secunda Jovi,  
 Nonne satis quod sylva tuas persentiat iras,  
 Et quod in herbosos jus tibi detur agros,  
 Quodque afflata tuo marcescant lilia tabo,  
 Et crocus, et pulchræ Cypridi sacra rosa,  
 Nec sinis ut semper fluvio contermina quercus  
 Miretur lapsus prætereuntis aquæ?

Et tibi succumbit liquido quæ plurima cælo  
 Evehitur pennis, quamlibet augur, avis,  
 Et quæ mille nigris errant animalia sylvis,  
 Et quod alunt mutum Proteos antra pecus.  
 Invida, tanta tibi cum sit concessa potestas,  
 Quid juvat humanâ tingere cæde manus?  
 Nobileque in pectus certas acuisse sagittas,  
 Semideamque animam sede fugâsse suâ?  
 Talia dum lacrymans alto sub pectore volvo,  
 Roscidus occiduis Hesperus exit aquis,  
 Et Tartessio submerserat æquore currum  
 Phæbus, ab Eöo littore mensus iter.  
 Nec mora; membra cavo posui refovenda cubili;  
 Condiderant oculos noxque soporque meos,  
 Cum mihi visus eram lato spatiarier agro;  
 Heu! nequit ingenium visa referre meum.  
 Illic puniceâ radiabant omnia luce,  
 Ut matutino cum juga sole rubent;  
 Ac veluti cum pandit opes Thaumantia proles  
 Vestitu nituit multicolore solum;  
 Non dea tam variis ornavit floribus hortos  
 Alcinoi Zephyro Chloris amata levi.  
 Flumina vernantes lambunt argentea campos;  
 Ditiôr Hesperio flavet arena Tago;  
 Serpit odoriferas per opes levis aura Favoni,  
 Aura sub innumeris humida nata rosis:  
 Talis in extremis terræ Gangetidis oris  
 Luciferi regis fingitur esse domus.  
 Ipse racemiferis dum densas vitibus umbras  
 Et pelluentes miror ubique locos,  
 Ecce mihi subito Præsul Wintonius astat,  
 Sidereum nitido fulsit in ore jubar;  
 Vestis ad auratos defluxit candida talos;  
 Infula divinum cinxerat alba caput.  
 Dumque senex tali incedit venerandus amictu,  
 Intremuit læto florea terra sono;  
 Agmina gemmatissimæ plaudunt cælestia pennis;  
 Pura triumphali personat æthra tubâ.  
 Quisque novum amplexu comitem cantuque salutât,  
 Hosque aliquis placido misit ab ore sonos:

30

40

50

60

'Nate, veni, et patrii felix cape gaudia regni;  
Semper abhinc duro, nate, labore vaca.'  
Dixit, et aligeræ tetigerunt nablia turmæ;  
At mihi cum tenebris aurea pulsa quies;  
Flebam turbatos Cephaleiâ pellice somnos.  
Talia contingant somnia sæpe mihi!

ELEGIA QUARTA

*Anno ætatis 18*

AD THOMAM JUNIUM, PRÆCEPTOREM SUUM, APUD MERCATORES ANGLICOS HAMBURGÆ AGENTES PASTORIS MUNERE FUNGENTEM

CURRE per immensum subitò, mea littera, pontum:  
I, pete Teutonicos læve per æquor agros;  
Segnes rumpe moras, et nil, precor, obstat cuncti,  
Et festinantis nil remoretur iter.  
Ipse ego Sicaniò frænantem carcere ventos  
Æolon, et virides sollicitabo Deos,  
Cæruleamque suis comitatam Dorida Nymphis,  
Ut tibi dent placidam per sua regna viam.  
At tu, si poteris, celeres tibi sume jugales,  
Vecta quibus Colchis fugit ab ore viri;  
Aut quæis Triptolemus Scythicas devenit in oras,  
Gratus Eleusinâ missus ab urbe puer.  
Atque, ubi Germanas flavere videbis arenas,  
Ditis ad Hamburgæ mœnia flecte gradum,  
Dicitur occiso quæ ducere nomen ab Hamâ,  
Cimbrica quem fertur clava dedisse neci.  
Vivit ibi antiquæ clarus pietatis honore  
Præsul, Christicolæ pascere doctus oves;  
Ille quidem est animæ plusquam pars altera nostræ;  
Dimidio vite vivere cogor ego.  
Hei mihi, quot pelagi, quot montes interjecti,  
Me faciunt aliâ parte carere mei!  
Charior ille mihi quàm tu, doctissime Graiùm,  
Cliniadi, pronepos qui Telamonis erat;

19

20



Quàmque Stagiritès generoso magnus alumno,  
 Quem peperit Lybico Chaonis alma Jovi.  
 Qualis Amyntorides, qualis Philyreus Heros  
 Myrmidonum regi, talis et ille mihi.  
 Primus ego Aonios illo præeunte recessus  
 Lustrabam, et bifidi sacra vireta jugi, 30  
 Pieriosque hausì latices, Clioque favente  
 Castalio sparsi lacta ter ora mero.  
 Flammeus at signum ter viderat arietis Æthon  
 Induxitque auro lancea terga novo,  
 Bisque novo terram sparsisti, Chlòri, senilem  
 Gramine, bisque tuas abstulit Auster opes;  
 Necdum ejus licuit mihi lumina pascere vultu,  
 Aut linguæ dulces aure bibisse sonos.  
 Vade igitur, cursuque Eurum præverte sonorum;  
 Quàm sit opus monitis res docet, ipsa vides. 40  
 Invenies dulci cum conjuge fortè sedentem,  
 Mulcentem gremiò pignora chara suo;  
 Forsitan aut veterum praelarga volumina Patrum  
 Versantem, aut veri Biblia sacra Dei,  
 Cælestive animas saturantem rore tenellas,  
 Grande salutiferre religionis opus.  
 Utque solet, multam sit dicere cura salutem,  
 Dicere quam decuit, si modo adesset, herum.  
 Hæc quoque, paulùm oculos in humum defixa modestos,  
 Verba verecundo sis memor ore loqui: 50  
 'Hæc tibi, si teneris vacat inter praelia Musis,  
 Mittit ab Angliaco littore fida manus.  
 Accipe sinceram, quamvis sit sera, salutem;  
 Fiat et hoc ipso gratior illa tibi.  
 Sera quidem, sed vera fuit, quam casta recepit  
 Icaris a lento Penelopeia viro.  
 Ast ego quid volui manifestum tollere crimen,  
 Ipse quod ex omni parte levare nequit?  
 Arguitur tardus meritò, noxamque fatetur,  
 Et pudet officium deseruisse suum. 60  
 Tu modò da veniam fasso, veniamque roganti;  
 Crimina diminui, quæ patuere, solent.  
 Non ferus in pavidos rictus diducit hiantes,  
 Vulnifico pronos nec rapit ungue leo.

Sæpe sarissiferi crudelia pectora Thracis  
Supplicis ad mœstas deliquere preces;  
Extensæque manus avertunt fulminis ictus,  
Placat et iratos hostia parva Deos.  
Jamque diu scripsisse tibi fuit impetus illi,  
Neve moras ultra ducere passus Amor;  
Nam vaga Fama refert, heu nuntia vera malorum!  
In tibi finitimis bella tumere locis,  
Teque tuamque urbem truculento milite cingi,  
Et jam Saxonicos arma parâsse duces.  
Te circum latè campos populatur Enyo,  
Et sata carne virûm jam cruor arva rigat.  
Germanisque suum concessit Thracia Martem;  
Illuc Odrysios Mars pater egit equos:  
Perpetuèque comans jam deflorescit oliva;  
Fugit et ærisonam Diva perosa tubam,  
Fugit, io! terris, et jam non ultima Virgo  
Creditor ad superas justa volâsse domos.  
Te tamen interea belli circumsonat horror,  
Vivis et ignoto solus inopsque solo;  
Et, tibi quam patrii non exhibuere penates,  
Sede peregrinâ quæris egenus opem.  
Patria, dura parens, et saxis sævior albis  
Spumea quæ pulsat littoris unda tui,  
Siccine te decet innocuos exponere fœtus,  
Siccine in externam ferrea cogis humum,  
Et sinis ut terris quærant alimenta remotis  
Quos tibi prospiciens miserat ipse Deus,  
Et qui læta ferunt de cælo nuntia, quique  
Quæ via post cineres ducat ad astra docent?  
Digna quidem Stygiis quæ vivas clausa tenebris,  
Æternâque animæ digna perire fame!  
Haud aliter vates terræ Thesbitidis olim  
Pressit inassucto devia tesqua pede,  
Desertasque Arabum salebras, dum regis Achabi  
Effugit, atque tuas, Sidoni dira, manus.  
Talis et, horrissono laceratus membra flagello,  
Paulus ab Æmathiâ pellitur urbe Cilix;  
Piscosæque ipsum Gergessæ civis Iësum  
Finibus ingratus jussit abire suis.

At tu sume animos, nec spes cadat anxia curis,  
 Nec tua concutiat decolor ossa metus.  
 Sis etenim quamvis fulgentibus obsitus armis,  
 Intententque tibi millia tela necem,  
 At nullis vel inerme latus violabitur armis,  
 Deque tuo cuspis nulla cruore bibet.  
 Namque eris ipse Dei radiante sub ægide tutus;  
 Ille tibi custos, et pugil ille tibi;  
 Ille Sionæ qui tot sub mœnibus arcis  
 Assyrios fudit nocte silente viros;  
 Inque fugam vertit quos in Samaritidas oras  
 Misit ab antiquis prisca Damascus agris;  
 Terruit et densas pavido cum rege cohortes,  
 Aëre dum vacuo buccina clara sonat,  
 Cornea pulvereum dum verberat ungula campum,  
 Currus arenosam dum quatit actus humum,  
 Auditurque hinnitus equorum ad bella ruentium,  
 Et strepitus ferri, murmuraque alta virum.  
 Et tu (quod superest miseris) sperare memento,  
 Et tua magnanimo pectore vince mala;  
 Nec dubites quandoque frui melioribus annis,  
 Atque iterum patrios posse videre lares.'

110

120

## ELEGIA QUINTA

*Anno ætatis 20*

## IN ADVENTUM VERIS

IN se perpetuo Tempus revolubile gyro  
 Jam revocat Zephyros, vere tepente, novos;  
 Induiturque brevem Tellus reparata juventam,  
 Jamque soluta gelu dulcè virescit humus.  
 Fallor? an et nobis redeunt in carmina vires,  
 Ingeniumque mihi munere veris adest?  
 Munere veris adest, iterumque vigescit ab illo  
 (Quis putet?) atque aliquod jam sibi poscit opus.  
 Castalis ante oculos, bifidumque cacumen oberrat,  
 Et mihi Pirenen somnia nocte ferunt;

10

Concitaque arcano fervent mihi pectora motu,  
Et furor, et sonitus me sacer intus agit.  
Delius ipse venit, video Peneide lauro  
Implicitos crines, Delius ipse venit.  
Jam mihi mens liquidi raptatur in ardua celi,  
Perque vagas nubes corpore liber eo;  
Perque umbras, perque antra feror, penetralia vatum;  
Et mihi fana patent interiora Desm;  
Intuiturque animus toto quid agatur Olympo,  
Nec fugiunt oculos Tartara caeca meos. 20  
Quid tam grande sonat distento spiritus ore?  
Quid parit hæc rabies, quid sacer iste furor?  
Ver mihi, quod dedit ingenium, cantabitur illo;  
Profuerint isto reddita dona modo.  
Jam, Philomela, tuos, foliis adoperta novellis,  
Instituis modulos, dum silet omne nemus:  
Urbe ego, tu sylvâ, simul incipiamus utrique,  
Et simul adventum veris uterque canat.  
Veris, io! rediere vices; celebremus honores  
Veris, et hoc subeat Musa perennis opus. 30  
Jam sol, Æthiopus fugiens Tithoniaque arva,  
Flectit ad Arctoas aurea lora plagas.  
Est breve noctis iter, brevis est mora noctis opacæ,  
Horrida cum tenebris exulat illa suis.  
Jamque Lycaonius plastrum cæleste Boötes  
Non longâ sequitur fessus ut ante viâ;  
Nunc etiam solitas circum Jovis atria toto  
Excubias agitant sidera rara polo.  
Nam dolus, et credes, et vis cum nocte recessit,  
Neve Giganteum Dii timuere scelus. 40  
Fortè aliquis scopuli recubans in vertice pastor,  
Roscida cum primo sole rubescit humus,  
'Hæc,' ait, 'hæc certè caruisti nocte puellâ,  
Phœbe, tuâ, celeres quæ retineret equos.'  
Lætâ suas repetit sylvas, phæretamque resumit  
Cynthia, luciferas ut videt alta rotas,  
Et, tenues ponens radios, gaudere videtur  
Officium fieri tam breve fratris ope.  
'Desere,' Phœbus ait, 'thamos, Aurora, seniles;  
Quid juvat effecto procubuisse toro?' 50

Te manet Æolides viridi venator in herbâ;  
 Surge; tuos ignes altus Hymettus habet.  
 Flava verecundo dea crimen in ore fatetur,  
 Et matutinos ocliis urget equos.  
 Exiit invisam Tellus rediviva senectam,  
 Et cupit amplexus, Phœbe, subire tuos.  
 Et cupit, et digna est; quid enim formosius illa,  
 Pandit ut omni-feros luxuriosa sinus,  
 Atque Arabum spirat messes, et ab ore venusto  
 Mitia cum Paphiis fundit amoma rosis!  
 Ecce, coronatur sacro frons ardua luco,  
 Cingit ut Idæam pinea turris Opim;  
 Et vario madidos intexit flore capillos,  
 Floribus et visa est posse placere suis.  
 Floribus effusos ut erat redimita capillos,  
 Tœnario placuit diva Sicana Deo.  
 Aspice, Phœbe; tibi faciles hortantur amores,  
 Mellitasque movent flamina verna preces;  
 Cinnamæa Zephyrus leve plaudit odorifer alâ;  
 Blanditiasque tibi ferre videntur aves.  
 Nec sine dote tuos temeraria quærit amores  
 Terra, nec optatos poscit egena toros;  
 Alma salutiferum medicos tibi gramen in usus  
 Præbet, et hinc titulos adjuvat ipsa tuos.  
 Quòd si te pretium, si te fulgentia tangunt  
 Munera (muneribus sæpe coemptus amor),  
 Illa tibi ostentat quascunque sub æquore vasto,  
 Et superinjectis montibus, addit opes.  
 Ah! quoties, cum tu clivoso fessus Olympo  
 In vespertinas præcipitaris aquas,  
 'Cur te,' inquit, 'cursu languentem, Phœbe, diurno  
 Hesperiiis recipit cœrula mater aquis?  
 Quid tibi cum Tethy? quid cum Tartesside lymphâ?  
 Dia quid immundo perluis ora salo?  
 Frigora, Phœbe, meâ melius captabis in umbrâ:  
 Huc ades; ardentes imbue rore comas.  
 Mollior egelidâ veniet tibi somnus in herbâ;  
 Huc ades, et gremio lumina pone meo.  
 Quàque jaces circum mulcebit lenè susurrans  
 Aura per humentes corpora fusa rosas.

60

70

80

90

Nec me (crede mihi) terrent Semeleia fata,  
 Nec Phaëtonteo fumidus axis equo;  
 Cum tu, Phœbe, tuo sapientibus uteris igni,  
 Huc ades, et gremio lumina pone meo.  
 Sic Tellus lasciva suos suspirat amores;  
 Matris in exemplum cætera turba ruunt.  
 Nunc etenim toto currit vagus orbe Cupido,  
 Languentesque fovet solis ab igne faces.  
 Insonuere novis lethalia cornua nervis,  
 Triste micant ferro tela corusca novo. 100  
 Jamque vel invictam tentat superâsse Dianam,  
 Quæque sedet sacro Vesta pudica foco.  
 Ipsa senescentem reparat Venus annua formam,  
 Atque iterum tepido creditur orta mari.  
 Marmoreas juvenes clamant *Hymenæe* per urbes;  
 Littus *io Hymen* et cava saxa sonant.  
 Cultior ille venit, tunicâque decentior aptâ;  
 Punicum redolet vestis odora crocum.  
 Egrediturque frequens ad amœni gaudia veris  
 Virgineos auro cincta puella sinus. 110  
 Votum est cuique suum; votum est tamen omnibus unum,  
 Ut sibi quem cupiat det Cytherea virum.  
 Nunc quoque septenâ modulatur arundine pastor,  
 Et sua quæ jungat carmina Phyllis habet.  
 Navita nocturno placat sua sidera cantu,  
 Delphinâsque leves ad vada summa vocat.  
 Jupiter ipse alto cum conjuge ludit Olympo,  
 Convocat et famulos ad sua festa Deos.  
 Nunc etiam Satyri, cum sera crepuscula surgunt,  
 Pervolitant celeri florea rura choro, 120  
 Sylvanusque suâ cyparissi fronde revinctus,  
 Semicaperque Deus, semideusque caper.  
 Quæque sub arboribus Dryades latuere vetustis  
 Per juga, per solos expatiantur agros.  
 Per sata luxuriat fruticetaque Mænalius Pan;  
 Vix Cybele mater, vix sibi tuta Ceres;  
 Atque aliquam cupidus prædatur Oreada Faunus,  
 Consulit in trepidos dum sibi nympha pedes,  
 Jamque latet, latitansque cupit malè tecta videri,  
 Et fugit, et fugiens pervelit ipsa capi. 130

Dii quoque non dubitant cælo præponere sylvas,  
 Et sua quisque sibi numina lucus habet.  
 Et sua quisque diu sibi numina lucus habeto,  
 Nec vos arboreâ, dii, precor, ite domo.  
 Te referant, miseris te, Jupiter, aurea terris  
 Sæcla! quid ad nimbos, aspera tela, redis?  
 Tu saltem lentè rapidos age, Phœbe, jugales  
 Quâ potes, et sensim tempora veris eant:  
 Brumaque productas tardè ferat hispida noctes,  
 Ingruat et nostro serior umbra polo.

## ELEGIA SEXTA

AD CAROLUM DIODATUM

RURI COMMORANTEM

*Qui, cum Idibus Decemb. scripisset, et sua carmina excusari postulasset si solito minus essent bona, quod inter lautitias quibus erat ab amicis exceptus haud satis felicem operam Musis dare se posse affirmabat, hoc habuit responsum.*

MITTO tibi sanam non pleno ventre salutem,  
 Quâ tu distento fortè carere potes.  
 At tua quid nostram prolecat Musa camœnam,  
 Nec sinit optatas posse sequi tenebras?  
 Carmine scire velis quàm te redamemque colamque;  
 Crede mihi vix hoc carmine scire queas,  
 Nam neque noster amor modulis includitur arctis,  
 Nec venit ad claudos integer ipse pedes.  
 Quàm bene solennes epulas, hilaremque Decembrim,  
 Festaque cœlifugam quæ coluere Deum,  
 Deliciasque refers, hiberni gaudia ruris,  
 Haustaque per lepidos Gallica musta focos!  
 Quid quereris refugam vino dapibusque poesin?  
 Carmen amat Bacchum, carmina Bacchus amat.  
 Nec puduit Phœbum virides gestâsse corymbos,  
 Atque hederam lauro præposuisse sursæ.

Sæpius Aoniis clamavit collibus *Eua*  
Mista Thyoneo turba novena choro.  
Naso Corallæcis mala carmina misit ab agris;  
Non illic epulæ, non sata vitis erat.  
Quid nisi vina, rosasque, racemiferumque *Lyæum*,  
Cantavit brevibus *Teta* *Musa* modis?  
*Pindaricosque* inflat numeros *Teumesius* *Euan*,  
Et redolet sumptum pagina quæque merum;  
Dum gravis everso currus crepat axe supinus,  
Et volat *Eleo* pulvere fuscus eques.  
*Quadrismoque* madens *Lyricen* *Romanus* *Iaccho*  
Dulcè canit *Glyceran*, flavicomamque *Chloen*.  
Jam quoque lauta tibi generoso mensa paratu  
Mentis alit vires, ingeniumque fovet.  
Massica fœcundam despumant pocula venam,  
Fundis et ex ipso condita metra cado.  
Addimus his artes, fusumque per intima *Phœbum*  
Corda: favent uni *Bacchus*, *Apollo*, *Ceres*.  
Scilicet haud mirum tam dulcia carmina per te,  
Numine composito, tres peperisse Deos.  
Nunc quoque *Thressa* tibi cælato barbitos auro  
Insonat argutâ molliter icta manu;  
Auditurque *chelys* suspensa tapetia circum,  
Virgineos tremulâ quæ regat arte pedes.  
Illa tuas saltem teneant spectacula *Musas*,  
Et revocent quantum *crapula* pellit iners.  
Crede mihi, dum psallit ebur, comitataque plectrum  
Implet odoratos festa chorea tholos,  
Percipies tacitum per pectora serpere *Phœbum*,  
Quale repentinus permeat ossa calor;  
Perque puellares oculos digitumque sonantem  
Irruet in totos lapsa *Thalia* sinus.  
Namque *Elegia* levis multorum cura deorum est,  
Et vocat ad numeros quemlibet illa suos;  
*Liber* adest elegis, *Eratoque*, *Ceresque*, *Venusque*,  
Et cum purpureâ matre tenellus *Amor*.  
Talibus inde licent convivium larga poetis,  
Sæpius et veteri commaduisse mero.  
At qui bella refert, et adulto sub Jove calum,  
Herosque pios, semideosque duces,

20

30

40

50



Et nunc sancta canit superùm consulta deorum,  
 Nunc latrata fero regna profunda cane,  
 Ille quidem parcè, Samii pro more magistri,  
 Vivat, et innocuos prebeat herba cibos;  
 Stet prope fagineo pellucida lympha catillo,  
 Sobriaque e puro pocula fonte bibat.  
 Additur huic scelerisque vacans et casta juvenus,  
 Et rigidi mores, et sine labe manus;  
 Qualis veste nitens sacrâ, et lustralibus undis,  
 Surgis ad infensos augur iture Deos.  
 Hoc ritu vixisse ferunt post rapta sagacem  
 Lumina Tiresian, Ogygiumque Linon,  
 Et lare devoto profugum Calchanta, senemque  
 Orpheon edomitis sola per antra feris;  
 Sic dapis exiguus, sic rivi potor Homerus  
 Dulichium vexit per freta longa virum,  
 Et per monstificam Perseiae Phœbados aulam,  
 Et vada fœmineis insidiosa sonis,  
 Perque tuas, rex ime, domos, ubi sanguine nigro  
 Dicitur umbrarum detinuisse greges:  
 Diis etenim sacer est vates, divùmque sacerdos,  
 Spirat et occultum pectus et ora Jovem.  
 At tu si quid agam scitabere (si modò saltem  
 Esse putas tanti noscere siquid agam).  
 Paciferum canimus cœlesti semine regem,  
 Faustaue sacratis sæcula pacta libris;  
 Vagitumque Dei, et stabulantem paupere tecto  
 Qui suprema suo cum patre regna colit;  
 Stelliparumque polum, modulantesque æthere turmas,  
 Et subito elisos ad sua fana Deos.  
 Dona quidem dedimus Christi natalibus illa;  
 Illa sub auroram lux mihi prima tulit.  
 Te quoque pressa manent patriis meditata cicutis;  
 Tu mihi, cui recitem, iudicis instar eris.

60

70

80

90

## ELEGIA SEPTIMA

*Anno ætatis undevigesimo*

NONDUM blanda tuas leges, Amathusia, nôram,  
 Et Paphio vacuum pectus ab igne fuit.  
 Sæpe cupidineas, puerilia tela, sagittas,  
 Atque tuum spreui maxime numen, Amor.  
 'Tu puer imbelles' dixi 'transfige columbas;  
 Conveniunt tenero mollia bella duci:  
 Aut de passeribus tumidos age, parve, triumphos;  
 Hæc sunt militiæ digna trophæa tuæ.  
 In genus humanum quid inania dirigis arma?  
 Non valet in fortes ista pharetra viros.' 10  
 Non tulit hoc Cyprius (neque enim Deus ullus ad iras  
 Promptior), et duplici jam ferus igne calet.  
 Ver erat, et summæ radians per culmina villæ  
 Attulerat primam lux tibi, Maie, diem;  
 At mihi adhuc refugam quærebant lumina noctem,  
 Nec matutinum sustinere jubar.  
 Astat Amor lecto, pictis Amor impiger alis;  
 Prodidit astantem mota pharetra Deum;  
 Prodidit et facies, et dulcè minantis ocelli,  
 Et quicquid puero dignum et Amore fuit. 20  
 Talis in æterno juvenis Sigæus Olympo  
 Miscet amatori pocula plena Jovi;  
 Aut, qui formosas pellexit ad oscula nymphas,  
 Thiodamantæus Naiade raptus Hylas.  
 Addideratque iras, sed et has decuisse putares;  
 Addideratque truces, nec sine felle, minas.  
 Et 'Miser exemplo sapiisses tutiùs,' inquit;  
 'Nunc mea quid possit dextera testis eris.  
 Inter et expertos vires numerabere nostras,  
 Et faciam vero per tua damna fidem. 30  
 Ipse ego, si nescis, strato Pythonè superbum  
 Edomui Phæbum, cessit et ille mihi;  
 Et, quoties meminit Penèidos, ipse fatetur  
 Certiùs et graviùs tela nocere mea.

Me nequit adductum curvare peritiùs arcum,  
 Qui post terga solet vincere, Parthus eques:  
 Cydoniusque mihi cedit venator, et ille  
 Inscius uxori qui necis author erat.  
 Est etiam nobis ingens quoque victus Orion,  
 Herculeæque manus, Herculeusque comes.  
 Jupiter ipse licet sua fulmina torqueat in me,  
 Hærebunt lateri spicula nostra Jovis.  
 Cætera quæ dubitas meliùs mea tela docebunt,  
 Et tua non leviter corda petenda mihi.  
 Nec te, stulte, tuæ poterunt defendere Musæ;  
 Nec tibi Phœbæus porriget anguis openi.  
 Dixit, et, aurato quatiens mucrone sagittam,  
 Evolat in tepidos Cypridos ille sinus.  
 At mihi risuro tonuit ferus ore minaci,  
 Et mihi de puero non metus ullus erat.  
 Et modò quæ nostri spatiantur in urbe Quirites,  
 Et modò villarum proxima rura placent.  
 Turba frequens, facieque simillima turba dearum,  
 Splendida per medias itque reditque vias;  
 Auctaque luce dies gemino fulgore coruscat.  
 Fallor? an et radios hinc quoque Phœbus habet?  
 Hæc ego non fugi spectacula grata severus,  
 Impetus et quò me fert juvenilis agor;  
 Lumina luminibus malè providus obvia misi,  
 Neve oculos potui continuisse meos.  
 Unam fortè aliis supereminuisse notabam;  
 Principium nostri lux erat illa mali.  
 Sic Venus optaret mortalibus ipsa videri,  
 Sic regina Deùm conspicienda fuit.  
 Hanc memor objecit nobis malus ille Cupido  
 Solus et hos nobis texuit antè dolos.  
 Nec procul ipse vafer latuit, multæque sagittæ,  
 Et facis a tergo grande pendit onus.  
 Nec mora; nunc ciliis hæsit, nunc virginis ori,  
 Insilit hinc labiis, insidet inde genis;  
 Et quascunque agilis partes jaculator oberrat,  
 Hei mihi! mille locis pectus inerme ferit.  
 Protinùs insoliti subierunt corda furores;  
 Uror amans intùs, flammaque totus eram.

40

30

60

70

Interea misero quae jam mihi sola placebat  
 Ablata est, oculis non reditura meis;  
 Ast ego progredior tacitè querebundus, et excors,  
 Et dubius volui saepe referre pedem.  
 Findor; et haec remanet, sequitur pars altera votum;  
 Raptaque tam subitò gaudia flere juvat. 80  
 Sic dolet amissum proles Junonia caelum,  
 Inter Lemniacos præcipitata focos;  
 Talis et abreptum solem respexit ad Orcum  
 Vectus ab attonitis Amphiarus equis.  
 Quid faciam infelix, et luctu victus? Amores  
 Nec licet inceptos ponere, neve sequi.  
 O utinam spectare semel mihi detur amatos  
 Vultus, et coràm tristia verba loqui!  
 Forsitan et duro non est adamante creata,  
 Fortè nec ad nostras surgeat illa preces! 90  
 Crede mihi, nullus sic infelicitè arsit;  
 Ponar in exemplo primus et unus ego.  
 Parce, precor, teneri cum sis Deus ales amoris;  
 Pugnent officio nec tua facta tuo.  
 Jam tuus O certè est mihi formidabilis arcus,  
 Nate deâ, jaculis nec minus igne potens;  
 Et tua fumabunt nostris altaria donis,  
 Solus et in Superis tu mihi summus eris.  
 Deme meos tandem, verùm nec deme, furores;  
 Nescio cur, miser est suaviter omnis amans: 100  
 Tu modò da facilis, posthæc mea siqua futura est,  
 Cuspis amatueros figat ut una duos.

*Hæc ego mente olim lævâ, studioque supino,  
 Nequitia posui vana trophæa mea.  
 Scilicet abreptum sic me malus impulit error,  
 Indocilisque ætas prava magistra fuit;  
 Donec Socraticos umbrosa Academia rivos  
 Præbuit, admissum dedocuitque fugum.  
 Protinùs, extinctis ex illo tempore flammis,  
 Cincta rigent multo pectora nostra gelu;  
 Unde suis frigus metuit puer ipse sagittis,  
 Et Diomedeam vim timet ipsa Venus.* 110

## [EPIGRAMMATA]

## IN PRODITIONEM BOMBARDICAM

CUM simul in regem nuper satrapasque Britannos  
 Ausus es infandum, perfide Fauxe, nefas,  
 Fallor? an et mitis voluisti ex parte videri,  
 Et pensare malâ cum pietate scelus?  
 Scilicet hos alti missurus ad atria caeli,  
 Sulphureo curru flammivolisque rotis;  
 Qualiter ille, feris caput inviolabile Parcis,  
 Liquit Iordanios turbine raptus agros.

5

## IN EANDEM

SICCINE tentasti caelo donâsse Iacobum,  
 Quæ septemgemino Bellua monte lates?  
 Ni meliora tuum poterit dare munera numen,  
 Parce, precor, donis insidiosa tuis.  
 Ille quidem sine te consortia serus adivit  
 Astra, nec inferni pulveris usus ope.  
 Sic potius fœdos in cælum pelle cucullos,  
 Et quot habet brutos Roma profana Deos;  
 Namque hac aut aliâ nisi quemque adjuveris arte,  
 Crede mihi, cæli vix bene scandet iter.

5

10

## IN EANDEM

PURGATOREM animæ derisit Iacobus ignem,  
 Et sine quo superûm non adenda domus.  
 Frenduit hoc trinâ monstrum Latiale coronâ,  
 Movit et horrificum cornua dena minax.  
 Et 'Nec inultus' ait 'temnes mea sacra, Britanne;  
 Supplicium spretâ religione dabis;  
 Et, si stelligeras unquam penetraveris arces,  
 Non nisi per flammâ triste patebit iter.'  
 O quàm funesto cecinuisti proxima vero,  
 Verbaque ponderibus vix caritura suis!  
 Nam prope Tartareo sublime rotatus ab igni  
 Ibat ad æthereas, umbra perusta, plagas.

5

10

## IN EANDEM

QUEM modò Roma suis devoverat impia diris  
 Et Styge damnârat, Tænarioque sinu,  
 Hunc, vice mutatâ, jam tollere gestit ad astra,  
 Et cupit ad superos evehere usque Deos.

## IN INVENTOREM BOMBARDÆ

IAPETIONIDEM laudavit cæca vetustas,  
 Qui tulit ætheream solis ab axe facem;  
 At mihi major erit qui lurida creditur arma  
 Et trifidum fulmen surripuisse Jovi.

## AD LEONORAM ROMÆ CANENTEM

ANGELUS unicuique suus (sic credite, gentes)  
 Obtigit æthereis ales ab ordinibus.  
 Quid mirum, Leonora, tibi si gloria major?  
 Nam tua præsentem vox sonat ipsa Deum.  
 Aut Deus, aut vacui certè mens tertia cæli, 5  
 Per tua secretò guttura serpit agens;  
 Serpit agens, facilisque docet mortalia corda  
 Sensim immortali assuescere posse sono.  
 Quòd, si cuncta quidem Deus est, per cunctaque fusus,  
 In te unâ loquitur, cætera mutus habet. 10

## AD EANDEM

ALTERA Torquatum cepit Leonora poetam,  
 Cujus ab insano cessit amore furens.  
 Ah miser ille tuo quanto felicius ævo  
 Perditus, et propter te, Leonora, foret!  
 Et te Pieriâ sensisset voce canentem 5  
 Aurea maternæ fila movere lyrae!  
 Quamvis Dircaeo torsisset lumina Pentheo  
 Sævior, aut totus desipuisset iners,  
 Tu tamen errantes cæcâ vertigine sensus  
 Voce eadem poteras composuisse tuâ; 10  
 Et poteras, ægro spirans sub corde quietem,  
 Flexanimo cantu restituisset sibi.

## AD EANDEM

CREDULA quid liquidam Sirena, Neapoli, jactas,  
 Claraque Parthenopes fana Acheloiados,  
 Littoreamque tuâ defunctam Naiada ripâ  
 Corpore Chalcidice sacra dedisse rogo?  
 Illa quidem vivitque, et amcenâ Tibridis undâ  
 Mutavit rauci marmura Pausilipi.  
 Illic, Romulidum studiis ornata secundis,  
 Atque homines cantu detinet atque Deos.

## APOLOGUS DE RUSTICO ET HERO

RUSTICUS ex malo sapidissima poma quotannis  
 Legit, et urbano lecta dedit Domino:  
 Hic, incredibili fructûs dulcedine captus,  
 Malum ipsam in proprias transtulit areolas.  
 Hactenûs illa ferax, sed longo debilis ævo,  
 Mota solo assueto, protinûs aret iners.  
 Quod tandem ut patuit Domino, spe lusus inanî,  
 Damnavit celeres in sua damna manus;  
 Atque ait, 'Heu quanto satius fuit illa Coloni  
 (Parva licet) grato dona tulisse animo!  
 Possem ego avaritiam frænare, gulamque voracem:  
 Nunc periire mihi et foetus et ipse parens.'

## [DE MORO]

GALLI ex concubitu gravidam te, Pontia, Mori  
 Quis bene moratam morigeramque neget?

## AD CHRISTINAM, SUECORUM REGINAM, NOMINE CROMWELLI

BELIPOTENS Virgo, Septem regina Trionum,  
 Christina, Arctoi lucida stella poli!  
 Cernis quas merui durâ sub casside rugas,  
 Utque senex armis impiger ora tero,  
 Invia fatorum dum per vestigia nitor,  
 Exequor et populi fortia jussa manu.  
 Ast tibi submittit frontem reverentior umbra;  
 Nec sunt hi vultus Regibus usque truces.

## ELEGIARUM FINIS

## SYLVARUM LIBER

*Anno ætatis 17*

## IN OBITUM PROCANCELLARII MEDICI

PARERE Fati discite legibus,  
 Manusque Parcæ jam date supplices,  
 Qui pendulum telluris orbem  
   Iâpeti colitis nepotes.  
 Vos si relicto Mors vaga Tænaro  
 Semel vocârit flebilis, heu! moræ  
   Tentantur incassum dolique;  
   Per tenebras Stygis ire certum est.  
 Si destinatam pellere dextera  
 Mortem valeret, non ferus Hercules  
   Nessi venenatus cruore  
   Æmathiâ jacuisset Cêtâ;  
 Nec fraude turpi Palladis invidiæ  
 Vidisset occisum Ilion Hectora, aut  
   Quem larva Pelidis peremit  
   Ense Locro, Jove lacrymante.  
 Si triste Fatum verba Hecateia  
 Fugare possint, Telegoni parens  
   Vixisset infamis, potentique  
   Ægiali soror usa virgâ.  
 Numenque trinum fallere si queant  
 Artes medentûm, ignotaque gramina,  
   Non gnarus herbarum Machaon  
   Eurypyli cecidisset hastâ;  
 Læsisset et nec te, Philyreie,  
 Sagitta Echidnæ perlita sanguine;  
   Nec tela te fulmenque avitum,  
   Cæse puer genetricis alvo.  
 Tuque, O alumno major Apolline,  
 Gentis togatæ cui regimen datum,  
   Froncosa quem nunc Cirrha luget,  
   Et mediis Helicon in undis,

20

20

20



Jam præfuisse Palladio gregi  
 Lætus superstes, nec sine gloriâ;  
 Nec puppe lustrâsse Charontis  
 Horribiles barathri recessus.

At fila rupit Persephone tua,  
 Irata cum te viderit artibus

Succoque pollenti tot atris  
 Fancibus eripuisse Mortis.

40

Colende Præses, membra precor tua

Molli quiescant cespitem, et ex tuo

Crescant rosæ calthæque busto,

Purpureoque hyacinthus ore.

Sit mite de te judicium Æaci,

Subrideatque Ætnæa Proserpina,

Interque felices perennis

Elysio spatium campo.

#### IN QUINTUM NOVEMBRIS

*Anno ætatis 17*

JAM pius extremâ veniens Iacobus ab arcto  
 Teucrigenas populos, latèque potentia regna  
 Albionum tenuit, jamque inviolabile fœdus  
 Sceptra Caledoniis conjunxerat Anglica Scotis:  
 Pacificusque novo felix divesque sedebat  
 In solio, occultique doli securus et hostis:  
 Cum ferus ignifuo regnans Acheronte tyrannus,  
 Eumenidum pater, æthereo vagus exul Olympo,  
 Fortè per immensum terrarum erraverat orbem,  
 Dinumerans sceleris socios, vernasque fideles,  
 Participes regni post funera mœsta futuros.  
 Hic tempestates medio ciet aëre diras;  
 Illic unanimes odium struit inter amicos;  
 Armata et invictas in mutua viscera gentes,  
 Regnaque oliviferâ vertit florentia pace;  
 Et quoscunque videt puræ virtutis amantes,  
 Hos cupit adjicere imperio, fraudumque magister  
 Tentat inaccessum sceleri corrumpere pectus;  
 Insidiasque locat tacitas, cassesque latentes

10

Tendit, ut incautos rapiat, ceu Caspia tigris  
 Insequitur trepidam deserta per avia prædam  
 Nocte sub illuni, et somno nictantibus astris.  
 Talibus infestat populos Summanus et urbes,  
 Cinctus cæruleæ fumanti turbine flammæ.  
 Jamque fluentisonis albertia rupibus arva  
 Apparent, et terra Deo dilecta marino,  
 Cui nomen dederat quondam Neptunia proles,  
 Amphitryoniaden qui non dubitavit atrocem,  
 Æquore tranato, furiali poscere bello,  
 Ante expugnatae crudelia sæcula Trojæ.

At simul hanc, opibusque et festâ pace beatam,  
 Aspicit, et pingues donis Cerealibus agros,  
 Quodque magis doluit, venerantem numina veri  
 Sancta Dei populum, tandem suspiria rupit  
 Tartareos ignes et luridum olentia sulphur;  
 Qualia Trinacriâ trux ab Jove clausus in Ætnâ  
 Efflat tabifico monstrosus ab ore Typhæus.  
 Ignescunt oculi, stridetque adamantinus ordo  
 Dentis, ut armorum fragor, ictaque cuspidis  
 Atque 'Pererrato solum hoc lacrymabile mundo  
 Inveni' dixit; 'gens hæc mihi sola rebellis,  
 Contemtrixque jugi, nostrâque potentior arte.  
 Illa tamen, mea si quicquam tentamina possunt,  
 Non feret hoc impune diu, non ibit inulta.'  
 Hactenus; et piceis liquido natat aëre pennis:  
 Quâ volat, adversi præcursant agmine venti,  
 Densantur nubes, et crebra tonitrua fulgent.

Jamque pruinosas velox superaverat Alpes,  
 Et tenet Ausoniæ fines. A parte sinistrâ  
 Nimbifer Apenninus erat, priscique Sabini;  
 Dextra veneficiis infamis Hetruria; nec non  
 Te furtiva, Tiberis, Thetidi videt oscula dantem:  
 Hinc Mavortigenæ consistit in arce Quirini.  
 Reddiderant dubiam jam sera crepuscula lucem,  
 Cum circumgreditur totam Tricoronifer urbem,  
 Panificosque Deos portat, scapulisque virorum  
 Evehitur; præeunt submisso poplite reges,  
 Et mendicantium series longissima fratrum;  
 Cereaque in manibus gestant funalia cæci,

Cimmeriis nati in tenebris vitamque trahentes.  
 Tempa dein multis subeunt lucentia tredis  
 (Vesper erat sacer iste Petro), fremitusque canentûm  
 Sæpe tholos implet vacuos, et inane locorum:  
 Qualiter exululat Bromius, Bromique caterva,  
 Orgia cantantes in Echionio Aracyntho,  
 Dum tremit attonitus vitreis Asopus in undis,  
 Et procul ipse cavâ responsat rupe Cithæron.

60

His igitur tandem solenni more peractis,  
 Nox senis amplexus Erebi taciturna reliquit,  
 Præcipientesque impellit equos stimulante flagello  
 Captum oculis Typhlonta, Melanchætæque ferocem,  
 Atque Acherontæo prognatam patre Siopen  
 Torpidam, et hirsutis horrentem Phrica capillis.

70

Interea regum domitor, Phlegetontius hæres,  
 Ingreditur thalamos (neque enim secretus adulter  
 Producit steriles molli sine pellice noctes);  
 At vix compositos somnus claudēbat ocellos  
 Cum niger umbrarum dominus, rectorque silentum,  
 Prædatorque hominum, falsâ sub imagine tectus  
 Astitit. Assumptis micuerunt tempora canis;  
 Barba sinus promissa tegit; cineracea longo  
 Syrmate verrit humum vestis; pendetque cucullus  
 Vertice de raso; et, ne quicquam desit ad artes,  
 Cannabæo lumbos constrinxit fune salaces,  
 Tarda fenestris figens vestigia calceis.  
 Talis, uti fama est, vastâ Franciscus eremo  
 Tetra vagabatur solus per lustra ferarum,  
 Sylvestrique tulit genti pia verba salutis  
 Impius, atque lupos domuit, Libycosque leones.

80

Subdolus at tali Serpens velatus amictu  
 Solvit in has fallax ora execrantia voces:  
 'Dormis, nate? Etiamne tuos sopor opprimit artus?  
 Immemor O fidei, pecorumque oblite tuorum!  
 Dum cathedram, venerande, tuam diademaque triplex  
 Ridet Hyperboreo gens barbara nata sub axe,  
 Dumque pharetrati spernunt tua jura Britanni:  
 Surge, age! surge piger, Latius quem Cæsar adorat,  
 Cui reserata patet convexi janua cæli;  
 Turgentē animos et fastus frange procaces,

90

Sacrilegique sciant tua quid maledictio possit,  
Et quid Apostolicæ possit custodia clavis;  
Et memor Hesperiae disjectam ulciscere classem,  
Mersaque Iberorum lato vexilla profundo,  
Sanctorumque cruci tot corpora fixa probrosæ,  
Thermodoontæ nuper regnante puellâ.  
At tu si tenero mavis torpescere lecto,  
Crescentesque negas hosti contundere vires,  
Tyrrhenum implebit numeroso milite pontum  
Signaque Aventino ponet fulgentia colle;  
Reliquias veterum franget, flammisque cremabit,  
Sacræque calcabit pedibus tua colla profanis,  
Cujus gaudebant soleis dare basia reges.  
Nec tamen hunc bellis et aperto Marte lacesces;  
Irritus ille labor; tu callidus utere fraude:  
Quælibet hæreticis disponere retia fas est.  
Jamque ad consilium extremis rex magnus ab oris  
Patricios vocat, et procerum de stirpe creatos,  
Grandævosque patres trabeâ canisque verendos:  
Hos tu membratim poteris conspergere in auras,  
Atque dare in cineres, nitrati pulveris igne  
Ædibus injecto, quâ convenere, sub imis.  
Protinus ipse igitur quoscunque habet Anglia fidos.  
Propositi factique mone: quisquamne tuorum  
Audebit summi non jussa facessere Papæ?  
Perculsosque metu subito, casuque stupentes,  
Invadat vel Gallus atrox, vel sævus Iberus.  
Sæcula sic illic tandem Mariana redibunt,  
Tuque in belligeros iterum dominaberis Anglos.  
Et, nequid timeas, divos divasque secundas  
Accipe, quotque tuis celebrantur numina fastis.  
Dixit, et adscitos ponens malefidus amictus  
Fugit ad infandam, regnum illætabile, Lethen.  
Jam rosea Eoas pandens Tithonia portas  
Vestit inauratas redeunti lumine terras;  
Mœstaque adhuc nigri deplorans funera nati  
Irrigat ambrosiis montana cacumina guttis;  
Cum somnos pepulit stellatæ janitor aulæ,  
Nocturnos visus et somnia grata revolvens.  
Est locus æternâ septus caligine noctis,

100

110

120

130

Vasta ruinosi quondam fundamina tecti,  
 Nunc torvi spelunca Phoni, Prodotaque bilinguis,  
 Effera quos uno peperit Discordia partu.  
 Hic inter cæmenta jacent præruptaque saxa  
 Ossa inhumata virum, et trajecta cadavera ferro;  
 Hic Dolus intortis semper sedet ater ocellis,  
 Jurgiaque, et stimulis armata Calumnia fauces;  
 Et Furor, atque viæ moriendi mille, videntur,  
 Et Timor; exanguisque locum circumvolat Horror;  
 Perpetuòque leves per muta silentia Manes  
 Exululant; tellus et sanguine conscia stagnat.  
 Ipsi etiam pavidi latitant penetralibus antri  
 Et Phonos et Prodotes; nulloque sequente per antrum,  
 Antrum horrens, scopulosum, atrum feralibus umbris,  
 Diffugiunt sontes, et retrò lumina vortunt.  
 Hos pugiles Romæ per sæcula longa fideles  
 Evocat antistes Babylonius, atque ita fatur:  
 'Finibus occiduis circumfusum incolit æquor  
 Gens exosa mihi; prudens Natura negavit  
 Indignam penitus nostro conjungere mundo.  
 Illuc, sic jubeo, celeri contendite gressu,  
 Tartareoque leves diffilentur pulvere in auras  
 Et rex et pariter satrapæ, scelerata propago;  
 Et quotquot fidei caluere cupidine veræ  
 Consilii socios adhibete, operisque ministros.  
 Finierat: rigidi cupidè parucere gemelli.

Interea longo flectens curvamine caelos  
 Despicit æthereâ Dominus qui fulgurat arce,  
 Vanaque perversæ ridet conamina turbæ,  
 Atque sui causam populi volet ipse tueri.

Esse ferunt spatium, quâ distat ab Aside terrâ  
 Fertilis Europe, et spectat Mareotidas undas;  
 Hic turris posita est Titanidos ardua Famæ,  
 Ærea, lata, sonans, rutilis vicinior astris  
 Quàm superimpositum vel Athos vel Pelion Ossæ.  
 Mille fores aditusque patent, totidemque fenestræ,  
 Amplaque per tenues translucent atria muros.  
 Excitat hic varios plebs agglomerata susurros;  
 Qualiter instrepitant circum mulctralia bombis  
 Agmina muscarum, aut texto per ovilia junco,

Dum Canis gestivum cæli petit ardua culmen.  
 Ipsa quidem summâ sedet ultrix matris in arce:  
 Auribus innumeris cinctum caput eminet olli,  
 Queis sonitum exiguum trahit, atque levissima captat  
 Murmura, ab extremis patuli confinibus orbis;  
 Nec tot, Aristoride, servator inique juvencæ  
 Isidos, immitti volvebas lumina vultu,  
 Lumina non unquam tacito nutantia somno,  
 Lumina subjectas latè spectantia terras.  
 Istis illa solet loca luce carentia sæpe  
 Perlustrare, etiam radianti impervia soli;  
 Millenisque loquax auditaque visaque linguis  
 Cuilibet effundit temeraria; veraque mendax  
 Nunc minuit, modò confictis sermonibus augeat.  
 Sed tamen a nostro meruisti carmine laudes,  
 Fama, bonum quo non aliud veracius ullum,  
 Nobis digna cani, nec te memorâsse pigebit  
 Carmine tam longo; servati scilicet Angli  
 Officiis, vaga diva, tuis tibi reddimus æqua.  
 Te Deus, æternos motu qui temperat ignes,  
 Fulmine præmisso, alloquitur, terræque tremante:  
 'Fama, siles? an te latet impia Papistarum  
 Conjurata cohors in meque meosque Britannos,  
 Et nova sceptrigero cædes meditata Iacobo?'  
 Nec plura: illa statim sensit mandata Tonantis,  
 Et, satis antè fugax, stridentes induit alas,  
 Induit et variis exilia corpora plumis;  
 Dextra tubam gestat Temesæo ex ære sonoram.  
 Nec mora; jam pennis cedentes remigat auras,  
 Atque parum est cursu celeres prævertere nubes;  
 Jam ventos, jam solis equos, post terga reliquit:  
 Et primò Angliacas, solito de more, per urbes.  
 Ambiguas voces incertaque murmura spargit;  
 Mox arguta dolos et detestabile vulgat  
 Proditionis opus, nec non facta horrida dictu,  
 Authoresque addit sceleris, nec garrula cæcis  
 Insidiis loca structa silet. Stupuerè relatis,  
 Et pariter juvenes, pariter tremuere puellæ,  
 Effoetique senes pariter, tantæque ruinæ  
 Sensus ad ætatem subito penetraverat omnem.

180

190

200

210

Attamen interea populi miserescit ab alto  
 Æthereus Pater, et crudelibus obstitit ausis  
 Papicolum. Capti pœnas raptantur ad acres:  
 At pia thura Deo et grati solvuntur honores;  
 Compita læta focis genialibus omnia fumant;  
 Turba choros juvenilis agit; quintoque Novembris  
 Nulla dies toto occurrit celebratior anno.

220

*Anno ætatis 17*

IN OBITUM PRÆSULIS ELIENSIS

ADHUC madentes rore squalabant genæ,  
 Et sicca nondum lumina  
 Adhuc liquentis imbre turgebant salis  
 Quem nuper effudi pius  
 Dum mœsta charo justa persolvi rogo  
 Wintoniensis Præsulis,  
 Cum centilinguis Fama (proh! semper mali  
 Cladisque vera nuntia)  
 Spargit per urbes divitis Britanniæ,  
 Populosque Neptuno satos,  
 Cessisse Morti et ferreis Sororibus,  
 Te, generis humani decus,  
 Qui rex sacrorum illâ fuisti in insulâ  
 Quæ nomen Anguliæ tenet.  
 Tunc inquietum pectus irâ protinûs  
 Ebulliebat fervidâ,  
 Tumulis potentem sæpe devovens deam:  
 Nec vota Naso in Ibida  
 Concepit alto diriora pectore;  
 Graiusque vates parcius  
 Turpem Lycambis execratus est dolum,  
 Sponsamque Neobulen suam.  
 At ecce! diras ipse dum fundo graves,  
 Et imprecor Neci necem,  
 Audisse tales videor attonitus sonos  
 Leni, sub aurâ, flamine:  
 'Cæcos furores pone; pone vitream  
 Bilemque et irritas minas.

10

20

Quid temerè violas non nocenda numina,  
 Subitòque ad iras percita?  
 Non est, ut arbitraris elusus miser,  
 Mors atra Noctis filia,  
 Erebove patre creta, sive Erinnye,  
 Vastove nata sub Chao:  
 Ast illa, cælo missa stellato, Dei  
 Messes ubique colligit;  
 Animasque mole carneâ reconditas  
 In lucem et auras evocat,  
 (Ut cum fugaces excitant Horæ diem,  
 Themidos Jovisque filia,) 30  
 Et sempiterni ducit ad vultus Patris,  
 At justa raptat impios  
 Sub regna furvi luctuosa Tartari  
 Sedesque subterraneas.  
 Hanc ut vocantem latus audivi, citò  
 Fœdum reliqui carcerem,  
 Volatilesque faustus inter milites  
 Ad astra sublimis feror,  
 Vates ut olim raptus ad cælum senex,  
 Auriga currus ignei. 50  
 Non me Boëtis terruere lucidi  
 Sarraca tarda frigore, aut  
 Formidolosi Scorpionis brachia;  
 Non ensis, Orion, tuus.  
 Prætervolavi fulgidi solis globum;  
 Longèque sub pedibus deam  
 Vidi triforem, dum coërcebat suos  
 Frænis dracones aureis.  
 Erraticorum siderum per ordines,  
 Per lacteas vehor plagas, 60  
 Velocitatem sæpe miratus novam,  
 Donec nitentes ad fores  
 Ventum est Olympi, et regiam crystallinam, et  
 Stratum smaragdis atrium.  
 Sed hic tacebo, nam quis effari queat  
 Oriundus humano patre  
 Amœnitates illius loci? Mihi  
 Sat est in æternum frui.



## NATURAM NON PATI SENIUM

HEU! quàm perpétuis erroribus acta fatiscit  
 Avia mens hominum, tenebrisque immersa profundis  
 Œdipodioniam volvit sub pectore noctem!  
 Quæ vesana suis metiri facta deorum  
 Audet, et incisas leges adamante perenni  
 Assimilare suis, nulloque solubile sæclo  
 Consilium Fati perituris alligat horis.

Ergone marcescet sulcantibus obsita rugis  
 Naturæ facies, et rerum publica Mater,  
 Omniparum contracta uterum, sterilestet ab ævo?  
 Et, se fassa senem, malè certis passibus ibit  
 Sidereum tremebunda caput? Num tetra vetustas  
 Annorumque æterna fames, squalorque situsque,  
 Sidera vexabunt? An et insatiabile Tempus  
 Esuriet Cælum, rapietque in viscera patrem?  
 Heu! potuitne suas imprudens Jupiter arces  
 Hoc contra munisse nefas, et Temporis isto  
 Exemisse malo, gyrosque dedisse perennes?  
 Ergo erit ut quandoque, sono dilapsa tremendo,  
 Convexi tabulata ruant, atque obviu*s* ictu  
 Stridat uterque polus, superâque ut Olympius aulâ  
 Decidat, horribilisque relectâ Gorgone Pallas;  
 Qualis in Ægeam proles Junonia Lemnon  
 Deturbata sacro cecidit de limine cæli.  
 Tu quoque, Phoebe, tui casus imitabere nati  
 Præcipiti curru, subitâque ferere ruinâ  
 Pronus, et extinctâ fumabit lampade Nereus,  
 Et dabit attonito feralia sibila ponto.  
 Tunc etiam æerei divulsis sedibus Hæmi  
 Dissultabit apex, imoque allisa barathro  
 Terreunt Stygium dejecta Ceraunia Ditem,  
 In superos quibus usus erat, fraterna*q*ue bella.

At Pater Omnipotens, fundatis fortiùs astris,  
 Consuluit rerum summæ, certoque peregit  
 Pondere Fatorum lances, atque ordine summo  
 Singula perpetuum jussit servare tenorem.  
 Volvitur hinc lapsu Mundi rota prima diurno,

Raptat et ambitos sociâ vertigine caelos.  
 Tardior haud solito Saturnus, et acer ut olim  
 Fulmineum rutilat cristatâ casside Mavors. 40  
 Floridus aeternum Phoebus juvenile coruscat,  
 Nec foveet effortas loca per declivia terras  
 Devexo temone Deus; sed semper, amicâ  
 Luce potens, eadem currit per signa rotarum.  
 Surgit odoratis pariter formosus ab Indis  
 Æthereum pecus albenti qui cogit Olympo,  
 Manè vocans, et serus agens in pascua cæli;  
 Temporis et gemino dispertit regna colore.  
 Fulget, obitque vices alterno Delia cornu,  
 Cæruleumque ignem paribus complectitur ulnis. 50  
 Nec variant elementa fidem, solitoque fragore  
 Lurida percussas jaculantur fulmina rupes.  
 Nec per inane furit leviori murmure Corus;  
 Stringit et armiferos æquali horrore Gelonos  
 Trux Aquilo, spiratque hiemem, nimbosque volutat.  
 Utque solet, Siculi diverberat ima Pelori  
 Rex maris, et raucâ circumstrepit æquora conchâ  
 Oceani Tubicen, nec vastâ mole minorem  
 Ægæona ferunt dorso Balearica cete.  
 Sed neque, Terra, tibi sæcli vigor ille vetusti 60  
 Priscus abest; servatque suum Narcissus odorem;  
 Et puer ille suum tenet, et puer ille, decorem,  
 Phœbe, tuusque, et, Cypri, tuus; nec ditior olim  
 Terra datum sceleri celavit montibus aurum  
 Conscia, vel sub aquis gemmas. Sic denique in ævum  
 Ibit cunctarum series justissima rerum;  
 Donec flamma orbem populabitur ultima, latè  
 Circumplexa polos et vasti culmina cæli,  
 Ingentique rogo flagrabit machina Mundi.

DE IDEÂ PLATONICÂ QUEMADMODUM ARISTOTELES intellexit

DICITE, sacrorum præsides nemorum deæ,  
 Tuque O noveni perbeata numinis  
 Memoria mater, quæque in immenso procul  
 Antro recumbis otiosa Æternitas,

Monumenta servans, et ratas leges Jovis,  
 Cælique fastos atque ephemeridas Deûm,  
 Quis ille primus cujus ex imagine  
 Natura solers finxit humanum genus,  
 Æternus, incorruptus, æquævus polo,  
 Unusque et universus, exemplar Dei?  
 Haud ille, Palladis gemellus innubæ,  
 Interna proles insidet menti Jovis;  
 Sed, quamlibet natura sit communior,  
 Tamen seorsus extat ad morem unius,  
 Et, mira! certo stringitur spatio loci:  
 Seu sempiternus ille siderum comes  
 Cæli pererrat ordines decemplicis,  
 Citimumve terris incolit Lunæ globum;  
 Sive, inter animas corpus adituras sedens,  
 Obliviosas torpet ad Lethes aquas;  
 Sive in remotâ fortè terrarum plagâ  
 Incedit ingens hominis archetypus gigas,  
 Et diis tremendus erigit celsum caput,  
 Atlante major portitore siderum.  
 Non, cui profundum cæcitas lumen dedit,  
 Dirceus augur vidit hunc alto sinu;  
 Non hunc silenti nocte Pletones nepos  
 Vatum sagaci præpes ostendit choro;  
 Non hunc sacerdos novit Assyrius, licet  
 Longos vetusti commemoret atavos Nini,  
 Priscumque Belon, inclytumque Osiridem;  
 Non ille trino gloriosus nomine  
 Ter magnus Hermes (ut sit arcani sciens)  
 Talem reliquit Isidis cultoribus.  
 At tu, perenne ruris Academi decus  
 (Hæc monstra si tu primus inducti scholis)  
 Jam jam poetas, urbis exules tuæ,  
 Revocabis, ipse fabulator maximus;  
 Aut institutor ipse migrabis foras.

10

20

30

## AD PATREM

NUNC mea Pierios cupiam per pectora fontes  
 Irriguas torquere vias, totumque per ora  
 Volvere laxatum gemino de vertice rivum;  
 Ut, tenues oblita sonos, audacibus alis  
 Surgat in officium venerandi Musa parentis.  
 Hoc utcunque tibi gratum, pater optime, carmen  
 Exiguum meditatur opus; nec novimus ipsi  
 Aptius a nobis quæ possint munera donis  
 Respondere tuis, quamvis nec maxima possint  
 Respondere tuis, nedum ut par gratia donis 10  
 Esse queat vacuis quæ redditur arida verbis.  
 Sed tamen hæc nostros ostendit pagina census,  
 Et quod habemus opum chartâ numeravimus istâ,  
 Quæ mihi sunt nullæ, nisi quas dedit aurea Clio,  
 Quas mihi semoto somni peperere sub antro,  
 Et nemoris laureta sacri, Parnassides umbræ.  
 Nec tu, vatis opus, divinum despice carmen,  
 Quo nihil æthereos ortus et semina cæli,  
 Nil magis humanam commendat origine mentem,  
 Sancta Prometheæ retinens vestigia flammæ. 20  
 Carmen amant Superi, tremebundaque Tartara carmen  
 Ima ciere valet, divosque ligare profundos,  
 Et triplici duos Manes adamante coercet.  
 Carmine sepositi retegunt arcana futuri  
 Phœbades, et tremulæ pallentes ora Sibyllæ;  
 Carmina sacrificus sollennes pangit ad aras,  
 Aurea seu sternit motantem cornua taurum,  
 Seu cum fata sagax fumantibus abdita fibris  
 Consulit et tepidis Parcam scrutatur in extis.  
 Nos etiam, patrium tunc cum repetemus Olympum, 30  
 Æternæque moræ stabunt immobilis ævi,  
 Ibimus auratis per cæli templa coronis,  
 Dulcia suaviloquo sociantes carmina plectro,  
 Astra quibus geminique poli convexa sonabunt.  
 Spiritus et rapidos qui circumat igneus orbes  
 Nunc quoque sidereis intercinlt ipse choreis  
 Immortale melos et inenarrabile carmen,

Torrida dum rutilus compescit sibila Serpens,  
 Demissoque ferox gladio mansuescit Orion,  
 Stellarum nec sentit onus Maurusius Atlas.  
 Carmina regales epulas ornare solebant,  
 Cum nondum luxus, vastaque immensa vorago  
 Nota gula, et modico spumabat cœna Lyæo.  
 Tum de more sedens festa ad convivia vates,  
 Æsculeâ intonsos redimitus ab arbore crines,  
 Heroumque actus imitandaque gesta canebat,  
 Et Chaos, et positi latè fundamina Mundi,  
 Reptantesque deos, et alentes numina glandes,  
 Et nondum Ætnæo quesitum fulmen ab antro.  
 Denique quid vocis modulamen inane juvabit,  
 Verborum sensusque vacans, numerique loquacis?  
 Silvestres decet iste choros, non Orphea, cantus,  
 Qui tenuit fluvios, et quercubus addidit aures,  
 Carmine, non citharâ, simulacraque functa canendo  
 Compulit in lacrymas: habet has a carmine laudes.

Nec tu perge, precor, sacras contemnere Musas,  
 Nec vanas inopesque puta, quarum ipse peritus  
 Munere mille sonos numeros componis ad aptos,  
 Millibus et vocem modulis variare canoram  
 Doctus Arionii meritò sis nominis hæres.  
 Nunc tibi quid mirum si me genuisse poetam  
 Contigerit, charo si tam propè sanguine juncti  
 Cognatas artes studiumque affine sequamur?  
 Ipse volens Phœbus se dispertire duobus,  
 Altera dona mihi, dedit altera dona parenti;  
 Dividuumque Deum, genitorque puerque, tenemus.

Tu tamen ut simules teneras odisse Camœnas,  
 Non odisse reor. Neque enim, pater, ire jubebas  
 Quà via lata patet, quà prœrior area lucri,  
 Certaue condendi fulget spes aurea nummi;  
 Nec rapis ad leges, malè custoditaque gentis  
 Jura, nec insulsis damnas clamoribus aures.  
 Sed, magis exultam cupiens ditescere mentem,  
 Me, procul urbano strepitu, secessibus altis  
 Abductum, Aoniæ jucunda per otia ripæ,  
 Phœbæo lateri comitem sinis ire beatum.  
 Officium chari taceo commune parentis;

Me poscunt majora. Tuo, pater optime, sumptu  
 Cum mihi Romulae patuit facundia linguae,  
 Et Latii veneres, et quae Jovis ora decebant  
 Grandia magniloquis elata vocabula Graiis,  
 Addere suasisti quos jactat Gallia flores,  
 Et quam degeneri novus Italus ore loquelam  
 Fundit, barbaricos testatus voce tumultus,  
 Quaeque Palaestinus loquitur mysteria vates.  
 Denique quicquid habet caelum, subjectaque caelo  
 Terra parens, terraeque et caelo interfluit aër,  
 Quicquid et unda tegit pontique agitable marmor,  
 Per te nosse licet, per te, si nosse libebit;  
 Dimotaque venit spectanda Scientia nube,  
 Nudaque conspicuos inclinat ad oscula vultus,  
 Ni fugisse velim, ni sit libasse molestum.

80

90

I nunc, confer opes, quisquis malesanus avitas  
 Austriaci gazas Perùanaque regna praoptas.  
 Quae potuit majora pater tribuisse, vel ipse  
 Jupiter, excepto, donasset ut omnia, caelo?  
 Non potiora dedit, quamvis et tuta fuissent,  
 Publica qui juveni commisit lumina nato,  
 Atque Hyperionios currus, et fræna diei,  
 Et circum undantem radiatâ luce tiaram.  
 Ergo ego, jam doctæ pars quamlibet ima catervæ,  
 Victrices hederas inter laurosque sedebo;  
 Jamque nec obscurus populo miscebor inerti,  
 Vitabuntque oculos vestigia nostra profanos.  
 Este procul vigiles Curae, procul este Querelæ,  
 Invidiaeque acies transverso tortilis hirquo;  
 Sæva nec anguiferos extende, Calumnia, rictus;  
 In me triste nihil, foedissima turba, potestis,  
 Nec vestri sum juris ego; securaque tutus  
 Pectora vipereo gradiar sublimis ab ictu.

100

110

At tibi, chare pater, postquam non æqua merenti  
 Posse referre datur, nec dona rependere factis,  
 Sit memorasse satis, repetitaque munera grato  
 Percensere animo, fidæque reponere menti.

Et vos, O nostri, juvenilia carmina, lusus,  
 Si modò perpetuos sperare audebitis annos,  
 Et domini superesse rogo, lucemque tueri,

Nec spisso rapiunt oblivia nigra sub Orco,  
 Forsitan has laudes, decantatumque parentis  
 Nomen, ad exemplum, sero servabitis ævo.

126

## PSALM CXIV

Ἰσραὴλ ὅτε παῖδες, ὅτ' ἀγλαὰ φύλ' Ἰακώβου  
 Αἰγύπτῳ λῖπε δῆμον, ἀπεχθία, βαρβαρίφωνον,  
 Δὴ τότε μούνον ἔην ὅσιον γένος υἱὸς Ἰουδα.  
 Ἦν δὲ Θεὸς λαοῖσι μέγα κρείων βασιλευν.  
 Εἶδε, καὶ ἐντροπιάδην φύγαδ' ἐρρώησε θάλασσα,  
 Κύματι εἰλυμένη ῥοθίῳ, ὃ δ' ἄρ' ἐστυφελίχθη  
 Ἰρὸς Ἰορδάνης ποτὶ ἀργυροειδέα πηγὴν.  
 Ἐκ δ' ὄρεα σκαρθμοῖσιν ἀπειρέσια κλονέοντο,  
 Ὡς κριοὶ σφριγύωντες εὐτραφερῶ ἐν ἁλῶϊ.  
 Βαιότεραι δ' ἅμα πᾶσαι ἀνασκίρτησαν ἐρίπναι,  
 Οἷα παρὰ σύριγγι φίλῃ ὑπὸ μητέρι ἄρνες.  
 Τίπτε σύ γ', αἰνὰ θάλασσα, πέλωρ φύγαδ' ἐρρώησας  
 Κύματι εἰλυμένη ῥοθίῳ; τί δ' ἄρ' ἐστυφελίχθης  
 Ἰρὸς Ἰορδάνη ποτὶ ἀργυροειδέα πηγὴν;  
 Τίπτε, ὄρεα, σκαρθμοῖσιν ἀπειρέσια κλονέεσθε,  
 Ὡς κριοὶ σφριγύωντες εὐτραφερῶ ἐν ἁλῶϊ;  
 Βαιότεραι τί δ' ἄρ' ἔμμε ἀνασκιρτήσαι ἐρίπναι,  
 Οἷα παρὰ σύριγγι φίλῃ ὑπὸ μητέρι ἄρνες;  
 Σείλο, γαῖα, τρέουσα Θεὸν μεγάλ' ἐκτυπέοντα,  
 Γαῖα, Θεὸν τρέλονσ' ὑπάτων σέβας Ἰσρακίδαι,  
 Ὅς τε καὶ ἐκ σπιλάδων ποταμοῦς χέε μορμύροντας,  
 Κρήνην τ' ἀένουον πέτρης ἀπὸ θαυροῦσης.

10

20

*Philosophus ad Regem quendam, qui eum ignotum et insontem  
 inter reos forte captum inscius damnaverat, τὴν ἐπὶ θανάτῳ  
 πορευόμενος, hæc subito misit.*

ὦ ἄνα, εἰ ὁλέσῃς με τὸν ἔννομον, οὐδὲ τιν' ἀνδρῶν  
 Δεινὸν ὅλως δράσαντα, σφώτατον, ἴσθι, κήρυκον  
 Ῥηϊδίας ἀφέλαιο, τὸ δ' ὕστερον αὖθι νοήσεις,  
 Μαψιδίας δ' ἄρ' ἔπειτα τεδὸν πρὸς θυμὸν ὁδυρῇ,  
 Τισιόνδ' ἐκ πόλιος περιώνυμον ἄλλαρ ὁλέσας.

*In effigiei ejus sculptorem.*

Ἀμαθεὶ γεγράφθαι χειρὶ τήνδε μὲν εἰκόνα  
 Φαῖης τάχ' ἄν, πρὸς εἶδος αὐτοφύεες βλέπων.  
 Τὸν δ' ἐκτυπῶτὸν οὐκ ἐπιγνύοντες, φίλοι,  
 Γελάτε φαύλου δυσμύμημα ζωγράφου.

## AD SALSILLUM POETAM ROMANUM ÆGROTANTEM

## SCAZONTES

O MUSA gressum quæ volens trahis claudum,  
 Vulcanioque tarda gaudes incessu,  
 Nec sentis illud in loco minus gratum  
 Quam cum decentes flava Deiope suras  
 Alternat aureum ante Junonis lectum.  
 Adesdum, et hæc s'is verba pauca Salsillo  
 Refer, Camœna nostra cui tantum est cordi,  
 Quamque ille magnis prætulit immeritò divis.  
 Hæc ergo alumnus ille Londini Milto,  
 Diebus hisce qui suum linquens nidum  
 Polique tractum (pessimus ubi ventorum,  
 Insanientis impotensque pulmonis,  
 Pernix anhela sub Jove exercet flabra)  
 Venit feraces Itali soli ad glebas,  
 Visum superbâ cognitas urbes famâ,  
 Virosque, doctreque indolem juventutis,  
 Tibi optat idem hic fausta multa, Salsille,  
 Habitumque fesso corpori penitus sanum;  
 Cui nunc profunda bilis infestat renes,  
 Præcordiisque fixa damnosum spirat;  
 Nec id pepercit impia quòd tu Romano  
 Tam cultus ore Lesbium condis melos.  
 O dulce divum munus, O Salus, Hebes  
 Germana! Tuque, Phœbe! morborum terror,  
 Pythone cæso, sive tu magis Pæan  
 Libenter audis, hic tuus sacerdos est.  
 Querceta Fauni, vosque rore vinoso  
 Colles benigni, mitis Evandri sedes,  
 Siquid salubre vallibus frondet vestris,  
 Levamen negro ferte certatim vati.  
 Sic ille charis redditus rursùm Musis



Vicina dulci prata mulcebit cantu.  
 Ipse inter atros emirabitur lucos  
 Numa, ubi beatum degit otium æternum,  
 Suam reclinis semper Ægeriam spectans;  
 Tumidusque et ipse Tiberis, hinc delinitus,  
 Spei favebit annuæ colonorum;  
 Nec in sepulchris ibit obsessum reges,  
 Nimiùm sinistro laxus irruens loro;  
 Sed fræna melius temperabit undarum,  
 Adusque curvi salsa regna Portunni.

40

## MANSUS

Joannes Baptista Mansus, Marchio Villensis, vir ingenii laude, tum  
 literarum studio, nec non et bellicâ virtute, apud Italos clarus in  
 primis est. Ad quem Torquati Tassi Dialogus extat de Amicitia  
 scriptus; erat enim Tassi amicissimus: ab quo etiam inter  
 Campaniæ principes celebratur, in illo poemate cui titulus  
 GERUSALEMME CONQUISTATA, lib. 20.

Fra cavalier magnanimi e cortesi  
 Risplende il Manso . . .

Is authorem, Neapoli commorantem, summâ benevolentia prosecutus  
 est, multaque ei detulit humanitatis officia. Ad hunc itaque  
 hospes ille, antequam ab eâ urbe discederet, ut ne ingratum se  
 ostenderet, hoc carmen misit.

HÆC quoque, Manse, tuæ meditantur carmina laudi  
 Pierides; tibi, Manse, choro notissime Phœbi,  
 Quandoquidem ille alium haud æquo est dignatus honore,  
 Post Galli cineres, et Mæcenatis Hetrusci.  
 Tu quoque, si nostræ tantum valet aura Camœnæ,  
 Victrices hederas inter laurosque sedebis.

Te pridem magno felix concordia Tasso  
 Junxit, et æternis inscripsit nomina chartis.  
 Mox tibi dulciloquum non inscia Musa Marinum  
 Tradidit; ille tuum dici se gaudet alumnum,  
 Dum canit Assyrios divam prolixus amores,  
 Mollis et Ausonias stupefecit carmine nymphas.  
 Ille itidem moriens tibi soli debita vates  
 Ossa, tibi soli, supremaque vota reliquit:

20

Nec Manes pietas tua chara fefellit amici;  
 Vidimus arridentem operoso ex ære poetam.  
 Nec satis hoc visum est in utrumque, et nec pia cessant  
 Officia in tumultu; cupis integros rapere Orco,  
 Quà potes, atque avidas Parcarum eludere leges:  
 Amborum genus, et variâ sub sorte peractam  
 Describis vitam, moresque, et dona Minervæ;  
 Æmulus illius Mycalen qui natus ad altam  
 Rettulit Æolii vitam facundus Homeri.  
 Ergo ego te Clius et magni nomine Phœbi,  
 Manse pater, jubeo longum salvere per ævum,  
 Missus Hyperboreo juvenis peregrinus ab axe.  
 Nec tu longinquam bonus aspernabere Musam,  
 Quæ nuper, gelidâ vix enutrita sub Arcto,  
 Imprudens Italas ausa est volitare per urbes.  
 Nos etiam in nostro modulantes flumine cygnos  
 Credimus obscuras noctis sensisse per umbras,  
 Quà Thamesis latè puris argenteus urnis  
 Oceani glaucos perfundit gurgite crines;  
 Quin et in has quondam pervenit Tityrus oras.

Sed neque nos genus incultum, nec inutile Phœbo,  
 Quà plaga septeno mundi sulcata Trione  
 Brumalem patitur longâ sub nocte Boöten.  
 Nos etiam colimus Phœbum, nos munera Phœbo,  
 Flaventes spicas, et lutea mala canistris,  
 Halantemque crocum (perhibet nisi vana vetustas)  
 Misimus, et lectas Druidum de gente choreas.  
 (Gens Druides antiqua, sacris operata deorum,  
 Heroum laudes imitandaque gesta caneant.)  
 Hinc quoties festo cingunt altaria cantu  
 Delo in herbosâ Graiæ de more puellæ,  
 Carminibus lætis memorant Corinœida Loxo,  
 Fatidicamque Upin, cum flavicomâ Hecaërge,  
 Nuda Caledonio variatas pectora fuco.

Fortunate senex! ergo quacunque per orbem  
 Torquati decus et nomen celebrabitur ingens,  
 Claraque perpetui succrescet fama Marini,  
 Tu quoque in ora frequens venies plausumque virorum,  
 Et parili carpes iter immortale volatu.  
 Dicetur tum sponte tuos habitasse penates

Cynthius, et famulas venisse ad limina Musas.  
 At non sponte domum tamen idem et regis adivit  
 Rura Pheretiadae cælo fugitivus Apollo,  
 Ille licet magnum Alciden susceperat hospes;  
 Tantum, ubi clamosos placuit vitare bubulcos,  
 Nobile mansueti cessit Chironis in antrum,  
 Irriguos inter saltus frondosaque tecta,  
 Peneiûm prope rivum: ibi sæpe sub ilice nigrâ,  
 Ad citharæ strepitum, blandâ prece victus amici,  
 Exilii duros lenibat voce labores.  
 Tum neque ripa suo, barathro nec fixa sub imo  
 Saxa stetere loco; nutat Trachinia rupes,  
 Nec sentit solitas, immania pondera, silvas;  
 Emotæque suis properant de collibus orni,  
 Mulcenturque novo maculosi carmine lynces.

60

Diis dilecte senex! te Jupiter æquus oportet  
 Nascentem et miti lustrârit lumine Phœbus,  
 Atlantisque nepos; neque enim nisi charus ab ortu  
 Diis superis poterit magno favisse poetæ.  
 Hinc longæva tibi lento sub flore senectus  
 Vernat, et Æsonios lucratur vivida fusos,  
 Nondum deciduos servans tibi frontis honores,  
 Ingeniumque vicens, et adultum mentis acumen.  
 O mihi si mea sors talem concedat amicum,  
 Phœbæos decorâsse viros qui tam bene nôrit,  
 Siquando indigenas revocabo in carmina reges,  
 Arturumque etiam sub terris bella moventem,  
 Aut dicam invictæ sociali fœdere mensæ  
 Magnanimos heroas, et (O modò spiritus adsit)  
 Frangam Saxonicas Britonum sub Marte phalanges!  
 Tandem, ubi, non tacitæ permensus tempora vitæ,  
 Annorumque satur, cineri sua jura relinquam,  
 Ille mihi lecto madidis astaret ocellis;  
 Astanti sat erit si dicam 'Sim tibi curæ';  
 Ille meos artus, liventi morte solutos,  
 Curaret parvâ componi molliter urnâ:  
 Forsitan et nostros ducat de marmore vultus,  
 Nectens aut Paphiâ myrti aut Parnasside lauri  
 Frondè comas; at ego securâ pace quiescam.  
 Tum quoque, si qua fides, si præmia certa bonorum,

70

80

90

Ipse ego, cœlicolũ semotus in æthera divũ,  
 Quò labor et mens pura vehunt atque ignea virtus,  
 Secreti hæc aliquã mundi de parte videbo  
 (Quantum fata sinunt), et totã mente serenũ  
 Ridens purpureo suffundar lumine vultus,  
 Et simul æthereo plaudam mihi lætus Olympo.

100

## EPITAPHIUM DAMONIS

## ARGUMENTUM

THYRSIS et DAMON, ejusdem viciniae pastores, eadem studia sequuti, a pueritiã amici erant, ut qui plurimum. THYRSIS, animi causã profectus, peregrẽ de obitu DAMONIS nuncium accepit. Domum postea reversus, et rem ita esse comperto, se suamque solitudinem hoc carmine deplorat. DAMONIS autem sub personã hic intelligitur CAROLUS DEODATUS, ex urbe Hetruriæ Lucã paterno genere oriundus, cætera Anglus; ingenio, doctrinã, clarissimisque cæteris virtutibus, dum viveret, juvenis egregius.

HIMERIDES Nymphæ (nam vos et Daphnũ et Hylan,  
 Et plorata diu meministis fata Bionis),  
 Dicite Sicelicum Thamesina per oppida carmen:  
 Quas miser effudit voces, quæ murmura Thyrsis,  
 Et quibus assiduus exercuit antra querelis,  
 Fluminaque, fontesque vagos, nemorumque recessus,  
 Dum sibi præreptum queritur Damona, neque altam  
 Luctibus exemit noctem, loca sola pererrans.  
 Et jam bis viridĩ surgebat culmus aristã,  
 Et totidem flavas numerabant horrea messes,  
 Ex quo summa dies tulerat Damona sub umbras,  
 Nec dum aderat Thyrsis; pastorem scilicet illum  
 Dulcis amor Musæ Thuscã retinebat in urbe.  
 Ast ubi mens expleta domum pecorisque relictĩ  
 Cura vocat, simul assuetã seditque sub ulmo,  
 Tum verò amissum, tum denique, sentit amicũ,  
 Cœpit et immensum sic exonerare dolorem:

10

‘Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
 Hei mihi! quæ terris, quæ dicam numina cælo,  
 Postquam te immitti rapuerunt funere, Damon;

20

Siccine nos linquis, tua sic sine nomine virtus  
Ibit, et obscuris numero sociabitur umbris?  
At non ille animas virgâ qui dividit aureâ  
Ista velit, dignumque tui te ducat in agmen,  
Ignavumque procul pecus arceat omne silentum.

‘Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Quicquid erit, certè, nisi me lupo antè videbit,  
Indeplorato non comminuere sepulchro,  
Constabitque tuus tibi honos, longumque vigebit  
Inter pastores. Illi tibi vota secundo  
Solvere post Daphnin, post Daphnin dicere laudes,  
Gaudebunt, dum rura Pales, dum Faunus amabit;  
Si quid id est, priscamque fidem coluisse, pliumque,  
Palladiasque artes, sociumque habuisse canorum.

30

‘Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Hæc tibi certa manent, tibi erunt hæc præmia, Damon.  
At mihi quid tandem fiet modò? quis mihi fidus  
Hærebit lateri comes, ut tu sæpe solebas,  
Frigoribus duris, et per loca fœta pruinis,  
Aut rapido sub sole, siti morientibus herbis?  
Sive opus in magnos fuit eminens ire leones,  
Aut avidos terrere lupos præsepibus altis;  
Quis fando sopire diem cantuque solebit?

40

‘Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Pectora cui credam? quis me lenire docebit  
Mordaces curas, quis longam fallere noctem  
Dulcibus alloquiis, grato cum sibilat igni  
Molle pirum, et nucibus strepitat focus, at malus Auster  
Miscet cuncta foris, et desuper intonat ulmo?

‘Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Aut æstate, dies medio dum vertitur axe,  
Cum Pan æsculeâ somnum capit abditus umbrâ,  
Et repetunt sub aquis sibi nota sedilia Nymphae,  
Pastoresque latent, stertit sub sepe colonus,  
Quis mihi blanditiasque tuas, quis tum mihi risus,  
Cecropiosque sales referet, cultosque lepores?

50

‘Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
At jam solus agros, jam pascua solus oberro,  
Sicubi ramosæ densantur vallibus umbræ;  
Hic serum expecto; supra caput imber et Euris

60

Triste sonant, fractaeque agitata crepuscula silvæ.

'Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Heu! quam culta mihi prius arva procacibus herbis  
Involvuntur, et ipsa situ seges alta fatiscit!  
Innuba neglecto marcescit et uva racemo,  
Nec myrteta juvant; ovium quoque tædet, at illæ  
Mœrent, inque suum convertunt ora magistrum.

'Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Tityrus ad corylos vocat, Alpheſibœus ad ornos,  
Ad salices Ægon, ad flumina pulcher Amyntas:  
"Hic gelidi fontes, hic illita gramina musco,  
Hic Zephyri, hic placidas interstrepit arbutus undas."  
Ista canunt surdo; frutices ego nactus abibam.

'Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Mopsus ad hæc, nam me redeuntem fortè notarat  
(Et callebat avium linguas et sidera Mopsus),  
"Thyrsi, quid hoc?" dixit; "quæ te coquit improba bilis?  
Aut te perdit amor, aut te malè fascinat astrum;  
Saturni grave sæpe fuit pastoribus astrum,  
Intimaque obliquo figit præcordia plumbo."

'Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Mirantur nymphæ, et "Quid te, Thyrsi, futurum est?  
Quid tibi vis?" aiunt: "non hæc solet esse juvenæ  
Nubila frons, oculique truces, vultusque severi:  
Illa choros, lususque leves, et semper amorem  
Jure petit; bis ille miser qui serus amavit."

'Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Venit Hyas, Dryopeque, et filia Baucidis Ægle,  
Docta modos, citharaque sciens, sed perdita fastu;  
Venit Idumanii Chloris vicina fluenti:  
Nil me blanditiæ, nil me solantia verba,  
Nil me si quid adest movet, aut spes ulla futuri.

'Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
Hei mihi! quam similes ludunt per prata juvenci,  
Omnes unanimi secum sibi lege sodales!  
Nec magis hunc alio quisquam scernit amicum  
De grege; sic densi veniunt ad pabula thoes,  
Inque vicem hirsuti paribus junguntur onagri:  
Lex eadem pelagi; deserto in littore Proteus  
Agmina phocarum numerat: vilisque volucrum

Passer habet semper quicum sit, et omnia circum  
 Farra libens volitet, serò sua tecta revisens;  
 Quem si sors letho objecit, seu milvus adunco  
 Fata tulit rostro, seu stravit arundine fessor,  
 Protinus ille alium socio petit inde volatu.  
 Nos durum genus, et diris exercita fati  
 Gens, homines, aliena animis, et pectore discors;  
 Vix sibi quisque parem de millibus invenit unum;  
 Aut, si sors dederit tandem non aspera votis,  
 Illum inopina dies, quâ non speraveris horâ,  
 Surripit, æternum linquens in sæcula damnum.

110

‘Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
 Heu! quis me ignotas traxit vagus error in oras  
 Ire per aëreas rupes, Alpemque nivosam?  
 Ecquid erat tanti Romam vidisse sepultam  
 (Quamvis illa foret, qualem dum viseret olim  
 Tityrus ipse suas et oves et rura reliquit),  
 Ut te tam dulci possem caruisse sodale,  
 Possem tot maria alta, tot interponere montes,  
 Tot silvas, tot saxa tibi, fluviosque sonantes?  
 Ah! certè extremum licuisset tangere dextram,  
 Et bene compositos placidè morientis ocellos,  
 Et dixisse “Vale! nostri memor ibis ad astra.”

120

‘Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
 Quamquam etiam vestri nunquam meminisse pigebit,  
 Pastores Thusci, musis operata juvenus,  
 Hic Charis, atque Lepos; et Thuscus tu quoque Damon,  
 Antiquâ genus unde petis Lucumonis ab urbe.  
 O ego quantus eram, gelidi cum stratus ad Arni  
 Murmura, populeumque nemus, quâ mollior herba,  
 Carpere nunc violas, nunc summas carpere myrtos,  
 Et potui Lycidæ certantem audire Menalcam!  
 Ipse etiam tentare ausus sum; nec puto multum  
 Displicui; nam sunt et apud me münera vestra,  
 Fiscellæ, calathique, et cerea vincla cicutæ:  
 Quin et nostra suas docuerunt nomina fagos  
 Et Datis et Francinus; erant et vocibus ambo  
 Et studiis noti, Lydorum sanguinis ambo.

130

‘Ite domum impasti; domino jani non vacat, agni.  
 Hæc mihi tum læto dictabat roscida luna,

140

Dum solus teneros claudebam cratibus hœdos.  
 Ah! quoties dixi, cum te cinis ater habebat,  
 "Nunc canit, aut lepori nunc tendit retia Damon;  
 Vimina nunc texit varios sibi quod sit in usus";  
 Et quæ tum facili sperabam mente futura  
 Arripui voto levis, et præsentia finxi.  
 "Heus bone! numquid agis? nisi te quid fortè retardat,  
 Imus, et argutâ paulùm recubamus in umbrâ,  
 Aut ad aquas Colni, aut ubi jugera Cassibelauni?  
 Tu mihi percurres medicos, tua gramina, succos, 150  
 Helleborumque, humilesque crocos, foliumque hyacinthi,  
 Quasque habet ista palus herbas, artesque medentùm."  
 Ah! pereant herbæ; pereant artesque medentùm,  
 Gramina, postquam ipsi nil profecere magistro!  
 Ipse etiam, nam nescio quid mihi grande sonabat  
 Fistula, ab undecimâ jam lux est altera nocte,  
 Et tum fortè novis admôram labra cicutis:  
 Dissiluere tamen, ruptâ compage, nec ultra  
 Ferre graves potuere sonos: dubito quoque ne sim  
 Turgidulus; tamen et referam; vos cedit, sylvæ. 160  
 'Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
 Ipse ego Dardanias Rutupina per æquora puppes  
 Dicam, et Pandrasidos regnum vetus Inogeniæ,  
 Brennumque Arviragumque duces, priscumque Belinum,  
 Et tandem Armoricos Britonum sub lege colonos;  
 Tum gravidam Arturo fatali fraude Iôgernem;  
 Mendaces vultus, assumptaque Gorlois arma,  
 Merlini dolus. O, mihi tum si vita supersit,  
 Tu procul annosâ pendebis, fistula, pinu  
 Multùm oblita mihi, aut patriis mutata Camœnis 170  
 Brittonicum strides! Quid enim? omnia non licet uni,  
 Non sperâsse uni licet omnia? mi satis ampla  
 Merces, et mihi grande decus (sim ignotus in ævum  
 Tum licet, externo penitusque inglorius orbi),  
 Si me flava comas legat Usa, et potor Alauni,  
 Vorticibusque frequens Abra, et nemus omne Treantæ,  
 Et Thamesis meus ante omnes, et fusca metallis  
 Tamara, et extremis me discant Orcades undis.  
 'Ite domum impasti; domino jam non vacat, agni.  
 Hæc tibi servabam lentâ sub cortice lauri, 180



Hæc, et plura simul; tum quæ mihi pocula Mansus,  
 Mansus, Chalcidicæ non ultima gloria ripæ,  
 Binâ dedit, mirum artis opus, mirandus et ipse,  
 Et circum gemino cælaverat argumento.  
 In medio Rubri Maris unda, et odoriferum ver,  
 Littora longa Arabum, et sudantes balsama sylvæ;  
 Has inter Phoenix, divina avis, unica terris,  
 Cæruleum fulgens diversicoloribus alis,  
 Auroram vitreis surgentem respicit undis;  
 Parte aliâ polus omnipotens, et magnus Olympus: 190  
 Quis putet? hic quoque Amor, pictæque in nube pharetræ,  
 Arma corusca, faces, et spicula tincta pyropo;  
 Nec tenues animas, pectusque ignobile vulgi,  
 Hinc ferit; at, circum flammantia lumina torquens,  
 Semper in erectum spargit sua tela per orbis  
 Impiger, et pronos nunquam collimat ad ictus:  
 Hinc mentes ardere sacræ, formæque deorum.

‘Tu quoque in his, nec me fallit spes lubrica, Damon,  
 Tu quoque in his certè es; nam quò tua dulcis abiret  
 Sanctaque simplicitas, nam quò tua candida virtus? 200  
 Nec te Lethæo fas quævisisse sub Orco;  
 Nec tibi conveniunt lacrymæ, nec flebimus ultra.  
 Ite procul, lacrymæ; purum colit æthera Damon,  
 Æthera purus habet, pluvium pede repulit arcum;  
 Heroumque animas inter, divosque perennes,  
 Æthereos haurit latices et gaudia potat  
 Ore sacro. Quin tu, cæli post jura recepta,  
 Dexter ades, placidusque fave, quicumque vocaris;  
 Seu tu noster eris Damon, sive æquior audis  
 DIODOTUS, quo te divino nomine cuncti 210  
 Cælicolæ nôrint, sylvisque vocabere Damon.  
 Quodd tibi purpureus pudor, et sine labe juvenus  
 Grata fuit, quodd nulla tori libata voluptas,  
 En! etiam tibi virginei servantur honores!  
 Ipse, caput nitidum cinctus rutilante coronâ,  
 Lætæque frondentis gestans umbracula palmæ,  
 Æternum perages immortales hymenæos,  
 Cantus ubi, choreisque furit lyra mista beatis,  
 Festa Sionæo bacchantur et Orgia thyrsos.’

Jan. 23, 1646

## AD JOANNEM ROUSIUM

## OXONIENSIS ACADEMIÆ BIBLIOTHECARIUM

*De libro Poematum amisso, quem ille sibi denuo mitti postulabat, ut cum  
aliis nostris in Bibliotheca Publicâ reponeret, Ode.*

## STROPHE I

GEMELLÆ cultu simplici gaudens liber,  
Fronde licet geminâ,  
Munditiæque nitens non operosâ,  
Quam manus attulit  
Juvenilis olim,  
Sedula tamen haud nimii poetæ;  
Dum vagus Ansonias nunc per umbras,  
Nunc Britannica per vireta lusi,  
Insons populi, barbitoque devius  
Indulsit patrio, mox itidem pectine Daunio  
Longinquum intonuit melos  
Vicinis, et humum vix tetigit pede:

10

## ANTISTROPHE

Quis te, parve liber, quis te fratribus  
Subduxit reliquis dolo?  
Cum tu missus ab urbe,  
Docto jugiter obsecrante amico,  
Illustre tendebas iter  
Thamesis ad incunabula  
Cærulei patris,  
Fontes ubi limpidi  
Aonidum, thyasusque sacer,  
Orbi notus per immensos  
Temporum lapsus redeunte cælo,  
Celeberque futurus in ævum.

20

## STROPHE 2

Modò quis deus, aut editus deo,  
Pristinam gentis miseratus indolem,

(Si satis noxas luitus priores,  
 Mollique luxu degener otium)  
 Tollat nefandos civium tumultus,  
 Almaque revocet studia sanctus,  
 Et relegatas sine sede Musas  
 Jam penè totis finibus Angligenùm  
 Immundasque volucres  
 Unguibus imminentes  
 Figat Apollineâ pharetrâ,  
 Phineamque abigat pestem procul anne Pegasco?

30

## ANTISTROPHE

Quin tu, libelle, nuntii licet malâ  
 Fide, vel oscitantâ,  
 Semel erraveris agmine fratrum,  
 Seu quis te teneat specus,  
 Seu qua te latebra, forsân unde vili  
 Callo tereris institoris insulsi,  
 Lætare felix; en! iterum tibi  
 Spes nova fulget posse profundam  
 Fugere Lethen, vehique superam  
 In Jovis aulam remige pennâ:

40

## STROPHE 3

Nam te Rôsius sui  
 Optat peculi, numeroque justo  
 Sibi pollicitum queritur abesse,  
 Rogatque venias ille, cujus inclyta  
 Sunt data virûm monumenta curæ;  
 Teque adytis etiam sacris  
 Voluit reponi, quibus et ipse præsidet  
 Æternorum operum custos fidelis,  
 Quæstorque gazæ nobilioris  
 Quam cui præfuit Ion,  
 Clarus Erechtheides,  
 Opulenta dei per templa parentis,  
 Fulvosque tripodas, donaque Delphica,  
 Ion Actiæ genitus Creusâ.

50

60

## ANTISTROPHE

Ergo tu visere lucos  
 Musarum ibis amcenos;  
 Diamque Phœbi rursus ibis in domum  
 Oxoniâ quam valle colit,  
 Delo posthabitâ,  
 Bifidoque Parnassi jugo;  
 Ibis honestus,  
 Postquam egregiam tu quoque sortem  
 Nactus abis, dextri prece sollicitatus amici.  
 Illic legeris inter alta nomina  
 Authorum, Graia: simul et Latinae  
 Antiqua gentis lumina et verum decus.

70

## EPODOS

Vos tandem haud vacui mei labores,  
 Quicquid hoc sterile fudit ingenium,  
 Jam serò placidam sperare jubeo  
 Perfunctam invidiâ requiem, sedesque beatas  
 Quas bonus Hermes  
 Et tutela dabit solers Rotisî,  
 Quò neque lingua procax vulgi penetrabit, atque longè  
 Turba legentûm prava facesset;  
 At ultimi nepotes  
 Et cordatior ætas  
 Judicia rebus æquiora forsitan  
 Adhibebit integro sinu.  
 Tum, livore sepulto,  
 Si quid meremur sana posteritas sciet,  
 Rotisio favente.

80

Ode tribus constat Strophis, totidemque Antistrophis, unâ demum Epodo clausis; quas, tametsi omnes nec versuum numero nec certis ubique collis exactè respondeant, ita tamen secuimus, commodè legendi potius quam ad antiquos concinendi modos rationem spectantes. Alioquin hoc genus rectius fortasse dici *monostrophicum* debuisset. Metra partim sunt κατὰ σχῆμα, partim ἀπολειψμένα. Phalencia quæ sunt spontæum tertio loco his admittunt, quod idem in secundo loco Catullus ad libitum fecit.

## IN SALMASII HUNDREDAM

QUIS expedit Salmasio suam *Hundredam*,  
Picamque docuit verba nostra conari?  
Magister artis venter, et Jacobæi  
Centum, exulantis viscera marsupii regis.  
Quodd, si dolosi spes refulserit nummi,  
Ipse, Antichristi qui modò primatum Papæ  
Minatus uno est dissipare sufflatu,  
Cantabit ultrò Cardinalitium melos.

## IN SALMASIUM

GAUDETE, scombri, et quicquid est piscium salo,  
Qui frigidâ hieme incolitis argentes freta!  
Vestrum misertus ille Salmasius Eques  
Bonus amicare nuditatem cogitat;  
Chartæque largus apparat papyrinos  
Vobis cucullos, præferentes Claudii  
Insignia, nomenque et decus, Salmasii:  
Gestetis ut per omne cetarium forum  
Equitis clientes, scriniis mungentium  
Cubito virorum, et capsulis, gratissimos.

## NOTES.

### PSALM CXIV.

First printed in 1645.

3. *Canaan land*] *Canaan-land* Masson.

### PSALM CXXXVI.

First printed in 1645.

10, 13, 17, 21, 25. *Who*] 1673. *That* 1645. 70. *over-hurly*] 1673.  
*over hardy* 1645.

## ON THE DEATH OF A FAIR INFANT.

First printed in 1673. In the Title the words 'a Nephew of his'  
were added in 1713.

8. *charioter*] 1673. *charioteer* 1705. 13. *long-uncoupled*] 1673. *long  
uncoupled* Masson. 15. *icy-pearled*] 1673. *ice-pearled* Warton conj.  
21. *hiding-place*] Keightley. *biding place* 1673. 25. *Eurotas*] *Eurola's*  
1673. 30. *corse*] Fenton. *coarse* 1673. 32. *low-decked*] Warton. *low  
decked* 1673. 36. *surely*] 1673. *purely* Fenton. 53. *Mercy*] Warton  
(Heskin conj.), omitted in 1673. 54. *crown'd*] 1695. *cowon'd* 1673.  
72. *false-imagined*] Warton. *false imagin'd* 1673.

## AT A VACATION EXERCISE.

First printed in 1673.

4. *infant lips*] Tickell. *infant-lipps* 1673. 14. *dainties*] 1673  
(after Spenser). *daintiest* 1695. 18. *wardrobe*] 1695. *wardrope* 1673.  
19. *new-fangled*] Fenton. *new fangled* 1673. *trimmings*] *trimings*  
1713. 20. *takes*] *take* 1713. 36. *thunderous*] *Thunderer's* Jortin  
conj. 40. *spheres*] 1695. *Spherse* 1673. 60. *faery*] *Fairy* 1673.  
66. *invisible*] *invisible*: Tickell. *invisible*, 1673. 71. *time's*] 1705.  
*times* 1673. 93. *hallow'd*] Tickell. *hallowed* 1695. *hollowed* 1673.  
100. *royal-towered*] Keightley. *Royal Towered* 1673. *toward* Warton.

## ON THE NATIVITY. First printed in 1645.

21. *And*] *And and* 1673. 30. *Heaven-born child*] *Heav'n-born-  
childe* 1645, 1673. 128. *human*] 1645. *humane* 1673. 130. *bass*] *base* 1645, 1673. 143. *Orb'd...wearing*] 1673. *The enameld  
Arras of the Rainbow wearing* 1645. 144. *Mercy will sit* 1673.  
*And Mercy sat* 1645. 151. *lies yet*] 1645, 1673. *yet lies* Warton.  
156. *deep*] 1645. *deep* 1673. 159. *out brake*] 1673. *outbrake* Keightley.  
160. *agast*] 1673. *aghost* Tickell. 166. *perfect*] 1645. *perfet* 1673.  
172. *Swindges*] 1645, 1673. *Swinges* Keightley. 204. *Thammuz*] *Thammuz* 1645, 1673. 218. *Naught*] 1705. *Naught* 1645, 1673.

## UPON THE CIRCUMCISION. First printed in 1645.

In Milton's own hand in the Trinity ms.

- 13, 14. As one line originally in Trin. ms. 19. *High-throned*] *High-  
thron'd* ms. *High throned* 1645, 1673. 23. *wrath*] *wrauth* ms.  
originally. 27, 28. As one line originally in Trin. ms. the present  
division being marked in the margin as also in 13, 14. 28. *Will*] *Shall* ms. in margin originally.

## THE PASSION. First printed in 1645.

11. *than*] *then* 1645, 1673 (and elsewhere). 22. *latest* 1673. *latter* 1645. 46. *softened*] *sofined* 1645, 1673.

ON TIME. In the Trinity ms. this is in Milton's own hand, and he originally added to the title 'To be set on a clock case.' But these words he afterwards struck out. It was first printed in 1645.

18. *to whose*] *l'whose* ms. 1645, 1673. 20. *earthly*] *earthly* Warton (ed. 2).

AT A SOLEMN MUSIC. First printed in 1645. In the Trinity ms. there are two rough drafts and a fair copy, all in Milton's hand. The first rough draft is very much torn and difficult to read. The second has two endings, from line 17 onwards. The fair copy, except in the last line, agrees with the printed text.

3. *Wed...employ*] *Mixe y<sup>e</sup> choise chords, & happiest sounds employ* second draft originally, altered to what we have in the text. *sounds*,

and mix'd power] power & joynt force first draft.

4. After this line in the second draft, and apparently also in the first, there stood the following :

and whilst ye' equall raptures temper'd sweet  
in high misterious holie spousall meet  
snatch us from earth a while  
us of our selves & home bred woes beguile.

In the first of these lines whilst was changed to as in the second draft. In the second line holie was changed to happie, and in the last line home bred was changed to native.

5. high-raised] up rays'd second draft originally. phantasy] fancies then first draft originally.

6. content] MS. and ed. 1673. content 1645.

7. All that is left of this line in the first draft is as surrounds the soveraigne throne with soveraigne changed to saphire-coloured.

8. To him] & him second draft originally. 9. In the first draft the line originally ended & sollemne crie. jubilee] jubilee MS.

10. burning] princely first draft. tripled second draft originally, changed to burning.

11. Their...blew] high lifted loud archangell trumpets blow second draft originally, altered to what stands in the text. In the first draft Milton finally wrote

loud symphonie of silver trumpets blow  
angel-trumpets] Hyphenated by Newton.

12. In the first draft, so far as can be deciphered, this line and the following stood thus :

and youth[sul cher]ubim sweet-winged squires  
Heavn's henshmen in ten thous[and quir]es.

14. wear] beare first draft, originally weare. victorious] the fresh greene first draft, altered first to blooming and then to victorious. In the second draft the reading was originally blooming altered to victorious.

15. Hymns] in hymnes first draft originally. devout] devote 1705. holy] sacred both drafts originally, altered in the margin of the second draft to holie.

16. After this line the first draft originally had

that all the [fram]e of heaven and arches blue  
resound and Echo Hallelu.

In the first instance that was altered to while, and then in the margin Milton wrote the alternatives whilst the whole frame of and while (originally whilst) all the starrie frame. The second draft had originally

while all the starric rounds & arches blue  
resound and echo Hallelu.

17. That...voice] The first draft originally had

that wee below may learne w<sup>th</sup> hart & voice

which was changed to

that wee w<sup>th</sup> undiscordant hart & voice

and so it stood originally in the second draft, but it was finally altered to what we have in the text.

18. May rightly answer] rightly to answer



first draft originally.

19. *did*] In his fair copy Milton first wrote *could* as in one of the two forms of the second draft. 19-25. Instead of these lines the first draft had

*by leaving out those harsh chromatick Jarres  
of sin that all our musick marres  
& in our lives & in our song  
may keep &c.*

In the first form of the second draft Milton wrote in the margin *ill sounding* as a substitute for *chromatick*, and the following line originally ran thus:  
*of clamorous sin that all our musick marres.*

20. In the second form of the second draft this line originally stood  
*drown'd natures chime & w<sup>th</sup> tumultuous din.*

28. *To live with him, and sing*] 1645, 1673. *To live & sing w<sup>th</sup> him* MS. (both drafts and fair copy). *in endless morn of light*] As in both forms of the second draft of the MS. and in the fair copy, as well as in 1645, 1673. In the first draft Milton originally wrote *in ever-endlesse light*, adding in the margin *ever-glorious* and *unclouded* as alternatives to *ever-endlesse*, and for the whole phrase *where day dwells w<sup>th</sup> out night, in endlesse* (or *cloudlesse*) *morne* (or *birth*) *of light*, and *in never parting light*.

SONG ON MAY MORNING. First printed in 1645.

#### ON SHAKESPEARE.

First printed in 1632 in the second Folio of Shakespeare, and again in 1645.

1. *needs*] *needs* 1632. 6. *wake*] *dull* 1632. 8. *live-long*] *live-long* 1645, 1673. *lasting* 1632. 10. *heart*] *part* 1632. 13. *itself*] *her selfe* 1632.

ON THE UNIVERSITY CARRIER. First printed in 1645.

2. *And*] *A* 1645.

ANOTHER ON THE SAME. First printed in 1645.

18. *may not*] *mayn't* 1705. 28. *been*] 1673. *bin* 1645.

AN EPITAPH ON THE MARCHIONESS OF WINCHESTER.

First printed in 1645.

12. *Been*] 1705. *Bin* 1645, 1673. 20. *scarce well-lighted*] Fenton (1727). *scarce-wel-lighted* 1645, 1673. 22. *cypress bud*] *cypress-bud* Keightley. 26. *throes*] Warton. *throes* 1645, 1673. 32. *yet not*] 1645, 1673. *not yet* Masson. 52. *Shortened*] *Shortned* 1645, 1673. *life's*] 1705. *lives* 1645, 1673. 56. *Wept*] 1645, 1673. *Wept* 1713. 58. *For*] *Fore* Browne. 71. *new-welcome*] Keightley. *new welcom* 1645, 1673.

## L'ALLEGRO.

2. *Cerberus*] *Erebus* Upton conj. 17. *sager*] *Sagas* Tickell. 33. *ye*] 1645. *you* 1673. 57. *Sometimes*] Keightley. *Some time* 1645, 1673. 70. *landship*] *Lantship* 1645, 1673. *Landscape* Tickell. 75. *pie'd*] Newton. *pids* 1645, 1673. 91. *Sometimes*] 1705. *Some times* 1645, 1673. 104. *he by*] *by the* 1673. *luntern*] Warton. *Lanthorn* 1645, 1673. *friar's*] *the Friars* 1673. 106. *earn*] 1705. *ern* 1645, 1673. 108. *flail*] Tickell. *Flals* 1645, 1673. 110. *fiend*] Tickell. *Fend* 1645, 1673. 117. *Towered*] *Towed* 1645, 1673. 118. *hum*] *humum* 1645, 1673. 122. *prize*] *prise* 1645. *prise*, 1673. 130. *eves*] *eeves* 1645, 1673. 134. *wild*] 1645, 1673. *wild*; Tickell. *wild*. Newton. 138-9. *pierce* *In notes*] 1645, 1673. *pierce*, *In notes*, Warton. *pierce*, *In notes* Keightley. 150. *half-regain'd*] Hyphened by Tickell.

## IL PENSEROSO.

8. *sun beams*] Hyphened by Tickell. 16. *black, staid*] Newton. *black staid* 1645, 1673. 35. *cyprus*] 1705. *Cipres* 1645, 1673. *Cyprus* Newton. 38. *even*] 1705. *eev'n* 1645, 1673. *guit* Todd. *gate* 1645, 1673. 69. *been*] 1695. *bin* 1645, 1673. 97. *Sometime*] 1705. *Some time* 1645, 1673. *Some time* 1695. *Sometimes* Tickell. 99. *Pelops*] *Pelop's* Tickell. 116. *ought*] Warton. *ought* 1645, 1673. 125. *kerchiefs*] Masson. *Cherchef't* 1645, 1673. *kercheft* Newton. 130. *minute-drops*] Hyphened by Keightley. 134. *Silvan*] *Sylvan* 1645, 1673. 152. *or*] and Peck conj. 153. *mortals*] *Mortal's* Tickell. 156. *cloisters* *pale*] *Cloysters pale* 1645, 1673. *cloister's pale* Masson (Warton conj.). 158. *antic*] *antick* 1645, 1673. *antique* Tickell. *pillars*] *Pillar's* Tickell. *massy proof*] Hyphened by Keightley. *mass-yproof* Sampson conj. 162. *full-voiced*] Hyphened by Tickell.

## ARCADES.

The heading was originally

Part of a maske

Looke nymphs & shepherds looke heere ends our quest  
since at last o' eyes are blest.

10-13. The Trinity ms. had originally :

*now seems guiltie of abuse  
and detraction from her praise  
lesse then halfe she hath express't  
Ennie bid her hide the rest.*

18. *Sitting*] *seated* MS. originally. 21. *towered*] *towed* MS. 1645, 1673.  
 23. *June*] The MS. has *June* altered to *Ceres*. 24. *had*] MS. originally  
*would have*. 26. Stage Direction. As they come] MS. originally  
 had As they offer to come. appears] rises MS. originally. 27. *through*]  
*in* Warton. 28. *ye*] *you* MS. 40. *ye where ye*] *you where*  
*you* MS. 41. *What shallow-searching Fame*] *those vertues with*  
*dull Fame* MS. originally. 44. *am*] *have* MS. originally. 45. *Of*  
*this*] & *charge of this* MS. originally. 46. Above this line in the MS.  
 are written the words *live a thousand yeares*. They were afterwards  
 expunged. 47. *With*] *in* MS. originally. 49. *and*] *or* MS.  
 originally. 50. *loughs*] *leaves* MS. originally. 52. *Or*] MS. originally  
 & altered to *or*. 59. *Number...visit*] MS. originally & *number all*  
*my ranks*, &c. 62. *Hath lock'd up mortal sense*] MS. originally *hath*  
*chain'd mortalitie*, first changed to *hath lockt up mortall eyes* and then to  
*hath lockt up mortall sense*. 66. *turn*] MS. originally *turning*. 81. *ye*  
*towards*] *you towards* MS. 87. *warbled*] *warbling* Keightley conj.  
 91. *you*] *ye* MS. 101. *ye*] *you* MS. 107. *Yet Syrinx.*] So MS.  
 originally. Yet was afterwards expunged.

## COMUS.

COMUS. This name was first affixed to the poem by Warton.

A Masque &c. The Title both in the Trinity and Egerton MSS. is simply 'A maske.' The editions of 1645 and 1673 have the longer title as given here. In ed. 1637 is added "on Michaelmas Night." The Persons, &c. First given in 1645: not in 1673. Stage Direction. The Trinity MS. has, 'The first scene discovers a wild wood. A Guardian spirit, or Daemon.' In the Egerton MS. it is 'The first scene discovers a wild wood, then a guardian spirit or demon descends or enters.' In ed. 1645 it is 'The first... Wood. The attendant Spirit descends or enters.' In the Egerton MS. there is a Prologue of twenty lines taken from what is now the Epilogue.

4. After this line there stood originally in the Trinity MS. the following:

amidst th Hesperian gardens on whose bancks  
 bedew'd with nectar, & celestiall songs  
 eternall roses grow, & hyacinth  
 & fruits of golden rind, on whose faire tree  
 the scallie-harrest dragon ever keeps  
 his unincharnted eye, & round the verge  
 & sacred limits of this blisfull Isle  
 the jealous ocean that old river winds  
 his farre-extended armes till with steepe fall

halfe his wast flood y<sup>e</sup> wide Atlantique fills  
 & halfe the slow unfadom'd Stygian poole  
 but soft I was not sent to court yo<sup>r</sup> wonder  
 w<sup>th</sup> distant worlds, & strange removed climes  
 yet thence I come and oft frō thence behold  
 the smoake & stirre of this dim, narrow spot.

In the first of these lines 'on whose bancks' was changed to 'where the banks' and then restored. In the third line 'grow' was successively changed to 'yeeld,' 'blow,' and 'blosme,' and then restored. In line 5 'dragon' was originally 'watchfull dragons.' In line 6 'uninchantd' is substituted for 'never charmed.' In line 7 'blisfull' was originally 'happie,' and in line 8 'Stygian poole' was substituted for 'poole of styx.' After this the following lines were struck out:

I doubt me gentle mortalls these may seeme  
 strange distances to heare & unknowne climes.

7, 8. These lines were originally transposed, and between them was written  
*beyond the written date of mortall change.*

11. *the enthroned gods*] *th' enthroned gods* Fenton. *The Gods enthron'd* Warton.  
*enthroned*] *enthron'd* Trin. MS. showing that it is to be read as a disyllable.  
 12. *by*] *with* Eg. MS. 14. *opes*] *shews* Trin. MS. originally. 18. The  
 line originally stood in the Trin. MS.

*but to my businesse now. Neptune whose sway.*

20. *Took in...*] *Jove*] Trin. MS., followed by edd. 1637, 1645, 1673, punctuates  
 tooke in by lot twixt high, & neather Jove.

Keightley has, Took in by lot, 'twixt high and nether Jove.

Masson, Took in, by lot 'twixt high and nether Jove.

*by*] *my* 1637. 21. Originally in the Trin. MS.

*the rule & title of each sea-girt Isle.*

22. *rich...inlay*] Trin. MS. had originally *rich gemms inlay*. 25. *govern-*  
*ment*] *governments* Tickell. 27. *wield*] 1713. *wield* MSS. 1637, 1645,  
 1673. 28. *the main*] *his empire* Trin. MS. originally. 29. *deities*]

*dicties* Trin. MS. 34. *Where*] *Whither* Keightley conj. 36. *new-*  
*entrusted*] Hyphened in ed. 1637. 37. *drear*] *dread* Warton. *dear*

1695. 39. *passenger*] 1695. *passinger* MSS. 1637, 1645, 1673.

41. *souran*] Newton. *Soveran* 1645, 1673. *soveraigne* MSS. 1637.

43. *you*] MSS. 1673. *ye* 1645. *ye* 1637. 45. *From*] *by* Trin. MS.  
 originally. 46. *grape*] *grapes* Eg. MS. 48. *mariners*] *manners*

Eg. MS. 53. *groveling*] *groveling* Trin. MS. *grovelings* Eg. MS.

58. *Whom*] *with* originally in both MSS., altered in Trin. MS. to *whome*.  
*and Comus named*] *and nam'd him Comus* Trin. MS. originally. 59. *full-*  
*grown*] Hyphened by Keightley. 60. *fields*] *feilds* Trin. MS. 62. *shelter*]

*coverd* Trin. MS. originally. *shades*] *shade* Trin. MS. 63. *mighty*] *potent*  
 Trin. MS. originally. 65. *liquor*] Milton began writing *like* but struck

- it out. 65. *drouth*] *drought* Keightley. 67. *fond*] *weake* Trin. ms. originally. 68. *potion works*] *potions work* Trin. ms. originally. 69. *of the gods*] *o' the gods* Trin. ms. which had originally *of the gods*. 72. *as they were*] *as before* Trin. ms. originally. 73. *is*] *in* 1637. 76. *friends*] *friends*; 1637. 79. *advent'rous*] mss. *advent'rous* 1637, 1645, 1673. 80. *the sparkle*] *a Sparkle* Fenton. 81. *convey*] *convey* Fenton. 83. *sky robes*] *skie-robes* Tickell. *skye webs* Eg. ms. 86. *smooth-dittied*] Hyphenated in 1637, 1645. 90. *Libellicst, and nearest*] *neerest & likeliest* Trin. ms. originally, but marked for transposition. *to the present aid*] Trin. ms. originally had *to give present aide*. This was first altered to *to the present chance* and then *aide* was restored. 92. *hateful*] *virgin* Trin. ms. originally. After this line both mss. have 'Exit,' but in the Trin. ms. this is altered to 'goes out.' Stage Direction. As in ed. 1637. In Eg. ms. 'a glass of liquor' is substituted for 'his glass'; 'like men & women but headed like wild beasts' for 'headed...women.' In the Trin. ms. it stands thus: 'Comus enters w<sup>th</sup> a charming rod & glasse of liquor with his rout all headed like some wild beasts thire garments some like mens & some like womens they come on in a wild & antick fashion.' For 'come on in' the ms. at first had 'begin' and for 'antick' 'humorous.' To this was added 'intrant καυαφορες.' 97. *Atlantic*] *Tartessian* Trin. ms. originally. 99. *dusky*] *northren* Trin. ms. originally, afterwards changed to *dusky* but restored. The Eg. ms. also has *Northerne*, but the printed editions read *dusky*. 102. *welcome joy*] *welcome, joye* Eg. ms. *welcome Joy*, 1637. 108. The Trinity ms. is torn here, and it is impossible to say what the reading originally was. Birch and others read it *And quick Low with her scrupulous head*, but this is certainly wrong. All that I am able to decipher is *& nice* followed by a word ending in *-tom* and then *w<sup>th</sup> her*. But whatever it may have been it is altered to what we have in the text. 114. *in swift*] *w<sup>th</sup> swift* Trin. ms. originally. 117. *tawny*] *yellow* Trin. ms. originally. 118. *faeries*] *sayries* Trin. ms. *fairies* Eg. ms. 123. *Night hath*] *Night has* mss. 125. *rites*] Fenton. *rights* mss. 129. *to whom*] Todd. *whome* Eg. ms. *& whom* 1637, 1645, 1673. 130. *burne*] *burne* Eg. ms. 131. *art*] *at* 1637. *womb*] *woome* 1645, 1673. *woome* 1637. 132. *spets*] *spittle* Trin. ms. *spits* Tickell. 133. From the Trin. ms. it appears that Milton began to write *and makes a blot of nature*, then *and throws a blot on all the aire*, and finally as in the text. 134. *cloudy*] *polisht* Trin. ms. originally. 135. *Hecat*] *Hecate* Trin. ms. altered to *Hecat*. 136. For this line Milton at first wrote *& favour our close revelrie*, altering the last word to *jocondrie*. This fits in with the rejected reading in the previous line. 137. *Of*] *till* Trin. ms. originally. *none*] *nought* Trin. ms. originally. 139. *on the Indian*] Eg. ms. *on th<sup>e</sup> Indian* Trin. ms. 1645, 1673. 144. *In*] *w<sup>th</sup>* Trin. ms. originally. *fantastic*] *& frolick* Trin. ms. originally. The Measure. Both mss. add, 'in a wild rude

& wanton antick,' 145. *feel*] *heave* Trin. MS. originally. 146. After this line the Trinity MS. had originally

*some virgin sure benighted in these woods  
for so I can distinguish by myne art.*

147. At the end of this line both MSS. have the stage-direction 'they all scatter.' 150. *charms*] *traines* Trin. MS. originally. 151. *wily trains*] *mothers charms* Trin. MS. originally. 154. *dazzling*] *powder'd* Trin. MS. originally. 155. *blar*] At first *sleight* and then *blind* in Trin. MS.

156. *lev*] *dis* Trin. MS. originally. 161. *glouing*] *glowings* Eg. MS. 163. *Wind*] *Win* Tickell. 164. *snarcs*] *nots* Trin. MS. originally.

167. *thirif*] In the margin of the Trin. MS. is written in another hand *thirst*. In ed. 1673 this line is omitted and the two following lines are transposed.

169. In the Trin. MS. Milton wrote

*Or hearken, if I may, her buisnesse heere.*

The Eg. MS. has

*and hearthen if I may her businesse heere.*

The editions of 1637 and 1645 follow substantially Milton's MS. The edition of 1673 follows ed. 1645 in the text but in the table of Errata this is altered to

*And hearken, if I may her busines hear.*

Tickell (after ed. 1713) adopted this reading and is followed by other editors. Both readings may be defended, and if the alteration was due to Milton himself, it was probably to avoid the repetition of *here* which occurs in the previous line. But the exceptionally careful punctuation shows that the MS. contains his first thoughts. 170. *mine*] *my* MSS. 174. *among*] *amongst* Trin. MS. 175. *When*] First altered to *that* in the Trin. MS. and then restored.

*granger*] *garner* Trin. MS. originally. 176. *they praise*] First altered to *adore* in the Trin. MS. and then restored. 181. *maze*] *alleys* Trin. MS. originally. *this*] *these* Trin. MS. originally. *tangled*] *arched* Trin. MS. originally. 185. *said*] *sai* Trin. MS. *sai* Eg. MS. *sai'd* 1637, 1645, 1673. *thicket side*] Hyphenated by Keightley. 188-190. *They left...wain*] Omitted in Eg. MS. 189. *weald*] *woods* Trin. MS. 190. *wain*] *chairs* Trin. MS. originally. 191. *came*] Trin. MS. 1637, 1645, 1673.

*come* Eg. MS. 193. *wandering*] *youthly* Trin. MS. originally. 194. In the Trinity MS. the line originally began to the *soone parting light* but these words are struck out and the present reading substituted. 195. *stolen*] *stolue* MSS. and ed. 1637. *stole* 1645, 1673. 195-225. *Els...grove*] Omitted in Eg. MS. 199. *due light*] *thire light* Trin. MS. originally.

200. *traveller*] *Travailer*. 1637. 201. *the*] om. Trin. MS. but the omission is marked. 203. *perfect*] Trin. MS. 1637. *perfet* 1645, 1673. 208. *that syllable men's names*] *that here night wanderers* Trin. MS. originally. Milton has underlined these words as if they were to be restored. 214. *hovering*] *flittering* Trin. MS. originally, and ed. 1637. 215. *unblemish'd*]

unspotted Trin. MS. originally.

216. *I see...believe*] For this line

Trin. MS. had

*I see yee visibly, & while I see yee  
this dusky hollow is a paradise  
& heaven gates ere my head now I believe.*

217. *to whom*] *to' whom* Trin. MS. *to' whom* 1637, 1645, 1673.

219. *guardian*] *cherub* Trin. MS. originally.

223. *sable*] *sables* 1637.

225. *hallo*]

*hallow* Trin. MS. 1637, 1645, 1673. *hollow* Eg. MS.

227. *farthest*]

*fardest* MSS. 1637. 228. *venture*] Eg. MS. *venter* Trin. MS. 1637, 1645,

1673. 229. *off*] 1637, 1645, 1673, hence MSS. 231. *shell*] *coll* Trin.

MS. (margin). 233. *violet-embroider'd*] *violet-imbrider'd* Trin. MS. 1637.

*violett imbroder'd* Eg. MS. 241. *of*] *to* Eg. MS. 243. *give resounding grace*]

*hold a counterpoint* Trin. MS. *ould a Counterpointe* Eg. MS. 244. Stage

Direction. In Trin. MS. originally 'Comus enters,' altered to 'looks in and

speaks' as in Eg. MS. 250. *empty-vaulted*] Hyphenated in 1637, 1645,

1673, but not in MSS. 252. *it*] 1645, 1673. *the* MSS. and 1637.

254-5. In the Trinity MS. these lines are added in the margin.

254. *Amidst*] *sitting amidst* Trin. MS. originally. *Naiades*] *Niades* Eg. MS.

255. *potent*] In the Trinity MS. Milton first wrote *potent* then *powerfull* then

*myghty* and then restored *potent*. 256. *as*] *when* Eg. MS. 257-8. *wep*,

*and chid*] *would weepe and chide* Trin. MS. originally, then *would weepe*

*chiding*, and finally as in the text. 265. *foreign*] *forreigne* Eg. MS.

*forreine* Trin. MS. 1637. *forren* 1645, 1673. 266. *certain*] added above

the line in Trin. MS. 268. *Dwell't*] *liv't* Trin. MS. originally.

270. *prosperous*] *prospering* Trin. MS. originally. *prospering* Eg. MS.

276. *answer*] After this in Trin. MS. the words *to give me* are repeated and

struck out. 278. *leavy*] *leafy* 1705. 279. *near-ushering*] Hyphenated

in 1637, 1645, 1673. *thire ushering hands* Trin. MS. originally.

280. *wearie*] *wearied* Trin. MS. altered to *wearie*. *turf*] Tickell. *terse* MSS.

and 1637. *terf* 1645, 1673. 282. *it the*] *it th* Trin. MS. *in the* Eg. MS.

288. *lose*] 1637. *loose* MSS. 1645, 1673. 291. *Two such*] *such tow* Trin. MS.

294. *saw them*] *saw 'em* Trin. MS. *sawc em* Eg. MS. 297. *human*, as they

*stood*] *humaine as they stood* Trin. MS. *humane as they stood*, Eg. MS.

*humaine; as they stood*, 1637. 300. *colours*] *coolness* Eg. MS. 301. *awe-*

*strook*] Hyphenated in Eg. MS. 1637, 1645. 304. *find them*] *find them out*

Trin. MS. originally. 308. *star-light*] 1645, 1673. *starre light* Trin. MS.

1637. *starr light* Eg. MS. 310. *the sure guess*] *sure steerage* Trin. MS.

originally. 312. *wild*] *uide* MSS. In Trin. MS. *wild* is written in the

margin but not in Milton's hand. 313. *bosky*] Milton seems to have been

doubtful about this word, for he wrote it three times and blotted it twice.

316. *Or shroud within these limits*] Milton first wrote *within these limits*,

adding *shroudie* in the margin as an epithet to *limits*. This he first altered to

*Or shroudest within these limits*, and finally to what we have in the text.

317. *Ere morrow wake*] *ere the larke rouse* Trin. MS. originally. *low-roasted*] *lowe rooster* Eg. MS. 318. *thatch'd*] *thetch't* Trin. MS. *pallat*] Masson. *palate* Trin. MS. 1637. *palat* Eg. MS. In the margin of Trin. MS. *pallat* is written in the same hand as *wild* l. 312. *pallat* 1645, 1673. 321. *further*] *further* MSS. *quest*] *quest* 1637, 1645, 1673. *quest* *be made* Trin. MS. originally. 324. *With*] & Trin. MS. originally. 325. *And*] *In* Warton. 326. *yet is most pretended*] *is pretended yet* Trin. MS. originally. 327. *or lest secure*] *I cannot be* Trin. MS. originally, transferred to the next line. 328. *me*] *my* Eg. MS. *my*] *this* Trin. MS. originally. 330. *Exeunt*] Trin. MS. om. Eg. MS. 1637, 1645, 1673. Enter the two Brothers.] Warton. the two brothers enter Trin. MS. The two brothers Eg. MS. 1637, 1645, 1673. 332. *won't st*] *won't st* 1637, 1645, 1673. *won'd st* Trin. MS. originally. *wonst* Eg. MS. *love*] *prove* Peck conj. 340. *thy*] *a* Trin. MS. originally. 349. *close*] *lone* Eg. MS. and Trin. MS. originally, first altered to *sad*, and then to *close*. 350-366. A fair copy of these lines was written on a separate piece of paper and fastened to the opposite leaf. In Todd's time this was still preserved and the readings which it contained are quoted by him; but owing to the enterprise of some collector it has disappeared for many years. 351. *whither*] 1695. *whether* MSS. 1637, 1645, 1673. 352. *amongst rude burs and thistles*] The Trin. MS. had at first *in this dead solitude* and then *in this surrounding wilde*. 355. *Leans her unpillow'd head*] In Trin. MS. at first *she leans her thoughtfull head*. *fraught with sad fears*] In Trin. MS. at first *mus'ing at our unkindness*. 356. *What if*] *or else* Trin. MS. originally; not *Or lost*, as given by Warton. After this line in the Trinity MS. the following three lines are added:

*so fares as did forsaken Proserpine*

*when the big rowling flakes of pitchie clouds*

*& darkness wound her in.* 1 Bro. Peace brother peace.

So also Eg. MS. For *rowling* Milton first wrote *wallowing*. 359-365. *be not...self-delusion*] Omitted in both MSS. In Trin. MS. it was apparently on the piece which has been lost, as the readings are given by Warton and Todd. 359. *over-exquisite*] *over exquisite* 1637. 361. om. Warburton conj. *For*] *Which* Trin. MS. (Todd). 362. *his*] *the* Trin. MS. (Warton). 365. *suck*] *this* Trin. MS. (Warton). 370. *trust*] *hope* Eg. MS. 371. *constant*] *stendie* Trin. MS. originally; not *stable* as in Todd. 375. *flat sea*] *sea flat* Warton conj. 376. *sweet retired solitude*] *solitarie sweet retire* Trin. MS. originally. 378. *plumes*] *prunes* Warton conj. *priner* Landor conj. 380. *all-to ruffled*] *all to ruff'd* MSS. 1637, 1645, 1673. *all too ruffled* Tickell. 384-5. *benighted...dungeon*] Both MSS. have  
*walks in black vapours, though the noontyde brand  
blaze in the summer solstice.*

In the Trinity MS. these lines are struck out, and the present text is written



in the margin. 388. *and*] or Trin. MS. originally and Eg. MS. 390. *a hermit*] *an Hermit* 1637. *weeds*] In Trin. MS. it was first *beads*, then *garone*, then *beads* again, and finally *weeds*. 391. *His few books or his beads*] Trin. MS. first had *his books*, *his hairie garone*. 395. *dragon watch*] Hyphenated in 1695. 398. *unsunn'd*] *unsund'd* Eg. MS. 399. *treasure*] *treasures* Eg. MS. 400. *hope*] *thinke* Trin. MS. originally. 401. *on*] at Eg. MS. 402. *let*] *She* Eg. MS. 403. *wide surrounding waste*] *wast*, & *hideous wild* Trin. MS. originally. *wide*] MSS. *wild* 1637. *wilde* 1645, 1673. 404. *Of night or loneliness*] *Of night: of loneliness* Fenton (1727). *recks*] *wrecks* 1695. *me not*] Eg. MS. *not me* Trin. MS. 409. *controversy*] *question*, no MSS., followed by five lines which were afterwards omitted:

*I could be willing though now I th darke to trie  
a tough encounter w<sup>th</sup> the shaggiest ruffian  
that lurks by halge or lane of this dead circuit  
to have her by my side, though I were sure  
she might be free from perill where she is.*

In Trin. MS. the first of these lines began, *beshrew me but I would*, and for encounter Milton first wrote *passado*. 410. *Yet*] but MSS. *hope and fear*] *hopes & feares* Trin. MS. originally. 411. *the event*] Trin. MS. *th' event* Eg. MS. 1637, 1645, 1673. 413. *gladly banish*] Marked for transposition in Trin. MS. 415. *imagine*] *imagine brother* MSS. 417. *you*] *om.* 1637. 422. *And... been*] For this line the Trin. MS. had first  
& may (upon any needfull accident  
be it not don in pride or wilfull tempting)

For the last line Milton substituted

*be it not don in pride or in presumption*

which he afterwards transferred to line 431. In the margin it appears that *may* was written by mistake for the next line. 423. *May trace*] *walke through* Trin. MS. originally. 425. *rays*] *aw* Trin. MS. originally. 426. *salvage fierce*] *salvage feirce*, Trin. MS. *salvage, feirce*, Eg. MS. Milton first wrote *savage*. *banditt*] *Banditti* Tickell. 427. *Will*] *shall* Trin. MS. originally. 428. *there*] *even* MSS. 429. After this line was inserted in both MSS.

& yavoning dens where glaring monsters house.

432. *Some say*] Milton first wrote *Some say*, then altered it to *Nay more* as in Eg. MS., and finally restored *Some say*. 433. *moorish*] *moorie* Trin. MS. 434. *meagre*] *meager* MSS. The Trin. MS. had first *wrinkled* in the text and *wrincl'd* in margin. 436. *goblin*] *goblinge* Eg. MS. 437. *Hath*] 1645, 1673. *has* MSS. 1637. *o'er*] *ore* MSS. 1637. Trin. MS. had originally *over*. 438. *ye*] *you* Trin. MS. *you* Eg. MS. 441. *Dian*] *Diana* Tickell. 442. In Trin. MS. this line is added in the margin. *silver-shafted*] *silver shafter* Eg. MS. *queen*] *Q.* Trin. MS. and in line 446. 443. *she*] *we* 1637.

444. *mountain paird*] Hyphenated by Keightley. 447. *that*] *the* Dalton.  
 448. *That*] *the* Eg. MS. *unconquer'd*] Milton first wrote *eternall*, then *unvanquish'd*, and finally as in the text. 449. Milton began the line with *freessind*, apparently for *freessing*, but struck it out. 449-452. *stone...*  
*avee*] Tickell. *stone?*...*ave*. 1645, 1673. 452. *and blank avee*] Milton first wrote *of her purenesse*, then *of bright rays*. 454. *a soul is found*] *it finds a soule* Trin. MS. originally. 456. *Driving...guilt*] Added in the margin of Trin. MS. 460. *Begin*] *begins* Eg. MS. and Trin. MS. originally.  
 465. *Bus*] 1637, 1645, 1673. & Trin. MS. and Eg. MS. *lewd* and *lawish*] Milton first wrote *the lascivious*, then *lewd lascivious* as in Eg. MS., and finally as in the text. 468. *quite lose*] *loose quite* Trin. MS. originally, but marked for transposition. 471. *sepulchres*] Milton began to write *monuments*. 472. *Lingering*] *hovering* Trin. MS. *hoveringe* Eg. MS. *new-made*] Hyphenated by Tickell. 474. *sensuality*] *sensualitie* Eg. MS. 1637. *sensuality* 1673. 476. Opposite this line in the Trinity MS. was originally the stage-direction 'Hallow within.' The line at first ended *list bro. list*.  
 480. *surfeit*] MSS. *surfet* 1637, 1645, 1673. *I hear*] *me thought I heard* Trin. MS. originally. 481. Stage Direction in Trin. MS. 'hallow farre off.' *far-off*] *farre-of* Trin. MS. *farr of* Eg. MS. *farre off* 1637. *far off* 1645. *far of* 1673. *hallo*] *hallow* Trin. MS. 1645, 1673. *hollowe* Eg. MS. 483. *night-founder'd*] Hyphenated in 1645. 485. *roving robber*] In Trin. MS. *curl'd man of 3<sup>d</sup> sword*. Above the line, over the space between *curl'd* and *man*, is written *hedge*, and in the margin *some roaving robber* is added but afterwards struck out. 486. *Again, again*] *yet agen*, *agen* Trin. MS. originally. *agen*, *agen* Eg. MS. 1673. *agen agen* 1645. 487. *hallo*] *hallow* Trin. MS. 1645, 1673. 488-489. Between these lines in Trin. MS. was first written *had best looke to his forehead. heere be brambles*. This was altered to *he may chaunce scratch his forehead &c.*, and then struck out. 490. Stage Direction. Enter...The Attendant...shepherd.] 1637, 1645. he hallows the guardian Daemon hallows *agen* & enters in the habit of shepherd Trin. MS. he hallowes and is answered, the guardian daemon comes in habited like a shepherd Eg. MS. 490. *you?*] *you*, 1637. 491. *iron*] *pointed* Trin. MS. originally. 492. *that?*] *that*, 1637. 493. *father's*] *fathers* MSS. *father* 1637, 1645, 1673. 496. *sweeten'd*] *sweetned* MSS. *dale*] *valley* Trin. MS. originally. 497. *thou*] om. Eg. MS. *swain?*] 1645, 1673. *Swaine*, 1637. *shepherd*, MSS. 498. *Slipp'd from the fold*] *slipp't from his fold* Trin. MS. *leapt ore the penne* Trin. MS. originally. 499. *the pent*] *hath the pen't* Trin. MS. originally. *forsook?*] Trin. MS. 1645, 1673. *forsook*, 1637. 512. *Thyrsis*] Milton began to write *shep*. 513. *Spir.*] *Dee*. Trin. MS. originally *Shep. - ye*] 1645, 1673. *you* MSS. 1637. 519. *For...blind*] Added in the margin of Trin. MS. 520. *navel*] *navill* MSS. 1637. *navil* 1645, 1673. 523. *Deep skill'd*] First *enur'd*, then *deepe tearut*, and finally *deepe skill'd*, in Trin. MS. 528. *And the*]

Milton at first intended to write *and makes the*. 531. *hilly crofts*] *pastur'd lawns* Trin. MS. originally.

545. *flaunting*] Milton first wrote what looks like *suckling*, a local name for *honeysuckle*. This he altered to *blowing*, but struck it out and wrote *flaunting* in the margin; then *blowing* again, and lastly *flaunting*. The doubtful word is certainly not *spreading* as Birch and others read it.

546-7. These two lines were originally transposed in Trin. MS. 547. *meditate*] *meditate upon* 1673. 548. *a close*] *the close* Trin. MS. originally.

551. *ceased*, and *listen'd*] *cease & listen* Trin. MS. originally.

553. *droway-flighted*] Hyphenated in Newton's note but not in his text. *drowsie flighted* Trin. MS. *drowsie flighted* Eg. MS.

1637, 1645, 1673. Dalton reads *drowsy frighted*, and not *drowsy-flighted* as stated by Newton. *drowsie-frighted* Bowle conj.

555. *soft*] Milton first wrote *soft*, then *still*, then *soft* again, then *sweet*, and finally restored *soft*.

*solemn-breathing*] Warton. 556. The line at first stood

*rose like the softe steame of distill'd perfumes*

as in Eg. MS. Then

*rose like a steame of slow distill'd perfumes,*

and finally *slow* was altered to *rich*. *steame*] *stream* 1673.

561. *that might create*] *might recreate* Theobald conj.

563. *did*] 1637, 1645, 1673. *might* MSS.

572. *know*] *knowe* Eg. MS.

574. *aidders*] Milton at first appears to have written *helplesse*, but struck it out and added at the end of the line *who took him*. This again he rejected and wrote *aidders* for *helplesse*.

578. *with*] & *w<sup>th</sup>* Trin. MS. originally.

580. *But*] Milton first began the line *and this*. *further*] 1673. *further* MSS. 1645. *farther* 1637.

581. *ye*] *you* Eg. MS.

597. *self-consumed*] *selfe consum'd* MSS. 1637. *self-consum'd* 1645, 1673.

599. *But*] om. Landor conj.

603. *gristly*] *greisly* Trin. MS. 1637, 1645, 1673. *grisley* Eg. MS.

605. *forms*] *bugges* Trin. MS. *bugg* Eg. MS. *bugs* 1637. *all*] added above the line in Trin. MS.

607. *return his purchase back*] *relaxe his new got prey* Trin. MS. originally.

608-9. *to a foul...life*] & *cleave his scalps*

*downe to the hipps* Eg. MS. and Trin. MS. originally. This was altered in Trin. MS. to *lowest hips*, and then *lowest* was struck out.

609. *ventrous*] *ventrous* MSS. 1637, 1645, 1673.

610. *thy*] *the* Eg. MS.

611. *sword*] *steale* Trin. MS. originally.

*little stead*] In Trin. MS. this was first altered to *small avall* and then restored.

614. *unthral*] *unquilt* Trin. MS. originally.

615. *all thy sinew*] *every sinew* Trin. MS. originally.

616. *thyself*] om. Eg. MS.

624. *I did*] *he did* Eg. MS.

626. *ope*] *open* Eg. MS.

627. *namer*] *hew* Trin. MS. originally.

632-7. *But...gave*] Omitted in Eg. MS.

632. *But*] and Keightley conj.

633. *Bore*] *It bore* Keightley conj.

*but not*] *not* Newton conj.

*but* Seward conj.

634. *like*] *light* Seward conj.

*little* Fenton (1727).

636-7. Added in the margin of Trin. MS.

636. *is it than that Moly*] *then that ancient Moly* Trin. MS. originally.

637. *That Hermes once*] *w<sup>th</sup> Hermes once*

Trin. MS. which originally had *that Mercury*. 638. *Hamony*] *Hamonie*  
 Trin. MS. originally. 639. *sovran*] 1645. *sov'ran* 1673. *soveraine* Trin.  
 MS. 1637. *soveraigne* Eg. MS. 640. *mildew blast*] *mildew, blast* 1695.  
 641. *gastly*] Trin. MS. 1637, 1645, 1673. *gastlie* Eg. MS. *ghastly* Tickell.  
*Furies*] *fairies* Peck conj. 648. *when we go*] Eg. MS. 1645, 1673.  
*when wee goe* 1637. *as wee go* Trin. MS. altered to *when on the way*, and  
 then to *when we goe*. 649. *the necromancer's hall*] *the negromancer's*  
*hall* Eg. MS. *his necromantick hall* Trin. MS. originally. 650. *dauntless*  
*hardihood*] *suddaine violence* Trin. MS. originally. 651. *blade*] *blades*  
 Trin. MS. originally. 652. *shed*] *powre* Trin. MS. originally. *liquor*]  
*potion* Trin. MS. originally. 653. *But*] and Trin. MS. originally.  
 656. *will they*] *they will* Trin. MS. originally. 657. *I'N*] *I* MSS.  
 658. *And...us*] & *good heaven cast his best regard upon us* Trin. MS.  
 originally. Stage Direction. *soft music*] omitted in MSS. appears] is  
 discover'd Trin. MS. to whom...rise] She offers to rise. Trin. MS.  
 660. *alabaster*] Tickell. *alabaster* MSS. 1637, 1645, 1673. 661. *or as*]  
*fixt*, as Trin. MS. 662-6. *Foot...frown?*] Added in the margin of Trin. MS.  
 662. *do not boast*] *thou art over proud* Trin. MS. originally. 664. *With*  
*all*] *Withall* 1637, 1645. 666. *Lady?*] *Ladie*, 1637. 669. *fancy*] *youth*  
 & *fancie* Trin. MS. originally. *boget on*] *invent* in Trin. MS. originally.  
 670. *fresh*] *briske* Trin. MS. originally. 675. *Nepenthes*] *Nephentes* 1705.  
 676. *Jove-born*] Hyphenated in Eg. MS. 1637, 1645, 1673. 678. After this  
 line is inserted in both MSS. and then struck out

*poor ladie thou hast need of some refreshing.*

679-687. Omitted in Eg. MS. 688-9. *have*] *hast* MSS. originally.  
 688. *been*] *bin* Trin. MS. 689. *But*] *heere* MSS. originally. 695. *ugly-*  
*headed*] *ougly headed* Trin. MS. *ougly headed* Eg. MS. *ougly-headed* 1637.  
*oughley-headed* 1645, 1673. 696. *brew'd enchantments*] *hel brew'd opiate*  
 Trin. MS. originally. 697-700. Omitted in Eg. MS. 698. *forgery*,]  
*forgeries* Trin. MS. *forgery?* 1695. 707. *fur*] *gowne* Trin. MS.  
 709. *sallow*] *shallow* Eg. MS. 712. *fruits, and flocks*] & *w<sup>th</sup> fruits*  
 Trin. MS. originally. 713. *Thronging*] *crumming* Trin. MS. originally.  
 After this line there was in the Trinity MS. at first

*the feilds w<sup>th</sup> cattell & the aire w<sup>th</sup> fowle.*

716. *smooth-hair'd*] 1637, 1645, 1673. *smooth haird* Trin. MS. *smoote-*  
*haired* Eg. MS. 717. *To deck*] *to adorne* Trin. MS. originally.  
 719. *hutch'd*] *hatch'd* Warton conj. 721. *pulse*] Altered in Trin. MS.  
 to *fetches* and then restored. 722. *frieze*] Tickell. *fraise* Trin. MS.  
*frieze* Eg. MS. *Freize* 1637, 1645, 1673. 727. *And live like*] *living* at  
 Trin. MS. originally, but the writing is blotted and difficult to read.  
 729. Added in the margin of the Trin. MS. 732. *would swell*] *would*  
*heave her waters up above the shoare* Trin. MS. originally. 733. *Would...*  
*deep*] *would so be studd the center w<sup>th</sup> thire starrelight* Trin. MS. originally.

733-4. *Would...below*] *would see emblaze with starrs, that they below* Eg. MS. 734. *And so bestud with stars*] *were they not taken thence* Trin.

MS. originally. 735. *light*] *day* Trin. MS. originally. 737-755. Omitted in Eg. MS. 737. *and*] In Trin. MS. Milton first wrote *nor*, altered it to

*and*, and then restored *nor*. 743. *a*] *an* Trin. MS. but marked for

correction. 744. *with languish'd head*] *& fades away* Trin. MS. originally.

745. *at feasts*] *in feasts* Newton. 749. *thence*] *from thence* Trin. MS.

originally. *coarse*] Trin. MS. *course* 1637, 1645, 1673. *complexions*]

*beetle brows* Trin. MS. originally. 751. *sampler*] *sample* Trin. MS.

*and*] or Trin. MS. *tease*] Newton. *teize* Trin. MS. 1637, 1645, 1673.

755. *and be...yet*] *& looke upon this cordiall julep* Trin. MS. originally,

followed by lines 673-8. Then comes

*poore Ladie thou hast need of some refreshing*

*that hast bin tir'd all day w<sup>th</sup> out repast*

*& timely rest hast wanted heere sweet Ladie faire virgin*

*this will restore all soone La stand back false traitor*

followed by lines 663-5, 693-5. Then follow six lines which are now represented by lines 696-703, but very much altered. *yet*] om. Landor conj.

758. *mine*] *my* Eg. MS. 763. *would*] *went* Trin. MS. originally.

764. *cateress*] *Chateresse* Eg. MS. *caterusse* Trin. MS. 1637. *cateres* 1645,

1673. 765. *Means*] *intends* Trin. MS. originally. 772.  *blessings*]

*blessings* Eg. MS. 777. *feast*] *feasts* Eg. MS. 779-806. *Shall I...*

*strongly*] Omitted in both MSS. 780. *enough*] 1637. *anough* 1645.

*anow* 1673. *enow* Keightley. 781. *contemptuans*] 1645, 1673.

*reproachful* 1637. 800. *She fables not. I feel that*] *She fables not, I feel*

*that*; Sympson conj. 806. *Come, no more*] *Come y<sup>e</sup> are too morall*

Trin. MS. originally. 807-810. The Trinity MS. originally had

*this is meere morall stuffe the very lees*

*& settlings of a melancholy blood*

The first line was altered to

*this is youre morall stuffe the tilted lees.*

807. *This is*] *this* Trin. MS. *direct*] *direct* 1637. 809. *yet*] om. Tickell.

810. *settling*] *settling* Eg. MS. 814. Stage Direction. As in 1645, 1673.

Eg. MS. has 'glasse of liquor,' and 'the Demon is to come in with the brothers.'

In the Trinity MS. it is 'the brothers rush in strike his glasse downe the

shapes (originally 'monsters') make as though they would resist but are all

driven in. Demon enters w<sup>th</sup> them.' *you*] *ye* Eg. MS. *scape*] *pass*

Trin. MS. originally. 816. *rod*] *art* Trin. MS. originally. 818. *sits*

*here*] *remaines* Trin. MS. altered to *heere sits*. 821. *Some other means*

*I have*] *there is another way* Trin. MS. *which*] *that* MSS. 823. *soothest*]

*smoothest* Tickell. 825. *smooth*] *smoote* Eg. MS. 826. *virgin pure*]

*goddess chast* Trin. MS. originally. 828. *That*] *whoe* Eg. MS. 829. *She*]

*The* 1673. 831. *flood*] *floud* Trin. MS. altered to *stream* and then

restored.

834. *pearled...in] white wrists to receive her in* Trin. MS. originally. For *receive* was first substituted *carie*, then *take*, and finally as in the text. *pearled] peackled* Eg. MS. 835. *Bearing] and bore* Trin. MS. originally. 846. *make] leave* Trin. MS. originally. After this Trin. MS. has

*and often takes our cattell w<sup>th</sup> strange pinches.*

847. Omitted in Eg. MS. *vial'd] Newton. vield* Trin. MS. 1637, 1645, 1673. 849. *rustic] lovely* Trin. MS. originally. 851. *pansies, pinks, and gaudy] pancies & of bonnie* Trin. MS. originally. Then *bonnie* was altered to *gandie* and finally the present text was substituted. 853. *The] each* Trin. MS. originally. *thaw...spell] Trin. MS. had first secret holding spell*, then *melt each numing spell*, and finally as in the text. 857. *In hard-besetting need] in honourd vertues cause* Trin. MS. originally, altered to *in hard distressed need. hard-besetting]* Hyphenated in 1695. 858. *power] Trin. MS. originally had power*, which was first altered to *call* and then restored. *adjoining] strong* Trin. MS. originally. 860. In Trin. MS. the line was at first

*Listen virgin where thou sit'st.*

863. *amber-droppings] amber dropping* Bradshaw. 867. Eg. MS. has 'The verse to singe or not.' In the margin of Trin. MS. is written 'to be said.' In Eg. MS. lines 871-2, 875-6, 879-882 are given to the Elder Brother; lines 873-4, 877-8 to the Second Brother, and 883-9 to the Demon. 869-874. *By...spell]* Added in the margin of Trin. MS. 879-882. Struck out in Trin. MS. 883-4. Added in the margin of Trin. MS. 883. *that] of* Eg. MS. 890. Stage Direction. *by] by the* Eg. MS. w<sup>th</sup> the Trin. MS. *rushy-fringed] rush-yfringed* Warton conj. 893. *azurn] Azur'd* Eg. MS. 894. *turkis...emerald] turquis...emrald* Trin. MS. originally, altered to *turkis...emrauld*. 895. *That...strays] Trin. MS. at first had that my rich wheeles inlayes.*

897. *set] rest* Eg. MS. 898. *velocet] om.* Eg. MS. 900. *request] Milton began writing behest.* 904. *charmed] Milton began writing magic.* 907. *enchanter] inchaunters* Eg. MS. 910. *Brightest] vertuous* Trin. MS. originally. 911. *thy] this* Eg. MS. 913. *cure] ure* Calton conj. 918. Opposite this line in the margin of Trin. MS. is written 'Sabrina descends,' and opposite the next two lines 'the ladie rises out of her seate.' 921. In Trin. MS. the line was originally

*To waite on Amphitrite in her bowre.*

924. *brimmed] crystall* Trin. MS. originally. *brined* Warburton conj. 927. *tumble] tumbled* 1673. *the] from* Trin. MS. originally. 937. After this line the MSS. have 'Song ends.' 938. In Eg. MS. the lines 938-943 and 956-7 are given to the Elder Brother and lines 944-955 to the Demon. *Lady] Sister* Eg. MS. 948. *ma] come* Trin. MS. originally. 951. *there] nere* MSS. 953. *theis] this* Eg. MS. 956. *grow] are* MSS. and 1637.

In Trin. ms. *grow* is written in the margin. 957. *sits*] *raignes* Trin. ms. originally. 958. Stage Direction. presenting] and then is presented Trin. ms. then is presented Eg. ms. then come in] then enter Trin. ms. Dancers] dances & such like gambols &c. Trin. ms. daunces, and the like &c. Eg. ms. after them...] at (originally 'After') those sports the Daemon w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> 2 bro. & the Ladie enter Trin. ms. towards the end of these sports the demon with the 2 brothers and the ladye come in Eg. ms. Song. Spir.] the Daemon sings Trin. ms. the spiritt singes. Eg. ms. Enough] mss. 1637. enough 1645, 1673. 962. *Of..guise*] Trin. ms. had at first *of speedier toeing* (altered to *toes*) & *courtly guise*. Then *speedier* was changed to *nimbler* and *courtly* to *such neate*, and finally the line assumed its present form. 963. In Trin. ms. the line at first stood

*such as Hermes did devise.*

966. This second Song...] 1637, 1645, 1673. 2 song Trin. ms. 2 Songe presents...Eg. ms.

971. *patience*] First altered in Trin. ms. to *temperance* and then restored.

973. *With...praise*] to...boys Trin. ms. originally.

976. The dances ended...] 1637, 1645, 1673. they dance. the dances all ended the Daemon sings, or sayes Trin. ms. (first draft).

976-1011. *To the ocean...sworn*] Omitted in Eg. ms. in which lines 976-983 and 988-996, 998, 999 with some alterations are converted into a Prologue.

976. *To the ocean*] *From the heavens* Eg. ms. 979. *broad*] *plaine* Trin. ms. with *broad* in margin (first draft).

*fields*] *field* Eg. ms. After this line the first draft of Trin. ms. had *forre beyond y carths end where the walkin cleere* (changed to *low*) *doth bend*.

982. In the first draft of Trin. ms. the line stood *of Atlas & his daughters three*.

Then *daughters* was altered to *neeces*; afterwards *Atlas* to *Heisperus* and *daughters* was restored.

983. In the second draft of Trin. ms. the reading was

*where grows the right-borne gold upon his native tree.*

984-7. Omitted in first draft of Trin. ms. 988. *There*] *that there* Trin. ms. 1637 and ed. 1673, corrected in Emata.

990. *cedarn*] *myrtle* Trin. ms. (first draft).

991. *Nard...smells*] *balme*, and *casia's* fragrant smells Trin. ms. (first draft).

992. *humid*] In first draft of Trin. ms. *garnish't*, altered to *garish* and then to *humid*.

995. *purfled*] *watchet* Trin. ms. (first draft). After this line Trin. ms. (first draft) had

*yellow, watchet, greene, & blew,*

which also appears in Eg. ms. and in the second draft of Trin. ms. but is there struck out.

996. *with Elysian*] *oft w<sup>th</sup> manna* Trin. ms. (first draft) and Eg. ms. w<sup>th</sup> *Sabaeen* Trin. ms. (second draft originally).

997. *List...true*] Omitted in Eg. ms. In the margin of Trin. ms. (second draft).

999. *young Adonis oft*] *many a cherub soft* Trin. ms. (first draft) and Eg. ms.

1000-1011. *Waxing...sworn*] Omitted in Eg. ms. and Trin. ms. (first draft).

1002. *Assyrian*] *Cyprian* Tickell. 1012. *But now*]

Now Eg. MS. and Trin. MS. (first draft). *my task is smoothly done*] *my message well is don* Trin. MS. (first draft); then *businessse* was substituted for *message* and finally the present text. 1014. *green carle's*] *earths greene* Eg. MS. and Trin. MS. (first draft) originally. 1020. *ye*] *you* Eg. MS. 1023. *stoop*] *bow* Trin. MS. (first draft) originally. After this Trin. MS. (first draft) has 'Exit the end. Finis.' The second draft has 'The end'; and Eg. MS. 'Finis.'

## LYCIDAS.

In the University Library, Cambridge, there is a copy of *Lycidas*, ed. 1638, with corrections in Milton's hand. In the heading the words 'And by occasion...height' are omitted in the Trinity MS. They are in the edition of 1645.

2. *never sere*] Hyphenated in 1638, 1645. 6. *dear*] 1645. *deare* MS. and 1638. 8. *For Lycidas*] *young Lycidas* MS. originally. 9. *Young Lycidas*] (*Young Lycidas*!) 1638. 10. *he well knew*] MS. *he knew* 1638 (corrected by Milton to *he well knew*). 12. *bier*] *biere* 1638. *beare* MS. *bear* 1645, 1673. 17. *loudly*] *louder* 1713. 22. *And*] *to* MS. originally. 25. *Together both &c.*] A new paragraph in 1645. 26. *opening*] *glimmering* 1638 and MS. originally. 30. *till the star...* *bright*] *till the ev'n starre bright* MS. (corrected to *till the starre that rose in Evening bright*). *till the ev'n-starre bright* 1638. 31. *westerling*] *burnisht* 1638 and MS. corrected to *westring*. 33. *Temper'd to the*] *Temper'd to th'* 1638. *temper'd to th'* MS. 37. *gone*] struck out and then restored in MS. 39. *Thee, Shepherd,*] *thee shepheard*, MS. *Thee Shepherd*, 1645, 1673. *thee shepherds*, 1638. 41. *echoes*] *Eccho* MS. altered to *Echo's*. 42. *hazel copses*] *hasil-copses* 1638. 46. *weanling*] *weaning* 1713. 47. *wardrobe wear*] *buttons weare* MS. originally, altered to *buttons beare* and then to *wardrobe weare*. 49. *shepherds*] Keightley. *Shepherd's* Tickell. 51. *loved*] *lov'd* 1638, corrected in Milton's own hand to *lov'd*. It is difficult to say whether in the MS. he began writing *your* for *young* or whether he repeated *your* by mistake. In either case it is corrected to *lov'd*. 53. *your*] *the* 1638, corrected in Milton's hand to *your*. The MS. has *yo'*. 56. *Ay me! I fondly dream,*] *Ah me, I fondly dream!* 1638. 56-7. *dream, Had ye been there*] *dreams had yee bin there*, MS., followed by Newton. 58-63. *What...shore?*] The MS. originally had *what could the golden hayrd Calliope for her inchanting son when shoe beheld (the gods farre sighted bee) his goaric scalpe rowle downs the Thracian leo*.

Of these lines the first, third and fourth are struck out and in the margin is written



*whom universal nature might lament  
and heaven and hel deplore  
when his divine head downe the streame was sent  
downe the swift Hebrus to the Lesbian shore.*

The second of these lines is obliterated entirely, and the third partially. In the final draft Milton wrote what we now have in the text, altering *might lament* to *did lament* and *divine visage* to *gorie* (or *gorie*) *visage*. 66. *strictly*] *stridly* 1638. 67. *use*] MS. and 1645. *do* 1638, corrected to *use* in Milton's hand. 69. *Or with*] *hid* in MS. (and ed. 1638), corrected to *or with*. 73. *when*] *where* 1638. 75. *Fury*] *fairie* Peck conj. 85. *honour'd*] *smooth* MS. originally, altered first to *fam'd* and then to *honour'd*. 86. *Smooth-sliding*] 1638. *soft sliding* MS. originally, altered to *smooth sliding*. 91. *felon*] *fellow* MS. 93. *wings*] *winds* 1705. 103. *Camus*] *Chamus* 1638. 105. *Inwrought*] *scrauld ore* MS. altered to *inwrought*. 114. *Enough*] 1638. *anough* MS. *Anow* 1645. *Enow* Tickell. 120. *ought*] Warton. *ought* MS. 1638. 121. *herdman's*] *heardsmans* MS. *shepherd's* Peck conj. 129. *nothing said*] *nothing sed* 1645 and MS. originally, altered to *little sed*. Ed. 1638 has *little said*. 131. *and smite*] *and smites* 1638. 138. *sparely*] So MS. originally. This was first altered to *faintly* and then *sparely* was restored. The reading *stintly* recorded by Warton and Todd is a mistake. 139. *Throw*] *bring* MS. originally, altered to *throw*. 142-151. The first draft of these lines reads thus:

*Bring the rathe primrose that unwedded dies  
colouring the pale cheeks of unjoyed love  
and that sad floure that strove  
to write his owne woes on the vermeil grain  
next adde Narcissus y<sup>e</sup> still weeps in vaine  
the woodbine and y<sup>e</sup> punicke frait w<sup>th</sup> jet  
the glowing violet  
the cowslip wan that hangs his pensive head  
and every bud that sorrowes liverie weares  
let Daffadillies fill thire cups with teares  
bid Amaranthus all his beautie shed  
to strew the laurent herse &c.*

143. *jessamine*] *Gessamine* MS. *Gessamine* 1638. 144. *freakt*] *streakt* Meadowcourt conj. 145. *glowing*] *gloming* Lander conj. 146. *the well-attired woodbine*] *the garish columbine* MS. originally, altered to *well-attir'd woodbine*. 148. *embroidery weares*] The MS. at first had *escutcheon beares*. This was changed to *escutcheon weares*, then to *imbroidric beares*, and finally to *imbroidric weares*. 149. *amaranthus*] *Amarantus* 1673. *beauty*] *beauties* MS. 150. *And*] *let* MS. originally, transposing lines 149, 150. 151. *Lycid*] MS. *Lycid* 1638. 153. *frail*] *sad* MS.

altered to *frail*. *surmise*] 1638. *surmise*. 1645. *surmise*, Keightley.  
 154. *shores*] *floods* MS. altered to *shoars*. 157. *whelming*] *humming*  
 MS. and ed. 1638, but altered in Milton's hand to *whelming*, as in ed. 1645.  
 160. *Bellerus*] *Corineus* MS. originally, altered to *Bellerus*. 166. *Lycidas*  
*your sorrow*] *Lycidas, your sorrow*, Keightley. 170. *new-spangled*] *newspangled* MS. *new spangled* 1638. 172. *high*] struck out and then  
 restored in MS. 175. *pure*] struck out and then restored in MS. *oozy*] 1645. *oasis* 1638. Corrected by Milton to *oost*. 176. *And hears*] *listening* MS. originally, altered to *heares*. 177. *In the blest...love*  
 Omitted in ed. 1638. Milton inserted in his own hand  
*in the blest kingdoms mecke of Joy and Love*.  
 191. *the western*] *westren* MS. originally, altered to *the wester'n*.

## SONNETS.

I. First printed in 1645. Title 'To the Nightingale' first given by Tickell.

II. Title first given by Tickell, 'On his being arriv'd to his 23d year.'

1. *subtle*] Newton. *subtle* MS. 1645, 1673. *subtile* Tickell. 2. *Stolen*] *stolne* MS. *Stoln* 1645. *Soln* 1673. *twentieth*] *twentith* MS. 1645.

III. 1. *onora*] Keightley. *honora* 1645, 1673. 2. *L' erbosa*] Keightley. *L' herbosa* 1645, 1673. *Reno*] Keightley. *Rheno* 1645, 1673.  
 3. *Bene*] *Ben* 1645. 6. *De' sui*] Keightley. *De suoi* 1645. *De sui* 1673. *grammai*] Keightley. *giamai* 1645, 1673. 7. *don*] *don* Keightley. 8. *Laonde*] Keightley. *La onde* 1645, 1673.  
 13. *Grazia*] Keightley. *Gratia* 1645, 1673. *inanti*] Keightley. *inanti* 1645, 1673.

IV. 2. *avvezza*] Keightley. *avvezza* 1645, 1673. 3. *erbetta*] Keightley. *herbetta* 1645, 1673. 14. *dal ciel*] *din' 'l ciel* Anon. conj. (N. and Q. 1858).

Canzone. 6. *de'*] Keightley. *de* 1645, 1673. 10. *or ad or*] Keightley. *hor, ad hor* 1645, 1673.

V. 2. *solaz*] 1673. *solla* 1645. 3. *rida*] 1673. *rida* 1645. 4. *uoni*] Keightley. *huoni* 1645, 1673. *talor*] Keightley. *talhor* 1645, 1673. 8. *onesti*] Keightley. *honesti* 1643, 1673. 11. *emisfero*] Keightley. *hemisfero* 1645, 1673. 13. *avventa*] Keightley. *avventa* 1645, 1673.

VI. 10. *Scossoni*] Masson. *Scosso mi* 1645, 1673. 12. *agli*] Masson. *a gli* 1645, 1673.

VII. 2. *Poichè*] Keightley. *Poi che* 1645, 1673. 5. *ebbi*] Keightley. *hebbi* 1645, 1673.

VIII. In the editions of 1645 and 1673 this Sonnet has no title. In the Trinity MS. there was originally, in the handwriting of the amanuensis who transcribed the Sonnet, 'On his dore when y<sup>e</sup> Citty expected an assault.' This was struck out by Milton, who in his own hand substituted 'When the assault was intended to y<sup>e</sup> Citty.' 3. *If deat...please*] 1673. *If ever deed of honour did thee please* Trin. MS. 1645. II. *temple and*] *temple* and Trin. MS.

IX. This Sonnet has no title in Trin. MS. The present heading was added by Newton. In 1713 it is 'To a Lady.' 5. *with Ruth*] *the Ruth* 1645. 7. *growing virtues*] Trin. MS. originally had *blooming virtues*, then *blooming vertue*, then *blooming* was altered to *prospering*, and finally *growing virtues* was written in the margin. 13. Milton at first wrote

*opens the dore of Bliss, that houre of night,*

for which he substituted

*passes to Bliss at y<sup>e</sup> midd watch of night*

and then altered *watch* to *hour*.

X. Title as in MS. 3. *lived in*] *left them* Trin. MS. originally.

XI. Not in ed. 1645. The heading was first prefixed to the following Sonnet, which was originally numbered 11, to 'follow y<sup>e</sup> 10. in y<sup>e</sup> printed booke,' as the MS. says. In ed. 1673 the order of Sonnets XI. and XII. was changed to the present. The first draft is in Milton's own hand, and there is a fair copy by another.

1. *A book was writ*] *I writt a book* Trin. MS. (first draft). 2. *wooven*] *wew'd it* Trin. MS. (first draft). 3. *The...walk'd*] *It went off well about* Trin. MS. (first draft). 4. *intellects; now*] *wits; but now is* Trin. MS. (first draft). 8. *is it*] 1673 (Errata). *is* 1673. *it is* Keightley. 9. *Galasp?*] *Galasp*. Keightley. 10. *rugged*] *barbarous* Trin. MS. (first draft), altered to *rough heven* and then to *rugged*.

XII. Not in ed. 1645. In Trin. MS. there are two copies, one in Milton's own hand, the other in that of an amanuensis. 4. *cuckoos*] *buzzards* Trin. MS. (first draft). 10. *And...free*] *And hate the truth wherby they should be free* Trin. MS. (first draft), corrected by Milton to the present reading.

XIII. Not in ed. 1645. In the Trinity MS. there are three copies. First, a rough draft in Milton's own hand, then a fair copy also by Milton, and lastly a copy by an amanuensis. The heading of the first is 'To my freind M<sup>r</sup> Hen. Laws Feb. 9. 1645.' This was left when Milton

struck out the first draft and wrote the fair copy, to which it was evidently intended to serve as a heading. But the amanuensis who wrote the third copy inserted instead, and also before his own transcript, 'To M<sup>r</sup> Hen: Laws on the publishing of his Aires,' and the heading of the third copy was still further changed by omitting 'the publishing of.' 3. *Words...scan*] *words with just notes, w<sup>ch</sup> till then us'd to scan or when most were wont to scan* Trin. MS. (first draft). 4. *committing*] *misjoyning* Trin. MS. (first draft) in margin. 5. *worth*] *wit* Trin. MS. (first draft), *worth* being struck out, but afterwards restored. 6. *With...wan*] *and gives thee praise above the pipe of Pan* Trin. MS. (first draft). 7. *after age*] Trin. MS. (first draft). *after-age* Trin. MS. (fair copies). *the man*] *a man* Trin. MS. (first draft). 8. *That...tongue*] *that didst reform thy art, the chief among* Trin. MS. (first draft). *air*] *aires* Trin. MS. (Milton's fair copy) originally. 9. *lend*] Trin. MS. (three copies). *send* 1673. 12. *Dante...higher*] *Fame by the Tuscan's leav, shall set thee higher* Trin. MS. (first draft). 13. The MS. of the rough draft is blotted, but it seems that Milton first wrote

*then old Casell' whom Dante won to sing.*

The changes he afterwards made were consequent upon the changes in the previous line.

14. *milder*] *mildest* Trin. MS. (first draft), originally.

XIV. Not in ed. 1645. In 1673 it had no title. In 1713 it is called 'An Elegy.' In the Trinity MS. the title as given here is in Milton's hand. Of this Sonnet as of the last there are three copies in the MS. The first is Milton's rough draft, the second his fair copy, and the third a copy by an amanuensis. 3. *loud*] *clod* Trin. MS. (first draft). 4. *from life*] *from blis* Trin. MS. (third copy), originally. *Of death...sever*] *Of Flesh & sin, w<sup>ch</sup> man from heavn doth sever* Trin. MS. (first draft). 6-8. *Stay'd...ever*] In his first draft Milton wrote

*Strait follow'd thee the path that Saints have trod  
Still as they journey'd from this dark abode  
Up to y<sup>e</sup> Realm of peace & Joy for ever.*

In the second of these lines he changed *as to when* and afterwards wrote in the margin the lines as we have them. 9. *Love...best*] *Faith who led on y<sup>e</sup> way, & knew them best* Trin. MS. (first draft) originally. This was changed to

*Faith shew'd y<sup>e</sup> way, & shew who saw them best*

and so it stood at first in Milton's fair copy, but finally he altered it to what we have in the text.

11. *that*] *thence* Trin. MS. (first draft) originally. 12. *spake*] *speak* 1673. *in*] Trin. MS. (Milton's two copies). *on* Trin. MS. (third copy) and 1673.

On the new forcers of Conscience etc. First printed in 1673, with this title. In the Trinity MS. it is simply called 'On the forcers of Conscience.'

and is marked by Milton himself to come in before the Sonnet on Fairfax, and this is the place to which chronologically it belongs. 1. *off*] of 1673. 3. *widow'd*] vacant MS. originally. 6. *our*] the MS. originally. 8. *Rutherford*] *Rotherford* MS. 1673. 12. *shallow*] *haire braind* MS. originally, altered to *haire braind*, and then to *shallow*. 14. *packings*] MS. *packing* 1673. 17. *Clip...ears*] *Cropp yee as close as marginall P—s eares* MS. originally. *baulk*] *bank* MS. *bank* 1673, corrected to *bank* in Errata. 19. *they*] *you* MS. originally. 20. *large*] *at large* MS. originally.

XV. Not in 1645 or 1673. First printed in 1694. In the Trinity MS. it is written in Milton's own hand. The title there is 'On y<sup>e</sup> Lord Gen. Fairfax at y<sup>e</sup> seige of Colchester.' Newton changed it to 'To the Lord General Fairfax.' 2. *Filling each mouth*] MS. *And fills all Mouths* 1694. 4. *that*] *which* 1694. *kings*] MS. *things* 1699. 5. *virtue*] *vertue* MS. *Valour* 1694. 6. *though*] MS. *while* 1694. 7. *Hydra heads*] *Hydra-heads* 1694. 8. *broken*] *broking* Anon. conj. (Newton). *their*] MS. *her* 1694. 10. *endless war*] *Acts of War* 1694. 11. *truth and right*] *injur'd Truth* 1694. 12. *clear'd from the shameful brand*] *be rescu'd from the Brand* 1694. 13. *dotk*] *dos* 1699. 14. *share*] *shares* 1694.

XVI. Not in 1645 or 1673. First printed in 1694. In the Trinity MS. it is in the handwriting of an amanuensis. The title in MS. is substantially the same as that given here with the addition of the date 'May 1652.' 1. *who*] *that* 1694. *cloud*] *Croud* 1694. 2. *detractions*] *distractions* 1694. 5, 6. *And...pursued*] *And Fought God's Battels, and his Work pursu'd* 1694. 7. *Darwen*] MS. *Darwent* 1694. *streams*] *Streams* 1694. 8. *resounds*] *resound* 1694. 9. *Worcester's laureate wreath*] *twentie battles more Trin. MS. originally. The words 'Worsters laureat wreath' were first written to take the place of 'Dumbarr feild' in the previous line, apparently by a mistake of the amanuensis.* 10. *hath*] *has* 1699. 11. *renown'd than war*] *than those of War* 1694. 12. *with*] *in* 1694.

XVII. Not in 1645 or 1673. Written July 3, 1653. First printed in 1662 in The Life and Death of Sir H. Vane by G. Sikes, and again in 1694. It is in the Trinity MS. but not in Milton's hand. 1. *counsel*] *counsell's* MS. originally. *Counsels* 1694. *Counsils* 1699. 5. *drift*] *drifts* MS. originally. 7. *Then*] *And* MS. originally. *best upheld*] *best, upheld*, MS. *best be upheld* 1694. *best b' upheld* 1699. *be best upheld* 1713. 8. *Move by*] *Move on* MS. originally. *Mann'd by*] 1694. 10. Omitted in 1713. *power*] om. 1694. *each means*] *it means* MS. originally. 11. *What...done*] *Thou teachest best, which few have ever don* MS. originally. This was first altered to *Thou hast learnt well, a praise which few have won*, and then

to what we have in the text. *sewers*] *serves* 1694. 13. *firm*] *right* MS. originally. *hand*] *arm* Warburton conj. 14. *In peace, and reckons thee*] *And reckons thee in chief* 1694.

XVIII. First printed in 1673. Not in Trin. MS. 10. *sow*] *so* 1673, corrected in Errata. 13. *hundredfold*] *hunder'd-fold* 1673.

XIX. First printed in 1673. Not in Trin. MS. Title added by Newton.

XX. First printed in 1673, but without a title. In 1713 the heading is 'To Mr Lawrence, Son to the President of Cromwell's Council.'

XXI. First printed in 1673 but without a title. In 1713 the title is 'On Cyriack Skinner.' The first four lines are wanting in the Trinity MS. 2. *with*] *with with* 1673. 8. *the Swede intends*] MS. *the Swede intend* 1673. *the Swedes intend* Featon. 14. *God*] *Gods* MS. originally.

XXII. First printed in 1694. In Trin. MS. but not in Milton's hand. 1. *these*] *there* 1713. 3. *light*] *Sight* 1694. 4. *doth sight*] *doth day* 1694. *dos day* 1699. *does day* 1713. 5. *Of sun*] *Or Sun* 1694. *star*] *Stars* 1713. 7. *Heaven's*] *Gods* MS. originally. *a jot*] MS. *one jot* 1694. 8. *bear up and steer*] *attend to steer* MS. originally. 9. *Right onward*] *Vphillward* MS. originally. 12. *Of which*] *Whereof* 1699. *talks*] MS. *rings* 1694. 13. *the*] *this* 1694. 14. *better*] *other* 1694.

XXIII. First printed in 1673. The title was added in 1713. It is in the Trinity MS. but in the handwriting of an amanuensis.

## TRANSLATIONS.

The Fragments of Translations were first collected from Milton's Prose Works in Tonson's edition of 1713. With these were included a piece from Ariosto which is really Harington's, and some verses from the English translation by Washington of the *Defensio pro Populo Anglicano*.

From Dante. 2. *domains*] *domaines* 1641.

From the History of Britain. 2. *rolling sphere*] *lowring Sphcars* 1713. *revolving spheres* Brydges.

Horace, *Od.* 1. 5. First printed in 1673. 3. *Pyrrha*] Newton. *Pyrrha* 1673. 5. *neatness*] 1713. *neatness*; 1673.

The translations from the Psalms were first printed in 1673.

LXXX. 20. *prayer*] Keightley. *prayer*! Tickell. *praise*. 1673. 55. *there*] *their* Newton (a misprint). 78. *vouchsafe*] 1705. *wontsafe* 1673.

LXXXI. 10. *trumpet's*] Tickell. *Trumpets* 1673. *trumpets* Keightley.  
19, 42. *Egypt land*] *Egypt-land* Keightley. *Egypt's land* Tickell.  
52. *device*] 1705. *devises* 1673.

LXXXII. 25. *in might* (italic)] 1673. *in might* (roman) Masson.

LXXXIII. 3. *not thou*] 1673. *thou not* 1695. 27. *Philistins*] 1673. *Philistians* 1695. *Philistins* 1713. *Philistines* Todd. 29. *Ashur*] 1673. *Ashur* 1705. 66. *is alone*] 1673. *is, alone* Masson.

LXXXIV. 3. *are*] Tickell. *are!* 1673. 4. *near!*] Tickell. *near*. 1673.

LXXXV. 8. *shall*] 1673. *should* Fenton (1727). 18. *thus?*] Tickell. *thus* 1673. 24. *alive?*] Tickell. *alive*. 1673. 26. *show*] 1673. *show* Rouse.

LXXXVI. 54. *show*] 1673. *show* Rouse.

LXXXVIII. 9. *store*] 1673. *sore* 1713. 41. *dead?*] Fenton. *dead*, 1673. 45. *loving-kindness*] Fenton. *loving kindness* 1673. 46. *hold?*] Todd. *hold*, 1673. 50. *known?*] Todd. *known*. 1673.

II. 5. *dear?*] 1695. *dear* 1673. 13. *Sion my holy hill?*] *Sion my holy hill* 1673. *Sion's holy Hill* Tickell. 18. *Heathen*] *Heaven* Warton (a misprint).

IV. 3. *straits*] Newton. *straights* 1673. 8. *scorn?*] Todd. *scorn* 1673. 10. *vanity?*] Todd. *vanity*, 1673. 14. *apart?*] 1695. *a part* 1673. 26. *good?*] 1673. *good* 1713. *good*, Tickell.

V. 16. *bloody and*] 1695. *bloodi' and* 1673.

VI. 4. *And*] 1673. *And* Newton. 22. *grown*] Tickell. *grow* 1673.

VII. 12. *nought*] Fenton. *naught* 1673. 22. *fury assuage*] *furi' assuage* 1673.

VIII. 2. *earth!*] Newton. *earth?* 1673. 3. *set,*] *set* 1673. *set!* Masson. 4. *hearth,*] 1673. *birth*. Newton. *breath!* Tickell. 14. *found?*] Newton. *found;* 1673. *found!* Tickell. 22. *Sea-paths*] 1673. *Sea paths* 1695.

## PARADISE LOST.

Commendatory verses. 1. *Amisson*] *Amisum* Verity conj. 9. *pontumque*] *Portumque* Edd. 2, 3. 15. *futurum*] *futura* Fenton.

On Paradise Lost. 11. *soon*] *still* Newton. 15. *he perplex'd*] *he'd*

*perplex* Todd. 31. *That* *The* Keightley. 39. *that* *the* Keightley.  
 42. *expense* *expanse* Anderson. 49. *fancies* *faces* Keightley.  
 51, 52. *offend...commend* *commend...offend* Fenton.

I. 6. *on the secret top* *secret on the top* Anon. conj. MS. *secret* *sacred* Bentley conj. 8. *seed* *seed* Keightley. 25. *Eternal* *th' Eternal* Ed. 1 corrected in Errata. 31-2. *his will* *For...besides* *his will* *For...besides*. Keightley. *his will* *For...besides*. Masson. 34. *Serpent* *he* *Serpent*? *He* Mull. 36. *The Mother* *Ther, Mother* Bentley conj. *Mankind, what time* *mankind what time* Mull. 52, 324. *in* *on* Bentley conj. 53-4. *But...worath* Put in a parenthesis by Mull. 54-6. *thought... Torments* *thoughts...Torment* Bentley conj. 59. *Angels hen* *Edd. 1-6* and Tickell read *Angels hens*. *Angels' hen* Keightley. *Angels' hen* Canon. 60-2. *wild: A dungeon horrible, on...round As...flamed* *wild—A dungeon horrible! on...round As...flamed!* Mull. 72. *utter* *outer* Bentley conj. and elsewhere. 72-3. *set As* *Ed. 1. set, As* Keightley. *set—As* Mull. 85. *him, who* *him!—who* Masson. 86. *didst* *did* Verity conj. 87. *bright! if* *bright: if* *Ed. 1. bright!—if* Keightley. *bright—if* Masson. 91. *In* *And* Capell MS. (Bentley conj.). 105-6. *lost?... lost;* *Ed. 1. lost, All...lost; Keightley. lost?...lost—* Masson. *lost, All...lost!* Mull. 107. *And* *Slow* Bentley conj. 109. Fenton puts this line in a parenthesis. *overcome?* *overcome*; Newton (Pearce conj.). *overcome—* Keightley. *And what is else, Not to be overcome?* Bentley. 127. *soon his bold* *said his old* Bentley conj. *slow his old* Anon. conj. MS. 131. *Fearless, endanger'd* *Peerless, endanger'd* Bentley conj. 138-141. *As far...extinct* Put in a parenthesis by Mull. 147. *pains,* *Pains?* 1719. 151. *Hell to work in fire,* *Hell—to work in fire!* Mull. 152. *deep?* Fenton. *Deep;* Ed. 1. 159. *never will* *will never* Bentley conj. 166. *ofttimes* *oft-times* 1695. *oft times* Ed. 1. 167. *disturb* *disturn* Bentley conj. 191. *If not* *If none* Bentley conj. 202. *the* *th'* Ed. 1. *ocean strait* *Hyphened* by Keightley. 204. *night-founder'd* *nigh-founder'd* Bentley conj. 228-230. *if it were...hine* Put in a parenthesis by Mull. 231. *wind* *winds* Pearce conj. 238. *unblest fest* *fest unblest'd* Bentley conj. *followed* *Edd. 1-3. follow'd* 1695. 243. *Archangel* *Arch-Angel* Ed. 2. *Arch Angel* Ed. 1. 244. *Heaven?* 1719. *Heav'n, Ed. 1. 247. right: farthest from him is best,* *right, farthest from him is best:* Mull. *farthest* 1688. *farrest* Ed. 1. 248. *hath equal'd* *equal'd* Bentley conj. 257. *all but* *albeit* Anon. conj. 259. *not built* *no Butt* Bentley conj. 282. *such a pernicious* *from such prodigious or precipitous* Bentley conj. 307. *chivalry* *chariotry* Bentley conj. 313. *Under* *Under th'* Bentley conj. 323-9. *conqueror, who...gulf?* *Conquerour? who...Gulfe* Ed. 1. *Conqueror—who...ensigns—till...gulf?*



Keightley. 332-3. *wont to watch* On duty, sleeping] *wont to watch*, On duty sleeping Keightley. 347. *as*] at Bentley conj. 352. *loins*] lines Pearce conj. doubtfully. 361. *their*] Ed. 1. Usually *thir*. 363. *Books*] *book* Cannon (Bentley conj.). 367. *lies*] *wiles* Bentley conj. 376. *then*] *when* Bentley conj. *known*,] *known*; Fenton. 380. *aloof*] Bentley. *aloof*? Ed. 1. 403. *that*] the Tickell. *grove*] *grove*, Mull. 407. *Arroer*] Ed. 1. *Arroer* Ed. 2. 409. *Horonaim*] *Horonaim* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 432. *those*] *these* Keightley conj. 435. *heads* at low] *heads*, as low Keightley. 459. *head...off*] (*head...off*) Mull. 460. *grunsel edge*] Hyphenated by Keightley. 462. *sea monster*] Hyphenated in ed. 1711. 480. *seek*] *deck* Mull. 489. *first-born*] 1707. *first born* Ed. 1. 496. *God?*] 1688. *God*. Ed. 1. 502. *flown*] *blown* Anon. conj. *swain* Warton conj. 504-5. *when... avoid*] *when hospitable Doves Yielded their Matrons to prevent* Ed. 1. 508. *gods, of...held*] *gods of Javan's issue; held* Todd. 509. *later than*] *later from* Mull. 510. *first-born*] Ed. 3. *first born* Edd. 1, 2. 523. *Downcast*] *Down-cast* Fenton. *Down cast* Ed. 1. 523-6. *yet such...itself*] In a parenthesis Pearce conj. 530. *fainting* Ed. 3. *fainted* Ed. 1. *fainting* Ed. 2. 537. *Shone...wind,*] *Shone—like...wind—* Mull. *Shone*] *Shon* Ed. 1 (and elsewhere). 543. *reign*] *Realm* Bentley conj. 551. *recorders*] *recorder* Newton (1770). 553. *instead*] 1688. *in stead* Ed. 1. 554. *and dazling arms, in guise*] *in dazling arms and guise* Capell ms. 559. *views, their*] *views, thir* Ed. 1. *views their* Fenton. 588-9. *proweess, yet observed Their dread Commander. He*] *proweess yet observed. Their dread Commander—he* Mull. 590. *gesture*] *Stature* Bentley conj. 593, 600. *Archangel*] *Arch-angel* 1688. *Arch Angel* Ed. 1. 594. *new-risen*] Hyphenated by Tickell. 606-11. *the followers...stood*] Put in a parenthesis by Mull. 634. *seat?*] Ed. 2. *seat*. Ed. 1. 635. *the host*] *this host* Bentley conj. *ye host* Pearce conj. 636. *different*] *d'er differ'd* Bentley conj. 642. *attempe*] *revolt* Bentley conj. 646. *or guile*] *and wile* Bentley conj. 647. *that he no less*] *that lesson he* Bentley conj. 648. *find*] *learn* Bentley conj. 660. *counsil*] *council* Capell conj. 669. *wauls*] *walls* Bentley conj. 673. *his womb*] *its womb* Newton conj. 675. *brigad*] *Brigade* Ed. 1. *Brigade* 1695. *hastend: as*] *hasten'd; As* Tickell. *hasten'd As* Ed. 1. *hasten'd. As* Ed. 2. 676. *pioners*] *pioneers* 1705. 680. *even*] *d'en* 1688. 684. *beatific*. *By him first*] *beatific, on him lost*. Bentley conj. 685. *and by*] *first by* Bentley conj. 696. *And strength*] *For strength* Bentley conj. *In strength* Pearce conj. 698-9. *they... performs*] *those...perform'd* Bentley conj. 703. *founded*] *found out* Ed. 2. 704. *the bullion dross*] *from bullion dross* Bentley conj. *the bullion-dross* Masson. 723. *stood fix'd*] *stood, fixed* Keightley. 725. *Within, her*] *Within her* 1705. *And high her* Bentley conj. 727. *subtle*] Ed. 3.

*subtle* Ed. 1. 730. *hasty*] *vasty* Mull. 733. *towered*] *Towered* Ed. 1.  
*tower'd* Todd. 737. *Hierarchy*] *Hierarchis* Ed. 2. *Hierarchie* Ed. 1.  
 746. *the Aegean*] *th' Aegean* Eds. 1, 2. *th' Aegean* Ed. 3. 747. *this*]  
*his* Mull. 752. *Meanwhile*] *Mean while* Ed. 1 (and elsewhere).  
*haralds*] Eds. 1, 2. *heralds* Ed. 3. In the Trinity MS., *Lycidas* 89,  
 Milton wrote 'Herald.' 754. *trumpet's*] Tickell. *Trumpets* Ed. 1.  
 758. *band and*] *and Band* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 760. *hundreds*]  
*hundreds* Ed. 2 (Errata to Ed. 1). 762. *wide, but*] *wide; but* Keightley conj.  
 769. *with Taurus*] in *Taurus* Bentley conj. 774. *balin*] Newton.  
*Baum* Ed. 1. *Baum* Ed. 2. *baulin* Fenton. 775. *state affairs*].  
 Hyphenated by Keightley. 785. *overhead*] *over-head* Ed. 2. *over head*  
 Ed. 1. 786. *course*] *Carr* Bentley conj.

II. 3. *Or where*] *There, where* Landor conj. 12-17. *For...fate*]  
 Put in a parenthesis by Bradshaw. 16. *than*] *then* Ed. 1 (and else-  
 where). 20. *counsel*] *council* 1688. 21. *been*] Ed. 3. *bin* Eds. 1, 2.  
 33-5. *none, whose...will covet more*] *none. Whose...He'll covet more!*  
 Heylin and Bentley conj. 40. *best way*] *way best* Bentley conj.  
 43. *Moloch*] 1691. *Moloch* Ed. 1. 52. *unexpert*] *inexpert* Fenton.  
 56. *sit*] *stay* Bentley conj. 57. *dwelling-place*] Tickell. *dwelling place*  
 Ed. 1. 61. *Hell flames*] Hyphenated by Keightley. 84-5. *destruction*],  
*if...destroy'd!* *What! destruction!* *If...destroyed, what* Mull. 90. *vassals*]  
*vassels* Bentley conj. *when*] *where* Mull. 91. *Inexorably*] *Inexorable*  
 Fenton. *hour*] *fire* Mull. 92. *Calls us to penance*] *Galls us to defiance*  
 Mull. 94. *what doubt*] *why doubt* so quoted in Johnson's Dictionary  
 (s.v. *Doubt*). 100. *we are at worst*] *we are, at worst*, Montgomery.  
 104. *fata!*] *natal* Mull conj. 108. *To less than gods*] *To no less than*  
*God* Mull. *gods*] *God* Bentley conj. 109-117. *in act...ear*] Put in a  
 parenthesis by Mull. 123. *Ominous conjecture*] *Conjecture ominous*  
 Bentley conj. 124. *fact*] *feats* Bentley conj. *facts* Newton conj.  
 132. *or with obscure wing*] *oft with wing obscure* Bentley conj.  
 146-151. *Sad...motion?*] (*Sad...eternity?*)—...*motion!* Mull. 146. *cure!*]  
 Tickell. *cure*; Ed. 1. *lose*] *lose* Ed. 1 (and elsewhere). 151. *motion*]  
*action* Bentley conj. *notion* Warburton and Upton conj. 165-8. *What,*  
*when...shelter us?...wounds.*] *What! when...shelter us,...wounds!* Mull.  
 165. *strook*] *struck* Todd. 174. *His*] *Her* Bentley conj. 178. *heads*].  
*heads!* Keightley. 178-9. *perhaps...war*] Put in a parenthesis by Mull.  
 181. *rock*] *red* Mull. 183. *chains*] *flames* Mull. 186. *end?*]  
 1688. *end*; Ed. 1. 196. *better these*] *better than* Bentley conj.  
 196-7. *worse, by my advice; since*] *worse!* *By my advice—since* Mull.  
 199. *will, To*] *will, to* Mull. *as to do*] *as we do* Mull conj. 201. *ordains*].  
*this*] *ordains*—*this* Mull. *was*] *were* Mull. (Connon conj.). 206. *follow*].  
 Ed. 1. *follow*—Masson. 210. *supreme foe*] *foe supreme* Bentley conj.

219. *and void of pain* ;] *and, void of pain*, Masson. 220. *light*] *less*  
 Bentley conj. 222-3. *what change*: *Worth waiting*] *what change!*  
*Worth waiting* Mull. 243. *Hallelutahs* ;] *Hallelujahs*? Fenton.  
 245-6. *odours...flowers*, *Our*] *odours, and ambrosial flowers* *Our* Mull.  
 245. *and*] *from* Bentley conj. 246. *offerings*?] *Newton. offerings!*  
 Fenton. *offerings*. Ed. 1. 249. *hate*!] 1719. *hate*. Ed. 1.  
 250-1. *By force...Heaven*] Put in a parenthesis by Mull. 254. *was*] *fast* Mull.  
 256. *easy*] *lazy* Bentley conj. 268. *Hell*!] Keightley.  
*Hell*? Ed. 1. 282. *where*] Ed. 1. *were* Ed. 2. 303-4. *public*  
*care*; *And...in his face*] *public care And princely counsel*; *and his face*  
 Pearce conj. 311. *Virtues*!] Fenton. *Vertues*; Ed. 1. 313. *Hell*!] *Hell*—Mull.  
 315. *growing*] *groaning* Mull. *empire*: *doubtless*!] Fenton. *empire*; *doubtless*; Ed. 1. *empire* *doubtless*? Mull conj. *doubtless!* *while*] *doubtless, while* Montgomery. 329. *peace and war*] *peace or war* Mull (Bentley conj.). *peace in war* Pearce conj. 332. *Vouchsafed*] *Voutsaf't* Ed. 1-3. *Voutsafed* Masson. 337. *revenge, though slow*,] *revenge, though slow?* Mull. *revenge?* *Though slow*, Mull conj.  
 340. *feel*!] *feel*. Mull. 358. *subtlety*] 1705. *suttlety* Ed. 1. 362. *here*] *there* Bentley conj. 366. *were*] *are* Masson. 375. *frail*] *fair* Tickell. *original*] *Originals* Ed. 1. 376. *soon*!] Fenton. *soon*. Ed. 1.  
 378. *empires*] *empire* Mull. 409-10. *abrupt, ere...isle*] *abrupt?* *Say, he arriv'd's...isle*: Bentley conj. 410. *isle*!] Fenton. *He*; Ed. 1.  
 414. *we*] *wee* Errata to Ed. 1. 440. *Wide-gaping*] Masson. *Wide gaping* Ed. 1. 444. *escape*?] 1688. *escape*. Ed. 1. 483. *their*] 1688. *this* Ed. 1. *her* Ed. 2, 3. 489. *North wind*] Hyphenated in Ed. 3. 490. *louring*] *laving* Mull. 491. *landskip*] Bentley. *lantskip* Ed. 1. *landschape* Fenton. 494. *herds*] *stocks* Bentley conj.  
 495. *hill and valley rings*] *hills and valleys ring* Bentley conj. 498. *rational, rational!*—Mull. 499. *grace*; *and, God proclaiming peace*] *grace and God-proclaiming peace* Mull. 504. *enow*] Fenton. *anow* Ed. 1. 506. *council*] *Council* Ed. 1. *Counsel* Ed. 2. 508. *and seem'd*] *who seem'd* Mull conj. 515. *trumpet's*] Masson. *Trumpets* Ed. 1. *trumpets*? Keightley. *result*:] *result* Mull, putting lines 516, 517 in a parenthesis. 518. *harald's*] *Haralds* Ed. 1. *Heralds* 1688.  
 521-2. *Thence more...hope, the*] *Thence—more...hope—the* Mull. 527. *his*] *this* Ed. 2. 529-30. *Upon...contend, As*] *Upon...race, contend As* Mull. 542. *Æchalia*] Ed. 2. *Ocalia* Ed. 1. 551. *Free virtue*] *Thee, Virtue*, Bentley conj. 552-3. *argued then, Of*] *argued, then Of* Mull. 568. *obdured*] *obdurate* 1688. 571-2. *discover...if*] *discover—wide...world—if* Mull. 580. *Heard...stream*] *Heard on...shore or Heard from...stream* Bentley conj. *Phlegethon*] Bentley. *Phlegeton* Ed. 1.  
 591. *all else*] *or else* Newton (1770), a misprint. 596. *haled*] *hal'd* 1688. *ha'il'd* Ed. 1. 602-3. *frozen round, Periods*] *frozen, round Periods*

- Mull. 611. *Malusa with Gorgonian*] *Megacra with Tartarean* Bentley conj. 616. *agast*] Ed. 1. *aghost* Newton. 618. *vale*] Ed. 3. *Vaile* Edd. 1, 2. 620-1. *Alp, Rocks...bogs, dens,*] *Alp—Rocks...bogs—dens* Mull. 631. *Puts on swift wings*] *Puts on, swift-wing'd* Bentley conj. *toward*] Ed. 1. *towards* Ed. 2. 633. *right hand*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 644. *Hell bounds*] Hyphenated by Keightley. 645. *three-fold the*] *threefold* Bentley conj. 645-7. *gates; three...Impenetrable,*] *gates (three...Impenetrable)* Mull. 654. *cry*] *crue* Bentley conj. 654. *Hell-hounds*] Tickell. *Hell Hounds* Ed. 1. 663. *In...air*] (*In...air*) Mull. 664. *with*] by Capell conj. 678. *not fear'd—...except,*] *not fear'd, God and his Son except*; Pearce conj. *naught fear'd, God and his Son except*: Anon. conj. (Peck), reading *nor* for *not* in 679. 679. *naught*] *not* Fenton. 688. *wrath*] *warath* Ed. 1 (and in all but seven passages in *Paradise Lost*). 689. *Traitor Angel*] *Traitor-Angel* Fenton. 710. *arctic*] *Artick* Ed. 1. *Arctick* Tickell. 718. *mid air*] *mid-air* Masson. 719. *combatants,*] *combatants* Masson. 725, 746. *Hell gate*] *hell-gate* Fenton. *Hell Gates* Bentley. 730. *whom*;] *whom?* Tickell. 734. *ye*] *you* 1688. 737. *words so strange*] *words so new* Bentley conj. 742. *vale*] 1688. *Vaile* Edd. 1-3. 743. *phantasm*] *Phantasm* Ed. 1. *phanta'm* Fenton. 747. *then,*] *then?* Tickell. 748. *foul?*] 1719. *foul*, Ed. 1. 748-9. *so fair In Heaven*] *so fair?* *In Heaven* Mull. 769. *else?*] Fenton. *else* Ed. 1. 775. *hand*] *hands* Masson. 815. *subtle*] 1705. *subtile* 1688. *subtle* Ed. 1. 815-6. *lore Soon*] *lust Sore* Mull. 818-21. *the dear...unthought of*] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 831. *Should...now,*] *Should be—* and by concurring signs *ere now*—Mull. 833. *purlicus*] *Pourlicus* Ed. 1. 846. *gastly*] Ed. 1. *ghastly* 1705. 847-8. *fill'd, and bless'd his maze* *Destined*] *filled and blessed his maze, Destined* Mull. 855. *might*] *wight* Ed. 3, and Bentley. 860. Bentley would omit or place before line 858. 863. *feed?*] 1688. *feed*: Ed. 1. 866. *thee?*] Fenton. *thee*, Ed. 1. 874. *up drew*] *up-drew* Fenton. *portcullis*] 1691. *Porcullis* Ed. 1. 881. *grate*] Ed. 2. *great* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 888. *furnace mouth*] *furnace-mouth* Masson. 896-8. *anarchy...For*] *anarchy!* *Amidst...hard by Confusion stands*; *For* Mull. 899. *mastery*] *Mast'ry* 1688. *Maistrie* Ed. 1. 906. *these most*] *the most* Bentley conj. 918. *Stood on...and look'd*] *Look'd from...and stood* Bentley conj. 931-2. *meets A vast vacuity: all unawares*] (*meeting A vast vacuity all unawares*) Mull. 933. *pennons*] *pinions* Bentley. *plumb down*] *plumb-down* Keightley. 934. *fathom*] 1688. *fadom* Ed. 1. 938-40. *stay'd, Quench'd...Land,*] 1719. *stay'd, Quench'd...Land*: Ed. 1. 944. *or*] and Keightley conj. *moory*] 1719. *moarie* Ed. 1. 948. *or steep*] *o'er steep* Mull. (Bentley conj.). 949. *or feet*] and *feet* Keightley conj. 964. *Ades*] *Hades* Bentley. 980. *profound*. *Direct*] Tickell. *profound, direct* Ed. 1.

996. *Heaven gates*] *heav'n-gates* Fenton. *Heav'n's Gate* Bentley conj.  
 1000. *so*] *us* Bentley conj. 1001. *our*] *your* Newton (Pearce conj.).  
 1016. *wings*] *wings* Peck conj. 1018. *Bosphorus*] *Bosphorus* 1719.  
 1023-5. *soon...Heaven*] Put in a parenthesis by Mull. 1038. *farthest*] 1688. *fardest* Ed. 1. 1039-40. *As...din*] Put in a parenthesis by Mull.  
 1039. *her*] *his* Bentley conj. *works, a broken foe*] *works; a broken foe* Pearce conj. *works a broken foe* Ed. 1. *broken*] *brok'd* Ed. 2. 1053. *magnitude*] *Magnitude*, Ed. 3.

III. 2. *beam*] *beam*! Fenton. 6. *Bright...increate*] Transpose to follow line 2, Mull conj. 17. *the Orphean*] *th' Orphean* Ed. 1.  
 23. *roll*] *roole* Ed. 1. *tail* so quoted by Landor. 24. *To find*] *To see* Bentley conj.  
 26. *the more*] *for that* Bentley conj. *therefore* Pearce conj. 33. *two*] *too* Richardson conj. 36. *Tiresias and Phineus*] *Phineus and Tiresias* Pearce conj. 38-40. *numbers; as...* note. *Thus*] *numbers. As...note: thus* Pearce conj. 40. *Tunes*] *Turns* Mull.  
 45. *instead*] 1705. *in stead* Ed. 1. 48-9. *blank Of nature's works*] *blanc; All* Pearce conj. *blanc: All Nature's Map* Bentley conj. 48. *blank*] *blot* Hume conj. 52. *powers*] *poers* Keightley conj.  
 80. *Only begotten*] Hyphenated by Keightley. 81-6. *Adversary*] *...hold;*] Newton. *adversary, ...hold?* Fenton. *adversarie, ...hold;* Ed. 1. 89. *new-created*] Fenton. *new created* Ed. 1.  
 101. *fall'd*] *fell* Bentley conj. 106-111. *receive, ...paid, ...me?*] Masson. *receive? ...paid, ...mee.* Ed. 1. *receive? ...paid? ...me.* Keightley. 108. *is choice*] *as choice* Mull, putting *reason...passive both* in a parenthesis.  
 110. *had*] and Fenton (1727). 121. *immutably*] *immutabile* Pearce conj. *foreseen*] *foredoom'd* Bentley conj. 123-8. *for so...freedom*] Put in a parenthesis by Mull. 131. *other first*] *other's fraud* Bentley conj.  
 141. *visibly*] *visible* Bentley conj. 147. *sound*] *Streins* Bentley conj. omitting *the*. 150-3. *be lost, ...folly?*] *be lost—folly—!* Masson. 151. *son*] *born* Mull. 153. *folly?*] *folly—* Keightley (Stillingfleet conj.). 157. *thine?*] 1688. *thine*, Ed. 1.  
 158. *nought*] Fenton. *naught*, Ed. 1. *naught?* 1691. 175. *vouchsafed*] *voutsafed* Ed. 1. *voutsafed* Masson. 209-10. *die; Die*] Fenton. *die, Die* Ed. 1. *die, Die* Tickell. 213-15. *low? ...save?*] Fenton. *low, ...save*, Ed. 1. 217. *the heavenly quire*] *th' Angelic Quires* Bentley conj. *quire*] *choir* Fenton (and elsewhere). 223. *been*] 1688. *bin* Ed. 1. 231. *unprevented*] *uninvited or unperceived* Bentley conj. *unrequested* Pearce conj. doubtfully. *unsought?*] Fenton. *unsought*, Ed. 1.  
 232. *coming*] Fenton. *conting;* Ed. 1. 241. *wreck*] Fenton. *wreck* Ed. 1. 280. *a while*] *a-while* Fenton. 284. *virgin seed*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 299-300. *redeem, So dearly to redeem what*] *redeem—So dearly to redeem!*—*what* Mull. 335. *Heaven*] *Heav'n's* Bentley conj.

344-7. *but all...joy*] Ed. 1. *but, all...Angels—with...voices—uttering joy*, Keightley. *but—all...Angels, with...voices, uttering joy*—Masson.  
 360. *these that never fade*] *this that never fades* Bentley conj. 361. *beams*] *leaves* Mull.  
 372. *sung Omnipotent*] Ed. 1. *sung, Omnipotent* Fenton. 375-7. *invisible Amidst, ...inaccessible, but*] *invisible—Amidst...inaccessible—but* Mull. 379. *shrine*] *shrine...* Keightley. 383. *tang*] *sung* Fenton. 390. *He*] *The* Mull. 392. *Dominations. Thou*] *Dominations: thou* Ed. 1. *Dominations thou* Mull. 394. *chariot wheels*] Hyphenated by Tickell. 398. *Son*] *Sword* Mull. 411. *nowhere*] *no where* Ed. 1. 413. *my song*] *our Song* Bentley conj. 414. *my harp*] *our Harps* Bentley conj. 431. *vulture*] *Vultur* Ed. 1. 434. *or weanling*] *and weanling* Fenton. 443. *lifeless*] Bentley. *liveliest* Ed. 1. 444. *hereafter from*] *hereafter. From* Mull. 453. *Naught*] 1688. *Naught* Ed. 1. 460. *likely habitants*] *likely, habitant* Mull. 473. After this a line omitted, Pearce conj. *many more, too long*] *more too long to name* Bentley conj. 474-6. *idiots, eremites...trumpery. Here*] *idiots. Eremites and friars—While...trumpery—Here* Mull. 483. *talk'd*] *call'd or still'd or nam'd* Bentley conj. 487. *cross wind*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 497-8. *Long...untrod. All*] *Long after! Now...untrod All* Mull. 505. *palace gate*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 506. *frontispiece*] Ed. 3. *Prontispice* Edd. 1, 2. 509. *shading*] *shaping* Mull. 513. *To Padan-Aram, in the field of Luz*] Newton. *To Padan-Aram in the field of Luz*, Ed. 1. 516. *meant*] *dropt* Mull. 534. *and his eye*] *as his Eyes* Bentley conj. *and his ey'd* Pearce conj. 541. *Heaven gate*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 555-7. *(and well...shade)*] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 565. *shone*] *show'd* Bentley conj. 566. *nigh hand*] Hyphenated by Keightley. 574-6. *but up...longitude*] In a parenthesis, Newton (Pearce conj.). 580. *starry*] *Sarry* Ed. 1. 592. *metal*] Fenton. *Medal* Ed. 1. 594. *With*] *Which* Ed. 1. 597. *to the*] *or the* Fenton. *two o' th'* Anon. conj. (Pearce). 599. *Imagined...seen*] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 606. *here*] *there* Bentley conj. 613. *Here*] *There* Bentley conj. *met*] *met*: Mull. 614. *Undazzled. Far*] *Undazzled; far* Fenton. *Undazzl'd, farr* Ed. 1, and Mull, who puts lines 615-9 *For...fall* in a parenthesis. 616-7. *all sunshine, as...as they*] *sunshine all. As when...so* Bentley conj. 619. *can*] *could* Bentley conj. 650. *at*] to Bentley conj. 656. *The first art*] *The first, art* Mull. 657. *Interpreter...Heaven*] Put in a parenthesis by Mull. 664. *favour, him*] *Favorite* Bentley conj. 678. *that loss*] *their loss* 1705. 679. *men*] *man* Capell conj. MS. 691. *sharpest sighted*] Hyphenated by Tickell. 696-8. *leads...excess*] Placed after *Heaven* line 701 by Mull. 707. *deep?*] 1688. *deep*. Ed. 1. 716. *this*] *the* 1705. 721. *walls*] *wall* Bentley conj. 724-5. *That place...day*] In a parenthesis, Pearce conj. 741. *th*] *with* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata and in some copies.

- IV. 6. *was*] *is* Bentley conj. *first parents*] Hyphenated in Ed. 2.  
*been*] 1688. *bin* Ed. 1. 9. *first*] *fresh* Mull. *came*] *come* Mull.  
 11. *worack*] Fenton. *worack* Ed. 1. 13, 14. *Yet...boast*] Put in a  
 parenthesis by Mull. 25-6. *what must be* *Worse*] *what must be*, *Worse*  
 Fenton. *what must be*; *Worse* Richardson conj. *what must be*—*Worse*  
 Keightley. 33. *Look'st from thy sole dominion*] *Look'st, from thy sole*  
*dominion*, Pearce conj. *from*] *in* Bentley conj. 40. *worse*] *cur'd*  
 Bentley conj. 41. *matchless*] *glorious* so quoted by Phillips (1694).  
 42. *wherefore?*] Bentley. *wherefore!* Ed. 1. 47. *thanks,*] *Thanks?*  
 Bentley. 53. *burdensome*] Newton. *burthensome* Ed. 1. 79. *at last*] *at*  
*last* Mull. *I best* Mull conj. *relent*] *repent* Newton conj. 80-1. *re-*  
*pentance...left? ... submission?*] *repentance? ... left, ... submission?* Mull.  
 86. *Ay me*] *Ah me* Fenton. 88-9. *groan*, *While...Hell,*] *groane*; *While*  
*...Hell*, Ed. 1. *groane*; *While...Hell*. 1711. 98-9. *For...desp*] *First*  
 marked as a parenthesis by Fenton. 102. *double*] *doubl'd* Fenton.  
 105. *instead*] Tickell. *in stead* Ed. 1. 108-9. *farewell*] *farwel* Ed. 1.  
 112. *By thee,*] *By thee*—Pearce conj. *By thee!* Richardson conj. *half*  
*perhaps will*] *half, perhaps, will* Bradshaw. 115. *pale, ire*] *pale ire*  
 Pearce conj. So quoted by Richardson. 121. *fraud*; *and*] *fraud!*  
*and* Mull, putting lines 121-3 in a parenthesis. 122. *falsehood...shew,*] *fa-*  
*lshood, ...shew* Fenton. 124. *enough*] 1688. *anough* Ed. 1. 126. *As-*  
*syrian*] *Armenian* Bentley conj. 129. *then*] *when* Bentley conj.  
 136. *grotesque*] *grotesque* Ed. 1. *gottesque* Ed. 2. 137. *overhead*] *over-*  
*head* Tickell. *over head* Ed. 1. 147. *fruit*] *fruits* Bentley conj.  
 148. *fruits*] *fruit* Capell conj. MS. 151. *in*] *on* Bentley conj.  
 153. *landskip*] Tickell. *Lantskip* Ed. 1. *landscape* Fenton. 177. *All*  
*...pass'd*] *All passage to whate'er assay'd* Bentley conj. *All path of man or*  
*beast: none pass'd* Pearce conj. 181. *all bound*] *all since* Bentley conj.  
*all mound* Pearce conj. doubtfully. 200. *been*] Ed. 3. *bin* Ed. 1, 2.  
 206-7. *expoted*, *In narrow room* *Nature's*] *expos'd* *In narrow room,*  
*Nature's* Fenton. 226-7. *mountain as...raised Upon*] *mountain, as...*  
*raised, Upon* Mull. 226. *garden mount*] Hyphenated by Tickell. *garden*  
*mound* Peck conj. 236. *arr*] *ought* Bentley conj. 236-7. *if...tell,*  
*How*] *(if...tell How)* Fenton. 245. *the unpierced*] *the unpierc'd* Ed. 1.  
*the unpierc'd* Tennyson conj. 246. *Imbrownd...bowers*] *Imbrownd...*  
*hours* Mull. 246-7. *place, A*] *place A* Newton. 250-1. *Hesperian...*  
*only*] In a parenthesis, Pearce conj. 257. *Another*] *On either* Bentley  
 conj. 263. *Her*] *Its* Bentley conj. 264. *airs, vernal airs*] *air, vernal air*  
 Bentley conj. 265. *attune*] *attunes* Bentley conj. 268. *Led*] *Leads*  
 Bentley conj. 284. *high, but*] *high*. *But* Mull. 285. *Assyrian*] *Abassin*  
 or *th' Assyrian* Mull conj. 290. *majesty seem'd*] *majesty*—*seem'd* Mull.  
 293. *severe*] *serena* Bentley conj. 294. *Severe...placed*] *Severe*—*placed*  
 Omitted by Bentley. Put in a parenthesis by Pearce. 295. *authority*]

- authoritie* Edd. 1, 2. 296-7. *not equal seem'd: For* not equal, seem'd;  
*For Pearce conj. not equal—seem'd For Mull.* 299. *in him* and him  
 Bentley conj. 309. *And by* As by Bentley conj. 313-4. *shame,*  
*dishonest shame Of Nature's works, honour* shame. Dishonest shame Of  
*Nature's works, honour* Keightley. *shame—dishonest shame!—Of Nature's*  
*works!* Honour Mull. 314-5. *dishonourable, Sin-bred* dishonourable.  
*Sin-bred, Tickell.* dishonourable! Sin-bred! Fenton. 315. *ye* you  
 Newton conj. 318. *innocence!* Newton. *innocence?* Fenton.  
*innocence.* Ed. 1. 326. *fountain side* Hyphened by Fenton. *side,*  
 Keightley (Pearce conj.). *side* Ed. 1. 329. *made* make Masson.  
 333. *Yielded them, sidelong* Yielded them. Sidelong Mull. 349. *braided*  
 Fenton. *breaded* Ed. 1. 353. *hasting* hastening Masson. 365. *them*  
 'em 1711. 372. *Ill fenced* Hyphened by Fenton. 376. *strait* 1688.  
*straight* Ed. 1. 391. *compels* compel Browne. 400. *mark* pry  
 Bentley conj. 405. *Straight* Straight 1688. *Straight* Ed. 1. *couches*  
*crouches* Masson. 406. *couchant* double Bentley conj. 411. *partner*  
*and sole part of* partner, and sole part, of Newton conj. *partner and best*  
*part of* Bentley conj. 441. *form'd flesh* form'd, flesh 1695.  
 443. *head!* Fenton. *Head,* Ed. 1. 446-7. *lot,... odds, while* lot  
*enjoying thee, Preeminent... odds while* Mull. 451. *on* Ed. 1. *of* Ed. 2.  
 457. *unexperienced* in-experienc'd Fenton. 465. *love:* love; Ed. 2.  
*love,* Ed. 1. 471-2. *embraces, he... art; him* Newton. *embraces, he...*  
*art, him* Ed. 1. *embraces: he... art, him* Tickell. *embraces he... art—him*  
 Mull. 472. *shall* 1688. *shall* Ed. 1. 476. *straight* straight  
 1688. *strait* Ed. 1. 478. *platan* plantan 1711. 487. *soul,*  
 Fenton. *soul* Ed. 1. 494. *half embracing* Hyphened by Newton.  
 509. *Where?* Where's Bentley conj. 511. *unfulfill'd, with... longing*  
 1719. *unfulfill'd with... longing* Ed. 1. *unfulfill'd with... longing,*  
 Fenton. 516. *reasonless:* reasonless! Masson. 519. *ignorance?*  
 Tickell. *Ignorance,* Ed. 1. 530. *A chance but chance* Some lucky  
*chance* Bentley conj. *A chance (but chance)* Pearce conj. *A chance—but*  
*chance* Mitford conj. *A chance, but chance* 1695. 541. *Slowly* Had  
*low* Bentley conj. *Lowly* Newton conj. 542. *eastern* western Anon.  
 conj. (Keightley). 544. *alabaster* 1719. *Alabaster* Ed. 1. 555. *even* How'n Bentley conj. 556. *Sun beam* Ed. 1. *Sun-beam*  
 Tickell. 560. *He* and Bentley conj. 563. *enter in:* Ed. 1. *enter*  
*in.* Tickell. *enter in...* Keightley conj. 567. *described* describ'd  
 Bentley conj. 571. *passions* passion Major. 577. *perfect* 1688.  
*perfet* Ed. 1. 586. *walks* walls Bentley. 592-8. *Azores; whether...*  
*attend. Now* 1719. *Azores; whither... attend: Now* Ed. 1. *Azores.*  
*Whether... there* (Arraying... attend), *Now* Mull. 602. *all*  
*but the* not all: the Bentley conj. 605. *sapphires* sapphire  
 Keightley. 607. *majesty, at length* majesty at length, Tickell.



613. *night to] night, to* Fenton. *men] man* Bentley conj. 627. *walks]*  
Ed. 1. *walk* Ed. 2. 644. *beams; on herb] beams; herb* Mull.  
646. *coming on]* Hyphened by Keightley. 652. *flower] flower's* Fenton  
(1727). 657. *these?] Fenton. these, Ed. 1. 661. Those] Ed. 1.*  
*These* Fenton. 667. *In nature and all things]* *And Light in Nature's*  
*Realm* Bentley conj. *And nature in all things* Pearce conj. withdrawn.  
683. *Sole...note.] (Sole...note)* Fenton. *Sole...note* Ed. 1. 684. *Creator!]*  
Major. *Creator?* 1688. *Creator:* Ed. 1. 693. *shade,]* Keightley.  
*shade* Ed. 1. 698. *jessamine]* *Jessamin* Tickell. *Gessamin* Ed. 1.  
702. *Broider'd] Border'd* 1711. 705. *shadler]* Ed. 1. *shadic* Ed. 2.  
717. *Japhet]* *Japet* Bradshaw conj. 719. *stole]* *stolen* Landor conj.  
722. *both sky] the sky* Keightley conj. 729. *thee; and this]* *Thee; Thou*  
*this* Bentley conj. *thee in this* Pearce conj. 735. *thy gift]* *the gift*  
Bentley conj. 739. *putting off]* Hyphened by Masson. 745. *place]*  
*grace* Mull. 756. *charities]* *cavities* Bentley conj. 777. *Half way]*  
Hyphened by Keightley. *up hill]* Hyphened by Masson. *up all* Mull.  
778. *swory]* *rocky* Mull. 786. *subtle]* Newton. *subtle* 1688. *suttle*  
Ed. 1. 796. *hither]* *thither* Bentley conj. 798. *these]* *swift* Mull.  
807. *At least]* *At last* Fenton. 809. *Blown]* *Blow* Fenton.  
824. *prison?] Fenton. prison, Ed. 1. 828. once no mate]* *once—no*  
*mate* Mull. 835. *thy shape]* *by shape* Pearce conj. 836. *undiminish'd*  
*brightness]* *brightness undiminish'd* Bentley conj. *in diminished brightness*  
Mull (Bradshaw conj.). 840. *doom obscure]* *doom—obscure* Mull.  
843. *inviolable]* *involute* Bentley conj. 856. *thee, wicked]* Bentley.  
*thee wicked, Ed. 1. thee, first wicked* Bentley conj. *thee, thee wicked*  
Pearce conj. doubtfully. 897. *us?] us.* Keightley (Newton conj.).  
904. *Heaven to judge of wise.] Heaven—to judge of wise—* Mull.  
926. *thou know'st I stood]* *thou know'st; I stood* Fenton. 927. *Thy*  
*fiercest]* *The fiercest* Bentley conj. 928. *The blasting]* Ed. 1. *Thy*  
*blasting* Ed. 2. 937. *new-created]* Fenton. *new created* Ed. 1.  
944. *throne,]* throne; Bentley. 952-3. *crew?...fiends,]* crew, *Army of*  
*fiends?* Fenton. 953. *head,]* head; Ed. 1. *head!* Fenton.  
962. *area?]* *aread* Fenton. *arrcode* Ed. 1. 982-3. *cars which...* *Sways*  
*them; the]* *ears, which...* *Sways them the* Mull. 994. *wreck]* Tickell.  
*wreck* Ed. 1. *wreck* Fenton. 1003. *sequel]* *signal* Bentley conj.  
1008-9. *what...do!]* In a parenthesis, Pearce conj. 1008. *arms...thine]*  
*Strength...thine's* Bentley conj. *do!]* Keightley. *do?* Fenton. *doe,*  
Ed. 1. 1013. *knew]* *kenned* Mull.

V. 1-9. This passage is reconstructed by Mr Mull thus:

*Now Morn, her rosy steps in the eastern clime*  
*Advancing, sowed the earth with orient pearl*  
*And temperate vapours bland, which Aurora's fan*  
*Lightly dispersed—the only sound of leaves*

*And fuming rills, and the shrill matin song  
Of birds on every bough;—so much the more,  
When Adam waked, so custom'd (for his sleep  
Was airy light, from pure digestion bred),  
His wonder was to find unweaken'd Eve:*

4. *airy light*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 5-6. *which...rills*] *from fuming rills*, Which th' only sound of leaves Fenton conj. 17. *soft touching*] Hyphenated by Tickell. 19. *ever new*] Hyphenated by Fenton (1727). 22. *tended*] *tender* Newton. 25. *sweet*] *sweets* Bentley conj. 42. *Full-orb'd*] Hyphenated by Tickell. *pleasing*] *pleasant* 1711. 45-7. *desire,...* *gaze*] Bentley. *desire?...gaze*. Fenton. *desire,...* *gaze*. Ed. 1. 60. *man?*] Fenton. *Man*; Ed. 1. 77-8. *among the gods Thyself*] *among the Gods*, *Thyself* Keightley. 90. *exaltation,*] Keightley. *exaltation*; Ed. 1. 128. *unapproved*] *unreprov'd* Todd. 137. *arborous*] *arbour's* Bentley conj. *roof*] Newton (Pearce conj.). *roof*, Ed. 1. 139-43. *who... plains*] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 139. *up risen*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 142. *landship*] 1719. *Lantship* Ed. 1. *landscape* Fenton. 148. *Their...sung*] *Their Maker in fit strains, pronounced or sung* Keightley. *Their Maker, in fit strains pronounced, or sung* Masson. 156. *Unspeakeable!*] Fenton. *Unspeakeable*, Ed. 1. 163. *ye in*] *aye in* Mull. *Heaven;*] *Heav'n*, Ed. 1. *Heav'n*. Tickell. 164. *all ye*] *all we* Bentley conj. 172. *him thy greater*] *him creator* Bentley conj. *thy creator* Thyer conj. (withdrawn). 175. *flies*] *fly'st*, Bentley (Richardson conj.). 176. *orb that flies*] *orbs, that rest* Mull. 186-7. *dusky...gold*] Put in a parenthesis by Mull. 188. *In...rise*] Transposed by Mull to follow line 190. 193. *Breath*] *Breath* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 198. *Heaven gate*] Hyphenated by Tickell. 207. *gather'd*] 1688. *gathered* Ed. 1. 210-1. *recover'd...calm*. On] *recov'ring...calm*; On Bentley conj. *recover'd...calm*, On Pearce conj. 211. On] *Then* Newton conj. 218. *adopted*] *addorsed* Mull. 226. *Hath...disturb'd*] *Hath rais'd; and how in Paradise disturb'd* Pearce conj. 229. *half*] *haste* Mull. 242. *violence?* Tickell. *violence*, Ed. 1. 250. *up springing*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 257. In some copies of Ed. 1 this line begins a paragraph, and there is no comma after *cloud*. 257-8. *From...see*] Pointed as in Ed. 1. Fenton marks *no cloud...interposed* as a parenthesis. Keightley and Mull continue the parenthesis to *small*. 261. *hills*. *As*] Ed. 1. *hills*; as Masson. 265. *appearing kens*] *appearing kenns* Ed. 1. *appearing, kens* Newton. *appearing kens*, Keightley. 268. *steady*] Todd. *steddie* Ed. 1. 296. *virgin fancies*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 297. *art*] Fenton. *art*; Ed. 1. *Art* Bentley. 302. *need*] Ed. 2. *need* Ed. 1. 311. *mid-noon*] Ed. 2. *mid-noon* Ed. 1. 312. *vouchsafe*] 1688. *voutsafe* Ed. 1. 322. *small store*] *small stores*

- Bentley conj. 326. *brake*] Tickell. *break* Ed. 1. *branch* Bentley conj.  
 328. *Angel guest*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 332. *turns, on*] *turns*. On  
 Mull, putting lines 333-6 in a parenthesis. 338-9. *yields In*] *yields, In*  
 Keightley. 339. *shore*] *shore*, Keightley. 342. *smooth rined*] *smooth*  
*rind* Fenton. *smooth-rined* Verity. 346. *must*] Fenton. *moust* Ed. 1.  
 348. *her*] *she* Bentley conj. 351. *without more*] *with no more* Bentley conj.  
 361-2. *for other...contain*] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 365. *a while*]  
*a-while* Fenton. 369. *sir*] *sip* Mull. 391. *twf*] 1688. *terf* Ed. 1.  
 395. *hand in hand*] Hyphenated by Masson. 399, 442, 524, 568. *perfect*]  
 1688. *perfer* Ed. 1. 406. *of*] *to* Bentley conj. 412-3. *assimilate*,  
*And corporeal*] *assimilate, and Corporeal* Capell ms. 413. *corporeal*]  
*corporeal* Bentley conj. 414. *fed; of elements*] *fed of elements*: Mull.  
 427. *fruitage*] Fenton. *frutage* Ed. 1. 435-6. *the common...theologians*]  
 Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 447. *been*] 1688. *bin* Ed. 1.  
 455. *his world*] *this world* 1688. 457. *forms*,] Tickell. *forms* Ed. 1.  
 469. *is*] *heat* Mull, putting *from...good* in a parenthesis. 471-2. *all* *Such*  
*...first*] *all, Each to perfection first—one* Mull. 482. *Spirits odorous*  
*breathes*] *Spirits odorous breath* Mull. 484. *to animal*] *from animal*  
 Mull. 504. *happy*] *earthly* Bentley conj. 528. *Inextricable*] *In-*  
*exorable* Bentley conj. 536. *God enthroned*] *God, enthron'd* Warton conj.  
 559. *Hath*] The catchword on the previous page in Ed. 1 is *Had*.  
 566. *Spirits*] Fenton. *Spirits*; Ed. 1. 568. *stood*] Fenton. *stood*;  
 Ed. 1. 576. *thought*] Keightley. *thought*? Ed. 1. 589. *Standards*  
*...rear*] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 598. *Amidst us*] *Amidst us*  
 Bentley conj. *whose top*] *whoscop* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 598-9. *as*  
*...invisible*] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 620-4. *which...seem*]  
 Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 620-2. *sphere...her...Resembles*]  
*spheres...their...Resemble* Bentley conj. 627. *now*] Ed. 2. *om*. Ed. 1.  
 633. *flows*] Ed. 2. *flous*: Ed. 1. 636. *On...crown'd*] Added in Ed. 2.  
 637-40. *in communion...Excess*] Ed. 2. *with refection sweet* *Ara fill'd*  
 Ed. 1. 640. *all-bounteous*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 649. *globous*]  
*globose* Fenton. 659. *in*] *om*. Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 674. *and*]  
*who* Bentley conj. 674-6. *eyelids? and...Almighty*] Ed. 1. *eyelids?*  
*and...Almighty?* Tickell. 674-5. *decree, Of yesterday, so late*]  
*decree—Of yesterday so late—* Mull. *eyelids, and...Almighty?* Fenton.  
 684. *chief*] *chiefs* Bentley conj. 708. *morning star*] Hyphenated by  
 Fenton. 710. *the*] *om*. Bentley conj. 711. *Eternal eye*] *Eternal, He*  
 Bentley conj. 734. *ineffable serene*] *ineffably-serene* or *ineffable-serene*  
 Capell conj. ms. 770. *art*] *air* Bentley conj. 782. *unpaid, prostration*]  
*unpaid. Prostrations* Mull. 790. *Natives*] *Native* Mull. *Heaven*  
*possess'd*] *heav'n; possess* Fenton. *Heaven, possess'd* Bentley. *Heaven,*  
*oppress'd* Bentley conj. 796-7. *equals, if...equal*] Ed. 1. *equals? if...equal*.  
 Fenton. 797. *equal?*] *equals?* Capell conj. ms. 798-9. *us...not?*] Newton.

*us...not*, Ed. 1. *Us?...not*: Bentley. 799. *for this*] *for this poor* Mull.  
*forethink* Bentley conj. 820-1. *reign, One*] *reign One* Mull. 822. *God?*  
 Fenton. *God*, Ed. 1. 835. *Son?*] Tickell. *son*, Ed. 1. 853. *then*]  
*thus* Mull. 861. *fatal*] *natal* Mull. 868. *Address, and to*] *Address or*  
*to* Mull. 877. *alienate*] *alienated* 1707. 880-1. *contagion*  
*spread Both*] *contagious spread, Both* Mull. 889. *not...threats*] In a  
 parenthesis, Landor conj. 890. *devoted, lest*] *devote; but lest* Bentley  
 conj. 896-7. *found; Among*] *found Among* Capell ms. 896-8. *found;*  
*Among...only he; Among*] *found Among...only he Among* Capell conj. ms.

VI. 2. *champain*] *champaign* Keightley. 14. *vanish'd*] *vanguish'd*  
 1705. 16. *thick embattl'd*] *thick-embattl'd* Capell ms. 29. *done*] Fenton.  
*done*, Ed. 1. 35. *care*] *care*—Masson. 38. *thee*] *thee*—Masson. 79-84. *appear'd* *From...portray'd*] *appeared—From...portrayed*—  
 Mull. 90-8. *vain* *In the mid-way. Though...thought*] *vain. In the*  
*midway—(though...thought!)*—Mull. 93. *hosting*] *jousting* Bentley conj.  
 96. *But*] *Yet* Pearce conj. doubtfully. 106. *Presented stood*] Ed. 1.  
*Presented, stood* Fenton. *Presented stood*, Keightley. 115. *reality*] *Really* Bentley conj. 116. *not*] *not*! Keightley. 120-1. *tried* *Unsound*  
*and false*] *tried—Unsound and false*! Mull. 144. *God, though*] *God. Though* Mull. 147. *thou seest; now learn*] *thou seest now! learn* Mull.  
 148. *few*] *one* Bentley conj. 151. *Of*] *For* Fenton (1725). 165. *been*] 1688. *bin* Ed. 1. 180. *thee*] *thee*! Mull. 184. *blest*] *blessed* Ed. 1,  
 corrected in Errata. 191. *sight*] *sleight* Mull. 198. *Half sunb*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 204. *rung*] *rung* Bentley conj. 212. *overhead*] Keightley. *over head* Ed. 1. *over heard* Tickell (a misprint). 212-3. *the*  
*dismal hiss* *Of fiery darts*] *with dismal hiss* *The fiery darts* Bentley conj. 215. *So under*] *Sounder* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 218. *been*] 1688. *bin* Ed. 1. 219-23. *wonder?...regions*] Ed. 1. *wonder!...regions*. Keightley. *wonder,...regions?* Masson. 226. *seat*] Fenton. *seat*; Ed. 1. 231-2. *A numerous...yet*] *A numerous host in strength each*  
*armed hand* *A legion led in fight; yet* Bentley conj. 231. *hand*] *hand* Bradshaw conj. 233. *single as in chief, expert*] *single, as in chief expert* Mull. 235. *ridges*] *bridges* Bentley conj. 241. *for*] *far* Bentley conj. 253. *Wide-wasting*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 259. *Arch-foe*] Hyphenated in 1688. 269. *rebellion*] Fenton. *Rebellion?* Ed. 1. 271. *false*] Fenton. *false?* 1688. *false*. Ed. 1. 277. *crew*] Fenton. *crew*; Ed. 1. 285-6. *flight, or...Unvanquish'd*] *flight? or...Unvanquished?* Mull. *flight? or...Un-vanquish'd*; Fenton (1727). 287. *and with*] *than with* Mull. 289. *evil*] *hateful* Bentley conj. 301. *power?* 1688. *Power*; Ed. 1. 308. *throng*] *Throngs* Bentley conj. 310-1. *to set...small*] In a parenthesis by Fenton. 312. *war were*] *warfare* Bentley conj. 317. *imminent*] *eminent* Bentley conj. 319. *As...once*] Put in a

- parenthesis by Fenton. *power, at once*] Edd. 1, 2. *power at once* Ed. 3.  
 324. *Satan, with...smile*] *Satan—with...smile*—Mull. 327-31. *Then...divisible*] Put in a parenthesis by Mull. 332. *nectarous*] *ichorous* Bentley conj. 334. *erewhile*] *ere while* Ed. 1. 345-6. *not...reins*] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 345. *not*] *nor* Tickell. 352. *or*] *and* 1711.  
 356. *ensigns*] *onset* Bentley conj. 357. *Moloch*] *Moloc* Ed. 1. 363. *his*] *each his* Bentley and Thyer conj. 365. *Adramelech*] *Newton*. *Adramelec* Ed. 1. *Asmadai*] *Asmodai* Tickell. 368. *gastly*] Ed. 1. *ghastly* 1688. 371. *Arioch*] *Newton*. *Arioc* Ed. 1. 384. *Vain-glorious*] Hyphenated in 1688. 390. *charioteer*] *Charioteer* 1695. *Charioteere* 1688. 391. *stood, recoil'd*] *stood recoiled* Keightley. 399. *curbie*] *martial* Bentley conj. *advanced entire*] *advanced—entire* Mull. 421. *pretence*] 1695. *pretense* Ed. 1. 425. *had*] *hath* 1711. 430. *True is*] *True 'tis* Mull. 434. *injury*] *injurie*, Ed. 1. 436-7. *heal'd. Of*] *healed, Of* Mull. 447. *Nisroch*] *Newton*. *Nisroc* Ed. 1. 452. *gods*] *Fenton*. *Gods*; Ed. 1. 456. *cause*] *Ed. 1. cause*! Fenton. 459. *mightiest*] *Fenton*. *Mightiest*. Ed. 1. 472. *bright surface*] *surface bright* Bentley conj. 477-81. *grow Deep...light*] 1691. *grow: Deep...light*? 1695. *grow Deep...light*. Ed. 1. *grow? Deep...light*, Mull. 484. *hollow*] 1688. *hallow* Ed. 1. 499. *inventor*] *Fenton*. *incenter* Ed. 1. 506-7. *For sin, on...bent. Forthwith*] *For sin. On...bent, Forthwith* Mull. 513. *subtle*] 1705. *subtle* 1688. *suttle* Ed. 1. 516-7. Bentley continues the parenthesis to *stone*. 521. *day-spring*] Ed. 2. *day spring* Ed. 1. 532. *halt*] *Fenton*. *alt* Ed. 1. 538-9. *pursuit This...flight*] *pursuit! This day fear not his flight*, Mull. 544. *or high*] *on high or and high* Keightley conj. 545. *ought*] *right* Fenton conj. 547-8. *themselves...impediment*] *Ed. 1. themselves;...impediment*, Fenton. *themselves...impediment*, Tickell. 550. *move*] *mov'd* Newton (1770). 553. *Training*] *Trailing* Mull conj. 563. *Heaven*] *Fenton*. *Heaven*, Ed. 1. 564. *anon*] *Fenton*. *anon*, Ed. 1. 572. *triple-mounted*] *Ed. 1. triple mounted* Ed. 2. 574. Mull begins the parenthesis at this line. 575. *or mountain*] *on mountain* Pearce conj. 580. *Stood*] *Held* Mull (Bentley conj.). *Shone* Mitford conj. *Shook* Dyce conj. 587. *noise*] *blast or force* Bentley conj. 597. *now*] *no* Mull. 624. *many: who*] *Fenton*. *many: who* Tickell. *many, who* Ed. 1. 629-30. *thoughts beyond...victory*] *thoughts—beyond All doubt of victory*—Mull. 655. *arm'd.*] *armed* Mull, putting lines 656-8 in a parenthesis. 656. *bruited*] *bruised*, Masson. 667. *noise*] *Fenton*. *noise*; Ed. 1. 670. *wrack*] *wreck* Fenton (1727). 674-5. *all, advised, That*] *Keightley*. *all, advis'd: That* Ed. 1. *all advis'd: That* Bentley. *all advised That* Mull. 681. *invisible*] *the invisible* Upton conj. 687. *These*] *These* Keightley conj. 713-4. *arms...sword*] *arms; And gird my sword* Anon. conj. (Newton). 727. *exaltation*] *exaltation*

Mull. 751. *wheel, undrawn*] Keightley. *wheel; undrawn* Masson. *Wheels undrawn* Ed. 1. 752. *shapes*] Keightley. *shapes*; Tickell. *shapes*, Ed. 1. 758. *Wherew*] *Where, on* Fenton, putting *inlaid...arch* in a parenthesis. 772. *throned*] *thron'd*, Fenton. *Thron'd* 1719. *Thron'd*, Ed. 1. 773-4. *wide, but...seen; them*] *wide, but...seen, them* Ed. 1. *wide! But...seen, them* Mull. 789-90. *But to convince...relent?* *But (to convince...relent!)* Fenton. 791. *reclaim*] 1688. *reclame* Ed. 1. 797. *last*] *lost* Tickell. 799. *faint*] *feigned* Mull. 816-7. *will*. *Therefore...assign'd*] *will: Therefore...assigned!* Mull. 823. *Nor*] *No* Mull. 845. *His arrows, from*] *His arrows. From* Mull. 847-9. *eyes*; *One...lightning, and shot*] *eyes (One...lightning), was shot* Mull. 854. *mid volley*] Hyphened by Fenton. 857. *goats or timorous*] *goats, a timorous* Bentley and Heylin conj. 866. *Burn'd*] Fenton. *Burnt* Ed. 1. 879. *Her mural breach, returning*] *Her breach, the wall returning* Pearce conj. doubtfully. 883. *Eye-witnesses*] Hyphened in 1695. 884. *jubilee*] 1688. *Jubilee* Ed. 1. 896. *been*] 1688. *bin* Ed. 1. 900. *he*] *him* Bentley conj.

VII. 7. *old*] *cold* Anon. conj. and Bentley ms. *Heavenly horn*] Hyphened by Tickell. 8. *fountain*] *fountains* Keightley conj. 15. *Thy tempering*] *Thee tempting* Bentley conj. *Thee temp'ring* Thyer conj. 18. *clime*] *climb* Bentley conj. 19, 20. *fall*, *Erroneous*] Fenton. *fall Erroneous*, Ed. 1. *fall Erroneous* Ed. 2. 52. *admiration and deep muse*] Bentley. *admiration, and deep muse*, Fenton. *admiration, and deep Muse* Ed. 1. 57. *redounded*] *redounding* Bentley conj. 59. *repel'd*] *dispell'd* Bentley conj. *repell'd* Pearce conj. doubtfully. 63. *conspicuous*] *conspicuous* Ed. 2. 72. *interpreter*] Fenton. *Interpreter*, Ed. 1. 74. *been*] 1688. *bin* Ed. 1. 88. *or fills*] *and fills* Keightley conj. 100. *thy voice*] *thy voice*; Fenton. *voice he*] Ed. 1. *voice, he* Bentley, reading *stays for hears*. 109. *illustrious*] Ed. 2. *illustrious* Ed. 1. 113. *or tongue*] *from tongue* Bentley conj. *and tongue* Pearce conj. 116. *the*] *thy* Bentley conj. 125. *Enough*] 1688. *Enough* Ed. 1. 129. *surfeit*] 1688. *Surfet* Ed. 1. 139. *At least*] *At last* Thyer conj. 142. *us*] *we* Symmons conj. 151. *Heaven*] *Heav'n* Ed. 2. 152. *My...dow'd*] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 169. *Infinitude; nor...space*] Keightley. *Infinitude, nor...space*, Ed. 1. *Infinitude; nor...space*; Fenton. 170. *I uncircumscrib'd myself*] *I, uncircumscribed, myself* Keightley. 172. *not*] Fenton. *not*, Ed. 1. 182. *the*] *God* Bentley conj. *good will*] *goodwill* Keightley. 188. *instead*] 1705. *in stead* Ed. 1. 206. *ever-during*] 1688. *ever during* Ed. 1. 214. *And*] *In* Newton conj. 216. *peace*] Fenton. *peace*, Ed. 1. 217. *end*] Keightley. *end*: Ed. 1. *end*—Fenton. 236. *vital*] *form'd* Bentley conj. 251. *light the Day, and*] *Day the Light, the* Bentley conj. 254. *quires, when*]

- quires. When Keightley. 277. *embryon immature*] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 283-4. *ye waters under heaven, Into ye waters, under heaven* Into Bentley. 284. *appear.*] *appear!* Fenton. 301. *under ground*] *underground* Keightley. 302. *serpent error*] Hyphened by Fenton. *wandering*] *winding* Bentley conj. ms. 303. *the*] *their* Todd (ed. 4). See Keightley. *washy*] Keightley says *washie* is the reading of the first Edition. This is incorrect. All the copies I have seen read 'washie' with a long 's' which has been mistaken for a 't.' 311. *fruit-tree*] Hyphened by Fenton. 312. *Earth.*] *Earth!* Fenton. 321. *swelling*] Keightley (Bentley conj.) and Capell ms. *smelling* Ed. 1. 322. *add*] Ed. 1. and Ed. 2. 327. *fountain side*] Hyphened by Keightley. 345. *Earth*] *earth!* Fenton. 354. *For...first*] *For, of celestial bodies first*, Fenton. 366. *her*] Ed. 2. *his* Ed. 1. 385. *their*] 1705. *this* Ed. 1. *the* 1688. *her* Masson. *set*] *sate* 1688. 402. *in sculls*] *and sculls* Newton conj. 403. *mid sea*] Hyphened by Fenton. 404. *sea weed*] Hyphened in 1688. 411. *gait*] Fenton. *Gale* Ed. 1. 419. *forth disclosed*] Hyphened by Fenton. 424. *cedar tops*] Hyphened by Keightley. 439. *mantling proudly*,] Ed. 1. *mantling, proudly* Keightley (Landor conj.). 446. *starry*] *star'd* Capell conj. ms. 448. *fifth*] 1688. *fift* Ed. 1. 449, 504, 550. *sixth*] 1688. *sixt* Ed. 1. 450. *matin*] 1688. *Mattin* Ed. 1. 451. *soul*] Newton (Bentley conj.). *Forole* Ed. 1. *Foul* Ed. 2. 452. *things*] *thing* Capell ms. (Bentley conj.). 453. *in*] *of* 1711. *kind*] Fenton. *kinde* Ed. 1. 457. *wouns*] 1688. *wouns* Ed. 1. 458. *wild*] *wide* Bentley conj. 462. *Pasturing at once*,] *Pasturing, at once* Bentley. 469. *under ground*] *underground* Keightley. 474. *riar horse*] Hyphened by Fenton. 477-8. *and...exact In*] *with...exact; In* Bentley conj. 488. *joined*] *joyned* 1688. *join'd* Ed. 1. 494. *Needless*] 1688. *Needlest* Ed. 1. *repeated*] *ropeared* Ed. 1. 495. *subtlest*] Fenton. *subtl'st* 1688. *suttl'st* Ed. 1. 497. *mane*] 1688. *Main* Ed. 1. 500. *First-Mover's*] *first-Movers* Ed. 1. *first Mover's* 1695. 502. *earth*] *Land* Bentley conj. 505. *master work*] Hyphened by Tickell. 508. *sanctity of reason*] *sanctity and reason or sanctity, speech, reason* Bentley conj. 508-9. *might erect His*] *and erect In* Bentley conj. 518. *Present?*] Fenton. *Present* Ed. 1. 534-5. *Earth. Wherever thus created,*] Edd. 1, 2. *Earth Wherever thus created*, Ed. 3. *Earth Wheriever thus created*; 1688. *Earth, Where-ever thus created*, 1719. 535-6. *for...name*] Put in a parenthesis by Masson. 536. *name, thence*] *name. Thence* Tickell. 539, 540. Bentley would transpose these lines. 549. *behold! all*] Fenton. *behold all* Ed. 1. 553. *Heavens of Havens*] Hyphened by Keightley. 554. *new-created*] Hyphened by Fenton. 557. *idea.*] *ideat* Fenton. 563. *stations*] Ed. 1. *station* Ed. 2. 565. *gates!*] Fenton. *Gates*, Ed. 1. 566. *Havens...* *doors!*] Keightley. *Heav'ns...* *dores*; Ed. 1. *heav'ns!...* *doors*; Fenton. 568. *a World*] *a World!* Masson. 579-81. *that milky...stars*] Put in a

parenthesis by Fenton. 588. *Father; for* *Father* (for Ed. 1. 602-4. *Jehovah!...power!...thine?*) Fenton. *Jehovah!...power;...thine*; Ed. 1. 605. *giant angels*] Hyphenated by Fenton. *Rebel Angels* Bentley conj. 611. *hast repell'd*] *did't repell* Bentley conj. 618. *Heaven gate*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 625. *dwelling-place*] Fenton. *dwelling place* Ed. 1. 625-6. *men...men...advanced*] *men!...men...advanc'd*, Fenton. *men...men!...advanced*, Keightley. 632. *upright!*] Fenton. *upright*. Ed. 1.

VIII. 1-4. *The Angel...replied*] *To whom thus Adam gratefully repell'd* Ed. 1. 4. *new-awak'd*] Masson. *new wak't* Ed. 2. 7-13. *Historian...Creator?*] 1688. *Historian...Creator*; Ed. 1. *Historian?...Creator*. Fenton. 13. *Something*] *some thing* Ed. 1. 23. *punctual*] *punctal* Bentley conj. 24-5. *night;...besides*] Newton. *night;...besides*, Ed. 1. *night;...besides*: Fenton. 56. *caresses: from his lip*] Tickell. *caresses, from his lip* Ed. 1. *caresses from his lip*, 1688. 70-1. *This...right*] Marked as a parenthesis by Keightley. 82. *save*] solve Anon. conj. (Keightley). 91. *excellence*] *excellent* Capell conj. ms. 96. *in*] *on* Bentley conj. 108. *Though numberless*] *Swifter than thought* Bentley conj. *So numberless* Pearce conj. 111. *morning hour*] Hyphenated by Tickell. 144-5. *Earth?...inhabitants*] *Earth!...inhabitants*. Keightley. *Earth...inhabitants?* Masson. 158. *Light*] *Nought* Bentley conj. *Like* Pearce conj. 164-6. *that...along*] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 192. *subtle*] Fenton (1730). *suttle* Ed. 1. *subtile* 1688. 200. *haply*] *happy* Fenton. 207. *subtly*] Fenton. *subbly* 1688. *suttly* Ed. 1. 231. *on*] *in* Capell conj. ms. 239. *inure*] 1695. *enure* Ed. 1. 244. *Torment*] *Tumult* or *Turmoil* Bentley conj. 265-6. *smiled*] *With fragrance*] *smil'd*, *With fragrance* Ed. 1. *smil'd With fragrance*; Fenton. 269. *as*] *and* Ed. 2. 277. *came I*] *I came* Keightley. *here?*] Ed. 1. *here--* Fenton. *here!* Masson. 282. *know?*] *know!* Masson. *Know*. Ed. 1. 296. *wants*] *waits* Bentley conj. 298. *father!*] Fenton. *Father*, Ed. 1. 302. *smooth-sliding*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 304. *wide, enclosed*] *wide-inclosed* Fenton. 314. *arise*] Fenton. *arw* Ed. 1. 340. *therein*] *thereon* Bentley conj. 357-9. *for...naming*] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 361. *man*] *man?* Fenton. *well-being*] Fenton. *well being* Ed. 1. 362. *hands*] *hand* Bentley conj. 363. *things?*] Masson. *things*: Ed. 1. 365. *happiness?*] Keightley. *happiness*, Ed. 1. *alone*] *alone?* Keightley. 369. *solitude?*] 1688. *solitude*, Ed. 1. 372. *tho?*] 1688. *tho*, Ed. 1. 373. *ways?*] 1688. *ways*, Ed. 1. 379. *Power!*] *Pow'r!* Fenton. *Power*, Ed. 1. 399. *subtle*] Fenton (1730). *subtile* 1688. *suttly*: Ed. 1. 403. *state?*] 1688. *State*, Ed. 1. 414. *things?*] Fenton. *things*; Ed. 1. 423. *single imperfection*] *imperfection single* Bentley conj. 447. *tho*,



for] Ed. 1. *thee* for Ed. 2. 460. *he*] *it* Bentley conj. 467. *And*  
*life-blood streaming*] *With Life-blood steaming* Bentley conj. 497. *forge*]  
*forego* Tickell. 510. *pleaded*] *pleased* 1711. 520. *hill* *top*] Hyphenated  
 by Fenton. 521. *I have*] Edd. 1, 2. *have I* Ed. 3. 567-8. *so, An*  
*outside?*] Ed. 1. *so? An outside?* Fenton. *so? An outside;* Keightley.  
 571. *Oft-times*] 1705. *Oft times* Ed. 1. 595. *half abash'd Adam*]  
*Adam half abash'd* Newton conj. doubtfully. 615. *Spirits*] Fenton.  
*Spirits*, Ed. 1. 616. *they?*] Fenton. *they*, Ed. 1. 619. *rosy red*]  
 Hyphenated by Fenton. 622. *the body*] *thy body* 1711. 633. *love;*]  
*love*, Ed. 1. *love!* Fenton. 642. *require*] *requires* Fenton (1725).  
 647. *adore.*] Edd. 1, 2. *adore*, Ed. 3. *adore!* Fenton.

IX. 1. *Angel guest*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 11. *a world of woe*] In  
 a parenthesis Atterbury conj. 18. *Junno's, that*] *Junno's that* Bentley  
 conj. or] and Pearce conj. doubtfully. 29. *mastry*] 1688. *maistrie*  
 Ed. 1. 35. *Impreser*] Ed. 1. *Impresses* 1688. 36. *Bases*] *Bosses*  
 Anon. conj. MS. 37. *tournament*] Tickell. *Tournement* 1688. *Torne-*  
*ament* Ed. 1. 38. *sceneshals*] Ed. 1. *Seneschals* 1688. 70. *Now...*  
*change*] Marked as a parenthesis by Keightley. *though...change* Put in a  
 parenthesis by Fenton. *wrought*] 1688. *wrought* Ed. 1. 79. *antarctic*]  
 Tickell. *Antartic* Ed. 1. 86. *subtlest*] Bentley. *subt'lest* 1688.  
*suttllest* Ed. 1. 93. *subtlety*] Bentley. *subtily* 1688. *suttletic* Ed. 1.  
 107. *influence!*] Fenton. *influence*: Ed. 1. 114. *thee*] the Fenton  
 (1725). 118. *caves!*] Fenton. *Caves?* 1688. *Caves*; Ed. 1.  
 119. *place or*] *place of* Bentley conj. *peace or* Anon. conj. (Newton).  
 133. *woe:*] Fenton. *woe*, Ed. 1. 134. *then,*] *then*; Ed. 1. *then!*  
 Fenton. *range.*] *range*: Ed. 1. *range!* Masson. 139. *been*] 1688.  
*bin* Ed. 1, and 253, 806, 862, 867, 976, 1016, 1160, 1173. 141. *well*  
*nigh*] 1695. *weltnigh* Ed. 1. 155. *angel wings*] *Angel-wings* Fenton.  
 157. *carthy*] *earthly* Fenton (1730). 158. *to elude*] *do elude* 1688.  
 159. *midnight vapour*] *midnight-vapour* Keightley. 167. *aspired!*]  
 Fenton. *aspir'd* Ed. 1. *highth*] *hight* Ed. 1. 180. *low creeping*]  
*low-creeping* Keightley. 181. *midnight search*] Hyphenated by Fenton.  
 183. *fast sleeping*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 184. *well-stored*] *well-stor'd*  
 Fenton. *subtle*] Bentley. *subtile* 1688. *suttle* Ed. 1, and in 307, 324.  
 186. *Nor nocent*] Ed. 2. *Not nocent* Ed. 1. 192. *cohenas*] Ed. 1.  
*when as* Ed. 2. 194. *breathē*] 1688. *breath* Ed. 1. 196. *To the*]  
*To their* Bentley conj. 200. *scents*] 1688. *Sents* Ed. 1 (but in 587  
*scent*). 203. *hands?*] *scant* Bentley conj. 213. *hear*] Ed. 1. *hear*  
 Ed. 2. 222. *object*] *objects* Masson. 227. *Sole Eve*] *O Eve* Bentley  
 conj. 244. *These*] *The* 1711. *joint hands*] *joint-hands* Fenton.  
 246. *ere long*] *c'er-long* Fenton. 270. *virgin majesty*] Hyphenated by  
 Fenton. 289. *Adam!*] Fenton. *Adam*, Ed. 1. 308. *others!*]

- Keightley. *other* Fenton. *other's* Tickell. *others* Ed. 1. 316. *thy*  
*the* Fenton. 317. *tried?* *try'd* 1688. *tr'd*. Ed. 1. 327. *But*  
 Ed. 2. *Put* Ed. 1. 334. *our witness, from* Fenton. *our witness from*  
 Ed. 1. 334-5. Bentley would read lines 334-6 as follows:  
*Favour from Heav'n our witness, from th' Assault*  
*Alone without exterior help sustain'd.*  
*And what is Faith, Love, Virtue, unassay'd?*  
 338, 345. *imperfect* 1688. *imperfet* Ed. 1. 346. *Of all* *In all* Bentley  
 conj. 347. *Or ought* Ed. 2. *Or ought* Ed. 1. *Of ought* 1705.  
 347-8. *secure*, *Secure...force;* Ed. 1. *secure*. *Secure...force*, Fenton (1727).  
 353. *beware* Ed. 1. *be ware* Newton. *be'aware* Bentley conj. 354. *fair*  
*appearing* *fair-appearing* Todd. *appearing good* Hyphened by Fenton.  
 360. *impossibly* *impossible* Fenton. 379. *thy* *thine* Verity. 382. *nor*  
 not 1711. 389. *gait* Tickell. *gate* Ed. 1. 394. *Likest* Ed. 1.  
*Likeliest* Ed. 2. 394-5. *Pomona...Vertumnus* Put in a parenthesis  
 by Fenton. 396. *virgin of* *virgin, or* Anon. conj. (Pearce).  
 398. *desiring* *desired* Fenton. 408. *hid* *laid* 1711. 410. *or* and  
 Bentley conj. 418. *lay,* *call'd* Bentley conj. 420. *or* and Keightley  
 conj. 420-1. *rivulet* *He* *Rivulet*. *He* Tickell. 426. *Half spied*  
 Hyphened by Fenton. *bushing* *blushing* Tickell. 427. *oft stooping*  
*half-stooping* 1711. 428. *slender* tender Masson. 431. *myrtle band*  
*Myrtle band* 1688. *myrtle-band* Fenton. 436. and *bold* *in folds*  
 Bentley conj. ms. 438. *Imborder'd* *Imbroider'd* Bentley conj.  
 447. *Forth issuing* *Forth-issuing* Fenton. 460. *least* 1688. *lest* Ed. 1,  
 and 555. 473. *me!* Keightley. *me!* Fenton. *me*, Ed. 1. 475. *us?*  
 Keightley. *us!* Fenton. *us*, Ed. 1. *me*. Bentley conj. *nor* or Tickell.  
 498. *tower'd* 1738. *tour'd* Ed. 1. 505. *changed* *chang'd*, Todd  
 (Dunster conj.). 506. *Hermione* *Harmonia* Bentley conj. 515. *steers*  
*veers* Keightley conj. 529. *serpent tongue* Hyphened by Fenton.  
 554. *express'd!* Fenton. *exprest?* Ed. 1. 560. *subtlest* Bentley.  
*subtilst* 1688. *subtil'st* Fenton. *Suttlest* Ed. 1. 563. *camest thou* *thou*  
*can'st* Bentley conj. 565. *sight?* Ed. 1. *sight*: Bentley. 601. *this*  
*his* 1688. 612. *Dame.* Ed. 1. *dame!* Fenton. 617. *tree?* Fenton.  
*Tree*, Ed. 1. 624. *birth* 1688. *Beath* Ed. 1, and Masson.  
 632. *made?* Ed. 2. *make* Ed. 1. 638. *Which...attends* Put in a  
 parenthesis by Fenton. 641. *To* *Through* 1711. 649. *rest* *rests*  
 Todd (1826). 650. *effects!* Fenton. *effects*. Ed. 1. 657. *garden trees*  
 Hyphened by Fenton. 673. *collected, while each part,* *collected whole,*  
*while each* Bentley conj. *part,* *part's* Pearce conj. 674. *act* *air*  
 Bentley conj. Newton proposed to retain *act* and to read l. 673 as  
 Bentley. *each act* *and act* Landor conj. *tongue,* *tongue* Masson.  
 680. *science!* Fenton. *Science*, Ed. 1. 684. *Universe!* Fenton.  
*Universe*, Ed. 1. 687. *knowledge.* Fenton. *Knowledge?* Ed. 1.

- threatener?* *Threatner?* 1688. *Threatner*, Ed. 1. 697. *evil?* Fenton.  
*Evil*, Ed. 1. 703. *awee*,] Ed. 1. *awee?* Keightley. 705. *worshippers*,]  
*worshippers*; Ed. 1. *worshippers?* Keightley. 706. *Ye*] *You* Fenton.  
710. *should*] *shall* 1705. 714. *Gods*] *God* Bentley conj. 715. *bring!*  
Fenton. *bring*. Ed. 1. 729. *envy?* Fenton. *envie*, Ed. 1. 757. *not*  
*had*] *had not* Browne. 758. *know?* Fenton. *know*, Ed. 1.  
759. *wise!* Masson. *wise?* Ed. 1. *wise*. Keightley. 763. *die*,] Ed. 1.  
*die!* Masson. 773. *then?* Fenton. *then*, Ed. 1. 781. *eat*] *ate*  
Landor conj. 783. *signs*] *sign* Fenton. 793. *highten'd*] *hight'n'd*  
Ed. 1. *height'n'd* 1688. 795. *Paradise!* Fenton. *Paradise*. Ed. 1.  
797. *sapience*,] *sapience!* Fenton. 799. *Created!* Fenton. *Created*;  
Ed. 1. 805. *give*,] Ed. 1. *give...* Keightley. 807. *grow'n*,] Ed. 1.  
*grown!* Masson. 829. *extinct*,] Ed. 1. *extinct!* Masson.  
830. *think!* Fenton. *think*. Ed. 1. 853. *excuse*] *Excuse* Browne.  
854. *to prompt*] Ed. 1. *too prompt* Fenton. 858. *presence*,] Ed. 1.  
*presence*—Masson. *love!* *love!* Fenton. 875. *correspond*,] *correspond*,  
Ed. 1. *correspond*—Masson. 900. *lost*,] Ed. 1. *lost!* Fenton.  
901. *devote!* Fenton. *devote?* Ed. 1. 904. *forbidden!*] Ed. 1. *for-*  
*bidden?* Bentley. 908. *thee*,] Ed. 1. *thee?* Masson. *thee!* Fenton.  
*forgo*] *forego* 1688. 909. *converse and love so*] *Converse and Love, so*  
1705. *converse, and love so* Keightley. 913. *no!* Fenton. *no*,  
Ed. 1. 922. *hast*] Ed. 1. *hath* Ed. 2. 923. *been*] Ed. 2. *be'n*  
Ed. 1. 924. *fruit*] *food* Masson. 927. *Fate!*] Tickell. *Fate*, Ed. 1.  
*fate!* Fenton. 929. *hainous!* 1688. *hainous* Ed. 1. *now!* *now*—  
Masson. 932. *he yet*] *yet he* Todd. *lives*,] *lives*—Masson.  
937. *Angels, demi-gods*] Fenton. *Angels Demi-gods* Ed. 1. 949. *long?*  
Edd. 1, 3. *long*; Ed. 2. 953-4. *if death...death*] *if death, Consort*  
*with thee death* Keightley conj. 964-76. *attain...known.*] *attain*,  
*Adam...known?* Todd. 964-5. *attain, Adam?* Fenton. *attaine*,  
*Adam*, Ed. 1. *attain?* *Adam!* Keightley. 973-4. *for...occasion*] Put in  
a parenthesis by Fenton. 980. *with!* *to* Anon. conj. MS. 984. *not*  
*death*] *nor death* Tickell. 996. *fair enticing*] *fair-enticing* Fenton.  
1017. *taste*,] *taste* Keightley. 1019. *we*] Ed. 1. *me* Ed. 2.  
1058. *Shame: he!* Tickell. *shame hee* Ed. 1. *shame; who* Capell MS.  
*he...his*] *she...her* Anon. conj. (Peck). 1062. *strength; they*] *strength*.  
*They* Tickell. 1063. *virtue. Silent*] *virtue, silent* Bentley. *Silent, and*  
*in*] *silent sat, in* Bentley conj. 1064. *Confounded, long*] Fenton.  
*Confounded long* Ed. 1. 1076. *Our wonted ornaments, now*] (*Our*  
*wonted ornaments*,) *now* Fenton. *Our wonted Ornaments now* Ed. 1.  
1088-90. *evening!...pines!...more!*] Fenton. *Evening!...Pines,...more*.  
Ed. 1. 1092-3. *for...from*] Ed. 1. *from...for* Ed. 2. *from...fro*  
Ed. 3. 1102-3. *to Indians...Decan*,] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton.  
*to Indians known, In...Decan* Keightley. 1114. *shame!* Fenton.

shame; Ed. 1. 1115. glory!] Fenton. Glorie. Ed. 1. 1128. both] but 1711. 1137. thee!] Fenton. thee; Ed. 1. 1139. miserable.] Ed. 1. miserable! Keightley. 1148. perhaps?] Bentley. perhaps: Ed. 1. been] Ed. 2. bin Edd. 1, 3. 1154. lifeless] Tickell. liveless Ed. 1. 1163. the love] thy love Bentley conj. 1167. thee?] Newton. thee: Ed. 1. 1170. thy] my 1705. restraint!] Fenton. restraint: Ed. 1. 1183. women] woman Brydges (Bentley conj.).

X. 7. Omniscient?] Fenton. Omniscient, Ed. 1. 9-10. arm'd, Complete to] arm'd Complete, to Dunster conj. arm'd Complete to Keightley. 14. Whoever] However Bentley conj. 15. (what could they less?)] Fenton. What could they less; Ed. 1. 20. subtle] Fenton. subtle 1688. suttile Ed. 1. 22. Heaven gate] Heaven-gate Tickell. 33-4. cloud Amidst,] Tickell. Cloud, Amidst Ed. 1. 49. day?] Fenton. day, Ed. 1. 54. return, as bounty,] Fenton. return as bounty Ed. 1. 56. Son?] Fenton. Son, Ed. 1. 58. may] Ed. 1. might Ed. 2. 62. himself] thy self Bentley conj. 72. these] those Keightley conj. 73. Whoever] However Bentley conj. 83. law] Ed. 1. law; Fenton. 88. Heaven gate] Heaven-gate Fenton. 106. unsought] Tickell. unsought Ed. 1. 146. voice?] Tickell. voice, Ed. 1. 149. her, made of thee] Keightley. her, made of thee, Fenton. her made of thee, Ed. 1. 151. dignity?] 1688. dignitie: Ed. 1. 156. person] portion Anon. conj. MS. 177. growelling] Keightley. groweling Ed. 1. 194. children] children Ed. 1. 198. hearken'd] hark'd Bentley conj. 205. shalt thou] thou shalt Masson. 222-3. righteousness Araying] Tickell. righteousness, Araying Ed. 1. 236. Idly] Illtely Ed. 1. 241. avengers] Ed. 2. Avenger Ed. 1. 248. secret] strictest Capell conj. MS. 263. new-felt] Fenton. new felt Ed. 1. 266-7. behind, nor err The way] behind, nor err, The way Mitford (Landor conj.). 266. Leads] Lead Capell conj. MS. 267, 277. scent] 1688. sent Ed. 1. 279. scented] 1688. sent Ed. 1. 280. nostril] Nostrils 1711. 282. Hell gates] hell-gates Fenton. 284. diverse] Tickell. divers Ed. 1. 287-8. drove...towards] Ed. 1. drove, From each side shoaling, towards Keightley. 292. Petora] Persora 1695. Petora Fenton. 293. aggregated] aggerated Keightley conj. 296-8. As...move, And...slime:] Ed. 1. As...move: And...slime, Fenton (Richardson conj.). 299-300. broad...Hell] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 300. wrought on] 1695. wrought on Ed. 1. wrought-on Fenton. 301. high-arch'd] Fenton. high Archt Ed. 1. 303. now fenceless] Hyphenated by Fenton. 313-7. a ridge...Chaos] Ed. 1. (a ridge ...Chaos,) Fenton. 314-7. following...Chaos] Mitford would put in a parenthesis. 315-7. Of Satan, to...Chaos to] Ed. 1. Of Satan to... Chaos, to Newton. Of Satan (to...Chaos) to Landor conj. 315. self-same] Fenton. self same Ed. 1. 317. to] on Newton conj.

- 328-9. *steering His*] *steering, His* Bentley. 329. *rose*] *rode* Bentley conj.  
 345. *time, with*] Tickell. *time. With* Ed. 1. 351. *stupendous*] Ed. 1.  
*stupendous* Fenton. 358-9. *Ally...stoves*] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton.  
 368. *our*] *us* Bentley conj. 368-9. *liberty, confined...now; thou*] *liberty:*  
*confined...now, thou* Lander conj. 390-1. *act have met, Mine*] *act, have*  
*met Mine* Keightley. 392. *one realm*] *our realm* Tickell. 394. *ease*] Fenton.  
*ease* Ed. 1. 397. *those*] Ed. 1. *these* Ed. 2. 408. *prevail*] *prevailles* Ed. 2.  
 413. *planet-struck*] Ed. 3. *Planet-strook* Ed. 1, 2. 415. *Hell gate*] *hell-gate* Fenton.  
 416. *over-built*] Tickell. *Over built* Ed. 1. 423. *inland*] Ed. 2. *in land* Ed. 1. 436. *Thauris*] *Taurus* 1707.  
 441. *unmark'd*] *unmaskt* Lander conj., omitting 442-4. 452. *All-amaz'd* Ed. 1.  
 480. *supreme; thence*] *supreme. Thence* Bentley. 481. *new-created*] Fenton. *new created* Ed. 1.  
 499. *when is not set*] *when is not said or which is not set* Keightley conj. 522. *thick swarming*] Ed. 1.  
*thick-swarming* Masson. 525. *eltops*] *dops* Fenton. 550. *penance*] *patience* 1711. *fair*] om. Ed. 2. *like that*] *like to that* 1695.  
 555. *further*] 1705. *further* Ed. 1. *further* 1688. 556. *thirst*] 1688. *thirst* Ed. 1. 561. *fruitage*] 1688. *Frutage* Ed. 1.  
*grow*] *grows* Bentley conj. 572-3. *plagued...hiss*] *plagued; And, worn with famine, long and ceaseless hiss*, Keightley. 573. *famine long, and*] *Verity* (Newton conj.). *Famine, long and* Ed. 1. *famine, long, and* Fenton. *famine and long* Newton conj. 582. *Encroaching Eve*] *Encroaching, Eve* Pearce conj. 591. *all-conquering Death*] Fenton. *all conquering Death*, Ed. 1. 592. *now*] *now?* Fenton. 593. *difficult?*] Keightley. *difficult*, Ed. 1. 595. *half-starv'd*] Keightley. *half starv'd* Ed. 1. 606. *scythe*] *Sithe* Ed. 1. 608. *actions, all*] Fenton. *actions all* Ed. 1. 631. *hath shed*] *had shed* Tickell. 640. *precedes*] *precedes* Bentley. 665. *when*] *whence* Pearce conj. 668. *askance*] *ascance* Ed. 1. 673. *to Taurus*] *through Taurus* Bentley conj. 675. *amatu*] *as much* Bentley conj. *again* Newton conj. 688. *Thyestean*] *Thyestes* Pope conj. 693. *sideral*] *sideral* Lander conj. 696. *Norumbega*] *Norumbegone* Fenton. 701. *blast*] *blasts* Masson. 703. *Serrationa*] *Sicra* *Liona* Fenton. 707. *lifeless*] 1705. *livels* Ed. 1. *first*] Tickell. *first* Ed. 1. 711. *all*] *those* Thyer conj. 718. *passion*] *passions* Bentley conj. 719. *Thus...with*] *These...in* Bentley conj. 722. *glory?*] Keightley. *glory*, Ed. 1. 723. *blessed*] *blest*? Fenton. 725. *happiness*] *happiness*: Ed. 1. *happiness?* 1688. *happiness!* Fenton. 735. *head?*] Tickell. *Head*, Ed. 1. 740-1. *light Heavy*] *light, Heavy* Keightley. 744. *Man?* Fenton. *Man*, Ed. 1. 751. *Thy*] *The* Keightley conj. 773. *overlive?*] Fenton. *overlive*, Ed. 1. 777. *Insensible*] Fenton. *Insensible*, Ed. 1. 778. *lap?*] Fenton. *lap?* Ed. 1. 795. *not so*] *not* Lander conj. 801. *Will he draw*] Ed. 3. *Will he, draw* Ed. 1, 2. 804. *never?*] 1688. *never*; Ed. 1. 805. *dust*] *just* Bentley conj.

813. *perpetuity*—] Fenton. *perpetuitie*; Ed. 1. *Ay me!*] Tickell. *Ay me*,  
Ed. 1. *Ah me!* Fenton. 816. *Am*] *Are* Bentley conj. 819, 820. *ye*]  
*you* 1688. 819. *sons!*] Fenton. *sons*: Ed. 1. 822. *Me, now your*]  
Fenton. *Me now your* Ed. 1. *Me now ye* 1688. 827. *then*] Ed. 2.  
om. Ed. 1. 830. *lead*] Ed. 2. *leads* Ed. 1. 834. *wrath!*] Fenton.  
*wrauth*. Ed. 1. 840. *future*] *future too* Pearce conj. *all future* Anon.  
conj. (Newton). 842. *Conscience!*] Fenton. *Conscience*, Ed. 1.  
843. *me!*] *me?* Fenton. 855. *thrice-acceptable*] 1695. *thrice acceptable*  
Ed. 1. 850. *hillocks*] *Hills, rocks* Fenton conj. *bowers!*] Fenton.  
*Bowers*, Ed. 1. 857. *serpent!*] Fenton. *Serpent*, Ed. 1. 886. *sinister*  
*from*] Ed. 1. *Sinister: from* Bentley. *sinister, from* Newton. 888. *found!*]  
Fenton. *found*. Ed. 1. 912. *besought*] 1695. *besought* Ed. 1.  
914. *Adam!*] Fenton. *Adam*, Ed. 1. 917. *deceiv'd!*] Fenton.  
*deceav'd* Ed. 1. 925. *one enmity*] *in enmity* Bentley conj. 936. *Me,*  
*me only, just*] *Me, only me, just* Bentley conj. *Me, me, only just* Fenton.  
*Me, me only just* 1695. 939. *wrought!*] 1695. *wrought* Ed. 1.  
949. *thysell*] Keightley. *thy self*; Ed. 1. *thysell!* Fenton. *Alas!*]  
Fenton. *alas*, Ed. 1. 951. *burden*] *burthen* 1688. 952. *ought!*]  
Tickell. *ought* Ed. 1. 973-4. *heart, Living or dying*] Ed. 1. *heart*  
*Living or dying*, Ed. 2. 977. *tolerable,*] *tolerable*; Bentley. *As in our*  
*evils, and*] *As in two evils one* Bentley conj. 981-6. *and miserable...*  
*monster*] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 982. *misery,*] Ed. 2. *misery*.  
Ed. 1. 989-990. *so Death...two*] *As in* 1695. One line in Ed. 1.  
1004-5. *power, Of*] Ed. 1. *power Of* Fenton. 1005. *die!*] *die*, Fenton.  
*die the shortest choosing*] *die! the shortest choose* Landor conj. 1016. *sought!*]  
1688. *sought* Ed. 1. 1032. *amends!*] Fenton. *amende*, Ed. 1.  
1055. *been*] 1688. *bin* Ed. 1. 1058. *unbesought!* 1688. *unbesought*  
Ed. 1. 1067. *fair spreading*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 1068. *better*  
*swarmth*] *greater warmth* Bentley conj. 1070. *night,*] *night*: Bentley.  
1076. *or pine*] *and pine* 1711. 1092. *meek!*] 1688. *meek*. Ed. 1.  
*meek*. Bentley conj. (and in line 1104).

XI. 22. *first-fruits*] Fenton. *first fruits* Ed. 1. 32. *me*] Ed. 2. *me*  
Ed. 1. 53. *distemper, gross, to*] *distemper gross, to* Tickell. 91. *longer*]  
*no longer* Keightley conj. *move,*] *move...* Keightley. 110-1. *For...excess*]  
*As in* Fenton. 121. *Wide-waving*] Tickell. *Wide waving* Ed. 1.  
129. *Janus; all*] Fenton. *Janus, all* Ed. 1. 137. *found*] Ed. 2.  
*found*, Ed. 1. 141. *may*] *my* Todd. 143. *ought!*] Tickell. *ought*  
Ed. 1. 148. *sought!* 1688. *sought* Ed. 1. 158. *thee!*] Fenton.  
*thee*, Ed. 1. 163. *Ill-worthy*] Fenton (1727). *Ill worthie* Ed. 1.  
173. *see!*] Fenton. *see* Ed. 1. 177. *day's work*] *days-work* Tickell.  
183. *air, air*] *air*. *Air* Bentley conj. 184. *her*] *their* Bentley conj.  
193. *further*] Tickell. *further* Ed. 1. *farther* 1688. 199. *knows!*]

- Fenton. *knows*, Ed. 1. 200. *more?*] Fenton. *more*, Ed. 1.  
 202. *flight*] Ed. 2. *slight* Ed. 1. 207. *fraught?*] Fenton. *fraught*.  
 Ed. 1. 210. *halt*] Fenton. *alt* Ed. 1. 230. *gait*] Tickell. *Gate*  
 Ed. 1. 232. *Or*] *Lord Bentley* conj. MS. 233. *coming?*] Ed. 1.  
*coming?* Ed. 2. 254. *seizure*] *seizure* Keightley. 265. *Heart-stroke*] *Heart-struck* 1688. 278. *sun, or*] *sun?* *Who Bentley* conj. 284. *wild?*] Fenton. *wilde*, Ed. 1. 289. *over-fond*] Ed. 2. *over fond* Ed. 1.  
 324. *turf*] 1688. *Terfe* Ed. 1. 325. *brook, in*] *brooks in Bentley* conj.  
 326. *Or*] *A Bentley* conj. 327. *sweet-smelling*] Fenton. *sweet smelling*  
 Ed. 1. 344. *hither*] *thither* 1705. 369. *slept st*] Fenton. *slept* Ed. 1.  
*while*] *whilst* Tickell. 374. *arming*] *aiming Bentley* conj. MS. 380. *to*  
*amplest*] Ed. 1. *to the amplest* Ed. 2. 388. *Can*] *Cham Fenton*.  
 389. *Samarchand*] *Samarand Fenton*. 390. *Paguin*] *Pekin Fenton*.  
 398. *maritime*] *Maritim* Ed. 2. *Maritime* Ed. 1. 399. *Mombaza*] *Mombaza Fenton*. 401. *farthest*] 1688. *fardest* Ed. 1. 403. *Marocco*] *Morocco* 1688. 405. *On*] *Or Fenton*. 407. *Motezume*] *Montezume*  
 1695. 427. *that sin*] Ed. 1. *that* Ed. 2. 431. *New-raap'a*] Hyphenated  
 by Masson. 433. *sord*] *sod Fenton*. *sword* Bentley conj. 435. *First-*  
*fruits*] Keightley. *First fruits* Ed. 1. 448. *that*] *the* 1711.  
 481. *gastly*] Ed. 1. *ghastly* 1688. 485-7. *Demoniac...pestilence*] Added  
 in Ed. 2. 533. *nof*] *no* 1705. 541. *forgo*] *forego Fenton*. 545. *waigh*] Ed. 2. *waigh* Ed. 1. *thy*] *the Fenton*. 549. *cumbrous*] *cumbrous*  
 Fenton. *combrous* Ed. 1. 551-2. *and patiently...dissolution*] Added  
 in Ed. 2. 552. *replied*] *to him repl'd* Ed. 1. 573. *metel*] 1688.  
*mettle* Ed. 1. 574. *hither*] Ed. 3. *hether* Ed. 1, 2. 579. *last*] Ed. 2 (Errata to Ed. 1). *last* Ed. 1. *least Bentley* conj. 587. *Past*] *First* 1688. 610. *inventors*] Fenton. *inventers* Ed. 1. 614. *For*] *Even Keightley* conj. 625-6. *in joy* (*Erelong to swim at large*) and  
*laugh*] Ed. 1. *in joy, Erelong to swim at large; and laugh*, Newton  
 (Pearce conj.). 631. *mid way*] *midway Keightley*. 648. *meadow*  
*ground*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 651. *makes*] Ed. 2. *tacks* Ed. 1.  
 661. *city gates*] *city-gates Keightley*. 675. *these?*] Fenton. *these*, Ed. 1.  
 679. *massacre*] 1688. *massacher* Ed. 1. 682. *been*] 1688. *bin* Ed. 1.  
 694. *done*] *won Bentley* conj. 695. *Of*] *Or Bentley* conj. 710. *punish-*  
*ment*] Ed. 1. *punishment?* Ed. 2. 756. *Depopulation!*] Tickell.  
*Depopulation*] Ed. 1. 764. *future!*] Fenton. *future*, Ed. 1.  
 766. *Enough*] 1688. *Anough* Ed. 1. 768. *foreknowledge*] *foreknowledge*;  
 Fenton. 775-6. *feel* (*Grievous to bear*).] *feel*; *Grievous to bear!* Fenton.  
 785. *thus?*] *thus*, Keightley conj. 817-8. *derided, but...alive; by*] *derided. But, of God observ'd, The one just man alive, by Fenton*.  
 821. *wrack*] Tickell. *rack* Ed. 1. *wreck Fenton*. 845. *wave*] *waves*  
 Keightley conj. 857. *again*] 1688. *agen* Ed. 1. 860. *olive leaf*] *olive-leaf Fenton*. 870. *who*] Ed. 2. *that* Ed. 1. 880. *Disputed*

as...appeas'd?] *Distended as...appeas'd*, Ed. 1. *Distended, as...appeas'd?*  
 Todd. *brow*] *bow* Fenton conj. *appeas'd?* *appeas'd?* Fenton. *appeas'd*,  
 Ed. 1. 886. *late repenting*] *late, repenting* Fenton. 899. *Seed time*]  
*Seed-time* Tickell. 901. *Heaven and Earth, wherein*] *Heav'n, and*  
*Earth whereon* Bentley conj.

XII. 1-5. *As one...resumes*] Added in Ed. 2. 1. *bait*] *bait*  
 Keightley. 35. *claiming*] 1688. *claiming* Ed. 1. 52. *Heaven towers*]  
*Heav'n-tow'rs* Fenton. *Heav'n's Tow'rs* Tickell. 53. *spirit*] *speech*  
 Bentley conj. 59. *was*] *is* Bentley conj. 60. *And*] *All* Bentley conj.  
 61. *was*] *is* Bentley conj. 83. *thy*] *by* Fenton. 85. *Twin'd*]  
*Twin'd* 1705. 93. *him*] *it* 1719. 103. *this*] *his* 1705.  
 134. *call'd him, in*] *calls him* to Bentley conj. 136. *Sechem*] *Sichem*  
 Fenton. 146. *Senir*] *Seir* Fenton. 169. *those*] *these* Todd.  
 181. *people*] *people's* Bentley conj. 189. *midnight stroke*] *midnight-stroke*  
 Fenton. 191. *The*] Ed. 2. *This* Ed. 1. 207. *morning watch*]  
*morning-watch* Keightley. 208. *fery*] Ed. 3. *Firey* Ed. 1, 2.  
 210. *chariot wheels*] *chariot-wheels* Fenton. 229. *trumpet's*] Fenton  
 (1727). *trumpets* Todd. *Trumpets* Ed. 1. 238. *what they besought*]  
 1688. *what they besought* Ed. 2. *them thir desire* Ed. 1. 263. *mid*  
*heaven*] *mid-heav'n* Fenton. 313. *long-wander'd*] Fenton. *long*  
*wanderd* Ed. 1. 369. *the Most High*] *God Most High* Bentley conj.  
 373. *been*] 1688. *bin* Ed. 1. 377. *steadist*] 1688. *steddiest* Ed. 1.  
 385. *heel*] *heel?* Fenton. 407. *Proclaiming*] Ed. 2. *Proclaiming* Ed. 1.  
 409. *merits*] *merit's* Anon. conj. (Gent. Mag.). 410. *To save*] *Do*  
*save* Bentley conj. *So save* Mitford conj. 424. *Thy*] *The* 1711.  
 434. *death like*] *death-like* Fenton. 445. *the*] *their* Bentley conj.  
 451. *he shall*] *shall he* 1705. 459. *this*] *the* 1711. 477. *good will*]  
*good-will* Fenton. 482. *truth?*] 1688. *truth*; Ed. 1. 497. *persecutors*]  
 1695. *Persecutours* 1688. *persecutors* Ed. 1. 520. *pretence*] 1705.  
*pretense* Ed. 1. 526. *Liberty?*] Fenton. *Libertie*; Ed. 1. 528. *an-*  
*other's?*] Fenton. *another's*; Ed. 1. 534. *Will*] Ed. 1. *Will* Ed. 2.  
 539. *waight*] 1688. *waight* Ed. 1. 555. *fix'd!*] *fixed!* Keightley.  
*fix'd?* Fenton. *fixt*; Ed. 1. 562. *And love*] *To love* Keightley conj.  
 568. *worldly strong*] *worldly-strong* Keightley. *worldly wise*] *worldly-wise*  
 Keightley. 569. *simply meek*] *simply-meek* Keightley. 590. *see!*]  
 Fenton. *see* Ed. 1. 601. (*For...Seed*)] —*For by the Woman's Seed*—  
 Keightley. *For*] *Come* Bentley conj. 604. *With cause*] (*With cause!*)  
 Fenton. 617. *unwilling*] *unwillingly* 1711. 635. *vapour*] *vapours*  
 1711. 645. *soon*;] *soon*. Anon. conj. (Peck). 648. *They*] *Then*  
 Anon. conj. (Peck), arranging the last four lines thus: 648, 649, 646, 647.  
 648-9. *They...way*] Bentley ventured to propose

*Then hand in hand with social steps their way*  
*Through Eden took, with heav'nly comfort cheer'd.*



## PARADISE REGAINED.

- I. 9. *field*] *field*, Tickell. 14. *summ'd*] *plum'd* Anon. conj.  
 (Newton). 21. *To all baptiz'd*] *Baptizing all* or *And all baptiz'd*  
 Calton conj. 24. *To the flood Jordan, came as*] *To the flood Jordan*  
*came, as 1705.* 37. *a while*] *a-while* Fenton. 45-7. *For...habitation*  
 Put in a parenthesis by Fenton. 60-3. *At least...Air*] Put in a  
 parenthesis by Dunster. 62. *being*] Ed. 1 (Errata). *being*. Ed. 1.  
*being*, Tickell. 84. *heard*] Ed. 1. *hear* Ed. 2. 85. *am*] *I'm*  
 Tickell. 97. *Not...snares*] Put in a parenthesis by Dunster. *well-*  
*couch'd...well-woven*] Hyphenated by Tickell. 122. *men, attested*] *men*  
*attested* Fenton (1727). 133. *message late,*] *message, late* Fenton (1727).  
 137. *Then*] *Thou* Keightley conj. 144. *subtlety*] Newton. *subtily* Ed. 1.  
 159-160. *foss, By...sufferance:*] Ed. 1. *foci. By...sufferance* Keightley.  
 171. *hand*] *harp* Calton conj. withdrawn. 182. *and vigils*] *in vigils*  
 Sympson conj. 189. *leading,*] Newton. *leading*; Ed. 1. *leading*  
 Keightley. 193. *enter'd*] *entred* Ed. 1. 195. *meditations*] *meditation*  
 1688. 225. *unwore*] *unware* 1688. 226. *subdue*] *destroy* Ed. 1,  
 corrected in Errata. 241. *should*] Ed. 1. *shall* Ed. 2. 249. *before,*  
*in heaven*] *before in heaven*, Fenton (1727). 253. *new-graven*]   
 Hyphenated by Todd. 254. *thee King*] *the King* Ed. 2. 259. *straight*]   
 Ed. 2. *strait* Ed. 1. 271. *knew*] Ed. 1. *new* Ed. 2. 294. *our*]   
 Ed. 1. *out* Ed. 2. 295. *side*] *side*, Fenton (1727). 297-8. *The*  
*way...difficult*] *The way he came, not having marked return, Was difficult*  
 Masson. 304-5. *hill* Sometimes, anon] *hill, Sometimes* anon Fenton  
 (1727). 307. *one*] *some* Jortin conj. 315-8. *Following...eve*]   
 Put in a parenthesis by Fenton (1727). 323-5. *caravan?...drouth.*]   
*Caravan?...droughth*, Tickell. *Caravan,...droughth?* Ed. 1. 331. *dwell*]   
 Ed. 1. *dwell* Ed. 2. 333. *ought*] Keightley. *ought* Ed. 1.  
 339. *stubs*] *shrubs* Thyer conj. 350-1. *God, who...manna?*] Newton  
 (Calton conj.). *God; who...manna*; Ed. 1. *God; who...Manna?*  
 Tickell. *God? who...manna*; Fenton. 353. *Elijah*] 1705. *Elijah*  
 Ed. 1. 378. *of*] *to* Rouse. 395. *portents*] *prophets* Calton conj.  
 400. *Nearer*] *Never* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 402. *man's one's*  
 Jortin conj. 404. *less?*] Tickell. *less* Ed. 1. 415. *or*] *and*  
 Lander conj. 417. *Imparts*] *Imports* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata.  
 426. *infections?* *but his patience won.*] Fenton. *infections, but his patience*  
*won?* Ed. 1. 460. *loving*] *loving* 1688. 463. *an*] Ed. 1. *and*  
 Ed. 2. 470. *wrested*] 1688. *rested* Ed. 1. 477. *scipe*] *escape* 1695.  
 500. *wing*] Ed. 1. *wings* Ed. 2.

- II. 6-8. *I mean...named*] Put in a parenthesis by Fenton (1727).  
 27. *no...call*] Put in a parenthesis by Tickell. 30. *from what*] Ed. 1.  
*from that* 1688. 35-6. *Now...restored*] Marked as a quotation by  
 Masson. 40. *rap<sup>t</sup>*] *wrapt* Newton. 51. *pointed at*] *pointed out*  
 Dunster conj. 60. *But to his*] *But O! his* Calton conj. 62. *Jordan*.]  
 Ed. 1. *Jordan* Masson. 68. *Hail*] Tickell. *Hale* Ed. 1.  
 115. *preface*] *purpose* Symson conj. 123. *call'd*.] *call'd* Fenton (1727).  
 125-6. *So...trouble*] Put in a parenthesis by Dunster. 126. *trouble*] *trouble*;  
 Masson. *trouble*; Ed. 1. 127. *who*] *whom* Ed. 2. 128. *than*] om.  
 Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 136. *If he...least*.] Ed. 1. *If he be man by*  
*mother's side, at least* Dunster. *If...least*—Keightley. 175. *doat'st*] *doat'st*  
 1705. 177. *but taken*] *taken but* Symson conj. 179. *False-*  
*titled*] *False titled* Ed. 1. 183. *lurk'st*] *lurk'st* 1705. 186. *Callisto*] *Callisto*  
 Meadowcourt conj. *Calisto* Ed. 1. 189. *lay'st*] *lay'st* 1705. 214-5. *as*  
*...tell*] Put in a parenthesis by Dunster. 215. *so fables tell*] Put in a  
 parenthesis by Tickell. 227. *worth, of*] *worth*; with Meadowcourt  
 conj. 228. *Rocks...wreck'd*] Put in a parenthesis by Masson. *often*] *often*  
 1688. 232. *wide*] *wild* Ed. 2. 278. *Or ar*] *Or was* Symson conj.  
 309. *here*] 1705. *he* Ed. 1. 313. *Thebes*] *Thebes* Ed. 1, corrected in  
 Errata. *Thibe* Keightley conj. 319. *How hast thou*] *Dost thou not*  
 Symson conj. 323. *refusal?*] Tickell. *refusal*, Ed. 1. 326. *nor*] *nor*  
 not 1705. 341. *fil'd*] *fill'd* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 343. *pastry*  
*built*] *pastry-built* 1695. 352. *rich clad*] Ed. 1. *rich-clad* Keightley.  
 357. *seem'd*] *seem'd*, Calton conj. 359. *faery*] Dunster. *Fairy* Ed. 1.  
 363. *pipes; and winds*] Tickell. *pipes and winds* Ed. 1. 368. *What*  
*doubts*] *What, doubts* Fenton. 371. *knowledge works, at*] *knowledge, works*  
*at* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 388. *find?*] Tickell. *find*, Ed. 1.  
 401. *far-fet*] Fenton. *far fet* Ed. 1. *far-ficht* Tickell. 405. *with...*  
*temptation*] *his temptation with these words* Lander conj. 420. *the dizzy*] *the dizzy*  
*what dizzy* Symson conj. *how keep the dizzy* Calton conj. 445. *of*] *of*  
 om. 1705. 446. *Quintus*] *Quintus* 1688. 448. *those*] *these*  
 Keightley conj. 486. *often*] *often* Lander conj.

- III. 18. *Of*] *And* Meadowcourt conj. 21-3. *hide?* *Affecting...*  
*wilderness*.] Ed. 1. *hide, Affecting...wilderness?* Tickell. 26. *attempts*  
*the flame*.] Ed. 1. *attempts, the flame* 1705. 51. *praise?*] Tickell.  
*praise*.] Ed. 1. 56. *dispraised*] *despis'd* 1705. 76. *remote?*] Ed. 1.  
*remote?* Fenton. 78. *conquerors*.] *conquerors?* Keightley. 83. *sacri-*  
*fice?*] Todd. *Sacrifice*; Ed. 1. 87. *reward.*] Ed. 1. *reward?* Tickell.  
 88. *in*] *no* Newton (1760). 96-7. *memorable?*] *By...doing.*] Ed. 1.  
*memorable By...doing* Dunster. 130. *that.*] *what* 1688. 134. *glory.*  
*who*] Tickell. *glory? who* Ed. 1. 136. *shame?*] *shame*—Masson.  
 141. *belongs.*] Ed. 1. *belongs?* Masson. 151. *the seeking*] Ed. 1.

*their seeking* Ed. 2. *thy seeking* Newton conj. withdrawn. 164. *by* in Masson. 199-200. *kingdom? why...Sollicitous?* Todd. *Kingdom, why...Sollicitous*, Ed. 1. 213. *My crime; whatever* Ed. 1. *My crime whatever*; Sympton conj. *My crime whatever*, Meadowcourt conj. 217. *From* Keightley conj. 224-6. *best...King?* best?...King! Keightley. 227. *linger'st* Ed. 1. *lingrest* Ed. 2. 238. *insight* 1747. *in sight* Ed. 1. 260. *pastures* pasture Masson. 275. *Nineveh* Nineveh Ed. 1. 287. *hundred* Ed. 2. *hundred* Ed. 1. 292. *Claiphon* Fenton. *Tesiphon* Ed. 1. 293-5. *now...empire* Put in a parenthesis by Dunster. 309. *half-moons* Ed. 2. *half moons* Ed. 1. 316. *Candaor* Ed. 1. *Gandaor* Ed. 2. 324. *showers* shower Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 329. *endorsed* endorsed Ed. 1. 330. *Of archers* Or archers Keightley conj. *pioners* Pioneers 1688. 350. *shewn* Ed. 1. *show* Masson, who in his note gives 'shew' as the reading of the first edition. In some copies the last letter has not taken the ink. 359. *Jew* Jews Fenton. 367. *Hyrcaun bound* Ed. 1. *Hyrcaun*, bound Fenton (1727). 377. *Ten* Eight Dunster conj. 385. *not need* need not or need nought Keightley conj. 407. *seal? where* Tickell. *seal, where* Ed. 1. 416. *the* and Fenton. 428. *as to* unto Mitford conj. 430. *would follow* would fall off or would fall, how Sympton conj. Between lines 429 and 430 Calton would insert:  
'Their fathers in their old iniquities.'

IV. 12. *salve* Ed. 1. *save* Ed. 2. 21. *Vain battery!* Put in a parenthesis by Dunster. 32. *of whose* off whose Masson. 56. *god's* God Newton. 74. *Chersonese* Fenton (1727). *Chersonass* Ed. 1. 102. *A victor people* A victor, people Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. A victor-people Masson. *yoke!* Dunster. *yoke?* Ed. 1. 108. *be* Ed. 1. *he* Ed. 2. 115. *or* and Keightley conj. *Atlantic stone* Atlantick, stor'd Mitford conj. 137. *By* But 1713. 157. *the difficult* the difficult Jortin and Sympton conj. 164. *For...please* Put in a parenthesis by Dunster. Tickell continued the parenthesis to *trifle*. 179-181. *accurst, now...blasphemous?* Ed. 1. *accursed? now...blasphemous*; Keightley. 182. *given!* Masson. *giv'n?* Fenton. *giv'n*, Ed. 1. *given*,— Keightley. 190. *God,* Ed. 1. *God?* Dunster. *God*— Masson. 201. *Earth* earth, Todd. 208. *nought* Todd. *naught* Ed. 1. 217. *must* Tickell. *was* Ed. 1. 224. *comprehend* 1705. *comprehend*, Ed. 1. 230. *mean'st* Tickell. *mean'st*, Ed. 1. 238. *Algean* Egean 1713. 244. *olive grove* Hyplened by Keightley. 279. *Surnamed* Surnam'd Ed. 1. 283. *Then* Their Calton conj. 286-7. *things; or...not*, Keightley. *things, or...not*; Ed. 1. 288. *ought* Tickell. *ought* Ed. 1. 303. *Equal* Equals Newton. 325. *seek?* Tickell. *seek* Ed. 1. 328-9. *toys...worth* toys, And for choice matters, trifles worth Anon. conj.

(Brown). 330. *pebbles*] *pibles* Ed. 1. 336. *harps in Babylon*,  
Ed. 1. *harps, in Babylon* Dunster. 337. *victors*] Dunster. *victor's*  
Masson. *Victors* Ed. 1. 347-350. *to all...from thee*] In a parenthesis,  
Mitford conj. 350. *Such...thee*] Put in a parenthesis by Dunster.  
351-2. *Unless...lost*] Transposed by Dunster to follow line 345. 353. *those*]  
*though* Calton conj. 387. *Attends*] Ed. 1. *Attend* Dunster.  
410. *thunder, and both ends of heaven; the clouds*] *thunder, and both ends*  
*of Heav'n, the clouds* Ed. 1. *thunder, and both ends of Heav'n the Clouds*  
1688. *thunder; at both ends of Heav'n the clouds* Sympson conj. *thunder,*  
*and both Ends of Heav'n; the clouds* Meadowcourt conj. 435. *behold*]  
*beheld* Newton conj. 443. *they all were spent*] Put in a parenthesis by  
Dunster. 452. *wrack*] Newton. *rack* Ed. 1. 460. *oft-times*] *oft*  
*times* Ed. 1. 468. *perfect*] 1688. *perfet* Ed. 1. 467-471. Browne  
quotes an anonymous alteration in a copy in the British Museum:

Did I not tell thee, soon thou shalt have cause

To wish thou never hadst rejected thus

The perfect season offered, with my aid

To win thy destin'd seat, prolonging still

All to the push of Fate? pursue thy way, &c.

470. *fate*,] *Fate?* Tickell. *fate?*... Keightley. 472. *For...told*] Put in a  
parenthesis by Tickell. *told?*] Dunster. *told*, Ed. 1. 475. *means*:]  
*means?* Masson. 497-8. *thou...vains*] Put in a parenthesis by Tickell.  
502. *have*] *had* Dunster. *heard*] *heard*, Keightley. 510. *whither*]  
Ed. 1. *whether* Ed. 2. 511. *Flock'd*] *Flock* Newton. 512. *Though*  
*...baptized*] Put in a parenthesis by Dunster. 537. *again*] *agen* Ed. 1.  
554-5. *best. Now*] *best, Now* Ed. 1. *best To* Meadowcourt conj.  
558. *uplift*] Fenton. *up lift* Ed. 1. 578. *Joyless...success*] Put  
in a parenthesis by Dunster. 585. *blithe*] *lithe* Sympson conj.  
588-9. *divine Ambrosial fruits*,] Dunster. *Divine, Ambrosial, Fruits* Ed. 1.  
*Divine, Ambrosial fruits*, 1705. 592. *hunger had*] Ed. 1. *hunger,*  
*had* Dunster. 596. *Father, whether*] Tickell. *Father whether* Ed. 1.  
608. *hath*] *hath* 1688. 615. *re-install*,] Keightley. *re-install*.  
Ed. 1. *re-install*, Tickell. *re-instal* 1705. 622. *yet...wound*] Put in a  
parenthesis by Dunster. 622-3. *wound, By*] Tickell. *wound By*  
Ed. 1.

### SAMSON AGONISTES.

1. Samson, [Attendant leading him.] Todd. 2. *further*] *farther*  
1695. 9-11. *amends, The breath...born*,] *amends. The breath...born*,  
Keightley conj. 28. *and*] *as* Sympson conj. 41. *Eyelets...will*]  
*Eyeless, in Gava, at the mill, Landor* conj. 45. *default*,] Ed. 1.  
*default*! Keightley. *default?* Masson. 46. *myself?*] *my self*; Tickell.  
51. *tears*,] *tears?* Tickell. 54. *wisdom?*] Tickell. *wisdom*, Ed. 1.

56. *subtleties*] 1705. *suttleties* Ed. 1. *subtillities* 1695. *subtillities* 1688.  
 60. *peace*] Keightley. *peacs*, Ed. 1. 68. *enemies*] Masson. *enemies*,  
 Ed. 1. 69. *or decrepit*] *decrepit* Ed. 2. *in decrepit* Calton conj.  
 94-5. *confined*,...*quenched*] Fenton. *confined*?...*quenched*?, Ed. 1. *con-*  
*fin'd*,...*quenched*; Tickell. 111. *staring*] *bearing* Warburton conj.  
 113. *to insult*] *insult* Ed. 1. 115. [Enter] Chorus. Todd.  
 123. *soil'd*] *soild* Ed. 1. *solid* Ed. 2. 125-7. *Samson*?...*withstand*;  
*Samson*;...*withstand*? Fenton. 133. *Chalybean-temper'd*] Hyphenated  
 by Masson. 147. *post*] *posts* Meadowcourt conj. 157. *complain*]  
*complain'd* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 162. *alas*] Tickell. *alas*  
 Ed. 1. 178. *speaks*] Ed. 1. *speak* Ed. 2. *spake* 1688. 179. *grief*]  
 Keightley. *grief*; Ed. 1. 182. *or*] and Calton conj. 191. *under-*  
*stood*]. In] *understood*:-] in Tickell. *understood*] in Ed. 1. 198. *ship-*  
*wreck'd*] *shipwreck't* Ed. 1. *shipwreck'd* 1688. 201. *Fool*] Tickell.  
*Fool*; Ed. 1. 204. *street*? Do] Tickell. *street, do* Ed. 1. 216. *women*]  
 Ed. 1. *Woman* Ed. 2. 220. *wed*] Tickell. *wed*, Ed. 1.  
 222. *motion'd*] *mention'd* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 228. *late*]  
 Tickell. *late*, Ed. 1. 257. *harass*] Keightley. *harrass* Ed. 1.  
 270. *liberty*,] *liberty*] Keightley. 274. *deliverer*] Masson. *Deliverer*;  
 Ed. 1. 276. *deeds*] Keightley. *deeds*? Ed. 1. 302. *reins*] 1688.  
*raius* Ed. 1. 324. *verdict*] 1705. *verdit* Ed. 1. 326. *see*] Tickell.  
*see* Ed. 1. 328. *Manoa*] *Manoah* Ed. 1. 330. *Ayme*] Keightley.  
*Ay me*, Ed. 1. *Ah me*, Fenton. 332. [Enter] Manoah. Todd.  
 332-3. *for*...*place*] Marked as a parenthesis by Keightley. 334. *once*  
*gloried*] Hyphenated by Fenton. 341. *renown'd*,] *renown'd* 1705.  
 348. *length*] Tickell. *length*. Ed. 1. *ever-failing*] Hyphenated by Fenton.  
 354. *And such*] *Such* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 362. *holy*,] *holy*?  
 Keightley. *plant*] Tickell. *Plant*; Ed. 1. 363. *sacred*] Masson.  
*Sacred*, Ed. 1. 367. *slaves*] Masson. *Slaves*? Ed. 1. *slaves*. Keightley.  
 368. *Alas*] Tickell. *Alas* Ed. 1. 376. *ought*] *ought* 1705.  
 388. *faith*] *faith*, Newton. 390. *scens*] 1688. *sent* Ed. 1. 391. *me*,]  
 Keightley. *me*? Ed. 1. 401. *sought*] *thought* 1705. 405. *out*,]  
 Newton. *out*. Ed. 1. 420. *marriage choices*] Hyphenated by Todd.  
 431. *burden*] *burthens* 1705. 455. *enough*] 1688. *anough* Ed. 1.  
 474. *Nothing more certain*] Marked as a parenthesis by Keightley.  
 477. *it doubtful*] Newton. *it, doubtful* Ed. 1. 493. *heinous*] 1688.  
*hainous* Ed. 1. 496. *front*] Keightley. *front*? Ed. 1. 496-7. *But*  
*I...secret*] As in 1713. One line in Ed. 1. 509. *his debt*] *thy*  
*debt* Keightley conj. 510. *ever more*] 1705. *evermore* Ed. 1.  
 516-8. *means who...house*,] *means*. *Who...house*? Keightley. 535. *hal-*  
*low'd*] *hollow* 1688. 538. *all*] of Meadowcourt conj. 540. *my*] *mine*  
 1705. 543-4. *ruby, Sparkling*] Tickell. *Ruby Sparkling*, Ed. 1.  
*ruby, Sparkling*, Keightley. 544. *or*] of Fenton (1727). 545. *and*

- men] or men Ed. 2. 546. *thas*] *the* Ed. 2. 548. *pure*] Newton.  
*pure*, 1688. *pure*. Ed. 1. 549. *rod*,] Newton. *rod* Ed. 1.  
553. *madness*,] Ed. 1. *madness*! Keightley. 557. *brook*] Tickell.  
*brook*. Ed. 1. 554. *useful*,] Ed. 1. *useful*? Keightley. 565. *im-*  
*posed*?] Tickell. *impos'd*, Ed. 1. 572. *obscure*,] Ed. 1. *obscure*?  
Newton. 575. *oft-invoked*] *oft-invoked* so quoted by Todd.  
588. *nought*] Newton. *naught* Ed. 1. 605. Exit. Todd.  
612. *There*] *There* 1713. 627. *med'cinal*] *medicinal* Ed. 1. *medicinal*  
1688. 631. *swoonings*] 1705. *swoonnings* Ed. 1. 656. *life*,] Newton.  
*life* Errata to Ed. 1. *life*. Ed. 1. *life*: Tickell. 658. *sought*] *fraught*  
Warburton conj. 660. *with*] *to* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata.  
667. *fathers*! *what is Man*,] Masson. *Fathers, what is man!* Ed. 1.  
*Fathers, what is man*, Tickell. *Fathers! what is man!* Fenton.  
668-9. *various* (Or...*contrarious*?)] *various, ...contrarious*, Ed. 1.  
673. *brute*?] Masson. *brute*! Tickell. *brute*. Ed. 1. 679-680. *adorn'd*,  
*To*] 1688. *adorn'd To* Ed. 1. 696. *ingrateful*] *ungrateful* Masson.  
707. *already*!] Keightley. *already*? Ed. 1. 716. *Gadire*?  
Newton. *Gadier* Ed. 1. 720. *scent*] Ed. 2. *sent* Ed. 1. 729. *into*] *om.* 1705.  
732. [Enter] *Dalila*. Todd. 748. *hyenal*] Fenton. *Hyena*; Ed. 1.  
763. *bosom snake*] Hyphened by Keightley. 779. *nought*] Newton. *naught* Ed. 1.  
782. *not*,] Ed. 1. *not*! Masson. 783. *frailty*,] 1695. *frailty* Ed. 1. 786-7. *kind, Thine forgive mine*,]  
Ed. 1. *kind; Thine forgive mine*, Keightley. 820. *mine*!] Tickell.  
*mine*? Ed. 1. 829. *feign'd*,] Tickell. *feign'd*, Ed. 1. 832. *murderer*] *murderer* Ed. 1.  
836. *thet*] Masson. *thee*; Ed. 1. 842. Or] *For* 1705. *And*] Keightley conj. 847. *best-resolved*] *best-resolved* by Masson.  
864. *these*,] *their* 1705. 874. *Boen*] *Bin* Ed. 1. 878. *know'st, Too well*,] *know'st; Too well*;  
Todd. 883-4. *husband, ...profess'd*?] Tickell. *husband? ...profest*:  
Ed. 1. 895. *thet*!] Masson. *thee*; Ed. 1. 896. *it*!] Masson. *it*;  
Ed. 1. 899. *cannot*] *they cannot* 1705. 902. *appear*!] Keightley.  
*appear*? Ed. 1. 905. *breath*,] *breath*, Ed. 1. *breath*! Masson.  
936. *adder's*] Tickell. *Adders* Ed. 1. 939. *could*] Ed. 1. *couldst* 1688.  
940. *forge*] *forego* Fenton. 947. *perfect*] 1705. *perfet* Ed. 1.  
949. *fail*] Newton. *Goal* Ed. 1. 962. *sea to shore*] *seas to shores*  
Upton conj. 966. *hate*,] Masson. *hate*? Ed. 1. 973. *one black, the*  
*other white*] *one white, the other black* Keightley conj. 974. *void*] *wide*  
Jortin conj. *asry*] *airy* 1713. 986. *wedlock bands*] Hyphened in Ed. 1.  
991. *heinous*] 1688. *hainous* Ed. 1. 996. [Exit.] Todd. 1008. *Love*  
*quarrels*] Hyphened in Ed. 1. 1009. *wedlock treachery*] Hyphened in  
Ed. 1. 1034. *wisest men*] *the wisest man* Meadowcourt conj.  
1035. *Seeming at first*] Lander would omit *Seeming* or *at first*.  
1036. *far*] *war* 1713. 1061. *had we*] *we had* Tickell. *had n't we*

- Sympson conj. *retire? I see a storm.*] Fenton. *retire, I see a storm?*  
 Ed. 1. 1069. *is his? is* 1705. 1070. *hither? hither?* Fenton.  
 1075. *fraught? freight* Meadowcourt conj. 1076. [Enter] Harapha.  
 Todd. 1081. *Kiriathaim*] Ed. 1. *Kiriathaim* Ed. 2. 1092. *me?*  
 1688. *me;* Ed. 1. 1093. *thee.*] 1688. *thee?* Ed. 1. 1095. *jaw!*  
 Keightley. *Jaw;* Ed. 1. 1096. *wish*] *with* Tickell.  
 1112. *chamber ambusher*] Hyphened by Todd. 1115. *marriage faith*  
 Hyphened by Todd. 1121. *add*] Ed. 1. *and* Ed. 2. *Vant-brace*  
 Keightley. *Vant-brass* Ed. 1. 1127. 9. *shale*] Ed. 1. *shall* Ed. 2.  
 1156. *God, whate'er he be;*] *God. Whate'er he be* Keightley. 1158. *de-*  
*liver'd*] 1705. *delivered* Ed. 1. 1180. *murderer*] Newton. *Murthrer*  
 Ed. 1. *robber!*] Masson. *Robber.* Ed. 1. 1185. *murder*] *murther* 1705.  
 1205. *lords!*] Masson. *Lords.* Ed. 1. *lords—* Keightley. 1210. *acts!*  
 Masson. *Acts.* Ed. 1. 1215. *nought*] *naught* 1705. 1218. *my*  
*known*] *mine own* Sampson. 1228. *verdict*] 1688. *verdt* Ed. 1.  
 1243. [Exit.] Todd. 1247. *giant brood*] Hyphened in Ed. 1.  
 1248. *divulge*] *divulg'd* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 1252. *yet further*  
*farther* 1705. 1269. *oppress'd,*] *oppress;* Tickell. *oppress!* Ed. 1.  
 1276. *truth!*] Tickell. *Truth;* Ed. 1. 1278. *defeats,*] Tickell.  
*defeats* Ed. 1. 1297. *ben*] 1688. *bin* Ed. 1. 1308. [Enter] Officer.  
 Todd. *Ebreus*] *Hebrews* 1688. 1313. *rate*] *race* Ed. 1, corrected in  
 Errata. 1319. *Ebreus*] *Hebrew* 1688. 1325. *minims*] *Minims* Ed. 1,  
 corrected in Errata. *Miners* Fenton. 1334. *Myself!*] Keightley.  
*My self?* Ed. 1. 1339. *heart grief*] Hyphened in Ed. 1. 1340. *god,*  
*god!* Keightley. 1342. *contempt!*] Masson. *contempt?* Ed. 1.  
*contempt.* Keightley. 1346. [Exit.] Todd. 1356. *transgression,*  
 Ed. 1. *transgression?* Keightley. 1358. *idols,*] *idols?* Fenton.  
 1362. *execrably*] *execrable,* Keightley conj. 1407. *men!*] Masson.  
*men* Ed. 1. 1425. [Exeunt...] Verity. 1431. *Send thee the*] *Send the*  
 1688. 1437. *need!*] Keightley. *need,* Ed. 1. 1444. *news,*] Tickell.  
*news?* Ed. 1. [Enter] Manoah. Todd. 1445. *brethren!*] Keightley.  
*brethren;* Ed. 1. 1447. *new-parted*] *new parted* Ed. 1. *now parted*  
 Fenton (1727). 1453. *ye*] *you* 1688. 1468. *enough*] 1688. *enough* Ed. 1.  
 1483. *forgo*] *forego* Fenton. 1495. *hath*] *hath* 1688. 1499. *further*  
*farther* 1688. 1504. *ill-founded*] *ill founded* Ed. 1. 1509. *Heaven!*  
 Masson. *Heav'n* Ed. 1. *that?*] Masson. *that!* Ed. 1. 1512. *perish'd?*  
 Tickell. *perish'd,* Ed. 1. *perish'd!* Fenton. 1527-1535. *What if...*  
*belief*] Omitted in Ed. 1, but added in Errata. 1532-3. A manuscript  
 quoted by Browne reads:

For God of old hath for his people wrought  
 Things as incredible: what hinders now?

1536-9. Calton proposed to distribute the speeches thus:

*Chor.* A little stay will bring some notice hither

Of good or had so great.

Man.

Of had the sooner!

For evil news rides post, while good news bates.

Chor. And to our wish &c.

1537. *Of good... sooner*] Omitted in Ed. 1, but added in Errata.  
 1538. *bails*] *bates* Todd. 1540. [Enter] Messenger. Todd. *Ebreco*] *Hebrew* 1688. 1543. *behold*] 1688. *behold*; Ed. 1. 1544. *pursues*] Ed. 2. *persues* Ed. 1. 1548. *To thee*] *To the* Ed. 2. 1552. *here*] *heard* Ed. 1, corrected in Errata. 1560. *Sad*] Masson. *Sad*, Ed. 1.  
 1562. *surfeit*] 1688. *surfet* Ed. 1. 1571. *indeed*] Fenton. *indeed*, Ed. 1. 1577. *frost*] Newton. *frost*? Tickell. *frost*, Ed. 1.  
 1580. *he*] Fenton. *he*, Ed. 1. 1592. *enough*] 1688. *anough* Ed. 1.  
 1599. *I had*] *had* 1705. 1604. *at*] *from* Newton conj.  
 1605-6. *theatre, Half-round*,] Tickell. *theatre Half round* Ed. 1.  
 1626. *or break*] *and break* 1705. 1627. *stupendious*] Ed. 1. *stupendous* Tickell. 1649. *convulsion*] *confusion* 1705. 1650. *shook*] Ed. 1.  
 took Ed. 2. 1653. *or*] *and* Keightley conj. 1692. *And as an*] *And not as an* Calton conj. *And not as* Sympton conj. *Nor as an* Keightley conj. 1706-7. *survives, A secular bird*,] Keightley. *survives, A secular bird* Ed. 1. *survives A secular bird* Newton. 1713. *Caphtor*] Ed. 1.  
 Chapter Ed. 2. 1722. *breast*] *breasts* Fenton. 1728. *clotted*] *clouded* 1688. 1735. *ever green*] Hyphened by Fenton. 1755. *servants*] *servant* 1688.

## LATIN POEMS.

Italian Ode to Milton by Francini. First printed in 1645.

71. *e storia*] 1673. *o storia* 1645.

Latin Letter by Carolo Dati.

In the signature Tickell substituted 'Dioxlatus' for 'Datus.'

In the fourth paragraph the edition of 1645 had *vastitate*, which in 1673 was corrected to *venustate*.

Elegiarum Liber. First printed in 1645.

I. 24. *New forest victo*] *Victorivæ forest* Tickell. 54. *possit* 1645. *possit* 1673.

II. 19. *terre*] Keightley. *terre*, 1645, 1673.

III. 18. *agros*,] *agros*? Todd. 20. *rosa*,] 1645, 1673. *rosa*? Todd.  
 22. *agrie*] *agrie*; Masson. 26. *pecus*,] *pecus*? Fenton. 68. *mihi*] Fenton. *mihi*, 1645, 1673.



IV. 33. *viderat*] 1645, 1673. *vidit* 1695. 58. *nequit?*] 1713.  
*nequit.* 1645. 123. *Et tu*] *At tu* Warton conj.

V. 8. *putet?*] Tickell. *putet* 1645. 30. *perennis*] 1673. *quotannis*  
 1645. 57. *illâ,*] *illâ?* 1695. 60. *rosâ!*] 1713. *rosâ.* 1645.

VII. 24. *Naiadê*] *Naiad* Mitford. 85. *victus?*] 1713. *victus,* 1645.

Epigrammata. The first eight were in the edition of 1645. The 'Apologus de Rustico et Hero' was added in 1673. The other two are doubtfully assigned to Milton. 'De Moro' first appeared in 1654 in the 'Defensio Secunda,' and the lines 'Ad Christinam' were printed in Andrew Marvell's 'Miscellaneous Poems' in 1681. Toland by whom they were reprinted in 1699 does not decide whether they were by Milton or Marvell.

VII. 6. *lyrac?*] Tickell. *lyrac,* 1645.

VIII. 3. *Naiada*] *Naiad* Mitford.

Sylvarum Liber. First printed in 1645. The Greek verses on his portrait were placed here in 1673.

I. 29. *Apolline*] *Apollinis* Warton conj. *Apollini* Hayley conj.

II. 57. *submisso*] *summisso* 1645. 124. *Papæ?*] Tickell. *Papæ.*  
 1645. 138. *revolvens*] *resolvens* Newton conj. 143. *præruptaque*] 1673. *semifractaque* 1645. 150. *Exulant*] 1645. *Exulât* 1673.  
 In the Errata to the edition of 1673 the comma after *Exulât* is struck out and a comma is added after *Mænes* in line 149. 171. *Marcotidas*] *Mæotidas* Keightley conj. 203. *Iacobo?*] 1713. *Iacobo:* 1645.

III. 22. *Neobolen*] Tickell. *Neobolen* 1645. 30. *perçita?*] 1695.  
*perçita.* 1645. 39, 40. Put in a parenthesis by Keightley. 67. *loci?*] 1695. *loci,* 1645.

V. 23. *Et diis*] 1645. *Et iis* 1673. 35. *induxti*] 1645. *induxit* 1673.

Philosophus ad Regem.

4. 5. In 1645 these lines stand literally thus:

Μαψ αἰῶνα δ' ἔρ' ἔπειτα χρόνω μάλα πολλὸν ὁδὴν  
 Τοῖον δ' ἐκ πόλεως περιένομον ἄλκαρ ὀλέσσαι.

Epitaphium Damonis.

Argumentum. *comperito*] *comperiens* 1713.

48-9. *focis,...ulmo?*] Tickell. *focis,...ulmo.* 1645.

Ad Joannem Rousium. First printed in 1673.

2. *Fronde*] *Fronte* Warton conj.

3. *Quam*] *Quem* Warton conj.

In his first edition of Milton's 'Minor Poems,' Warton said that both these readings were to be found in the MS. in the Bodleian Library, which he adds is in Milton's own hand. These statements are incorrect. Professor Masson is more guarded in saying that the Ode is carefully written out on a sheet of paper by Milton himself, 'or some one else.'

In Salmasii Hundredam. From Milton's 'Defensio Prima,' 1650 or 1651.

In Salmasium. From the 'Defensio Secunda,' 1654.